This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES
3 3433 08169868 4

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

WEST AMERICAN HISTORY

HUBERT HOWE BANCROFT

Autograph Edition

NEW YORK
THE BANCROFT COMPANY
1902

Digitized by Google

THE NEW YORK
PUBLIC LIBRARY
955294
ASTOR, LENOX AND
TILDEN FOUNDATIONS
R 1923 L

Digitized by Google

THE WORKS
OF
HUBERT HOWE BANCROFT.

23 x 2 09

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF THIS VOLUME.

CHAPTER I.

SAVAGISM AND CIVILIZATION.

PAGE

Definition of the Terms—Force and Nature—The Universal Soul of Progress—Man the Instrument and not the Element of Progress—Origin of Progressional Phenomena—The Agency of Evil—Is Civilization Conducive to Happiness?—Objective and Subjective Humanity—Conditions Essential to Progress—Continental Configurations—Food and Climate—Wealth and Leisure—Association—War, Slavery, Religion, and Government—Morality and Fashion—The Development of Progressional Law..... 1

CHAPTER II.

GENERAL VIEW OF THE CIVILIZED NATIONS.

The American Civilization of the Sixteenth Century—Its Disappearance—The Past, a New Element—Dividing Line between Savage and Civilized Tribes—Bounds of American Civilization—Physical Features of the Country—Maya and Nahua Branches of Aboriginal Culture—The Nahua Civilization—The Aztecs its Representatives—Limits of the Aztec Empire—Ancient History of Anáhuac in Outline—The Toltec Era—The Chichimec Era—The Aztec Era—Extent of the Aztec Language—Civilized Peoples outside of Anáhuac—Central American Nations—The Maya Culture—The Primitive Maya Empire—Nahua Influence in the South—Yucatan and the Mayas—The Nations of Chiapas—The Quiché Empire in Guatemala—The Nahuas in Nicaragua and Salvador—Etymology of Names..... 81

CHAPTER III.

GOVERNMENT OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

System of Government—The Aztec Confederacy—Order of Succession—Election of Kings among the Mexicans—Royal Prerogatives—Government and Laws of Succession among the Toltecs, and in Michoacan, Tlascala, Cholula, Huexotzinco, and Oajaca—Magnificence of the Nahua Monarchs—Ceremony of Anointment—Ascent to the Temple—The Holy Unction—Address of the High-priest to

Digitized by Google

PAGE

the King—Penance and Fasting in the House Called Tlacatecco—Homage of the Nobles—General Rejoicing throughout the Kingdom — Ceremony of Coronation — The Procuring of Sacrifices—Description of the Crown—Coronation Feasts and Entertainments —Hospitality Extended to Enemies—Coronation Speech of Nezahualpilli, King of Tezcuco, to Montezuma II. of Mexico—Oration of a Noble to a Newly Elected King..... 133

CHAPTER IV.

PALACES AND HOUSEHOLDS OF THE NAHUA KINGS.

Extent and Interior of the Great Palace in Mexico—The Palace of Nezahualcoyotl, King of Tezcuco—The Zoölogical Collections of the Nahua Monarchs—Montezuma's Oratory—Royal Gardens and Pleasure-grounds — The Hill of Chapultepec — Nezahualcoyotl's Country Residence at Tezcozinco — Toltec Palaces — The Royal Guard — The King's Meals — An Aztec Cuisine — The Audience-chamber—After-dinner Amusements—The Royal Wardrobe—The King among his People—Meeting of Montezuma II. and Cortés—The King's Harem—Revenues of the Royal Household—Policy of Aztec Kings..... 158

CHAPTER V.

THE PRIVILEGED CLASSES AMONG THE NAHUAS.

Titles of the Nobility and Gentry—The Power of the Nobles—The Aristocracy of Tezcuco—The Policy of King Techotlalatzin—Privileges of the Nobles—Montezuma's Policy—Rivalry between Nobles and Commons — The Knightly Order of Tecuhtli — Ceremony of Initiation — Origin of the Order — The Nahua Priesthood — The Priests of Mexico — Dedication of Children—Priestesses—Priesthood of Miztecapan—The Pontiff of Yopaa—Tradition of Wixipecocha—The Cave of Yopaa—The Zapotec Priests—Toltec Priests—Totonac Priests—Priests of Michoacan, Puebla, and Tlascala..... 186

CHAPTER VI.

PLEBEIANS, SLAVES, TENURE OF LANDS, AND TAXATION.

Influence of the Commoners—Oppression by Nobles—Deprived of Office by Montezuma II.—Classes of Slaves—Penal Slaves—Voluntary Slavery — Slave-market at Azcapuzalco — Punishment and Privileges of Slaves—Division of Lands—Crown Lands—Lands of the Nobles—Municipal Property—Property of the Temples — Tenure of Lands in Zapotecapan, Miztecapan, Michoacan, Tlascala, Cholula, and Huexotzinco—Similarity to Fuedal System of Europe—System of Taxation — Municipal Taxes — Lice Tribute — Tribute from Conquered Provinces—Revenue Officers—Injustice of Montezuma II..... 216

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

EDUCATION, MARRIAGE, CONCUBINAGE, CHILDBIRTH, AND BAPTISM.

PAGE

Education of the Nahua Youth—Manner of Punishment — Marriage Preliminaries—Nuptial Ceremony—Observance after Marriage—Mazatec, Otomí, Chichimec, and Toltec Marriages — Divorce — Concubinage—Ceremonies Preliminary to Childbirth — Treatment of Pregnant Women—Proceedings of Midwife—Superstitions with Regard to Women Who Died in Childbed—Abortion—Baptism—Speeches of Midwife—Naming of Children—Baptism among the Tlascaltecs, Miztecs, and Zapotecs—Circumcision and Scarification of Infants..... 240

CHAPTER VIII.

NAHUA FEASTS AND AMUSEMENTS.

Excessive Fondness for Feasts—Manner of Giving Feasts—Serving the Meal—Professional Jesters—Parting Presents to Guests—Royal Banquets—Tobacco-smoking—Public Dances—Manner of Singing and Dancing—The Neteteliztli—The Drama among the Nahuas—Music and Musical Instruments—Nahua Poetry—Acrobatic Feats —The Netololiztli, or 'Bird Dance'—Professional Runners—The Game of Tlactli — Games of Chance — The Patoliztli, or 'Bean Game'—Totoloque, Montezuma's Favorite Game..... 283

CHAPTER IX.

PUBLIC FESTIVALS.

Frequent Occurrence of Religious Feasts—Human Sacrifices—Feasts of the Fourth Year—Monthly Festivals—Sacrifice of Children—Feast of Xipe—Manner of Sacrifice—Feasts of Camaxtli, of the Flower Dealers, of Centeotl, of Tezcatlipoca, and of Huitzilopochtli —Festival of the Salt-makers—The Sacrifice by Fire—Feast of the Dead—The Coming of the Gods—The Footprints on the Mat—Hunting Feast—The Month of Love—Hard Times—Nahua Lupercalia—Feasts of the Sun, of the Winter Solstice—Harvest and Eight-year Festivals—The Binding of the Sheaf..... 302

CHAPTER X.

FOOD OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

Origin of Agriculture—Floating Gardens — Agricultural Products — Manner of Preparing the Soil—Description of Agricultural Implements —Irrigation — Granaries — Gardens — The Harvest Feast — Manner of Hunting—Fishing—Methods of Procuring Salt—Nahua Cookery—Various Kinds of Bread — Beans — Pepper—Fruit — Tamales—Miscellaneous Articles of Food—Eating of Human Flesh—

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Manufacture of Pulque—Preparation of Chocolatl—Other Beverages — Intoxicating Drinks — Drunkenness—Time and Manner of Taking Meals..... 342

CHAPTER XI.

DRESS OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

Progress in Dress—Dress of the Pre-Aztec Nations—Garments of the Chichimecs and Toltecs—Introduction of Cotton—The Maxtli—The Tilmatli—Dress of the Acolhuas—Origin of the Tarascan Costume—Dress of the Zapotecs and Tabascans—Dress of Women —The Huipil and Cueitl—Sandals—Manner of Wearing the Hair—Painting and Tattooing—Ornaments Used by the Nahuas—Gorgeous Dress of the Nobles—Dress of the Royal Attendants—Names of the Various Mantles—The Royal Diadem—The Royal Wardrobe —Costly Decorations..... 363

CHAPTER XII.

COMMERCE OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

The Main Features of Nahua Commerce — Commerce in Pre-Aztec Times—Outrages Committed by Aztec Merchants—Privileges of the Merchants of Tlatelulco — Jealousy between Merchants and Nobles—Articles Used as Currency—The Markets of Anáhuac—Arrangement and Regulations of the Market-places—Number of Buyers and Sellers — Transportation of Wares — Travelling Merchants—Commercial Routes—Setting out on a Journey—Caravans of Traders—The Return—Customs and Feasts of the Merchants—Nahua Boats and Navigation..... 378

CHAPTER XIII.

WAR CUSTOMS OF THE NAHUAS.

Importance of the Military Profession—Indications of Rank—Education of Warriors—Rewards for Valor—Military Orders and their Dress—Gorgeous War Dresses of Montezuma and the Aztec Nobility—Dress of the Common Soldiers — Armor and Defensive Weapons—Offensive Weapons—Standards—Ambassadors and Couriers — Fortifications — The Military Council — Articles of War—Declaration of War—Spies—Order of March and Battle—War Customs of the Tlascaltecs and Tarascos—Return of the Conquering Army—Celebration of Feats of Arms..... 400

CHAPTER XIV.

NAHUA LAWS AND LAW COURTS.

General Remarks—The Cihuacoatl, or Supreme Judge—The Court of the Tlacatecatl—Jurisdiction of the Tecuhtlis—The Centectlapixques

Digitized by Google

PAGE
and Topillis—Law Courts and Judges of Tezcuco—Eighty-day Council—Tribunal of the King—Court Proceedings—Lawyers —Witnesses—Remuneration of Judges—Justice of King Nezahualpilli—He Orders his Son's Execution—Montezuma and the Farmer —Jails—Laws against Theft, Murder, Treason, Kidnapping, Drunkenness, Witchcraft, Adultery, Incest, Sodomy, Fornication, and Other Crimes—Story of Nezahualcoyotl and the Boy.....433

CHAPTER XV.

NAHUA ARTS AND MANUFACTURES.

Metals Used and Manner of Obtaining Them—Working of Gold and Silver—Wonderful Skill in Imitating—Gilding and Plating—Working in Stone—Lapidary Work—Wood-carving—Manufacture of Pottery—Various Kinds of Cloth—Manufacture of Paper and Leather—Preparation of Dyes and Paints—The Art of Painting—Feather Mosaic Work—Leaf Mats—Manner of Kindling Fire —Torches—Soap—Council of Arts in Tezcuco—Oratory and Poetry—Nezahualcoyotl's Odes on the Mutability of Life, and the Tyrant Tezozomoc—Aztec Arithmetical System.....473

CHAPTER XVI.

THE AZTEC CALENDAR.

Astronomical Knowledge of the Aztecs—Contradictions of Authors respecting the Calendar—Value of the Researches of Various Writers—The First Regular Calendar—The Mexican Cycle—The Civil Year—The Aztec Months—Names of the Days and their Signification—The Commencement of the Aztec Year—The Ritual Calendar —Gama's Arrangement of the Months—The Calendar-stone—The Four Destructions of the World—The Calendar of Michoacan—Reckoning of the Zapotecs..... 502

CHAPTER XVII.

THE AZTEC PICTURE-WRITING.

Hieroglyphic Records—The Native Books—Authorities—Destruction of the Native Archives by Zumárraga and his Confrères—Picture-writings Used after the Conquest for Confession and Lawsuits—Value of the Records—Documents Sent to Spain in the Sixteenth Century—European Collections—Lord Kingsborough's Work—Picture-writings Retained in Mexico—Collections of Ixtlilxochitl, Sigüenza, Gemelli Careri, Boturini, Veytia, Leon y Gama, Pichardo, Aubin, and the National Museum of Mexico—Process of Hieroglyphic Development—Representative, Symbolic, and Phonetic Picture-writing—Origin of Modern Alphabets—The Aztec System —Specimen from the Codex Mendoza—Specimen from Gemelli Careri—Specimen from the Boturini Collection—Probable Future Success of Interpreters—The Nepohualtzitzin.....523

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

ARCHITECTURE AND DWELLINGS OF THE NAHUAS.

PAGE

Architecture of the Ancient Nations—General Features of Nahua Architecture—The Arch—Exterior and Interior Decorations—Method of Building—Inclined Planes—Scaffolds—The Use of the Plummet—Building Materials—Position and Fortification of Towns—Mexico Tenochtitlan—The Great Causeways—Quarters and Wards of Mexico—The Market-place—Fountains and Aqueducts—Lighthouses and Street-work—City of Tezcuco—Dwellings—Aztec Gardens—Temple of Huitzilopochtli—Temple of Mexico—Other Temples—Teocalli at Cholula and Tezcuco.....553

CHAPTER XIX.

MEDICINE AND FUNERAL RITES AMONG THE NAHUAS.

Mexican Contributions to Medical Science—The Botanical Gardens—Longevity—Prevalent Diseases—Introduction of Small-pox and Syphilis—Medical Treatment—The Temazcalli—Aboriginal Physicians—The Aztec Faculty—Standard Remedies—Surgery—Superstitious Ceremonies in Healing—Funeral Rites of Aztecs—Cremation—Royal Obsequies—Embalming—The Funeral Pyre—Human Sacrifice—Disposal of the Ashes and Ornaments—Mourners—Funeral Ceremonies of the People—Certain Classes Buried—Rites for the Slain in Battle—Burial among the Teo-Chichimecs and Tabascans—Cremation Ceremonies in Michoacan—Burial by the Miztecs in Oajaca.....591

CHAPTER XX.

GOVERNMENT, SOCIAL CLASSES, PROPERTY, AND LAWS OF THE MAYA NATIONS.

Introductory Remarks—Votan's Empire—Zamná's Reign—The Royal Families of Yucatan; Cocomes, Tutul Xius, Itzas, and Cheles—Titles and Order of Succession—Classes of Nobles—The Quiché-Cakchiquel Empire in Guatemala—The Ahua Ahpop and Succession to the Throne—Privileged Classes—Government of the Provinces—The Royal Council—The Chiapanecs—The Pipiles—Nations of Nicaragua—The Maya Priesthood—Plebeian Classes—Slaves—Tenure of Lands—Inheritance of Property—Taxation—Debtors and Creditors—Laws and the Administration of Justice.....630

CHAPTER XXI.

EDUCATION AND FAMILY MATTERS AMONG THE MAYAS.

Education of Youth—Public Schools of Guatemala—Branches of Study in Yucatan—Marrying Age—Degrees of Consanguinity Allowed in Marriage—Preliminaries of Marriage—Marriage Ceremonies—The

Digitized by Google

PAGE

Custom of the Droit du Seigneur in Nicaragua—Widows—Monogamy—Concubinage—Divorce—Laws concerning Adultery—Fornication—Rape—Prostitution—Unnatural Crimes—Desire for Children—Childbirth Ceremonies—Rite of Circumcision—Manner of Naming Children—Baptismal Ceremonies..... 661

CHAPTER XXII.

FEASTS AND AMUSEMENTS OF THE MAYAS.

Special Observances—Fixed Feasts—Sacrifice of Slaves—Monthly Feasts of the Yucatecs—Renewal of the Idols—Feast of the Chacs—Hunting Festival—The Tuppkak—Feast of the Cacao-planters—War Feast—The Maya New-Year's Day—Feasts of the Hunters, Fishers, and Apiarists—Ceremonies in Honor of Cukulcan—Feast of the Month of Mol—Feasts of the Years Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac—Yucatec Sacrifices—The Pit of Chichen—Sacrifices of the Pipiles—Feast of Victory—Feasts and Sacrifices in Nicaragua—Banquets—Dances—Musical Instruments—Games..... 687

CHAPTER XXIII.

FOOD, DRESS, COMMERCE, AND WAR CUSTOMS OF THE MAYAS.

Introduction of Agriculture—Quiché Tradition of the Discovery of Maize—Maize Culture—Superstitions of Farmers—Hunting and Fishing—Domestic Animals, Fowl, and Bees—Preservation and Cooking of Food—Meals—Drinks and Drinking Habits—Cannibalism—Dress of the Mayas—Maxtlis, Mantles, and Sandals—Dress of Kings and Priests—Women's Dress—Hair and Beard—Personal Decoration—Head-flattening, Perforation, Tattooing, and Painting—Personal Habits—Commerce—Currency—Markets—Superstitions of Travellers—Canoes and Balsas—War—Military Leaders—Insignia—Armor—Weapons—Fortifications—Battles—Treatment of Captives..... 715

CHAPTER XXIV.

MAYA ARTS, CALENDAR, AND HIEROGLYPHICS.

Scarcity of Information—Use of Metals—Gold and Precious Stones—Implements of Stone—Sculpture—Pottery—Manufacture of Cloth—Dyeing—System of Numeration—Maya Calendar in Yucatan—Days, Weeks, Months, and Years—Indictions and Katunes—Perez' System of Ahau Katunes—Statements of Landa and Cogolludo—Intercalary Days and Years—Days and Months in Guatemala, Chiapas, and Soconusco—Maya Hieroglyphic System—Testimony of Early Writers on the Use of Picture-writing—Destruction of Documents—Specimens Which have Survived—The Dresden Codex—Manuscript Troana—Tablets of Palenque, Copan, and Yucatan—Bishop Landa's Key—Brasseur de Bourbourg's Interpretation.... 748

Digitized by Google

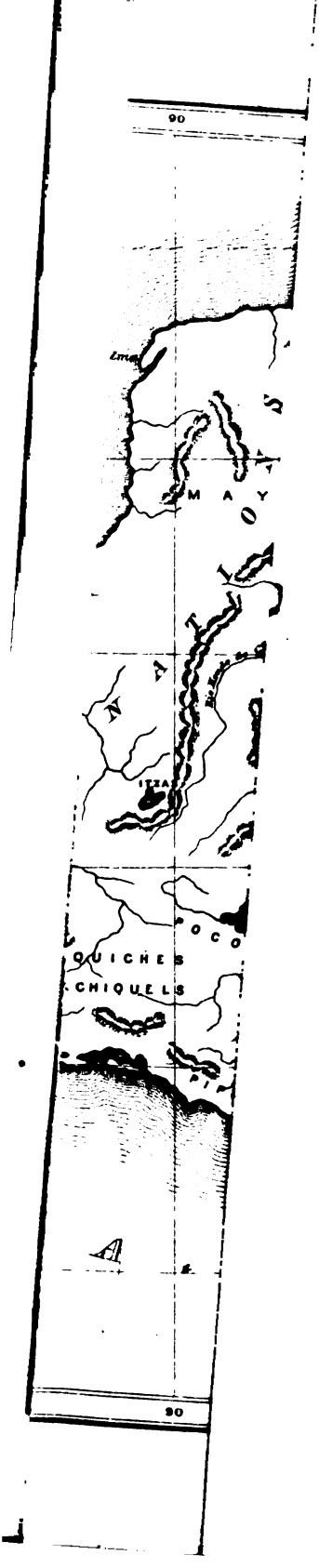
CHAPTER XXV.

BUILDINGS, MEDICINE, BURIAL, PHYSICAL PECULIARITIES, AND CHARACTER OF THE MAYAS.

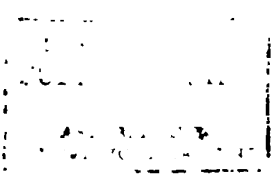
PAGE

Scanty Information Given by the Early Voyagers—Private Houses of the Mayas—Interior Arrangement, Decoration, and Furniture—Maya Cities—Description of Utatlan—Patinamit, the Cakchiquel Capital—Cities of Nicaragua—Maya Roads—Temples at Chichen Itza and Cozumel—Temples of Nicaragua and Guatemala—Diseases of the Mayas—Medicines Used—Treatment of the Sick—Propitiatory Offerings and Vows—Superstitions—Dreams—Omens—Witchcraft—Snake-charmers—Funeral Rites and Ceremonies—Physical Peculiarities—Character..... 783

Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

THE NATIVE RACES

OF THE

PACIFIC STATES.

CIVILIZED NATIONS.

CHAPTER I.

SAVAGISM AND CIVILIZATION.

DEFINITION OF THE TERMS—FORCE AND NATURE—THE UNIVERSAL SOUL OF PROGRESS—MAN THE INSTRUMENT AND NOT THE ELEMENT OF PROGRESS—ORIGIN OF PROGRESSIONAL PHENOMENA—THE AGENCY OF EVIL—IS CIVILIZATION CONDUCIVE TO HAPPINESS?—OBJECTIVE AND SUBJECTIVE HUMANITY—CONDITIONS ESSENTIAL TO PROGRESS—CONTINENTAL CONFIGURATIONS—FOOD AND CLIMATE—WEALTH AND LEISURE—ASSOCIATION—WAR, SLAVERY, RELIGION, AND GOVERNMENT—MORALITY AND FASHION—THE DEVELOPMENT OF PROGRESSIONAL LAW.

THE terms Savage and Civilized, as applied to races of men, are relative and not absolute terms. At best, these words mark only broad shifting stages in human progress: the one near the point of departure, the other farther on toward the unattainable end. This progress is one and universal, though of varying rapidity and extent; there are degrees in savagism, and there are degrees in civilization; indeed, though placed in opposition, the one is but a degree of the other. The Haidah, whom we call savage, is as much superior to the Shoshone, the lowest of Americans, as the Aztec is superior to the Haidah, or the European to the Aztec.

Digitized by Google

Looking back some thousands of ages, we of to-day are civilized; looking forward through the same duration of time, we are savages.

Nor is it, in the absence of fixed conditions, and amidst the many shades of difference presented by the nations along our western seaboard, an easy matter to tell where even comparative savagism ends and civilization begins. In the common acceptation of these terms, we may safely call the Central Californians savage, and the Quichés of Guatemala civilized; but between these two extremes are hundreds of peoples, each of which presents some claim for both distinctions. Thus, if the domestication of ruminants, or some knowledge of arts and metals, constitute civilization, then are the ingenious but half-torpid Hyperboreans civilized, for the Eskimos tame reindeer, and the Thlinkeets are skilful carvers and make use of copper; if the cultivation of the soil, the building of substantial houses of adobe, wood, and stone, with the manufacture of cloth and pottery, denote an exodus from savagism, then are the Pueblos of New Mexico no longer savages; yet in both these instances enough may be seen, either of stupidity or brutishness, to forbid our ranking them with the more advanced Aztecs, Mayas, and Quichés.

We know what savages are: how, like wild animals, they depend for food and raiment upon the spontaneous products of nature, migrating with the beasts and birds and fishes, burrowing beneath the ground, hiding in caves, or throwing over themselves a shelter of bark or skins or branches or boards, eating or starving as food is abundant or scarce; nevertheless, all of them have made some advancement from their original naked, helpless condition, and have acquired some aids in the procurement of their poor necessities. Primeval man, the only real point of departure, and hence the only true savage, nowhere exists on the globe to-day. Be the animal man never so low—lower in skill and wisdom than the brute, less active in obtaining food, less ingenious in building his den—the first step

Digitized by Google

out of his houseless, comfortless condition, the first fashioning of a tool, the first attempt to cover nakedness and wall out the wind, if this endeavor spring from intellect, and not from instinct, is the first step toward civilization. Hence the modern savage is not the pre-historic or primitive man; nor is it among the barbarous nations of to-day that we must look for the rudest barbarism.

Often is the question asked, What is civilization? and the answer comes, The act of civilizing; the state of being civilized. What is the act of civilizing? To reclaim from a savage or barbarous state; to educate; to refine. What is a savage or barbarous state? A wild uncultivated state; a state of nature. Thus far the dictionaries. The term civilization, then, popularly implies both the transition from a natural to an artificial state, and the artificial condition attained. The derivation of the word civilization, from *civis*, citizen, *civitas*, city, and originally from *cœtus*, union, seems to indicate that culture which, in feudal times, distinguished the occupants of cities from the ill-mannered boors of the country. The word savage, on the other hand, from *silva*, a wood, points to man primeval; *silvestres homines*, men of the forest, not necessarily ferocious or brutal, but children of nature. From these simple beginnings both words have gradually acquired a broader significance, until by one is understood a state of comfort, intelligence, and refinement; and by the other, humanity wild and bestial.

Guizot defines civilization as an "improved condition of man resulting from the establishment of social order in place of the individual independence and lawlessness of the savage or barbarous life;" Buckle as "the triumph of mind over external agents;" Virey as "the development more or less absolute of the moral and intellectual faculties of man united in society;" Burke as the exponent of two principles, "the spirit of a gentleman and the spirit of religion." "Whatever be the characteristics of what we call savage life," says

Digitized by Google

John Stuart Mill, "the contrary of these, or the qualities which society puts on as it throws off these, constitute civilization;" and, remarks Emerson, "a nation that has no clothing, no iron, no alphabet, no marriage, no arts of peace, no abstract thought, we call barbarous."

Men talk of civilization and call it liberty, religion, government, morality. Now liberty is no more a sign of civilization than tyranny; for the lowest savages are the least governed of all people. Civilized liberty, it is true, marks a more advanced stage than savage liberty, but between these two extremes of liberty there is a necessary age of tyranny, no less significant of an advance on primitive liberty than is constitutional liberty an advance on tyranny. Nor is religion civilization, except in so far as the form and machinery of sacerdotal rites, and the abandonment of fetichism for monotheism become significant of intenser thought and expansion of intellect. No nation ever practised grosser immorality, or what we of the present day hold to be immorality, than Greece during the height of her intellectual refinement. Peace is no more civilization than war, virtue than vice, good than evil. All these are the incidents, not the essence, of civilization.

That which we commonly call civilization is not an adjunct nor an acquirement of man; it is neither a creed nor a polity, neither science nor philosophy nor industry: it is rather the measure of progressional force implanted in man, the general fund of the nation's wealth, learning, and refinement, the storehouse of accumulated results, the essence of all best worth preserving from the distillations of good and the distillations of evil. It is a something between men no less than a something within them; for neither an isolated man nor an association of brutes can by any possibility become civilized.

Further than this, civilization is not only the measure of aggregated human experiences, but it is a living

Digitized by Google

working principle. It is a social transition; a moving forward rather than an end attained; a developing vitality rather than a fixed entity; it is the effort or aim at refinement rather than refinement itself; it is labor with a view to improvement, and not improvement consummated, although it may be and is the metre of such improvement. And this accords with latter-day teachings. Although in its infancy, and, moreover, unable to explain things unexplainable, the science of evolution thus far has proved that the normal condition of the human race, as well as that of physical nature, is progressional; that the plant in a congenial soil is not more sure to grow than is humanity with favorable surroundings certain to advance. Nay, more: we speak of the progress of civilization as of something that moves on of its own accord; we may, if we will, recognize in this onward movement, the same principle of life manifest in nature and in the individual man.

To things we do not understand we give names, with which by frequent use we become familiar, when we fancy that we know all about the things themselves. At the first glance civilization appears to be a simple matter; to be well clad, well housed, and well fed, to be intelligent and cultured, are better than nakedness and ignorance; therefore it is a good thing, a thing that men do well to strive for — and that is all. But once attempt to go below this placid surface, and investigate the nature of progressional phenomena, and we find ourselves launched upon an eternity of ocean, and in pursuit of the same occult Cause, which has been sought alike by philosophic and barbaric of every age and nation; we find ourselves face to face with a great mystery, to which we stand in the same relation as to other great mysteries, such as the origin of things, the principle of life, the soul-nature. When such questions are answered as, What is attraction, heat, electricity? what instinct, intellect, soul? Why are plants forced to grow and molecules to conglomer-

Digitized by Google

ate and go whirling in huge masses through space?—then we may know why society moves ever onward like a river in channels predetermined. At present, these phenomena we may understand in their action partially, in their essence not at all; we may mark effects, we may recognize the same principle under widely different conditions though we may not be able to discover what that principle is. Science tells us that these things are so; that certain combinations of certain elements are inevitably followed by certain results; but science does not attempt to explain why they are so. Nevertheless, a summary of such few simple thoughts as I have been able to gather upon the subject may be not wholly valueless.

And first, to assist our reflections, let us look for a moment at some of the primal principles in nature, not with a view to instruct in that direction, but rather to compare some of the energies of the material world with the intellectual or progressional energy in man; and of these I will mention such only as are currently accepted by latter-day science.

Within the confines of the conceivable universe one element alone is all-potential, all-pervading—Force. Throughout the realms of space, in and round all forms of matter, binding minutest atoms, balancing systems of worlds, rioting in life, rotting in death, under its various aspects mechanical and chemical, attractive and repulsive, this mighty power is manifest; a unifying, coalescing, and flowing power, older than time, quicker than thought, saturating all suns and planets, and filling to repletion all molecules and masses. Worlds and systems of worlds are sent whirling, worlds round worlds and systems round systems, in a mazy planetary dance, wherein the slightest tripping, the least excess of momentum or inertia, of tension or traction, in any part, and chaos were come again. Every conceivable entity, ponderable and imponderable, material and immaterial, is replete with force.

Digitized by Google

By it all moving bodies are set in motion, all motionless bodies held at rest; by it the infinitesimal atom is held an atom and the mass it held concrete, vapory moisture overspreads the land, light and heat animate senseless substance; by it forms of matter change, rocks grow and dissolve, mountains are made and unmade, the ocean heaves and swells, the eternal hills pulsate, the foundations of the deep rise up, and seas displace continents.

One other thing we know, which with the first comprises all our knowledge—Matter. Now force and matter are interdependent, one cannot exist without the other; as, for example, all substance, unless held together—which term obviously implies force—would speedily dissolve into inconceivable nothingness. But no less force is required to annihilate substance than to create it; force, therefore, is alike necessary to the existence or non-existence of matter, which reduces the idea of a possible absence of either force or matter to an absurdity; or in other words, it is impossible for the human mind to conceive of a state of things wherein there is no matter, and consequently no force.

Force has been called the soul of nature, and matter the body, for by force matter lives and moves and has its being.

Force, like matter, is divisible, infinitely so, as far as human experience goes; for, though ultimates may exist, they have never yet been reached; and it would seem that all physical phenomena, endlessly varied and bewildering as they may appear, spring from a few simple incomprehensible forces, the bases of which are attraction and repulsion; which may yet, indeed, derive their origin from One Only Source. In the morphological and geometrical displays of matter these phenomena assume a multitude of phases; all are interactive and interdependent, few are original or primary; for example, heat and electricity are the offspring of motion which is the result of attractive and repulsive force.

Digitized by Google

What is force and what matter, whether the one is the essence of a self-conscious Creator and the other his handiwork, or whether both are the offspring of a blind chance or fate—which latter hypothesis is simply unthinkable—it is not my purpose here to consider. I propose in this analysis to take things as I find them, to study the operations rather than the origin of phenomena, to determine what man does rather than what he ought to do, and to drop the subject at the confines of transcendentalism. When, therefore, I speak of force as the life of matter, it no more implies a self-existant materialism in man, than the soul of man implies a pantheistic self-existant soul in nature. Omnipotence can as easily create and sustain a universe through the media of antagonistic and interdependent forces as through any other means, can as easily place nature and man under the governance of fixed laws as to hold all under varying arbitrary dispensations, and can reconcile these laws with man's volition. Wells of bitterness are dug by disputants under meaningless words; scientists are charged with materialism and religionists with fanaticism, in their vain attempts to fathom the ways of the Almighty and restrict his powers to the limits of our weak understanding.

It has been said that, in the beginning, the sixty and odd supposed several elements of matter were in a chaotic state; that matter and force were poised in equilibrium or rioted at random throughout space; that out of this condition of things sprang form and development; regular motion and time began; matter condensed into revolving masses and marked off the days, and months, and years; organization and organisms were initiated and intellectual design became manifest. The infinitesimal molecules, balanced by universal equilibrium of forces, which before motion and time were but chaotic matter and force, were finally supposed to have been each endowed with an innate individuality. However this may be, we now see every atom in the universe athrill with force, and

Digitized by Google

possessed of chemical virtues, and, under conditions, with the faculty of activity. As to the Force behind force, or how or by what means this innate energy was or is implanted in molecules, we have here nothing to do. It is sufficient for our purpose that we find it there; yet the teachings of philosophy imply that this innate force is neither self-implanted nor self-operative; that whether, in pre-stellar times, infinitesimal particles of matter floated in space as nebulous fluid or objectless vapor without form or consistence, or whether all matter was united in one mass which was set revolving, and became broken into fragments which were sent whirling as suns and planets in every direction; that in either case, or in any other conceivable case, matter, whether as molecules or masses, was primordially, and is, endowed and actuated by a Creative Intelligence, which implanting force, vitality, intellect, soul, progress, is ever acting, moving, mixing, unfolding, and this in every part and in all the multitudinous combinations of matter; and that all forces and vitalities must have co-existed in the mass, innate in and around every atom.

Thus, in his great theory of the projective impulse given to heavenly bodies in counteraction of the attractive impulse, Sir Isaac Newton assumes that both impulses were given from without; that some power foreign to themselves projected into space these heavenly bodies and holds them there. So, too, when Laplace promulgated the idea that in pre-planetary times space was filled with particles and vapors, solar systems existing only in a nebulous state, and this nebula set revolving in one mass upon its own axis from west to east, and that as the velocity of this mass increased suns and planets were, by centrifugal force, thrown off and condensed into habitable but still whirling worlds, some impulse foreign to the revolving mass setting it in motion is implied.

With organization and motion, the phases of force, called heat, light, electricity, and magnetism, hitherto

Digitized by Google

held dormant in molecules are engendered; composition and decomposition ensue; matter assumes new and varying forms; a progressional development, which is nothing but intelligently directed motion, is initiated, and motion becomes eternal.

It is a well-established principle of physics that force cannot be created or lost. The conservation of force is not affected by the action or energies of moving bodies. Force is not created to set a body in motion, nor when expended, as we say, is it lost. The sum of all potential energies throughout the universe is always the same, whether matter is at rest or in motion. It is evident that so long as every molecule is charged with attractive force no atom can drop out into the depths of unoccupied and absolute space and become lost or annihilated; and so long as force is dependent on matter for its perceivable existence, force cannot escape beyond the confines of space and become lost in absolute void.

Not only are forces interdependent, but they are capable of being metamorphosed one into another. Thus intellectual energy invents a machine which drives a steamship across the ocean. This invention or creation of the mind is nothing else than a vitalization or setting at liberty of mechanical forces, and without this vitalization or applied intellectual force such mechanical force lies dormant as in so-called dead matter. Gravitation is employed to turn a water-wheel, caloric to drive a steam-engine, by means of either of which weights may be raised, heat, electricity, and light produced, and these new-created forces husbanded and made to produce still other forces or turned back into their original channels. And so in chemical and capillary action, the correlation of forces everywhere is found.

Between mind and matter there exists the most intimate relationship. Immateriality, in its various phases of force, life, intellect, so far as human consciousness can grasp it, is inseparable from materiality.

Digitized by Google

The body is but part of the soil on which it treads, and the mind can receive no impressions except through the organs of the body. The brain is the seat of thought and the organ of thought; neither can exist in a normal state apart from the other. As a rule, the power of the intellect is in proportion to the size and quality of the brain. Among animals, those of lowest order have the least brains; man, the most intellectual of animals, has relatively, if not absolutely, the largest brain. True, in some of the largest animals the cerebral mass is larger than in man, but, in its chemical composition, its convolutions, shape, and quality, that in man is superior; and it is in the quality rather than in the quantity of the nervous tissues that their superiority consists. Intelligence enters the brain by the organs of the senses, and through the nervous system its subtile influence radiates to every part of the body. All human activities are either mental or mechanical; nor will it be denied that mental activity is produced by mechanical means, or that mechanical activity is the result of mental force. Corporeal motion is mental force distributed to the various parts of the body.

The action of immaterial forces on the material substances of the human body manifestly accords with the action of immaterial forces elsewhere. All the physical and mechanical actions of the human body accord with the physical and mechanical forces elsewhere displayed. Man, we are told, was the last of all created things, but in the making of man no new matter was employed; nor in setting the body in motion can we discover that any new force was invented. Thus the heart beats upon mechanical principles; the eye sees and the voice speaks in accordance with the general laws of optics and acoustics.

To the observer, organic activity is but the product of combined inorganic forces. The same processes are at work, and in the same manner, in living and in so-called dead matter. Life, to all appearance, is but the

Digitized by Google

result of combined chemical and mechanical processes. Assimilation, digestion, secretion, are explainable by chemistry, and by chemistry alone. The stomach is a chemical retort, the body a chemical laboratory. Carbon, oxygen, hydrogen, nitrogen, combine and separate in the body as out of the body. The blood circulates upon purely mechanical principles; all muscular action is mechanical. In the phenomena of life, the only perceptible difference is in the combinations of fundamental elements; yet chemistry and mechanics cannot produce a live body.

With the foregoing well-recognized principles before us, let us now notice some few parallelisms between mechanical and social energetics.

Man, like every other natural substance, is a compound of force and matter. "Respiration," says Liebig, "is the falling weight, the bent spring, which keeps the clock in motion; the inspirations and respirations are the strokes of the pendulum which regulates." Atoms of matter, through the instrumentality of living force, cohere and coalesce under endless complex conditions into endless varieties of form and substance; so also the activities of man, corporeal and intellectual, result in vast accumulations of experiences, which accumulations become the property of the whole society. Society, like matter, is composed of units, each possessing certain forces, attractive and repulsive; societies act upon each other, like celestial bodies, in proportion to their volume and proximity, and the power of the unit increases with the increase of the mass. In association there is a force as silent and as subtile as that which governs atoms and holds worlds in equipoise; its grosser forms are known as government, worship, fashion, and the like; its finer essence is more delicate than thought. It is this social force, attractive and repulsive, that binds men together, tears them assunder, kneads, and knits, and shapes, and evolves; it is the origin of every birth, the ultimate of every activity. Mechanical forces are manifest in machines, as the

Digitized by Google

lever, the wheel, the inclined plane; progressional force is manifest in intellectual ingenuity, literature, art, science, which are the machines of human progress.

How many of all our joys and sorrows, our loves and hates, our good and evil actions, spring from physical causes only? Even material substances display moods and affections, as when heated, electrified, decomposed, or set in motion; the sea at rest presents a different mood from the sea raging. Jean-Jacques Rousseau's idea, that the soul might be governed for its good by material things working through the media of the senses, is not so extravagant, after all. 'The gospel according to Jean-Jacques,' as Carlyle puts it, runs as follows on this point—and indeed, the great Genevan evangelist at one time intended to devote a book to the subject under the title of *La Morale Sensitive:* "The striking and numerous observations that I had collected were beyond all dispute; and, in their physical origin, they appeared to me proper for furnishing an exterior regimen, which, varied according to circumstances, should be able to place or maintain the soul in the state most favorable to virtue. How many wanderings one might save the reason, how many vices might be hindered birth, if one could but force the animal economy to favor the moral order that it troubles so often. Climates, seasons, sounds, colors, darkness, light, the elements, food, noise, silence, movement, repose, all act on our bodily frame, and, by consequence, on our soul; all offer us a thousand firm holds to govern, in their origin, those sentiments by which we allow ourselves to be dominated."

In contemplating the numerous activities by which we are surrounded, again and again we are called upon to wonder at the marvellous regularity which characterizes all their movements. So regular are these movements, so sure are certain conditions to accompany certain results, that in physics, in chemistry, in physiology, and even in society, facts are collected and classified and from them laws are discovered as fixed

Digitized by Google

and irrevocable as the facts themselves, which laws, indeed, are themselves facts, no less than the facts from which they are deduced.

Highly cultivated nations frame laws that provide for many contingencies, but the code of nature has yet finer provisions. There are conditions that neither political nor social laws reach, there are none not reached by physical law; in society, criminals sometimes evade the law; in nature, never. So subtile are the laws of nature, that even thought cannot follow them; when we see that every molecule, by virtue of its own hidden force, attracts every other molecule, up to a certain point, and then from the same inherent influence every atom repels every other atom; when by experiments of physicists it has been proved that in polarization, crystallization, and chemical action there is not the slightest deviation from an almost startling regularity, with many other facts of like import—how many natural laws do we feel to be yet unrevealed, and from the exquisite delicacy of their nature unrevealable, to our present coarse understanding.

It would be indeed strange, if, when all the universe is under the governance of fixed laws—laws which regulate the motion of every molecule, no less than the revolutions of suns—laws of such subtile import, as, for instance, regulate the transformations of heat, the convertibility and correlation of force—it would be strange, I say, if such laws as these, when they reached the domain of human affairs, should pause and leave the world of man alone in purposeless wanderings.

To continue our analogies. As, latent in the atom, or in the mass, there are energies releasable only by heat or friction—as in charcoal, which holds, locked up, muriatic acid gas equivalent to ninety times its volume; or in spongy platinum, which holds in like manner oxygen, equal to eight hundred times its volume—so, latent in every individual, are numberless energies, which demand the friction of society to call them out.

Force comprises two elements, attraction and repul-

Digitized by Google

sion, analogous to the principles commonly called good and evil in the affairs of human society; take away from mechanical force either of these two oppugnant elements, and there could be neither organism nor life, so without both good and evil in human affairs there could be no progress.

If none of the forces of nature are dissipated or lost, and if force can no more be extinguished than matter, and like matter passes from one form into another, we may conclude that intellectual force is never dissipated or lost, but that the potential energies of mind and soul perpetually vibrate between man and nature.

Or again, if, as we have seen, energy of every kind is clothed in matter, and when employed and expended returns again to its place in matter; and if the mind draws its forces from the body, as it appears to do, both growing, acting, and declining simultaneously; and if the body draws its energy from the earth, which is no less possible: then may not intellectual and progressional force be derived from man's environment, and return thither when expended? Every created being borrows its material from the storehouse of matter, and when uncreated restores it again; so every individual born into society becomes charged with social force, with progressional energy, which, when expended, rests with society. Winslow's opinion on this subject is, that "all electric and magnetic currents originate in—are inducted from—and radiate either directly or indirectly out of the globe as the fountain of every form and constituency of mechanical force, and that abstract immaterial mechanical energy, as we have thus far discussed and developed its dual principles, is absolutely convertible through molecular motion into every form and expansion of secondary force, passing successively from heat through electricity, magnetism, etc, and *vice versa* it follows that this same mechanical energy itself, as hypostatical motive power, must proceed out of the globe also."

Thus is loaded with potential energy the universe of

Digitized by Google

matter, generating life, mind, civilization; and hence we may conclude that whatever else it is, civilization is a force; that it is the sum of all the forces employed to drive humanity onward; that it acts on man as mechanical force acts on matter, attracting, repelling, pressing forward yet holding in equilibrium, and all under fixed and determined laws.

From all which it would appear that nothing is found in man that has not its counterpart in nature, and that all things that are related to man are related to each other; even immortal mind itself is not unlike that subtile force, inherent in and working round every atom.

In this respect physical science is the precursor of social science. Nature produces man; man in his earlier conception of nature, that is, in his gods, reproduces himself; and later his knowledge of intrinsic self depends upon his knowledge of extrinsic agencies, so that as the laws that govern external nature are better understood, the laws that govern society are more definitely determined. The conditions of human progress can be wrought into a science only by pursuing the same course that raises into a science any branch of knowledge; that is, by collecting, classifying, and comparing facts, and therefrom discovering laws. Society must be studied as chemistry is studied; it must be analyzed, and its component parts—the solubilities, interactions, and crystallizations of religions, governments, and fashions ascertained. As in the earlier contemplations of physical nature the action of the elements was deemed fortuitous, so in a superficial survey of society all events appear to happen by chance; but on deeper investigation, in society as in physics, events apparently fortuitous may be reduced to immutable law. To this end the life of mankind on the globe must be regarded as the life of one man, successions of societies as successions of days in that life; for the activities of nations are but the sum of the activities of the individual members thereof.

Digitized by Google

We have seen that man's organism, as far as it may be brought under exact observation, is governed by the same processes that govern elemental principles in inorganic nature. The will of man attempting to exert itself in antagonism to these laws of nature is wholly ineffectual. We are all conscious of a will, conscious of a certain freedom in the exercise of our will, but wholly unconscious as to the line of separation between volition and environment. Part of our actions arise from fixed necessity, part are the result of free-will. Statistics, as they are accumulated and arranged, tend more and more to show that by far the greater part of human actions are not under individual control, and that the actions of masses are, in the main, wholly beyond the province of the human will.

Take the weather for a single day, and note the effect on the will. The direction of the wind not unfrequently governs one's train of thought; resolution often depends upon the dryness of the atmosphere, benevolence upon the state of the stomach; misfortunes, arising from physical causes, have ere now changed the character of a ruler from one of lofty self-sacrifice to one of peevish fretfulness, whereat his followers became estranged and his empire lost in consequence. In the prosecution of an enterprise, how often we find ourselves drifting far from the anticipated goal! The mind is governed by the condition of the body, the body by the conditions of climate and food; hence it is that many of our actions, which we conceive to be the result of free choice, arise from accidental circumstances.

It is only in the broader view of humanity that general laws are to be recognized, as Dr Draper remarks: "He who is immersed in the turmoil of a crowded city sees nothing but the acts of men; and, if he formed his opinion from his experience alone, must conclude that the course of events altogether depends on the uncertainties of human volition. But he who ascends to a sufficient elevation loses sight of the pass-

Digitized by Google

ing conflicts, and no longer hears the contentions. He discovers that the importance of individual action is diminishing as the panorama beneath him is extending; and if he could attain to the truly philosophical, the general point of view, disengage himself from all terrestrial influences and entanglements, rising high enough to see the whole at a glance, his acutest vision would fail to discern the slightest indication of man, his free-will, or his works."

Let us now glance at some of the manifestations of this progressional influence; first in its general aspects, after which we will notice its bearing on a few of the more important severalties intimately affecting humanity, such as religion, morality, government, and commerce—for there is nothing that touches man's welfare, no matter how lightly, in all his long journey from naked wildness to clothed and cultured intelligence, that is not placed upon him by this progressional impulse.

In every living thing there is an element of continuous growth; in every aggregation of living things there is an element of continuous improvement. In the first instance, a vital actuality appears; whence, no one can tell. As the organism matures, a new germ is formed, which, as the parent stock decays, takes its place and becomes in like manner the parent of a successor. Thus even death is but the door to new forms of life. In the second instance, a body corporate appears, no less a vital actuality than the first; a social organism in which, notwithstanding ceaseless births and deaths, there is a living principle. For while individuals are born and die, families live; while families are born and die, species live; while species are born and die, organic being assumes new forms and features. Herein the all-pervading principle of life, while flitting, is nevertheless permanent, while transient is yet eternal. But above and independent of perpetual birth and death is this element of continuous

Digitized by Google

growth, which, like a spirit, walks abroad and mingles in the affairs of men. "All our progress," says Emerson, "is an unfolding, like the vegetable bud. You have first an instinct, then an opinion, then a knowledge, as the plant has root, bud, and fruit."

Under favorable conditions, and up to a certain point, stocks improve; by a law of natural selection the strongest and fittest survive, while the ill-favored and deformed perish; under conditions unfavorable to development, stocks remain stationary or deteriorate. Paradoxically, so far as we know, organs and organisms are no more perfect now than in the beginning; animal instincts are no keener, nor are their habitudes essentially changed. No one denies that stocks improve, for such improvement is perceptible and permanent; many deny that organisms improve, for if there be improvement it is imperceptible, and has thus far escaped proof. But, however this may be, it is palpable that the mind, and not the body, is the instrument and object of the progressional impulse.

Man in the duality of his nature is brought under two distinct dominions: materially he is subject to the laws that govern matter, mentally to the laws that govern mind; physiologically he is perfectly made and non-progressive, psychologically he is embryonic and progressive. Between these internal and external forces, between moral and material activities, there may be, in some instances, an apparent antagonism. The mind may be developed in excess and to the detriment of the body, and the body may be developed in excess and to the detriment of the mind.

The animal man is a bundle of organs, with instincts implanted that set them in motion; man intellectual is a bundle of sentiments, with an implanted soul that keeps them effervescent; mankind in the mass, society, —we see the fermentations, we mark the transitions: is there, then, a soul in aggregated humanity as there is in individual humanity?

The instincts of man's animality teach the organs

Digitized by Google

to perform their functions as perfectly at the first as at the last; the instincts of man's intellectuality urge him on in an eternal race for something better, in which perfection is never attained nor attainable; in society, we see the constant growth, the higher and yet higher development: now in this ever-onward movement are there instincts which originate and govern action in the body social as in the body individual? Is not society a bundle of organs, with an implanted Soul of Progress, which moves mankind along in a resistless predetermined march?

Nations are born and die; they appear first in a state of infancy or savagism; many die in their childhood, some grow into manhood and rule for a time the destinies of the world; finally, by sudden extinction, or a lingering decrepitude, they disappear, and others take their place. But in this ceaseless coming and going there is somewhere a mysterious agency at work, making men better, wiser, nobler, whether they will or not. This improvement is not the effect of volition; the plant does not will to unfold, nor the immature animal to grow; neither can the world of human kind cease to advance in mind and in manners. Development is the inevitable incident of being. Nations, under normal conditions, can no more help advancing than they can throw themselves into a state of non-existence; than can the individual stop his corporeal growth, or shut out from the intellect every perception of knowledge, and become a living petrification. And in whatever pertains to intellectual man this fundamental principle is apparent. It underlies all moralities, governments, and religions, all industries, arts, and commerce; it is the mainspring of every action, the consequence of every cause; it is the great central idea toward which all things converge; it is the object of all efforts, the end of all successes; it absorbs all forces, and is the combined results of innumerable agencies, good and evil.

Before the theory of Dr Von Martius and his follow-

Digitized by Google

ers, that the savage state is but a degeneration from something higher, can become tenable, the whole order of nature must be reversed. Races may deteriorate, civilized peoples relapse into barbarism, but such relapse cannot take place except under abnormal conditions. We cannot believe that any nation once learning the use of iron would cast it away for stone. Driven from an iron-yielding land, the knowledge of iron might at last be forgotten, but its use would never be voluntarily relinquished. And so with any of the arts or inventions of man. Societies, like individuals, are born, mature, and decay; they grow old and die; they may pause in their progress, become diseased, and thereby lose their strength, and retrograde, but they never turn around and grow backward or ungrow—they could not if they would.

In the brute creation this element of progress is wanting. The bird builds its nest, the bee its cell, the beaver its dam, with no more skill or elaboration to-day than did the bird or bee or beaver primeval. The instinct of animals does not with time become intellect; their comforts do not increase, their sphere of action does not enlarge. By domestication, stocks may be improved, but nowhere do we see animals uniting for mutual improvement, or creating for themselves an artificial existence. So in man, whose nature comprises both the animal and the intellectual, the physical organism neither perceptibly advances nor deteriorates. The features may, indeed, beam brighter from the light of a purer intellectuality cast upon them from within, but the hand, the eye, the heart, so far as we know, is no more perfect now than in the days of Adam.

As viewed by Mr Bagehot, the body of the accomplished man "becomes, by training, different from what it once was, and different from that of the rude man, becomes charged with stored virtue and acquired faculty which come away from it unconsciously." But the body of the accomplished man dies, and the son can

Digitized by Google

in no wise inherit it, whereas the soul of his accomplishments does not die, but lives in the air, and becomes part of the vital breath of society. And again, "power that has been laboriously acquired and stored up as statical in one generation" sometimes, says Maudsley, "becomes the inborn faculty of the next; and the development takes place in accordance with that law of increasing speciality and complexity of adaption to external nature which is traceable through the animal kingdom; or in other words, that law of progress, from the general to the special, in development, which the appearance of nerve force amongst natural forces and the complexity of the nervous system of man both illustrate." On the other side, John Stuart Mill is just as positive that culture is not inherent. "Of all vulgar modes," he remarks, "of escaping from the consideration of the effect of social and moral influences on the human mind, the most vulgar is that of attributing the diversities of conduct and character to inherent natural differences;" and, says Mr Buckle, "we cannot safely assume that there has been any permanent improvement in the moral or intellectual faculties of man, nor have we any decisive ground for saying that those faculties are likely to be greater in an infant born in the most civilized part of Europe than in one born in the wildest region of a barbarous country."

Whether or not the nervous system, which is the connective tissue between man's animality and his intellectuality, transmits its subtile forces from one generation to another, we may be sure that the mind acts on the nerves, and the nerves on every part of the system, and that the intelligence of the mind influences and governs the materialism of the body, and the consequences in some way are felt by succeeding generations; but that the mind becomes material, and its qualities transmitted to posterity, is an hypothesis yet unestablished.

Moreover we may safely conclude that the improvement of mankind is a phenomenon purely intellectual.

Digitized by Google

Not that the improvement of the mind is wholly independent of the condition of the body; for, as we shall hereafter see, so intimate is the connection between the mind and the body, that the first step toward intellectual advancement cannot be taken until the demands of the body are satisfied. Nervous phenomena are dependent upon the same nutritive processes that govern physical development; and that this nerve force, through whose agency the system is charged with intellectuality, as the molecule is charged with mechanical force, does exist, is capable, to some extent, of transmitting acquirements or artificial instincts from parent to child, we have every reason to believe; but, so far as we know, intellectual force, *per se*, is no more a transmittible entity than is the flesh-quivering of the slain ox life.

The strangest part of it all is, that though wrought out by man as the instrument, and while acting in the capacity of a free agent, this spirit of progress is wholly independent of the will of man. Though in our individual actions we imagine ourselves directed only by our free-will, yet in the end it is most difficult to determine what is the result of free-will, and what of inexorable environment. While we think we are regulating our affairs, our affairs are regulating us. We plan out improvements, predetermine the best course and follow it, sometimes; yet, for all that, the principle of social progress is not the man, is not in the man, forms no constituent of his physical or psychical individual being; it is the social atmosphere into which the man is born, into which he brings nothing and from which he takes nothing. While a member of society he adds his quota to the general fund and there leaves it; while acting as a free agent he performs his part in working out this problem of social development, performs it unconsciously, willing or unwilling he performs it, his baser passions being as powerful instruments of progress as his nobler; for avarice drives on intellect as effectually as benevolence,

Digitized by Google

hate as love, and selfishness does infinitely more for the progress of mankind than philanthropy. Thus is humanity played upon by this principle of progress, and the music sometimes is wonderful; green fields as if by magic take the place of wild forests, magnificent cities rise out of the ground, the forces of nature are brought under the dominion of man's intelligence, and senseless substances endowed with speech and action.

It is verily as Carlyle says: "Under the strangest new vesture, the old great truth (since no vesture can hide it) begins again to be revealed: That man is what we call a miraculous creature, with miraculous power over men; and, on the whole, with such a Life in him, and such a World round him, as victorious Analysis, with her Physiologies, Nervous Systems, Physic and Metaphysic, will never completely name, to say nothing of explaining."

Thus, to sum up the foregoing premises: in society, between two or more individuals, there is at work a mysterious energy, not unlike that of force between molecules or life in the organism; this social energy is under intelligent governance, not fortuitous nor causeless, but reducible to fixed law, and capable of being wrought into a science; is, moreover, a vital actuality, not an incident nor an accident, but an entity, as attraction and repulsion are entities; under this agency society, perforce, develops like the plant from a germ. This energy acts on the intellect, and through the intellect on the organism; acts independently of the will, and cannot be created or destroyed by man; is not found in the brute creation, is not transmittible by generation through individuals, is wrought out by man as a free-will agent, though acting unconsciously, and is the product alike of good and evil.

As to the causes which originate progressional phenomena there are differences of opinion. One sees in the intellect the germ of an eternal unfolding; another recognizes in the soul-element the vital principle of

Digitized by Google

progress, and attributes to religion all the benefits of enlightenment; one builds a theory on the groundwork of a fundamental and innate morality; another discovers in the forces of nature the controlling influence upon man's destiny; while yet others, as we have seen, believe accumulative and inherent nervous force to be the media through which culture is transmitted. Some believe that moral causes create the physical, others that physical causes create the moral.

Thus Mr Buckle attempts to prove that man's development is wholly dependent upon his physical surroundings. Huxley points to a system of reflex actions—mind acting on matter, and matter on mind—as the possible culture-basis. Darwin advances the doctrine of an evolution from vivified matter as the principle of progressive development. In the transmutation of nerve-element from parents to children, Bagehot sees "the continuous force which binds age to age, which enables each to begin with some improvement on the last, if the last did itself improve; which makes each civilization, not a set of detached dots, but a line of color, surely enhancing shade by shade." Some see in human progress the ever-ruling hand of a divine providence, others the results of man's skill; with some it is free-will, with others necessity; some believe that intellectual development springs from better systems of government, others that wealth lies at the foundation of all culture; every philosopher recognizes some cause, invents some system, or brings human actions under the dominion of some species of law.

As in animals of the same genus or species, inhabiting widely different localities, we see the results of common instincts, so in the evolutions of the human race, divided by time or space, we see the same general principles at work. So, too, it would seem, whether species are one or many, whether man is a perfectly created being or an evolution from a lower form, that all the human races of the globe are formed on one

Digitized by Google

model and governed by the same laws. In the customs, languages, and myths of ages and nations far removed from each other in social, moral, and mental characteristics, innumerable and striking analogies exist. Not only have all nations weapons, but many which are separated from each other by a hemisphere use the same weapon; not only is belief universal, but many relate the same myth; and to suppose the bow and arrow to have had a common origin, or that all flood-myths and myths of a future life are but offshoots from Noachic and Biblical narratives, is scarcely reasonable.

It is easier to tell what civilization is not, and what it does not spring from, than what it is and what its origin. To attribute its rise to any of the principles, ethical, political, or material, that come under the cognizance of man, is fallacy, for it is as much an entity as any other primeval principle; nor may we, with Archbishop Whately, entertain the doctrine that civilization never could have arisen had not the Creator appeared upon earth as the first instructor; for, unfortunately for this hypothesis, the aboriginals, supposedly so taught, were scarcely civilized at all, and compare unfavorably with the other all-perfect works of creation; so that this sort of reasoning, like innumerable other attempts of man to limit the powers of Omnipotence, and narrow them down to our weak understandings, is little else than puerility.

Nor, as we have seen, is this act of civilizing the effect of volition; nor, as will hereafter more clearly appear, does it arise from an inherent principle of good any more than from an inherent principle of evil. The ultimate result, though difficult of proof, we take for granted to be good, but the agencies employed for its consummation number among them more of those we call evil than of those we call good. The isolated individual never, by any possibility, can become civilized like the social man; he cannot even speak, and without a flow of words there can be no complete flow

Digitized by Google

of thought. Send him forth away from his fellow-man to roam the forest with the wild beasts, and he would be almost as wild and beast-like as his companions; it is doubtful if he would ever fashion a tool, but would not rather with his claws alone procure his food, and forever remain as he now is, the most impotent of animals. The intellect, by which means alone man rises above other animals, never could work, because the intellect is quickened only as it comes in contact with intellect. The germ of development therein implanted cannot unfold singly any more than the organism can bear fruit singly. It is a well-established fact that the mind without language cannot fully develop; it is likewise established that language is not inherent, that it springs up between men, not in them. Language, like civilization, belongs to society, and is in no wise a part or the property of the individual. "For strangely in this so solid-seeming World," says Carlyle, "which nevertheless is in continual restless flux, it is appointed that Sound, to appearance the most fleeting, should be the most continuing of all things." And further, as remarked by Herbert Spencer: "Now that the transformation and equivalence of forces is seen by men of science to hold not only throughout all inorganic actions, but throughout all organic actions; now that even mental changes are recognized as the correlatives of cerebral changes, which also conform to this principle; and now that there must be admitted the corollary that all actions going on in a society are measured by certain antecedent energies, which disappear in effecting them, while they themselves become actual or potential energies from which subsequent actions arise—it is strange that there should not have arisen the consciousness that these higher phenomena are to be studied as lower phenomena have been studied: not, of course, after the same physical methods, but in conformity with the same principles."

We may hold, then, *a priori*, that this progressional

Digitized by Google

principle exists; that it exists not more in the man than around him; that it requires an atmosphere in which to live, as life in the body requires an atmosphere which is its vital breath, and that this atmosphere is generated only by the contact of man with man. Under analysis this social atmosphere appears to be composed of two opposing principles—good and evil—which, like attraction and repulsion, or positive and negative electricity, underlie all activities. One is as essential to progress as the other; either, in excess or disproportionately administered, like an excess of oxygen or of hydrogen in the air, becomes pernicious, engenders social disruptions and decay which continue until the equilibrium is restored; yet all the while with the progress of humanity the good increases while the evil diminishes. Every impulse incident to humanity is born of the union of these two opposing principles. For example, as I have said, and will attempt more fully to show further on, association is the first requisite of progress. But what is to bring about association? Naked nomads will not voluntarily yield up their freedom, quit their wanderings, hold conventions and pass resolutions concerning the greatest good to the greatest number; patriotism, love, benevolence, brotherly kindness, will not bring savage men together; extrinsic force must be employed, an iron hand must be laid upon them which will compel them to unite, else there can be no civilization; and to accomplish this first great good to man—to compel mankind to take the initial step toward the amelioration of their condition—it is ordained that an evil, or what to us of these latter times is surely an evil, come forward—and that evil is War.

Primeval man, in his social organization, is patriarchal, spreading out over vast domains in little bands or families, just large enough to be able successfully to cope with wild beasts. And in that state humanity would forever remain did not some terrible cause force these bands to confederate. War is an evil,

Digitized by Google

originating in hateful passions and ending in dire misery; yet without war, without this evil, man would forever remain primitive. But something more is necessary. War brings men together for a purpose, but it is insufficient to hold them together; for when the cause which compacted them no longer exists, they speedily scatter, each going his own way. Then comes in superstition to the aid of progress. A successful leader is first feared as a man, then reverenced as a supernatural being, and finally himself, or his descendant, in the flesh or in tradition, is worshipped as a god. Then an unearthly fear comes upon mankind, and the ruler, perceiving his power, begins to tyrannize over his fellows. Both superstition and tyranny are evils; yet without war, superstition, and tyranny, dire evils, civilization, which many deem the highest good, never by any possibility, as human nature is, could be. But more of the conditions of progress hereafter; what I wish to establish here is, that evil is no less a stimulant of development than good, and that in this principle of progress are manifest the same antagonism of forces apparent throughout physical nature; the same oppugnant energies, attractive and repulsive, positive and negative, everywhere existing. It is impossible for two or more individuals to be brought into contact with each other, whether through causes or for purposes good or evil, without ultimate improvement to both. I say whether through causes or for purposes good or evil, for, to the all-pervading principle of evil, civilization is as much indebted as to the all-pervading principle of good. Indeed, the beneficial influences of this unwelcome element have never been generally recognized. Whatever be this principle of evil, whatever man would be without it, the fact is clearly evident that to it civilization, whatever that may be, owes its existence. "The whole tendency of political economy and philosophical history," says Lecky, "which reveal the physiology of society, is to show that the happiness and welfare

Digitized by Google

of mankind are evolved much more from our selfish than what are termed our virtuous acts." No wonder that devil-worship obtains, in certain parts, when to his demon the savage finds himself indebted for skill not only to overthrow subordinate deities, but to cure diseases, to will an enemy to death, to minister to the welfare of departed friends, as well as to add materially to his earthly store of comforts. The world, such as it is, man finds himself destined for a time to inhabit. Within him and around him the involuntary occupant perceives two agencies at work; agencies apparently oppugnant, yet both tending to one end—improvement; and Night or Day, Love or Crime, leads all souls to the Good, as Emerson sings. The principle of evil acts as a perpetual stimulant, the principle of good as a reward of merit. United in their operation, there is a constant tendency toward a better condition, a higher state; apart, the result would be inaction. For, civilization being a progression, and not a fixed condition, without incentives, that is, without something to escape from and something to escape to, there could be no transition, and hence no civilization.

Had man been placed in the world perfected and sinless, obviously there would be no such thing as progress. The absence of evil implies perfect good, and perfect good perfect happiness. Were man sinless and yet capable of increasing knowledge, the incentive would be wanting; for, if perfectly happy, why should he struggle to become happier? The advent of civilization is in the appearance of a want, and the first act of civilization springs from the attempt to supply the want. The man or nation that wants nothing remains inactive, and hence does not advance; so that it is not in what we have but in what we have not that civilization consists. These wants are forced upon us, implanted within us, inseparable from our being; they increase with an increasing supply, grow hungry from what they feed on; in quick succession, aspirations,

Digitized by Google

emulations, and ambitions spring up and chase each other, keeping the fire of discontent ever glowing, and the whole human race effervescent.

The tendency of civilizing force, like the tendency of mechanical force, is toward an equilibrium, toward a never-attainable rest. Obviously there can be no perfect equilibrium, no perfect rest, until all evil disappears, but in that event the end of progress would be attained, and humanity would be perfect and sinless.

Man at the outset is not what he may be: he is capable of improvement, or rather of growth; but child-like, the savage does not care to improve, and consequently must be scourged into it. Advancement is the ultimate natural or normal state of man; humanity on this earth is destined some day to be relatively, if not absolutely, good and happy.

The healthy body has appetites, in the gratification of which lies its chiefest enjoyment; the healthy mind has proclivities, the healthy soul intuitions; in the exercise and activities of which the happiest life is attainable; and in as far as the immaterial and immortal in our nature is superior to the material and mortal, in so far does the education and devolopment of our higher nature contribute in a higher degree to our present benefit and our future well-being.

There is another thought in this connection well worthy our attention. In orthodox and popular parlance, labor is a curse entailed on man by vindictive justice; yet viewed as a civilizing agent, labor is man's greatest blessing. Throughout all nature there is no such thing found as absolute inertness; and as in matter, so with regard to our faculties, no sooner do they begin to rest than they begin to rot, and even in the rotting they can obtain no rest. One of the chief objects of labor is to get gain, and Dr Johnson holds that "men are seldom more innocently employed than when they are making money."

Human experience teaches, that in the effort is greater pleasure than in the end attained; that labor

Digitized by Google

is the normal condition of man; that in acquisition, that is, progress, is the highest happiness; that passive enjoyment is inferior to the exhilaration of active attempt. Now, imagine the absence from the world of this spirit of evil, and what would be the result? Total inaction. But before inaction can become more pleasurable than action, man's nature must be changed. Not to say that evil is a good thing, clearly there is a goodness in things evil; and in as far as the state of escaping from evil is more pleasurable than the state of evil escaped from, in so far is evil conducive to happiness.

The effect of well-directed labor is twofold: by exercise our faculties strengthen and expand, and at the same time the returns of that labor give us leisure in which to direct our improved faculties to yet higher aims. By continual efforts to increase material comforts, greater skill is constantly acquired, and the mind asserts more and more its independence. Increasing skill yields ever-increased delights, which encourage and reward our labor. This, up to a certain point; but with wealth and luxury comes relaxed energy. Without necessity there is no labor; without labor, no advancement. Corporeal necessity first forces corporeal activity; then the intellect goes to work to contrive means whereby labor may be lessened and made more productive.

The discontent which arises from discomfort lies at the root of every movement; but then comfort is a relative term, and complete satisfaction is never attained. Indeed, as a rule, the more squalid and miserable the race, the more are they disposed to settle down and content themselves in their state of discomfort. What is discomfort to one is luxury to another; "the mark of rank in nature is capacity for pain;" in following the intellectual life, the higher the culture the greater the discontent; the greater the acquisition, the more eagerly do men press forward toward some higher and greater imaginary good. We

Digitized by Google

all know that blessings in excess become the direst curses; but few are conscious where the benefit of a blessing terminates and the curse begins, and fewer still of those who are able thus to discriminate have the moral strength to act upon that knowledge. As a good in excess is an evil, so evil as it enlarges outdoes itself and tends toward self-annihilation. If we but look about us, we must see that to burn up the world in order to rid it of gross evil—a dogma held by some—is unnecessary, for accumulative evils ever tend toward reaction. Excessive evils are soonest remedied; the equilibrium of the evil must be maintained, or the annihilation of the evil ensues.

Institutions and principles essentially good at one time are essential evils at another time. The very aids and agencies of civilization become afterward the greatest drags upon progress. At one time it would seem that blind faith was essential to improvement, at another time scepticism; at one time order and morality, at another time lawlessness and rapine; for so it has ever been, and whether peace and smiling plenty, or fierce upheavals and dismemberments, predominate, from every social spasm as well as fecund leisure, civilization shoots forward in its endless course. The very evils which are regarded as infamous by a higher culture were the necessary stepping-stones to that higher life. As we have seen, no nation ever did or can emerge from barbarism without first placing its neck under the yokes of despotism and superstition; therefore, despotism and superstition, now dire evils, were once essential benefits. No religion ever attained its full development except under persecution. Our present evils are constantly working out for humanity unforeseen good. All systems of wrongs and fanaticisms are but preparing us for and urging us on to a higher state.

If, then, civilization is a predestined, ineluctable, and eternal march away from things evil toward that which is good, it must be that throughout the world

Digitized by Google

the principle of good is ever increasing and that of evil decreasing. And this is true. Not only does evil decrease, but the tendency is ever toward its disappearance. Gradually the confines of civilization broaden; the central principle of human progress attains greater intensity; and the mind assumes more and more its lordly power over matter.

The moment we attempt to search out the cause of any onward movement, we at once encounter this principle of evil. The old-time aphorism that life is a perpetual struggle; the first maxim of social ethics, "The greatest happiness to the greatest number:" indeed, every thought and action of our lives points in the same direction. From what is it mankind is so eager to escape? with what do we wrestle? for what do we strive? We fly from that which gives pain to that which gives pleasure; we wrestle with agencies which bar our escape from a state of infelicity; we long for happiness.

Then comes the question, What is happiness? Is man polished and refined happier than man wild and unfettered? is civilization a blessing, or a curse? Rousseau, we know, held it to be the latter; but not so Virey. "What!" he exclaims, "is he happier than the social man, this being abandoned in his maladies, uncared for even by his children in his improvident old age, exposed to ferocious beasts, in fear of his own kind, even of the cannibal's tooth? The civilized man, surrounded in his feebleness by affectionate attention, sustains a longer existence, enjoys more pleasure and daily comforts, is better protected against inclemencies of weather and all external ills. The isolated man must suffice for himself, must harden himself to endure any privation; his very existence depends upon his strength, and if necessity requires it of him, he must be ready to abandon wife and children and life itself at any moment. Such cruel misery is rare in social life, where the sympathies of humanity are awakened, and freely exercised."

Digitized by Google

Continue these simple interrogatories a little farther and see where we land. Is the wild bird, forced to long migrations for endurable climates and food, happier than the caged bird which buys a daily plentiful supply for a song? Is the wild beast, ofttimes hungry and hunted, happier than its chained brother of the menagerie? Is the wild horse, galloping with its fellows over the broad prairie, happier than the civilized horse of carriage, cart, or plough? May we not question whether the merchant deep in his speculating ventures, or the man of law poring over his brain-tearing brief, derives a keener sense of enjoyment than does the free forest-native following the war-path or pursuing his game?

As I have attempted to show, civilization is not an end attained, for man is never wholly civilized, but only the effort to escape from an evil, or an imaginary evil—savagism. I say an evil real or imaginary, for, as we have seen, the question has been seriously discussed whether civilization is better or worse than savagism. For every advantage which culture affords, a price must be paid—some say too great a price. The growth of the mind is dependent upon its cultivation, but this cultivation may be voluntary or involuntary, it may be a thing desired or a thing abhorred.

Every nation, every society, and every person has its or his own standard of happiness. The miser delights in wealth, the city belle in finery, the scholar in learning. The Christian's heaven is a spiritual city, where they neither marry nor are given in marriage; the Norseman's a valhalla of alternate battle and wassail; the Mahometan's, a paradise of houris and lazy sensuality. The martyr at the stake, triumphant in his faith, may be happier than the man of fashion dying of ennui and gout; the savage, wandering through forest and over plain in pursuit of game, or huddled in his hut with wives and children, may be happier than the care-laden speculator or the wrangling politician. Content, the essence of all happiness, is as prevalent

Digitized by Google

among the poor and ill-mannered as among the rich, refined, and civilized. *Ubi bene, ibi patria*—where it is well with me, there is my country—is the motto of the Indian; and to be well with him signifies only to be beyond the reach of hunger and enemies. Ask the savage which is preferable, a native or a cultured state, and he will answer the former; ask the civilized man, and he will say the latter. I do not see any greater absurdity in the wild man saying to the tamed one, Give up the despotisms and diseases of society and throw yourself with me upon beauteous, bounteous nature, than in the European saying to the American, If you would find happiness, abandon your filth and naked freedom, accept Christianity and cotton shirts, go to work in a mission, rot on a reservation, or beg and starve in civilized fashion!

Of all animals man alone has broken down the barriers of his nature in civilizing, or, as Rousseau expresses it, in denaturalizing himself; and for this denaturalization some natural good must be relinquished; to every infringement of nature's law there is a penalty attached; for a more delicate organism the price is numberless new diseases; for political institutions the price is native freedom. With polished manners the candidate for civilization must accept affectation, social despotism; with increasing wealth, increasing wants; civilization engenders complexity in society, and in its turn is engendered thereby. Peoples the most highly cultured are moved by the most delicate springs; a finer touch, the result of greater skill, with a finer tone, the result of greater experience, produces music more and yet more exquisite.

Were man only an animal, this denaturalization, and more, would be true. The tamed brute gives up all the benefits of savagism for few of the blessings of civilization; in a cultured state, as compared to a state of wild freedom, its ills are numberless, its advantages infinitesimal. But human nature is twofold, objective and subjective; the former typical of the

Digitized by Google

savage state, the latter of the civilized. Man is not wholly animal; and by cultivating the mind, that is, by civilizing himself, he is no more denaturalized than by cultivating the body, and thereby acquiring greater physical perfection. We cannot escape our nature; we cannot re-create ourselves; we can only submit ourselves to be polished and improved by the eternal spirit of progress. The moral and the intellectual are as much constituents of human nature as the physical; civilization, therefore, is as much the natural state of man as savagism.

Another more plausible and partially correct assertion is, that by the development of the subjective part of our nature, objective humanity becomes degenerated. The intellectual cannot be wrought up to the highest state of cultivation except at the expense of the physical, nor the physical fully developed without limiting the mental. The efforts of the mind draw from the energies of the body; the highest and healthiest vigor of the body can only be attained when the mind is at rest, or in a state of careless activity. In answer to which I should say, that beyond a certain point it is true; one would hardly train successfully for a prize fight and the tripos at the same time; but that the non-intellectual savage, as a race, is physically superior, capable of enduring greater fatigue, or more skilful in muscular exercise than the civilized man, is inconsistent with facts. Civilization has its vices as well as its virtues, savagism has its advantages as well as its demerits.

The evils of savagism are not so great as we imagine; its pleasures more than we are apt to think. As we become more and more removed from evils, their magnitude enlarges; the fear of suffering increases as suffering is less experienced and witnessed. If savagism holds human life in light esteem, civilization makes death more hideous than it really is; if savagism is more cruel, it is less sensitive. Combatants accustomed to frequent encounter think lightly of

Digitized by Google

wounds, and those whose life is oftenest imperilled think least of losing it. Indifference to pain is not necessarily the result of cruelty; it may arise as well from the most exalted sentiment as from the basest.

Civilization not only engenders new vices, but proves the destroyer of many virtues. Among the wealthier classes energy gives way to enjoyment, luxury saps the foundation of labor, progress becomes paralyzed, and with now and then a noble exception, but few earnest workers in the paths of literature, science, or any of the departments which tend to the improvement of mankind are to be found among the powerful and the affluent, while the middle classes are absorbed in money-getting, unconsciously thereby, it is true, working toward the ends of civilization.

That civilization is expedient, that it is a good, that it is better than savagism, we who profess to be civilized entertain no doubt. Those who believe otherwise must be ready to deny that health is better than disease, truth than superstition, intellectual power than stupid ignorance; but whether the miseries and vices of savagism or those of civilization are the greater, is another question. The tendency of civilization is, on the whole, to purify the morals, to give equal rights to man, to distribute more equally among men the benefits of this world, to melioriate wholesale misery and degradation, offer a higher aim and the means of accomplishing a nobler destiny, to increase the power of the mind and give it dominion over the forces of nature, to place the material in subservience to the mental, to elevate the individual and regulate society. True, it may be urged that this heaping up of intellectual fruits tends toward monopoly, toward making the rich richer and the poor poorer, but I still hold that the benefits of civilization are for the most part evenly distributed; that wealth beyond one's necessity is generally a curse to the possessor greater than the extreme of poverty; and that the true blessings of culture and refinement, like air and sunshine, are free to all.

Digitized by Google

Civilization, it is said, multiplies wants, but then they are ennobling wants, better called aspirations, and many of these civilization satisfies.

If civilization breeds new vices, old ones are extinguished by it. Decency and decorum hide the hideousness of vice, drive it into dark corners, and thereby raise the tone of morals and weaken vice. Thus civilization promotes chastity, elevates woman, breaks down the barriers of hate and superstition between ancient nations and religions; individual energy, the influence of one over the many, becomes less and less felt, and the power of the people becomes stronger.

Civilization in itself cannot but be beneficial to man: that which makes society more refined, more intellectual, less bestial, more courteous; that which cures physical and mental diseases, increases the comforts and luxury of life, purifies religions, makes juster governments—must surely be beneficial; it is the universal principle of evil which impregnates all human affairs, alloying even current coin, which raises the question. That there are evils attending civilization, as all other benefits, none can deny, but civilization itself is no evil.

If I have succeeded in presenting clearly the foregoing thoughts, enough has been said as to the nature and essence of civilization; let us now examine some of the conditions essential to intellectual development. For it must not be forgotten that, while every department of human progress is but the unfolding of a germ; while every tendency of our life, every custom and creed of our civilization, finds its rudiment in savagism; while, as man develops, no new elements of human nature are created by the process; while, as the organism of the child is as complex and complete as the organism of the man, so is humanity in a savage state the perfect germ of humanity civilized—it must not be forgotten in all this that civilization cannot unfold except under favorable conditions. Just as the plant,

Digitized by Google

though endowed with life which corresponds to the mind-principle in progress, requires for its growth a suitable soil and climate, so this progressional phenomenon must have soil and sunshine before it yields fruit; and this is another proof that civilization is not in the man more than around him; for if the principle were inherent in the individual, then the Hyperborean, with his half-year of light and half-year of underground darkness, must of necessity become civilized equally with the man born amidst the sharpening jostles of a European capital; for in all those parts that appertain solely to the intrinsic individual, the one develops as perfectly as the other. A people undergoing the civilizing process need not necessarily—does not, indeed—advance in every species of improvement at the same time; in some respects the nation may be stationary, in others even retrograde. Every age and every nation has its special line of march. Literature and the fine arts reached their height in pagan Greece; monotheism among the Hebrews; science unfolded in Egypt, and government in Rome.

In every individual there is some one talent that can be cultivated more advantageously than any other; so it is with nations, every people possesses some natural advantage for development in some certain direction over every other people, and often the early history of a nation, like the precocious proclivities of the child, points toward its future; and in such arts and industries as its climate and geographical position best enable it to develop is discovered the germ of national character. Seldom is the commercial spirit developed in the interior of a continent, or the despotic spirit on the border of the sea, or the predatory spirit in a country wholly devoid of mountains and fastnesses. It cannot be said that one nation or race is inherently better fitted for civilization than another; all may not be equally fitted for exactly the same civilization, but all are alike fitted for that civilization which, if left to itself, each will work out.

Digitized by Google

Mankind, moreover, advances spasmodically, and in certain directions only at a time, which is the greatest drawback to progress. As Lecky remarks: "Special agencies, such as religious or political institutions, geographical conditions, traditions, antipathies, and affinities, exercise a certain retarding, accelerating, or deflecting influence, and somewhat modify the normal progress." Perfect development only is permanent, and that alone is perfect which develops the whole man and the whole society equally in all its parts; all the activities, mental, moral, and physical, must needs grow in unison and simultaneously, and this alone is perfect and permanent development. Should all the world become civilized there will still be minor differences; some will advance further in one direction and some in another, all together will form the complete whole.

Civilization as an exotic seldom flourishes. Often has the attempt been made by a cultivated people to civilize a barbarous nation, and as often has it failed. True, one nation may force its arts or religion upon another, but to civilize is neither to subjugate nor annihilate; foreigners may introduce new industries and new philosophies, which the uncultured may do well to accept, but as civilization is an unfolding, and not a creation, he who would advance civilization must teach society how to grow, how to enlarge its better self; must teach in what direction its highest interests lie.

Thus it appears that, while this germ of progress is innate in every human society, certain conditions are more favorable to its development than others—conditions which act as stimulants or impediments to progress. Often we see nations remain apparently stationary, the elements of progress evenly balanced by opposing influences, and thus they remain until, by internal force or external pressure, their system expands or explodes, until they absorb or are absorbed

Digitized by Google

by antagonistic elements. The intrinsic force of the body social appears to demand extrinsic prompting before it will manifest itself. Like the grains of wheat in the hand of Belzoni's mummy, which held life slumbering for three thousand years, and awoke to growth when buried in the ground, so the element of human progress lies dormant until planted in a congenial soil and surrounded by those influences which provoke development.

This stimulant, which acts upon and unfolds the intellect, can be administered only through the medium of the senses. Nerve force, which precedes intellectual force, is supplied by the body; the cravings of man's corporeal nature, therefore, must be quieted before the mind can fix itself on higher things. The first step toward teaching a savage is to feed him; the stomach satisfied, he will listen to instruction, not before.

Cultivation of at least the most necessary of the industrial arts invariably precedes cultivation of the fine arts; the intellect must be implanted in a satisfied body before it will take root and grow. The mind must be allowed some respite from its attendance on the body before culture can commence; it must abandon its state of servitude, and become master; in other words, leisure is an essential of culture.

As association is the primal condition of progress, let us see how nature throws societies together or holds them asunder. In some directions there are greater facilities for intercommunication (another essential of improvement) than in other directions. Wherever man is most in harmony with nature, there he progresses most rapidly; wherever nature offers the greatest advantages, such as a sea that invites to commerce, an elevated plateau lifting its occupants above the malaria of a tropical lowland, a sheltering mountain range that wards off inclement winds and bars out hostile neighbors, there culture flourishes best.

So that humanity, in its two fold nature, is depend-

Digitized by Google

ent for its development upon two distinct species of stimulants, objective and subjective. Material causations, or those forces which minister to the requirements of man's material nature, but upon which his intellectual progress is dependent, are configurations of surface, soil, climate, and food. Those physical conditions which, when favorable, give to their possessors wealth and leisure are the inevitable precursors of culture. Immaterial causations are those forces which act more directly upon man's immaterial nature, as association, religion, wealth, leisure, and government. Continuing the analysis, let us first examine physical stimulants. Admitting readily two of M. Taine's primordial humanity-moving forces, 'le milieu' or environment, and his 'le moment' or inherited impulse, we will pass over third force 'la race'—for inherent differences in race, in the present stage of science, are purely hypothetical; it remains yet to be proved that one nation is primarily inherently inferior or superior to another nation. That man once created is moulded and modified by his environment, there can be no doubt. Even a cursory survey of the globe presents some indications favorable and unfavorable to the unfolding of the different forms of organic being

Great continents, for instance, appear to be congenial to the development of animal life; islands and lesser continents to the growth of exuberant vegetation. Thus, in the eastern hemisphere, which is a compact oval, essentially continental, with vast areas far removed from the influence of the ocean, flourish the elephant, the hippopotamus, the rhinoceros, the courageous lion, the fierce tiger, the largest and lordliest of animal kind; while in the more oceanic western hemisphere inferior types prevail. Cold and dryness characterize the one, heat and humidity the other; in one are the greatest deserts, in the other the greatest lakes and rivers. Warm oceanic currents bathe the frosty shores of the northern extremities of the continents and render them habitable; the moist-

Digitized by Google

ure-laden equatorial atmosphere clothes the adjacent islands and firm land in emerald verdure. Upon the same parallel of latitude are the great Sahara Desert of Africa and the wilderness of luxuriant, billowy foliage of the American Isthmus. In warm, moist climates, such species of animal life attain the fullest development as are dependent upon the aqueous and herbous agencies. In tropical America are seen the largest reptiles, the most gorgeous insects—there the inhabitants of warm marshes and sluggish waters assume gigantic proportions; while only upon the broad inland prairies or upon elevated mountain ranges, away from the influences of warm waters and humid atmospheres, are found the buffalo, bear, and elk. The very complexion and temperament of man are affected by these vegetative and umbrageous elements. Unprotected from the perpendicular rays of the sun, the African is black, muscular, and cheerful; under the shadow of primeval forest, man assumes a coppery hue, lacking the endurance of the negro, and becomes in disposition cold and melancholy.

And again, if we look for the natural causes which tend to promote or retard association, we find in climates and continental configurations the chief agencies. The continent of the two Americas, in its greatest length, lies north and south, the eastern continental group extends east and west. Primitive people naturally would spread out in those directions which offered the least change of climate from that of the primitive centre. Obviously, variations of climate are greater in following a meridian than along a parallel of latitude. Thus, the tropical man passing along a meridian is driven back by unendurable cold, while a continent may be traversed on any parallel, elevations excepted, with but little variation in temperature. A savage, exposed and inexperienced, not knowing how to protect himself against severe changes of climate, could not travel far in a northerly or southerly direction without suffering severely from the cold or heat;

Digitized by Google

hence, other things being equal, the inhabitants of a country whose greatest length lay east and west would intermingle more readily than those whose territory extended north and south.

That the eastern hemisphere attained a higher degree of civilization than the western may be partly due to the fact that the former presents wider spaces of uniform climate than the latter. The climatic zones of the New World, besides being shorter, are intersected by mountain barriers, which tend to retard the intercourse that would otherwise naturally follow. Thus the Mexican table-land, the seat of Aztec civilization, is a *tierra fria* situated above the insalubrious *tierra caliente* of either coast and the healthful *tierra templada* of the slopes, but below the mountain ranges which rise from this table-land, forming a *tierra frígida*, a region of perpetual snow. To this day, the natives of the Mexican plateau cannot live on the sea-coast, though less than a day's journey distant.

Between the climatic zones which extended through Europe and Asia, there are contrasts as marked and changes as sudden; but these differences are between the different zones rather than between longitudinal sections of the same zone. Hence, in the Old World, where climatic zones are separated by mountain ranges which make the transition from one to the other sudden and abrupt, we see a greater diversity of race than in America, where the natural barriers extend north and south and intersect the climatic zones, thereby bringing the inhabitants along a meridian in easier communication than those who live in the same latitude but who are separated by mountains, table-lands, and large rivers. That is, if color and race are dependent on climate, America should offer greater varieties in color and race than Europe, for America traverses the most latitudes; but the mountain barriers of America extend north and south, thereby forcing its people to intermingle, if at all, in that direction; while the chief ranges of the eastern continent extend east and west,

Digitized by Google

parallel with climatic zones, thereby forming in themselves distinctly marked lines between peoples, forcing the African to remain under his burning sun, and the northmen in their cooler latitudes; so that in the several climatic zones of the Old World we see the human race distinctly marked, Aryan, Semitic, and Turanian—white, black, and yellow; while throughout the two Americas, from Alaska to Tierra del Fuego, type and color are singularly uniform.

Who can picture the mighty tide of humanity, which, while the eastern hemisphere has been developing so high a state of culture, in America has ebbed and flowed between barbarisms and civilizations? Through what long and desperate struggles, continuing age after age through the lives of nations, now advancing, now receding, have these people passed? Asia, from its central position and favorable climate, would seem naturally to encourage a redundant population and a spontaneous civilization; the waters of the Mediterranean invite commerce and intercommunication of nations; while the British Isles, from their insular situation and distance from hypothetical primitive centres, would seem necessarily to remain longer in a state of barbarism. In the Pacific States of North America we find the densest population north along the shores of the ocean, and south on the cordillera table-land, from the fact that the former offers the best facilities for food and locomotion until the latter is reached, when the interior presents the most favorable dwelling-place for man.

Climate affects both mental and moral endowments, the temperament of the body, and the texture of the brain; physical energy, and mental vigor. Temperate climates are more conducive to civilization, not for the reason given by Mr Harris, "as developing the higher qualities, and not invigorating the baser feelings"—for the Hyperborean is as unchaste and as great a slave to passion as the sub-equatorial man—but because a

Digitized by Google

temperate climate, while it lures to exertion, rewards the laborer.

Next, let us consider the agency of food in human development. The effect of food is to supply the body with caloric, which is essential to its life, and to repair the muscular fibres, which are constantly undergoing waste in our daily activities. These two effects are produced by two different kinds of diet: carbonized food, such as animal flesh, fish, oils, and fats; and oxidized food, which consists chiefly of vegetables. In hot climates, obviously, less carbonized food is required to keep up the necessary temperature of the body than in cold climates. Hence it is that hyperborean nations subsist on whale's blubber, oil, and flesh, while the tropical man confines himself almost exclusively to a vegetable diet.

It is not my purpose here to enter into the relative effects of the different kinds of food on physiological and mental development; I desire, however, to call attention to the comparative facility with which carbonized and oxidized food is procured by man, and to note the effect of this ease or difficulty in obtaining a food supply upon his progress. In warm, humid climates vegetation is spontaneous and abundant; a plentiful supply of food may, therefore, be obtained with the smallest expenditure of labor. The inhabitants of cold climates, however, are obliged to pursue, by land and water, wild and powerful animals, to put forth all their strength and skill in order to secure a precarious supply of the necessary food. Then, again, besides being more difficult to obtain, and more uncertain as to a steady supply, the quantity of food consumed in a cold climate is much greater than that consumed in a hot climate. Now, as leisure is essential to cultivation, and as without a surplus of food and clothing there can be no leisure, it would seem to follow naturally that in those countries where food and clothing are most easily obtained culture should

Digitized by Google

be the highest; since so little time and labor are necessary to satisfy the necessities of the body, the mind would have opportunity to expand. It would seem that a fertile soil, an exuberant vegetation, soft skies and balmy air, a country where raiment was scarcely essential to comfort, and where for food the favored inhabitant had but to pluck and eat, should become the seat of a numerous population and a high development. Is this the fact? "Wherever snow falls," Emerson remarks, "there is usually civil freedom. Where the banana grows, the animal system is indolent and pampered at the cost of higher qualities; the man is sensual and cruel;" and we may add that where wheat grows, there is civilization; where rice is the staple, there mental vigor is relaxed.

Heat and moisture being the great vegetative stimulants, tropical lands in proximity to the sea are covered with eternal verdure. Little or no labor is required to sustain life; for food there is the perpetually ripened fruit, a few hours' planting, sometimes, being sufficient to supply a family for months; for shelter, little more than the dense foliage is necessary, while scarcely any clothing is required.

But although heat and moisture, the great vegetative stimulants, lie at the root of primitive progress, these elements in superabundance defeat their own ends, and in two ways: first, excessive heat enervates the body and prostrates the mind, languor and inertia become chronic, while cold is invigorating and prompts to activity. And in tropical climates certain hours of the day are too hot for work, and are, consequently, devoted to sleep. The day is broken into fragments; continuous application, which alone produces important results, is prevented, and habits of slackness and laxity become the rule of life. Satisfied, moreover, with the provisions of nature for their support, the people live without labor, vegetating, plant-like, through a listless and objectless life. Secondly, vegetation, stimulated by excessive heat and moisture, grows with

Digitized by Google

such strength and rapidity as to defy the efforts of inexperienced primitive man; nature becomes domineering, unmanageable, and man sinks into insignificance. Indeed, the most skilful industry of armed and disciplined civilization is unable to keep under control this redundancy of tropical vegetation. The path cleared by the pioneer on penetrating the dense undergrowth closes after him like the waters of the sea behind a ship; before the grain has time to spring up, the ploughed field is covered with rank weeds, wild flowers, and poisonous plants no less beautiful than pernicious. I have seen the very fence-posts sprouting up and growing into trees. So destructive is the vegetation of the Central American lowlands, that in their triumphal march the persistent roots penetrate the crevices of masonry, demolish strong walls, and obliterate stupendous tumuli. The people whose climate makes carbonized food a necessity are obliged to call into action their bolder and stronger faculties in order to obtain their supplies, while the vegetable-eater may tranquilly rest on bounteous nature. The Eskimo struggles manfully with whale, and bear, and ice, and darkness, until his capacious stomach is well filled with heat-producing food, then he dozes torpidly in his den while the supply lasts; the equatorial man plucks and eats, basks in the open air, and sleeps.

Here we have a medley of heterogeneous and antagonistic elements. Leisure is essential to culture; before leisure there must be an accumulation of wealth; the accumulation of wealth is dependent upon the food-supply; a surplus of food can only be easily obtained in warm climates. But labor is also essential to development, and excessive heat is opposed to labor. Labor, moreover, in order to produce leisure must be remunerative, and excessive cold is opposed to accumulation. It appears, therefore, that an excess of labor and an excess of leisure are alike detrimental to improvement. Again, heat and moisture are essential to an abundant supply of oxidized food. But heat and moisture,

Digitized by Google

especially in tropical climates, act as a stimulant upon other rank productions, engendering dense forests, tangled brush-wood, and poisonous shrubs, and filling miasmatic marshes with noxious reptiles. These enemies to human progress the weaponless savage is unable to overcome.

It is, therefore, neither in hot and humid countries, nor in excessively cold climates, that we are to look for a primitive civilization; for in the latter nature lies dormant, while in the former the redundancy of nature becomes unmanageable. It is true that in the tropics of America and Asia are found the seats of many ancient civilizations, but if we examine them one after the other, we shall see, in nearly every instance, some opposite or counteracting agency. Thus the Aztecs, though choosing a low latitude in proximity to both oceans, occupied an elavated table-land, in a cool, dry atmosphere, seven or eight thousand feet above the level of the sea. The river Nile, by its periodic inundations, forced the ancient Egyptians to lay by a store of food, which is the very first step toward wealth. The rivers of India are, some of them, subject to like overflowings, while the more elevated parts are dry and fertile.

Egypt was the cradle of European development. Long before the advent of Christianity, the fertile banks of the Nile, for their pyramidal tombs, their colossi, their obelisks and catacombs and sphinxes and temples, were regarded by surrounding barbarians as a land of miracles and marvels. Thence Greece derived her earliest arts and maxims. The climate of Egypt was unchangeable, and the inundations of the Nile offered a less uncertain water-supply than the rains of many other districts; and thus agriculture, while offering to the laborer the greater part of the year for leisure, was almost certain to be remunerative. Common instincts and common efforts, uniformity of climate and identity of interests, produced a homogeneous people, and forty centuries of such changeless

Digitized by Google

coming and going could not fail to result in improvement.

Mr Buckle, in his attempt to establish a universal theory that heat and moisture inevitably engender civilization, and that without those combined agencies no civilization can arise, somewhat overreaches himself. "In America, as in Asia and Africa," he says, "all the original civilizations were seated in hot countries; the whole of Peru, proper, being within the southern tropic, the whole of Central America and Mexico within the northern tropic." The fact is, that Cuzco, the capital city of the Incas, is in the cordilleras, three hundred miles from and eleven thousand feet above the sea. For the latitude the climate is both cold and dry. The valley of Mexico is warmer and moister, but cannot be called hot and humid. Palenque and Copan approach nearer Mr Buckle's ideal than Cuzco or Mexico, being above the tierra caliente proper, and yet in a truly hot and humid climate.

The Hawaiian Islands—an isolated group of lava piles, thrown up into the trade-winds on the twentieth parallel, and by these winds deluged on one side with rain, while the other is left almost dry, with but little alluvial soil, and that little exceedingly fertile—at the time of their discovery by Captain Cook appeared to have made no inconsiderable advance toward feudalism. Systems of land tenure and vassalage were in operation, and some works for the public weal had been constructed. Here were the essentials for a low order of improvement such as was found there, but which never, in all probability, would have risen much higher.

Again, Mr Buckle declares that, "owing to the presence of physical phenomena, the civilization of America was, of necessity, confined to those parts where alone it was found by the discoverers of the New World"—an apparently safe postulate; but, upon any conceivable hypothesis, there are very many

Digitized by Google

places as well adapted to development as those in which it was found. Once more: "The two great conditions of fertility have not been united in any part of the continent north of Mexico." When we consider what it is, namely, heat and humidity, upon which Mr Buckle makes intellectual evolution dependent, and that not only the Mexican plateau lacked both these essentials, in the full meaning of the term, but that both are found in many places northward, as, for instance, in some parts of Texas and in Louisiana, a discrepancy in his theory becomes apparent. "The peculiar configuration of the land," he continues, "secured a very large amount of coast, and thus gave to the southern part of North America the character of an island." An island, yes, but, as M. Guyot terms it, an "aerial island;" bordered on either side by sea-coast, but by such sea-coast as formed an almost impassable barrier between the table-land and the ocean.

"While, therefore," adds Mr Buckle, "the position of Mexico near the equator gave it heat, the shape of the land gave it humidity; and this being the only part of North America in which these two conditions were united, it was likewise the only part which was at all civilized. There can be no doubt that, if the sandy plains of California and southern Columbia, instead of being scorched into sterility, had been irrigated by the rivers of the east, or if the rivers of the east had been accompanied by the heat of the west, the result of either combination would have been that exuberance of soil by which, as the history of the world decisively proves, every early civilization was preceded. But inasmuch as, of the two elements of fertility, one was deficient in every part of America north of the twentieth parallel, it followed that, until that line was passed, civilization could gain no resting-place; and there never has been found, and we may confidently assert never will be found, any evidence that even a single ancient nation, in the whole of that enormous continent, was able to make much progress in the arts of life, or organize

Digitized by Google

itself into a fixed and permanent society." This is a broad statement embodying precipitate deductions from false premises, and one which betrays singular ignorance of the country and its climate. These same "sandy plains of California," so far from being "scorched into sterility," are to-day sending their cereals in every direction—to the east and to the west—and are capable of feeding all Europe.

I have often wondered why California was not the seat of a primitive civilization; why, upon every converging line the race deteriorates as this centre is approached; why, with a cool, salubrious seaboard, a hot and healthful interior, with alternate rainy and dry seasons, alternate seasons of labor and leisure which encourage producing and hoarding, and which are the primary incentives to accumulation and wealth, in this hot and cool, moist and dry, and invigorating atmosphere, with a fertile soil, a climate which in no part of the year can be called cold or inhospitable, should be found one of the lowest phases of humanity on the North American continent. The cause must be sought in periods more remote, in the convulsions of nature now stilled; in the tumults of nations whose history lies forgotten, forever buried in the past. Theories never will solve the mystery. Indeed, there is no reason why the foundations of the Aztec and Maya-Quiché civilizations may not have been laid north of the thirty-fifth parallel, although no architectural remains have been discovered there, nor other proof of such an origin; but upon the banks of the Gila, the Colorado, and the Rio Grande, in Chihuahua, and on the hot dry plains of Arizona and New Mexico, far beyond the limits of Mr Buckle's territory where "there never has been found, and we may confidently assert never will be found," any evidence of progress, are to-day walled towns inhabited by an industrial and agricultural people, whose existence we can trace back for more than three centuries, besides ruins of massive buildings of whose history nothing is known.

Digitized by Google

Thus, that California and many other parts of North America could not have been the seat of a primitive civilization cannot be proved upon the basis of any physical hypothesis; and indeed, in our attempt to elucidate the principles of universal progress, where the mysterious and antagonistic activities of humanity have been fermenting all unseen for thousands of ages, unknown and unknowable, among peoples of whom our utmost knowledge can be only such as is derived from a transient glimpse of a disappearing race, it is with the utmost difficulty that satisfactory conclusions can in any instance be reached.

It is in a temperate climate, therefore, that man attains the highest development. On the peninsulas of Greece and Italy, where the Mediterranean invites intercourse; in Iran and Armenia, where the climate is cold enough to stimulate labor, but not so cold as to require the use of all the energies of body and mind in order to acquire a bare subsistence; warm enough to make leisure possible, but not so warm as to enervate and prostrate the faculties; with a soil of sufficient fertility to yield a surplus and promote the accumulation of wealth, without producing such a redundancy of vegetation as to be unmanageable by unskilled, primitive man—there it is that we find the highest intellectual culture.

It sometimes happens that, in those climates which are too vigorous for the unfolding of the tender germ, cultivation is stimulated into greater activity than in its original seats. It sometimes happens that, when the shell of savagism is once fairly broken, a people may overcome a domineering vegetation, and flourish in a climate where by no possibility could their development have originated. Even in the frozen regions of the north, as in Scandanavia, man, by the intensity of his nature, was enabled to surmount the difficulties of climate and attain a fierce, rude cultivation. The regions of northern Europe and northern America, notwithstanding their original opposition to man,

Digitized by Google

are to-day the most fruitful of all lands in industrial discoveries and intellectual activities, but in the polar regions, as in the equatorial, the highest development never can be reached.

The conditions which encourage indigenous civilization are not always those that encourage permanent development, and *vice versa*. Thus Great Britain, in her insulation, remained barbarous long after Greece and Italy had attained a high degree of cultivation; yet when once the seed took root, that very insulation acted as a wall of defence, within which a mighty power germinated and with its influence overspread the whole earth.

Thus we have seen that a combination of physical conditions is essential to intellectual development. Without leisure there can be no culture, without wealth no leisure, without labor no wealth, and without a suitable soil and climate no remunerative labor.

Now, throughout the material universe there is no object or element which holds its place, whether at rest or in motion, except under fixed laws; no atom of matter nor subtile mysterious force, no breath of air, nor cloudy vapor, nor streak of light, but in existing obeys a law. The Almighty fiat, Be fruitful and multiply, fruitful in increase, intellectual as well as physical, was given alike to all mankind; seeds of progress were sown broadcast throughout all the races human; some fell on stony places, others were choked with weeds, others found good soil. When we see a people in the full enjoyment of all these physical essentials to progress yet in a state of savagism, we may be sure that elements detrimental to progress have, at some period of their history, interposed to prevent natural growth. War, famine, pestilence, convulsions of nature, have nipped in the bud many an incipient civilization, whose history lies deep buried in the unrecorded past.

The obvious necessity of association as a primary condition of development leaves little to be said on

Digitized by Google

that subject. To the manifestation of this Soul of Progress a body social is requisite, as without an individual body there can be no manifestation of an individual soul. This body social, like the body individual, is composed of numberless organs, each having its special functions to perform, each acting on the others, and all under the general government of the progressional idea. Civilization is not an individual attribute, and though the atom, man, may be charged with stored energy, yet progress constitutes no part of individual nature; it is something that lies between men and not within them; it belongs to society, and not to the individual; man, the molecule of society, isolate, is inert and forceless. The isolated man, as I have said, never can become cultivated, never can form a language, does not possess in its fulness the faculty of abstraction, nor can his mind enter the realm of higher thought. All those characteristics which distinguish mankind from animal-kind become almost inoperative. Without association there is no speech, for speech is but the conductor of thought between two or more individuals; without words abstract thought cannot flow, for words, or some other form of expression, are the channels of thought, and with the absence of words the fountain of thought is in a measure sealed.

At the very threshold of progress social crystallization sets in; something there is in every man that draws him to other men. In the relationship of the sexes, this principle of human attraction reaches its height, where the husband and wife, as it were, coalesce, like the union of one drop of water with another, forming one globule. As unconsciously and as positively are men constrained to band together into societies as are particles forced to unite and form crystals. And herein is a law as palpable and as fixed as any law in nature—a law which, if unfulfilled, would result in the extermination of the race. But the law of human attraction is not perfect, does not fulfil its purpose apart from the law of human repulsion; for, as we have

Digitized by Google

seen, until war and despotism and superstition and other dire evils come, there is no progress. Solitude is insupportable: even beasts will not live alone; and men are more dependent on each other than beasts. Solitude carries with it a sense of inferiority and insufficiency; the faculties are stinted, lacking completeness, whereas volume is added to every individual faculty by union.

But association simply is not enough; nothing materially great can be accomplished without union and coöperation. It is only when aggregations of families intermingle with other aggregations, each contributing its quota of original knowledge to the other; when the individual gives up some portion of his individual will and property for the better protection of other rights and property; when he intrusts society with the vindication of his rights; when he depends upon the banded arm of the nation, and not alone upon his own arm for redress of grievances—that progress is truly made. And with union and coöperation comes the division of labor by which means each, in some special department, is enabled to excel. By fixing the mind wholly upon one thing, by constant repetition and practice, the father hands down his art to the son, who likewise improves it for his descendants. It is only by doing a new thing, or by doing an old thing better than it has ever been done before, that progress is made. Under the régime of universal mediocrity the nation does not advance; it is to the great men—great in things great or small—that progress is due; it is to the few who think, to the few who dare to face the infinite universe of things, and step, if need be, outside an old-time boundary, that the world owes most.

Originally implanted is the germ of intelligence, at the first but little more than brute instinct. This germ in unfolding undergoes a double process: it throws off its own intuitions and receives in return those of another By an interchange of ideas, the expe-

Digitized by Google

riences of one are made known for the benefit of another, the inventions of one are added to the inventions of another; without intercommunication of ideas the intellect must lie dormant. Thus it is with individuals, and with societies it is the same. Acquisitions are eminently reciprocal. In society, wealth, art, literature, polity, and religion act and react on each other; in science, a fusion of antagonistic hypotheses is sure to result in important developments. Before much progress can be made, there must be established a commerce between nations for the interchange of aggregated human experiences, so that the arts and industries acquired by each may become the property of all the rest, and thus knowledge become scattered by exchange, in place of each having to work out every problem for himself. Thus viewed, civilization is a partnership entered into for mutual improvement; a joint-stock operation, in which the product of every brain contributes to a general fund for the benefit of all. No one can add to his own store of knowledge without adding to the general store; every invention and discovery, however insignificant, is a contribution to civilization.

In savagism, union and coöperation are imperfectly displayed. The warriors of one tribe unite against the warriors of another; a band will coöperate in pursuing a herd of buffalo; even one nation will sometimes unite with another nation against a third; but such combinations are temporary, and no sooner is the particular object accomplished than the confederation disbands, and every man is again his own master. The moment two or more persons unite for the accomplishment of some purpose which shall tend permanently to meliorate the condition of themselves and others, that moment progress begins. The wild beasts of the forest, acting in unison, were physically able to rise up and extirpate primitive man; but could beasts in reality confederate and do this, such confederation of wild beasts could become civilized.

Digitized by Google

But why does primitive man desire to abandon his original state and set out upon an arduous, never-ending journey? Why does he wish to change his mild paternal government, to relinquish his title to lands as broad as his arm can defend, with all therein contained, the common property of his people? Why does he wish to give up his wild freedom, his native independence, and place upon his limbs the fetters of a social and political despotism? He does not. The savage hates civilization as he hates his deadliest foe; its choicest benefits he hates more than the direst ills of his own unfettered life. He is driven to it—driven to it by extraneous influences, without his knowledge and against his will; he is driven to it by this Soul of Progress. It is here that this progressional phenomenon again appears outside of a man and in direct opposition to the will of man; it is here that the principle of evil again comes in and stirs men up to the accomplishment of a higher destiny. By it Adam, the first of recorded savages, was driven from Eden, where otherwise he would have remained forever, and remained uncivilized. By it our ancestors were impelled to abandon their simple state, and organize more heterogeneons complex forms of social life. And it is a problem for each nation to work out for itself. Millions of money are expended for merely proselyting purposes, when if the first principles of civilization were well understood, a more liberal manner of teaching would prevail.

Every civilization has its peculiarities, its idiosyncrasies. Two individuals attempting the same thing differ in the performance; so civilization evolving under incidental and extraneous causes takes an individuality in every instance. This is why civilizations will not coalesce; this is why the Spaniards could make the Aztecs accept their civilization only at the point of the sword. Development engendered by one set of phenomena will not suit the developments of other circumstances. The government, religion, and customs

Digitized by Google

of one people will not fit another people any more than the coat of one person will suit the form of another. Thought runs in different channels; the happiness of one is not the happiness of another; development springs from inherent necessity, and one species cannot be ingrafted on another.

Let us now examine the phenomena of government and religion in their application to the evolution of societies, and we shall better understand how the wheels of progress are first set in motion—and by religion I do not mean creed or credulity, but that natural *cultus* inherent in humanity, which is a very different thing. Government is early felt to be a need of society; the enforcement of laws which shall bring order out of social chaos—laws which shall restrain the vicious, protect the innocent, and punish the guilty; which shall act as a shield to inherent budding morality. But before government, there must arise some influence which will band men together. An early evil to which civilization is indebted is war; the propensity of man—unhappily not yet entirely overcome—for killing his fellow-man.

The human race has not yet attained that state of homogeneous felicity which we sometimes imagine; upon the surface we yet bear many of the relics of barbarism; under cover of manners, we hide still more. War is a barbarism which civilization only intensifies, as indeed civilization intensifies every barbarism which it does not eradicate or cover up. The right of every individual to act as his own avenger; trial by combat; justice dependent upon the passion or caprice of the judge or ruler, and not upon fixed law; hereditary feuds and migratory skirmishes;—these and the like are deemed barbarous, while every nation of the civilized world maintains a standing army, applies all the arts and inventions of civilization to the science of killing, and upon sufficient provocation, as a disputed boundary or a fancied insult, no greater nor more important than

Digitized by Google

that which moved our savage ancestors to like conduct, falls to, and after a respectable civilized butchery of fifty or a hundred thousand men, ceases fighting, and returns, perhaps, to right and reason as a basis for the settlement of the difficulty. War, like other evils which have proved instruments of good, should by this time have had its day, should have served its purpose. Standing armies, whose formation was one of the first and most important steps in association and partition of labor, are but the manifestation of a lingering necessity for the use of brute force in place of moral force in the settlement of national disputes. Surely, rational beings who retain the most irrational practices concerning the simplest principles of social life cannot boast of a very high order of what we are pleased to call civilization. Morality, commerce, literature, and industry, all that tends toward elevation of intellect, is directly opposed to the warlike spirit. As intellectual activity increases, the taste for war decreases; for an appeal to war in the settlement of difficulties is an appeal from the intellectual to the physical, from reason to brute force.

Despotism is an evil, but despotism is as essential to progress as any good. In some form despotism is an inseparable adjunct of war. An individual or an idea may be the despot, but without cohesion, without a strong central power, real or imaginary, there can be no unity, and without unity no protracted warfare. In the first stages of government, despotism is as essential as in the last it is noxious. It holds society together when nothing else would hold it, and at a time when its very existence depends upon its being so held. And not until a moral inherent strength arises, sufficient to burst the fetters of despotism, is a people fit for a better or milder form of government; for not until this inherent power is manifest is there sufficient cohesive force in society to hold it together without being hooped by some such band as despotism. Besides thus cementing society, war generates many virtues, such

Digitized by Google

as courage, discipline, obedience, chivalrous bearing, noble thought; and the virtues of war, as well as its vices, help to mould national character.

Slavery to the present day has its defenders, and from the first it has been a preventive of a worse evil—slaughter. Savages make slaves of their prisoners of war, and if they do not preserve them for slaves they kill them. The origin of the word, *servus*, from *servare*, to preserve, denotes humane thought rather than cruelty. Discipline is always necessary to development, and slavery is another form of savage discipline. Then, by systems of slavery, great works were accomplished, which in the absence of arts and inventions would not have been possible without slavery. And again, in early societies where leisure is so necessary to mental cultivation and so difficult to obtain, slavery, by promoting leisure, aids elevation and refinement. Slaves constitute a distinct class, devoted wholly to labor, thereby enabling another class to live without labor, or to labor with the intellect rather than with the hands.

Primordially, society was an aggregation of nomadic families, every head of a family having equal rights, and every individual such power and influence as he could acquire and maintain. In all the ordinary vocations of savage life this was sufficient; there was room for all, and the widest liberty was possessed by each. And in this happy state does mankind ever remain until forced out of it. In unity and coöperation alone can great things be accomplished; but men will not unite until forced to it. Now, in times of war —and with savages war is the rule, and not the exception—some closer union is necessary to avoid extinction; for other things being equal, the people who are most firmly united and most strongly ruled are sure to prevail in war. The idea of unity in order to be effectual must be embodied in a unit; some one must be made chief, and the others must obey, as in a band of wild beasts that follow the one most conspicuous for its

Digitized by Google

prowess and cunning. But the military principle alone would never lay the foundation of a strong government, for with every cessation from hostilities there would be a corresponding relaxation of government.

Another necessity for government here arises, but which likewise is not the cause of government, for government springs from force, and not from utility. These men do not want government, they do not want culture: how, then, is an arm to be found sufficiently strong to bridle their wild passions? In reason they are children, in passion men; to restrain the strong passions of strong non-reasoning men requires a power: whence is this power to come? It is in the earlier stage of government that despotism assumes its most intense forms. The more passionate and lawless and cruel the people, the more completely do they submit to a passionate, lawless, and cruel prince; the more ungovernable their nature, the more slavish are they in their submission to government; the stronger the element to be governed, the stronger must be the government.

The primitive man, whoever or whatever that may be, lives in harmony with nature; that is, he lives as other animals live, drawing his supplies immediately from the general storehouse of nature. His food he plucks from a sheltering tree, or draws from a sparkling stream, or captures from a prolific forest. The remnants of his capture, unfit for food, supply his other wants; with the skin he clothes himself, and with the bones makes implements and points his weapons. In this there are no antagonisms, no opposing principles of good and evil; animals are killed, not with a view of extermination, but through necessity, as animals kill animals in order to supply actual wants. But no sooner does the leaven of progress begin to work than war is declared between man and nature. To make room for denser populations and increasing comforts, forests must be hewn down, their primeval inhabitants extirpated or domesticated, and the soil laid

Digitized by Google

under more direct contribution. Union and coöperation spring up for purposes of protection and aggression, for the accomplishment of purposes beyond the capacity of the individual. Gradually manufactures and commerce increase; the products of one body of laborers are exchanged for the products of another, and thus the aggregate comforts produced are doubled to each. Absolute power is taken from the hands of the many and placed in the hands of one who becomes the representative power of all. Men are no longer dependent upon the chase for a daily supply of food; even agriculture no longer is a necessity which each must follow for himself, for the intellectual products of one person or people may be exchanged for the agricultural products of another. With these changes of occupation new institutions spring up, new ideas originate, and new habits are formed. Human life ceases to be a purely material existence; another element finds exercise, the other part of man is permitted to grow. The energies of society now assume a different shape: hitherto the daily struggle was for daily necessities; now the accumulation of wealth constitutes the chief incentive to labor. Wealth becomes a power and absorbs all other powers. The possessor of unlimited wealth commands the products of every other man's labor.

But in time, and to a certain extent, a class arises already possessed of wealth sufficient to satisfy even the demands of avarice, and something still better, some greater good, is yet sought for. Money-getting gives way before intellectual cravings. The self-denials and labor necessary to the acquisition of wealth are abandoned for the enjoyment of wealth already acquired and the acquisition of a yet higher good. Sensual pleasure yields in a measure to intellectual pleasure, the acquisition of money to the acquisition of learning.

Where brute intelligence is the order of the day, man requires no more governing than brutes; but when

Digitized by Google

lands are divided, and the soil cultivated, when wealth begins to accumulate and commerce and industry to flourish, then protection and lawful punishment become necessary. Like the wild horse, leave him free, and he will take care of himself; but catch him and curb him, and the wilder and stronger he is the stronger must be the curb until he is subdued and trained, and then he is guided by a light rein. The kind of government makes little difference so that it be strong enough.

Granted that it is absolutely essential to the first step toward culture that society should be strongly governed, how is the first government to be accomplished? how is one member of a passionate, unbridled heterogeneous community to obtain dominion absolute over all the others? Here comes in another evil to the assistance of the former evils, all for future good—Superstition. Never could physical force alone compress and hold the necessary power with which to burst the shell of savagism. The government is but a reflex of the governed. Not until one man is physically or intellectually stronger than ten thousand will an independent people submit to a tyrannical government, or a humane people submit to a cruel government, or a people accustomed to free discussion to an intolerant priesthood.

At the outset, if man is to be governed at all, there must be no division of governmental force. The cause for fear arising from both the physical and the supernatural must be united in one individual. In the absence of the moral sentiment the fear of legal, and that of spiritual punishments are identical, for the spiritual is feared only as it works temporal or corporal evil. Freedom of thought at this stage is incompatible with progress, for thought without experience is dangerous, tending toward anarchy. Before men can govern themselves they must be subjected to the sternest discipline of government, and whether this government be just or humane or pleasant is of small consequence.

Digitized by Google

so that it be only strong enough. As with polity so with morality and religion; conjointly with despotism there must be arbitrary central church government, or moral anarchy is the inevitable consequence. At the outset it is not for man to rule, but to obey; it is not for savages, who are children in intellect, to think and reason, but to believe.

And thus we see how wonderfully man is provided with the essentials of growth. This tender germ of progress is preserved in hard shells and prickly coverings, which, when they have served their purpose, are thrown aside as not only useless, but detrimental to further devolopment. We know not what will come hereafter, but up to the present time a state of bondage appears to be the normal state of humanity; bondage, at first severe and irrational, then ever loosening, and expanding into a broader freedom. As mankind progresses, moral anarchy no more follows freedom of thought than does political anarchy follow freedom of action. In Germany, in England, in America, wherever secular power has in any measure cut loose from ecclesiastial power and thrown religion back upon public sentiment for support, a moral as well as an intellectual advance has always followed. What the mild and persuasive teachings and lax discipline of the present epoch would have been to the Christians of the fourteenth century, the free and lax government of republican America would have been to republican Rome. Therefore, let us learn to look charitably upon the institutions of the past, and not forget how much we owe to them; while we rejoice at our release from the cruelty and ignorance of mediæval times, let us not forget the debt which civilization owes to the rigorous teachings of both Church and State.

Christianity, by its exalted un-utilitarian morality and philantrophy, has greatly aided civilization. Indeed, so marked has been the effect in Europe, so great the contrast between Christianity and Islamism and the polytheistic creeds in general, that Churchmen

Digitized by Google

claim civilization as the offspring of their religion. But religion and morality must not be confounded with civilization. All these and many other activities act and react on each other as proximate principles in the social organism, but they do not, any or all of them, constitute the life of the organism. Long before morality is religion, and long after morality religion sends the pious penitent to his knees. Religious culture is a great assistant to moral culture as intellectual training promotes the industrial arts, but morality is no more religion than is industry intellect. When Christianity, as in the early settlement of Mexico and Central America, falls into the hands of unprincipled adventurers or blind zealots who stand up in deadly antagonism to liberty, then Christianity is a drag upon civilization; and therefore we may conclude that in so far as Christianity grafts on its code of pure morality the principle of intellectual freedom, in so far is civilization promoted by Christianity, but when Christianity engenders persecution, civilization is retarded thereby.

Then Protestantism sets up a claim to the authorship of civilization, points to Spain and then to England, compares Italy and Switzerland, Catholic America and Puritan America, declares that the intellect can never attain superiority while under the dominion of the Church of Rome; in other words, that civilization is Protestantism. It is true that protestation against irrational dogmas, or any other action that tends toward the emancipation of the intellect, is a great step in advance; but religious belief has nothing whatever to do with intellectual culture. Religion from its very nature is beyond the limits of reason; it is emotional rather than intellectual, an instinct and not an acquisition. Between reason and religion lies a domain of common ground upon which both may meet and join hands, but beyond the boundaries of which neither may pass. The moment the intellect attempts to penetrate the domain of the Supernatural all intellectuality vanishes, and emotion and imagination fill its place.

Digitized by Google

There can be no real conflict between the two, for neither, by any possibility, can pass this neutral ground. Before the mind can receive Christianity, or Mahometanism, or any other creed, it must be ready to acept dogmas in the analysis of which human reason is powerless. Among the most brilliant intellects are found Protestants, Romanists, Unitarians, Deists, and Atheists; judging from the experiences of mankind in ages past, creeds and formulas, orthodoxy and heterodoxy, have no inherent power to advance or retard the intellect. Some claim, indeed, that strong doctrinal bias stifles thought, fosters superstition, and fetters the intellect; still religious thought, in some form, is inseparable from the human mind, and it would be very difficult to prove that belief is more debasing than non-belief.

Religion at first is a gross fetichism, which endows every wonder with a concrete personality. Within every appearance is a several personal cause, and to embody this personal cause in some material form is the first effort of the savage mind. Hence, images are made in representation of these imaginary supernatural powers. Man, of necessity, must clothe these supernatural powers in the elements of some lower form. The imagination cannot grasp an object or an idea beyond the realms of human experience. Unheard-of combinations of character may be made, but the constituent parts must, at some time and in some form, have had an existence in order to be conceivable. It is impossible for the human mind to array in forms of thought anything wholly and absolutely new. This state is the farthest remove possible from a recognition of those universal laws of causation toward which every department of knowledge is now so rapidly tending. Gods are made in the likeness of man and beast, endowed with earthly passions, and a sensual polytheism, in which blind fate is a prominent element, becomes the religious ideal. Religious conceptions are

Digitized by Google

essentially material; all punishments and rewards are such as affect man as a material being; morality, the innate sense of right and wrong, lies stifled, almost dormant.

Thrown wholly upon himself, without experience to guide him, the savage must, of necessity, invest nature with his own qualities, for his mind can grasp none other. But when experience dispels the nearer illusions, objects more remote are made gods; in the sun and stars he sees his controlling destinies; the number of his gods is lessened until at last all merge into one God, the author of all law, the great and only ruler of the universe. In every mythology we see this impersonation of natural phenomena; frost and fire, earth and air and water, in their displays of mysterious powers, are at once deified and humanized. These embodiments of physical force are then naturally formed into families, and their supposed descendants worshipped as children of the gods. Thus, in the childhood of society, when incipient thought takes up its lodgment in old men's brains, shadows of departed heroes mingle with shadows of mysterious nature, and admiration turns to adoration.

Next arises the desire to propitiate these unseen powers, to accomplish which some means of communication must be opened up between man and his deities. Now, as man in his gods reproduces himself, as all his conceptions of supernatural power must, of necessity, be formed on the skeleton of human power, naturally it follows that the strongest and most cunning of the tribe, he upon whom leadership most naturally falls, comes to be regarded as specially favored of the gods. Powers supernatural are joined to powers temporal, and embodied in the chieftain of the nation. A grateful posterity reveres and propitiates departed ancestors. The earlier rulers are made gods, and their descendants lesser divinities; the founder of a dynasty, perhaps, the supreme god, his progeny subordinate deities. The priesthood and kingship thus become united;

Digitized by Google

religion and civil government join forces to press mankind together, and the loose sands of the new strata cohere into the firm rock, that shall one day bear alone the wash of time and tide.

Hence arise divine kingship, and the divine right of kings, and with the desire to win the favor of this divine king arise the courtesies of society, the first step toward polish of manners. Titles of respect and worship are given him, some of which are subsequently applied to the Deity, while others drop down into the commonplace compliments of every-day life.

Here, then, we have as one of the first essentials of progress the union of Church and State, of superstition and despotism—a union still necessarily kept up in some of the more backward civilizations. Excessive loyalty and blind faith ever march hand in hand. The very basis of association is credulity, blind loyalty to political powers and blind faith in sacerdotal terrors. In all mythologies at some stage temporal and spiritual government are united, the supernatural power being incarnated in the temporal chief; political despotism and an awful sanguinary religion—a government and a belief, to disobey which was never so much as thought possible.

See how every one of these primary essentials of civilization becomes, as man advances, a drag upon his progress; see how he now struggles to free himself from what, at the outset, he was led by ways he knew not to endure so patiently. Government, in early stages always strong and despotic, whether monarchical, oligarchical, or republican, holding mankind under the dominion of caste, placing restrictions upon commerce and manufactures, regulating social customs, food, dress—how men have fought to break loose these bonds! Religion, not that natural cultus instinctive in humanity, the bond of union as well under its most disgusting form of fetichism, as under its latest, loveliest form of Christianity; but those forms and dogmas of sect and creed which stifle thought

Digitized by Google

and fetter intellect—how men have lived lives of sacrifice and self-denial as well as died for the right to free themselves from unwelcome belief!

In primeval ages, government and religion lay lightly on the human race; ethnology, as well as history, discloses the patriarchal as the earliest form of government, and a rude materialism as the earliest religious ideal; these two simple elements, under the form of monsters, became huge abortions, begotten of ignorance, that held the intellect in abject slavery for thousands of years, and from these we, of this generation more than any other, are granted emancipation. Even wealth, kind giver of grateful leisure, in the guise of avarice becomes a hideous thing, which he who would attain the higher intellectual life must learn to despise.

Government, as we have seen, is not an essential element of collective humanity. Civilization must first be awakened, must even have passed the primary stages before government appears. Despotism, feudalism, divine kingship, slavery, war, superstition, each marks certain stages of development, and as civilization advances all tend to disappear; and as in the early history of nations the state antidates the government, so the time may come in the progress of mankind when government will be no longer necessary. Government always grows out of necessity; the intensity of government inevitably following necessity. The form of government is a natural selection; its several phases always the survival of the fittest. When the federalist says to the monarchist, or the monarchist to the federalist, My government is better than yours, it is as if the Eskimo said to the Kaffir, My coat, my house, my food, is better than yours.

The government is made for the man, and not the man for the government. Government is as the prop for the growing plant; at first the young shoot stands alone, then in its rapid advancement for a time it requires support, after which it is able again to stand

Digitized by Google

alone. What we term the evils of government are rather its necessities, and are, indeed, no evils at all. The heavy bit which controls the mouth of an untamed horse is to that horse an evil, yet to the driver a necessity which may be laid aside as the temper of the animal is subdued. So despotism, feudalism, slavery, are evils to those under their dominion, yet are they as necessary for the prevention of anarchy, for the restraint of unbridled passions, as the powerful bit to the horse, and will as surely be laid aside when no longer required. Shallow-minded politicians talk of kingcraft, arbitrary rule, tyrants, the down-trodden masses, the withholding of just rights: as though the government was some independent adverse element, wholly foreign to the character of the people; as though one man was stronger than ten thousand; as though, if these phases of society were not the fittest, they would be tolerated for a moment. The days of rigorous rule were ever the best days of France and Spain, and so it will be until the people become stronger than the strength of rulers. Republicanism is as unfit for stupid and unintellectual populations as despotism would be for the advanced ideas and liberal institutions of Anglo-Saxon America. The subject of a liberal rule sneeringly crying down to the subject of an absolute rule his form of government is like the ass crying to the tiger, Leave blood and meat; feed on grass and thistles, the only diet fit for civilized beasts! Our federal government is the very best for our people: when it is not so it will speedily change; it fits the temper of American intelligence; but before it can be planted in Japan or China the traditions and temper of the Asiatics must change.

We of to-day are undergoing an important epoch in the history of civilization. Feudalism, despotism, and fanaticism have had each its day, have each accomplished its necessary purpose, and are fast fading away. Ours is the age of democracy, of scientific investigation, and freedom of religious thought; what these may

Digitized by Google

accomplish for the advancing intellect remains to be seen Our ancestors loved to dwell upon the past, now we all look toward the future.

The sea of ice, over which our forefathers glided so serenely in their trustful reliance, is breaking up. One after another traditions evaporate; in their application to proximate events they fail us, history ceases to repeat itself as in times past. Old things are passing away, all things are becoming new—new philosophies, new religions, new sciences; the industrial spirit springs up and overturns time-honored customs; theories of government must be reconstructed. Thus, says experience, republicanism, as a form of government, can exist only in small states; but steam and electricity step in and annihilate time and space. The Roman republic, from a lack of cohesive energy, from failure of central vital power sufficient to send the blood of the nation from the heart to the extremities, died a natural death. The American republic, covering nearly twice the territory of republican Rome in her palmiest days, is endowed with a different species of organism; in its physiological system is found a new series of veins and arteries—the railway, the telegraph, and the daily press—through which pulsates the life's blood of the nation, millions inhaling and exhaling intelligence as one man. By means of these inventions all the world, once every day, are brought together. By telegraphic wires and railroad iron men are now bound as in times past they were bound by war, despotism, and superstition. The remotest corners of the largest republics of to-day are brought into closer communication than were the adjoining states of the smallest confederations of antiquity. A united Germany, from its past history held to be an impossibility, is, with the present facilities of communication, an accomplished fact. England could as easily have possessed colonies in the moon as have held her present possessions, three hundred years ago. Practically, San Francisco is nearer Washing-

Digitized by Google

ton than was Philadelphia when the foundations of the Capitol were laid. What is to prevent republics from growing, so long as intelligence keeps pace with extension? The general of an army may now sit before his maps, and manœuvre half a score of armies a hundred or a thousand miles apart, know hourly the situation of every division, the success of every battle, order an advance or a retreat, lay plots and make combinations, with more exactness than was once possible in the conduct of an ordinary campaign.

A few words about morals, manners, and fashion will further illustrate how man is played upon by his environment, which here takes the shape of habit. In their bearing on civilization, these phonomena all come under the same category; and this, without regard to the rival theories of intuition and utility in morals. Experience teaches, blindly at first yet daily with clearer vision, that right conduct is beneficial, and wrong conduct detrimental; that the consequences of sin invariably rest on the evil-doer; that for an unjust act, though the knowledge of it be forever locked in the bosom of the offender, punishment is sure to follow; yet there are those who question the existence of innate moral perceptions, and call it all custom and training. And if we look alone to primitive people for innate ideas of morality and justice, I fear we shall meet with disappointment. Some we find who value female chastity only before marriage, others only after marriage—that is, after the woman and her chastity both alike become the tangible property of somebody. Some kindly kill their aged parents, others their female infants; the successful Apache horse-thief is the darling of his mother and the hero of the tribe; often these American Arabs will remain from home half-starved for weeks, rather than suffer the ignominy of returning empty-handed. Good in the mind of the savage is when he steals wives; bad is when his own wives are stolen. Where it is that inherent

Digitized by Google

morality in savages first makes its appearance, and in what manner, it is often difficult to say; the most hideous vices are everywhere practised with unblushing effrontery.

Take the phenomena of Shame. Go back to the childhood of our race, or even to our own childhood, and it will be hard to discover any inherent quality which make men ashamed of one thing more than another. Nor can the wisest of us give any good and sufficient reason why we should be ashamed of our body any more than of our face. The whole man was fashioned by one Creator, and all parts equally are perfect and alike honorable. We cover our person with drapery, and think thereby to hide our faults from ourselves and others, as the ostrich hides its head under a leaf, and fancies its body concealed from the hunter. What is this quality of shame if it be not habit? A female savage will stand unblushingly before you naked, but strip her of her ornaments and she will manifest the same appearance of shame, though not perhaps so great in degree, that a European woman will manifest if stripped of her clothes. It is well known how civilized and semi-civilized nations regard this quality of propriety. Custom, conventional usage, dress, and behavior are influences as subtile and as strong as any that govern us, weaving their network round man more and more as he throws off allegiance to other powers; and we know but little more of their origin and nature than we do of the origin and nature of time and space, of life and death, of origin and end.

Every age and every society has its own standard of morality, holds up some certain conduct or quality as a model, saying to all, Do this, and receive the much-coveted praise of your fellows. Often what one people deem virtue is to another vice; what to one age is religion is to another superstition; but underlying all this are living fires, kindled by Omnipotence, and destined to burn throughout all time. In the Spartan

Digitized by Google

and Roman republics the moral ideal was patriotism; among mediæval Churchmen it took the form of asceticism; after the elevation of woman the central idea was female chastity.

In this national morality, which is the cohesive force of the body social, we find the fundamental principle of the progressional impulse, and herein is the most hopeful feature of humanity; mankind must progress, and progress in the right direction. There is no help for it until God changes the universal order of things; man must become better in spite of himself; it is the good in us that grows and ultimately prevails.

As a race we are yet in our nonage; fearful of the freedom given us by progress, we cling tenaciously to our leading-strings; hugging our mother, Custom, we refuse to be left alone. Liberty and high attainments must be meted out to us as we are able to receive them, for social retchings and vomitings inevitably follow over feedings. Hence it is that we find ourselves escaped from primeval and mediæval tyrannies only to fall under greater ones, society is none the less inexorable in her despotisms because of the sophistry which gives her victims fancied freedom. For do we not now set up forms and fashions, the works of our own hands, and bow down to them as reverently as ever our heathen ancestors did to their gods of wood and stone? Who made us? is not the first question of our catechism, but, What will people say?

Of all tyrannies, the tyranny of fashion is the most implacable, of all slaveries, the slavery to fashion is the most abject, of all fears, the fear of our fellows is the most overwhelming; of all the influences that surround and govern man, the forms and customs which he encounters in society are the most domineering It is the old story, only another turn of the wheel that grinds and sharpens and polishes humanity—at the first a benefit, now a drag. Forms and fashions are essential; we cannot live without them. If we

Digitized by Google

have worship, government, commerce, or clothes, we must have forms; or if we have them not, we still must act and do after some fashion; costume, which is but another word for custom, we must have, but is it necessary to make the form the chief concern of our lives while we pay so little heed to the substance? and may we not hope, while rejoicing over our past emancipations, that we shall some day be free from our present despotisms?

Dress has ever exercised a powerful influence on morals and on progress; but this vesture-phenomenon is a thing but imperfectly understood. Clothes serve as a covering to the body of which we are ashamed, and protect it against the weather, and these, we infer, are the reasons of our being clothed. But the fact is, aboriginally, except in extreme cases, dress is not essential to the comfort of man until it becomes a habit; and as for shame, until told of his nakedness, the primitive man has none. The origin of dress lies behind all this; it is found in one of the most deep-rooted elements of our nature, namely, in our love of approbation. Before dress is decoration. The successful warrior, proud of his achievement, besmears his face and body with the blood of the slain, and straightway imitators, who also would be thought strong and brave, daub themselves in like manner, and so painting and tatooing become fashionable, and pigments supply the place of blood. The naked, houseless Californian would undergo every hardship, travel a hundred miles, and fight a round with every opposing band he met, in order to obtain cinnabar from the New Almaden quicksilver mine. So when the hunter kills a wild beast, and with the tail or skin decorates his body as a trophy of his prowess, others follow his example, and soon it is a shame to that savage who has neither paint, nor belt, nor necklace of bears' claws. And so follow head-flattenings, and nose-piercings, and lip-cuttings, and later, chignons, and breast-paddings, and bustles. Some say that jealousy prompted the

Digitized by Google

first Benedicks to hide their wives' charms from their rivals, and so originated female dress, which, from its being so common to all aborigines, is usually regarded as the result of innate modesty. But whatever gave us dress, dress has given much to human progress. Beneath dress arose modesty and refinement, like the courtesies that chivalry threw over feudalism, covering the coarse brutality of the barons, and paving the way to real politeness.

From the artificial grimaces of fashion have sprung many of the natural courtesies of life; though here, too, we are sent back at once to the beginning for the cause. From the ages of superstition and despotism have descended the expressions of every-day politeness. Thus we have sir, from *sieur*, *sire*, *seigneur*, signifying ruler, king, lord, and aboriginally father. So madam, *ma dame*, my lady, formerly applied only to women of rank. In place of throwing ourselves upon the ground, as before a god or prince, we only partially prostrate ourselves in bowing, and the hat which we touch to an acquaintance we take off on entering a church in token of our humility. Again, the captive in war is made a slave, and as such is required to do obeisance to his master, which forms of servility are copied by the people in addressing their superiors, and finally become the established usage of ordinary intercourse. Our daily salutations are but modified acts of worship, and our parting word a benediction; and from blood, tomahawks, and senseless superstitions we turn and find all the world of humanity, with its still strong passions and subtile cravings, held in restraint by a force of which its victims are almost wholly unconscious—and this force is Fashion. In tribunals of justice, in court and camp etiquette, everywhere these relics of barbarism remain with us. Even we of this latter-day American republicanism elevate one of our fellows to the chieftainship of a federation or state, and call him Excellency; we set a man upon the bench and *plead* our cause before him; we send a loafer to a legislature

Digitized by Google

and straightway call him Honorable—such divinity doth hedge all semblance of power.

Self-denial and abstinence lie at the bottom of etiquette and good manners. If you would be moral, says Kant, you must "act always so that the immediate motive of thy will may become a universal rule for all intelligent beings;" and Goethe teaches that "there is no outward sign of courtesy that does not rest on a deep, moral foundation"

Fine manners, though but the shell of the individual, are to society the best actions of the best men crystallized into a mode; not only the best thing, but the best way of doing the best thing. Good society is or ought to be the society of the good; but fashion is more than good society, or good actions; it is more than wealth, or beauty, or genius, and so arbitrary in its sway that not unfrequently the form absorbs the substance, and a breach of decorum becomes a deadly sin

Thus we see in every phase of development the result of a social evolution; we see men coming and going, receiving their leaven from the society into which by their destiny they are projected, only to fling it back into the general fund interpenetrated with their own quota of force. Meanwhile, this aggregation of human experiences, this compounding of age with age, one generation heaping up knowledge upon another; this begetting of knowledge by knowledge, the seed so infinitesimal, the tree now so rapidly sending forth its branches—whither does it tend? Running the eye along the line of progress, from the beginning to the end, the measure of our knowledge seems nearly full; resolving the matter, experience assures us that, as compared with those who shall come after us, we are the veriest barbarians. The end is not yet; not until infinity is spanned and eternity brought to an end will mankind cease to improve.

Out of this conglomeration of interminable relation-

Digitized by Google

ships concordant and antagonistic laws are ever evolving themselves. Like all other progressional phenomena, they wait not upon man; they are self-creative, and force themselves upon the mind age after age, slowly but surely, as the intellect is able to receive them; laws without law, laws unto themselves gradually appearing as from behind the mists of eternity. At first man and his universe appear to be regulated by arbitrary volitions, by a multitude of individual minds; each governs absolutely his own actions; every phenomenon of nature is but the expression of some single will. As these phenomena, one after another, become stripped of their mystery, there stands revealed, not a god, but a law; seasons come and go and never fail; sunshine follows rain, not because a pacified diety smiles, but because the rain-clouds have fallen and the sun cannot help shining. Proximate events first are thus made godless, then the whole host of deities is driven farther and farther back. Finally the actions of man himself are found to be subject to laws. Left to his own will, he wills to do like things under like conditions.

As to the nature of these laws, the subtile workings of which we see manifest in every phase of society, I cannot even so much as speak. An infinite ocean of phenomena awaits the inquirer—an ocean bottomless, over whose surface spreads an eternity of progress, and beneath whose glittering waves the keenest intellect can scarcely hope to penetrate far. The universe of man and matter must be anatomized; the functions of innumerable and complex organs studied; the exercise and influence of every part on every other part ascertained; and events apparently the most capricious traced to natural causes;—then, when we know all, when we know as God knoweth, shall we understand what it is, this Soul of Progress.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER II.

GENERAL VIEW OF THE CIVILIZED NATIONS.

THE AMERICAN CIVILIZATION OF THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY—ITS DISAPPEARANCE—THE PAST, A NEW ELEMENT—DIVIDING LINE BETWEEN SAVAGE AND CIVILIZED TRIBES—BOUNDS OF AMERICAN CIVILIZATION—PHYSICAL FEATURES OF THE COUNTRY—MAYA AND NAHUA BRANCHES OF ABORIGINAL CULTURE—THE NAHUA CIVILIZATION—THE AZTECS ITS REPRESENTATIVES—LIMITS OF THE AZTEC EMPIRE—ANCIENT HISTORY OF ANÁHUAC IN OUTLINE—THE TOLTEC ERA—THE CHICHIMEC ERA—THE AZTEC ERA—EXTENT OF THE AZTEC LANGUAGE—CIVILIZED PEOPLES OUTSIDE OF ANÁHUAC—CENTRAL AMERICAN NATIONS—THE MAYA CULTURE—THE PRIMITIVE MAYA EMPIRE—NAHUA INFLUENCE IN THE SOUTH—YUCATAN AND THE MAYAS—THE NATIONS OF CHIAPAS—THE QUICHÉ EMPIRE IN GUATEMALA—THE NAHUAS IN NICARAGUA AND SALVADOR—ETYMOLOGY OF NAMES

IN the preceding volume I have had occasion several times to remark that in the delineation of the Wild Tribes of the Pacific States, no attempt is made to follow them in their rapid decline, no attempt to penetrate their past or prophesy a possible future, no profitless lingering over those misfortunes that wrought among them such swift destruction. To us the savage nations of America have neither past nor future: only a brief present, from which indeed we may judge somewhat of the past; for the rest, foreign avarice and interference, European piety and greed, saltpetre, steel, small-pox, and syphilis, tell a speedy tale. Swifter still must be the hand that sketches the incipient civilization of the Mexican and

Digitized by Google

Central American table-lands. For although here we have more past, there is still less present, and scarcely any future. Those nations raised the highest by their wealth and culture were the first to fall before the invader, their superior attainments offering a more shining mark to a rapacious foe; and falling, they were the soonest lost—absorbed by the conquering race, or disappearing in the surrounding darkness. Although the savage nations were rapidly annihilated, traces of savagism lingered, and yet linger; but the higher American culture, a plant of more delicate growth and more sensitive nature, withered at the first rude touch of foreign interference. Instead of being left to its own intuitive unfoldings, or instead of being fostered by the new-comers, who might have elevated by interfusion both their own culture and that of the conquered race, the spirit of progress was effectually stifled on both sides by finatical attempts to substitute by force foreign creeds and polities for those of indigenous origin and growth. And now behold them both, the decendants of conquerors and of conquered, the one scarcely less denaturalized than the other, the curse inflicted by the invaders on a flourishing empire returning and resting with crushing weight on their own head. Scarce four centuries ago the empire of Charles the Fifth, and the empire of Montezuma the Second, were brought by the force of progress most suddenly and unexpectedly face to face; the one then the grandest and strongest of the Old World as was the other of the New. Since which time the fierce fanaticism that overwhelmed the New World empire has pressed like an incubus upon the dominant race, and held it fast while all the world around was making the most rapid strides forward.

No indigenous civilization exists in America to-day, yet the effects of a former culture are not altogether absent. The descendant of the Aztec, Maya, and Quiché is still of superior mind and haughtier spirit than his roving brother who boasts of none but a savage ances-

Digitized by Google

try. Still, so complete has been the substitution of foreign civil and ecclesiastical polities, and so far-reaching their influence on native character and conduct; so intimate the association for three and more centuries with the Spanish element; so closely guarded from foreign gaze has been every manifestation of the few surviving sparks of aboriginal modes of thought—that a study of the native condition in modern times yields, by itself, few satisfactory results. This study, however, as part of an investigation of their original or normal condition, should by no means be neglected, since it may furnish illustrative material of no little value.

Back of all this lies another element which lends to our subject yet grander proportions. Scattered over the southern plateaux are heaps of architectural remains and monumental piles. Furthermore, native traditions, both orally transmitted and hieroglyphically recorded by means of legible picture-writings, afford us a tolerably clear view of the civilized nations during a period of several centuries preceding the Spanish conquest, together with passing glances, through momentary clearings in the mythologic clouds, at historical epochs much more remote. Here we have as aids to this analysis—aids almost wholly wanting among the so-called savage tribes—antiquities, tradition, history, carrying the student far back into the mysterious New World past; and hence it is that from its simultaneous revelation and eclipse American civilization would otherwise offer a more limited field for investigation than American savagism, yet by the introduction of this new element the field is widely extended.

Nor have we even yet reached the limits of our resources for the investigation of this New World civilization. In these relics of architecture and literature, of mythology and tradition, there are clear indications of an older and higher type of culture than that brought immediately to the knowledge of the invaders; of a type that had temporarily deteriorated, perhaps through the

Digitized by Google

influence of long-continued and bloody conflicts, civil and foreign, by which the more warlike rather than the more highly cultured nations had been brought into prominence and power. But this anterior and superior civilization, resting largely as it does on vague tradition, and preserved to our knowledge in general allusions rather than in detail, may, like the native condition since the conquest, be utilized to the best advantage here as illustrative of the later and better known if somewhat inferior civilization of the sixteenth century, described by the conqueror, the missionary, and the Spanish historian.

Antique remains of native skill, which have been preserved for our examination, may also be largely used in illustration of more modern art, whose products have disappeared. These relics of the past are also of the highest value as confirming the truth of the reports made by Spanish writers, very many, or perhaps most, of whose statements respecting the wonderful phenomena of the New World, without this incontrovertible material proof, would find few believers among the sceptical students of the present day. These remains of antiquity, however, being fully described in another volume of this work, may be referred to in very general terms for present purposes.

Of civilization in general, the nature of its phenomena, the causes and processes by which it is evolved from savagism, I have spoken sufficiently in the foregoing chapter. As for the many theories respecting the American civilization in particular, its origin and growth, it is not my purpose to discuss them in this volume. No theory on these questions could be of any practical value in the elucidation of the subject, save one that should stand out among the rest so preëminently well founded as to be generally accepted among scientific men, and no one of all the multitude proposed has acquired any such preëminence. A complete résumé of all the theories on the subject, with the foundations which support them, is given else-

Digitized by Google

where in connection with the ancient traditionary history of the aboriginal nations. It is well, however, to remark that our lack of definite knowledge about the origin of this civilization is not practically so important as might appear at first thought. True, we know not for certain whether it is indigenous or exotic; and if the former, whether to ascribe its cradle to the north or south, to one locality or many; or if the latter, whether contact with the Old World was effected at one or many points, on one occasion or at divers epochs, through the agency of migrating peoples or by the advent of individual civilizers and teachers. Yet the tendency of modern research is to prove the great antiquity of the American civilization as well as of the American people; and if either was drawn from a foreign source, it was at a time probably so remote as to antedate any Old World culture now existing, and to prevent any light being thrown on the offspring by a study of the parent stock; while if indigenous, little hope is afforded of following rationally their development through the political convulsions of the distant past down to even a traditionally historic epoch.

I may then dispense with theories of origin and details of past history as confusing rather than aiding my present purpose, and as being fully treated elsewhere in this work. Neither am I required in this treatment of the civilized races to make an accurate division between them and their more savage neighbors, to determine the exact standard by which savagism and civilization are to be measured, or to vindicate the use of the word civilized as applied to the American nations in preference to that of semi-civilized, preferred by many writers. We have seen that civilization is at best only a comparative term, applied to some of the ever-shifting phases of human progress. In many of the Wild Tribes already described some of its characteristics have been observed, and the opposite elements of savagism will not be wanting among what I proceed

Digitized by Google

to describe as the Civilized Nations. There is not a savage people between Anáhuac and Nicaragua that has not been influenced in its institution by intercourse, warlike, social, or commercial, with neighbors of higher culture, and has not exerted in its turn a reflex influence on the latter. The difficulty of drawing division lines between nations thus mutually acting on each other is further increased in America by the fact that two or three nations constitute the central figure of nearly all that has been observed or written by the few that came in actual contact with the natives. This volume will, therefore, deal rather with the native civilization than with the nations that possessed it.

While, however, details on all the points mentioned, outside of actual institutions found existing in the sixteenth century, would tend to confusion rather than to clearness, besides leading in many cases to endless repetition, yet a general view of the whole subject, of the number, extent, location, and mutual relations of the nations occupying the central portions of the continent at its discovery, as well as of their relations to those of the more immediate past, appears necessary to an intelligent perusal of the following pages. In this general view I shall avoid all discussion of disputed questions, reserving arguments and details for future volumes on antiquities and aboriginal history.

That portion of what we call the Pacific States which was the home of American civilization within historic or traditionally historic times extends along the continent from north-west to south-east, between latitudes 22° and 11°. On the Atlantic side the territory stretches from Tamaulipas to Honduras, on the Pacific from Colima to Nicaragua. Not that these are definitely drawn boundaries, but outside of these limits, disregarding the New Mexican pueblo culture, this civilization had left little for Europeans to observe, while within them lived few tribes uninfluenced or unimproved by contact with it. No portion of the globe, perhaps, em-

Digitized by Google

braces within equal latitudinal limits so great a variety of climate, soil, and vegetation—a variety whose important bearing on the native development can be understood in some degree, and which would doubtless account satisfactorily for most of the complications of progressional phenomena observed within the territory, were the connection between environment and progress fully within the grasp of our knowledge. All the gradations from a torrid to a temperate clime are here found in a region that lies wholly within the northern tropic, altitudinal variations taking the place of and producing all the effects elsewhere attributable to latitude alone. These variations result from the topography of the country as determined by the conformation given to the continent by the central cordillera. The Sierra Madre enters this territory from the north in two principal ranges, one stretching along the coast of the Pacific, while the other and more lofty range trends nearer the Atlantic, the two again uniting before reaching the isthmus of Tehuantepec. This eastern branch between 18° 40′ and 20° 30′ opens out into a table-land of some seventy-five by two hundred miles area, with an altitude of from six to eight thousand feet above the sea-level. This broad plateau or series of plateaux is known as the tierra fria, while the lower valleys, with a band of the surrounding slopes, at an elevation of from three to five thousand feet, including large portions of the western lands of Michoacan, Guerrero, and Oajaca, between the two mountain branches, constitute the tierra templada. From the surface of the upper table-land rise sierras and isolated peaks of volcanic origin, the highest in North America, their summits covered with eternal snow, which shelter, temper, and protect the fertile plateaux lying at their base. Centrally located on this table-land, surrounded by a wall of lofty volcanic cliffs and peaks, is the most famous of all the valley plateaux, something more than one hundred and sixty miles in circuit, the valley of Mexico, Anáhuac, that is to say, 'country by

Digitized by Google

the waters,' taking its name from the lakes that formerly occupied one tenth of its area. Anáhuac, with an elevation of 7,500 feet, may be taken as representative of the tierra fria. It has a mean temperature of 62°, a climate much like that of southern Europe, although dryer, and to which the term 'cold' can only be comparatively applied. The soil is fertile and productive, though now generally presenting a bare and parched surface, by reason of the excessive evaporation on lofty plains exposed to the full force of a tropical sun, its natural forest-covering having been removed since the Spanish conquest, chiefly, it is believed, through artificial agencies. Oak and pine are prominent features of the native forest-growth; while wheat, barley, and all the European cereals and fruits flourish side by side with plantations of the indigenous maize, maguey, and cactus. From May to October of each year, corresponding nearly with the hot season of the coast, rains or showers are frequent, but rarely occur during the remaining months. Trees retain their foliage for ten months in the year, and indeed their fading is scarcely noticeable. Southward of 18°, as the continent narrows, this eastern table-land contracts into a mountain range proper, presenting a succession of smaller terraces, valleys, and sierras, in place of the broader plateaux of the region about Anáhuac. Trending south-eastward toward the Pacific, and uniting with the western Sierra Madre, the chain crosses the isthmus of Tehuantepec at a diminished altitude, only to rise again and expand laterally into the lofty Guatemalan ranges which stretch still south-eastward to Lake Nicaragua, where for the second time a break occurs in the continental cordillera at the southern limit of the territory now under consideration. From this central cordillera lateral subordinate branches jut out at right angles north and south toward either ocean. As we go southward the vegetation becomes more dense, and the temperature higher at equal altitudes, but the same gradations of

Digitized by Google

'fria' and 'templada' are continued, blending into each other at a height of 5,000 to 6,000 feet. The characteristics of the cordillera south of the Mexican tableland are lofty volcanic peaks whose lower bases are clothed with dense forests, fertile plateaux bounded by precipitous cliffs, vertical fissures or ravines of immense depth torn in the solid rock by volcanic action, and mountain torrents flowing in deep beds of porphyry and forming picturesque lakes in the lower valleys. Indeed, in Guatemala, where more than twenty volcanoes are in active operation, all these characteristic features appear to unite in their highest degree of perfection. One of the lateral ranges extends northeastward from the continental chain, forming with a comparatively slight elevation the back-bone of the peninsula of Yucatan.

At the bases of the central continental heights, on the shores of either ocean, is the tierra caliente, a name applied to all the coast region with an elevation of less than 1,500 feet, and also by the inhabitants to many interior valleys of high temperature. So abruptly do the mountains rise on the Pacific side that the western torrid band does not perhaps exceed twenty miles in average width for its whole length, and has exerted comparatively little influence on the history and development of the native races. But on the Atlantic or gulf coast is a broad tract of level plain and marsh, and farther inland a more gradual ascent to the interior heights. This region presents all the features of an extreme tropical climate and vegetation. In the latitude of Vera Cruz barren and sandy tracts are seen; elsewhere the tierre caliente is covered with the densest tropical growth of trees, shrubs, vines, and flowers, forming in their natural state an almost impenetrable thicket. Cocoa, cotton, cacao, sugur-cane, indigo, vanilla, bananas, and the various palms are prominent among the flora; while the fauna includes birds in infinite variety of brilliant plumage, with myriads of tormenting and deadly insects and reptiles. The atmos-

Digitized by Google

phere is deadly to all but natives. The moist soil, enriched by the decay of vegetable substances, breathes pestilence and malaria from every pore, except during the winter months of incessant winds, which blow from October to March. Southern Vera Cruz and Tabasco, the tierra caliente par excellence, exhibit the most luxuriant display of nature's prodigality. Of alluvial and comparatively recent formation, this region is traversed by the Goazacoalco, Alvarado, Usumacinta, and other noble rivers, which rise in the mountains of Guatemala, Chiapas, and Tehuantepec. River-banks are crowded with magnificent forest-trees, and the broad savanas farther back marked off into natural plantations of the valuable dye-woods which abound there, by a network of branch streams and canals, which serve both for irrigation and as a medium of transport for the native products that play no unimportant rôle in the world's commerce. Each year inundations are expected between June and October, and these transform the whole system of lagoons into a broad lake. Farther up the course of the rivers on the foothills of the cordillera, are extensive forests of cedar, mahogany, zapote, Brazil and other precious woods, together with a variety of medicinal plants and aromatic resins.

The whole of Yucatan may, by reason of its temperature and elevation above the sea, be included in the tierra caliente, but its climate is one of the most healthful in all tropical America. The whole north and west of the peninsula are of fossil-shell formation, showing that at no very distant date this region was covered by the waters of the sea. There are no rivers that do not dry up in winter, but by a wonderful system of small ponds and natural wells the country is supplied with water, the soil being moreover always moist, and supporting a rich and vigorous vegetation.

Notwithstanding evident marks of similarity in nearly all the manifestations of the progressional spirit in aboriginal America, in art, thought, and religion,

Digitized by Google

there is much reason for and convenience in referring all the native civilization to two branches, the Maya and the Nahua, the former the more ancient, the latter the more recent and wide-spread. It is important, however, to understand the nature and extent of this division, and just how far it may be considered real and how far ideal. Of all the languages spoken among these nations, the two named are the most wide-spread, and are likewise entirely distinct. In their traditional history, their material relics, and above all, in their methods of recording events by hieroglyphics, as well as in their several lesser characteristics, these two stocks show so many and so clear points of difference standing prominently out from their many resemblances, as to indicate either a separate culture from the beginning, or what is more probable, and for us practically the same thing, a progress in different paths for a long time prior to the coming of the Europeans. Very many of the nations not clearly affiliated with either branch show evident traces of both cultures, and may be reasonably supposed to have developed their condition from contact and intermixture of the parent stocks with each other, and with the neighboring savage tribes. It is only, however, in a very general sense that this classification can be accepted, and then only for practical convenience in elucidating the subject; since there are several nations that must be ranked among our civilized peoples, which, particularly in the matter of language, show no Maya nor Nahua affinities. Nor is too much importance to be attached to the names Maya and Nahua by which I designate these parallel civilizations. The former is adopted for the reason that the Maya people and tongue are commonly regarded as among the most ancient in all the Central American region—a region where formerly flourished the civilization that left such wonderful remains at Palenque, Uxmal, and Copan; the latter as being an older designation than either Aztec or Toltec, both of which stocks the race Nahua includes.

Digitized by Google

The civilization of what is now the Mexican republic, north of Tehuantepec, belonged to the Nahua branch, both at the time of the conquest and throughout the historic period preceding. Very few traces of the Maya element occur north of Chiapas, and these are chiefly linguistic, appearing in two or three nations dwelling along the shores of the Mexican gulf. In published works upon the subject the Aztecs are the representatives of the Nahua element; indeed, what is known of the Aztecs has furnished material for nine tenths of all that has been written on the American civilized nations in general. The truth of the matter is, that the Aztecs were only the most powerful of a league or confederation of three nations, which in the sixteenth century, from their capitals in the valley, ruled central Mexico. This confederation, moreover, was of comparatively recent date. These three nations were the Acolhuas, the Axtecs, and the Tepanecs, and their respective capitals, Tezcuco, Mexico, and Tlacopan (Tacuba), were located near each other on the lake borders, where, except Mexico, they still are found in a sad state of delapidation. Within the valley, in general terms, the eastern section belonged to Tezcuco, the southern and western to Mexico, and a limited territory in the north-west to Tlacopan. At the time when the confederation was formed, which was about one hundred years before the advent of the Spaniards, Tezcuco was the most advanced and powerful of the allies, maintaining her precedence nearly to the end of the fifteenth century. Tlacopan was far inferior to the other two. Her possessions were small, and according to the terms of the compact, which seem always to have been strictly observed, she received but one fifth of the spoils obtained by successful war. While keeping within the boundaries of their respective provinces, so far as the valley of Mexico was concerned, these three chief powers united their forces to extend their conquests beyond the limits of the valley in every direction. Thus under the leadership of a line

Digitized by Google

of warlike kings Mexico extended her domain to the shores of either ocean, and rendered the tribes therein tributary to her. During this period of foreign conquest, the Aztec kings, more energetic, ambitious, warlike, and unscrupulous than their allies, acquired a decided preponderance in the confederate councils and possessions; so that, originally but a small tribe, one of the many which had settled in the valley of Anáhuac, by its valor and success in war, by the comparatively broad extent of its domain, by the magnificence of its capital, the only aboriginal town in America rebuilt by the conquerors in anything like its pristine splendor, and especially by being the people that came directly into contact with the invaders in the desperate struggles of the conquest, the Aztecs became to Europeans, and to the whole modern world, the representatives of the American civilized peoples. Hence, in the observations of those who were personally acquainted with these people, little or no distinction is made between the many different nations of central Mexico, all being described as Aztecs. Indeed, many of the lesser nations favored this error, being proud to claim identity with the brave and powerful people to whose valor they had been forced to succumb. While this state of things doubtless creates some confusion by failing to show clearly the slight tribal differences that existed, yet the difficulty is not a serious one, from the fact that very many of these nations were unquestionably of the same blood as the Aztecs, and that all drew what civilization they possessed from the same Nahua source. I may therefore continue to speak of the Aztecs in their representative character, including directly in this term all the nations permanently subjected to the three ruling powers in Anáhuac, due care being taken to point out such differences as may have been noticed and recorded.

To fix the limits of the Aztec empire with any approximation to accuracy is exceedingly difficult, both by reason of conflicting statements, and because the

Digitized by Google

boundaries were constantly changing as new tribes were brought under Aztec rule, or by successful revolt threw off the Mexican yoke. Clavigero, followed by Prescott, gives to the empire the territory from 18° to 21° on the Atlantic, and 14° to 19° on the Pacific, exclusive, according to the latter author, of the possessions of Tezcuco and Tlacopan. But this extent of territory, estimated at nearly twice that of the state of California, gives an exaggerated idea of Anáhuac, even when that term is applied to the conquered territory of the whole confederacy. The limits mentioned are in reality the extreme points reached by the allied armies in their successful wars, or rather raids, during the most palmy days of Aztec rule. Within these bounds were several nations that were never conquered, even temporarily, by the arms of Anáhuac, as, for example, the Tlascaltecs, the Tarascos, and the Chiapanecs. Many nations, indeed most of those whose home was far from the central capitals, were simply forced on different occasions by the presence of a conquering army to pay tribute and allegiance to the Aztec kings—an allegiance which they were not slow to throw off as soon as the invaders had withdrawn. Such were the nations of northern Guatemala and Soconusco, whose conquest was in reality but a successful raid for plunder and captives; such the nations of Tehuantepec, such the Miztecs and Zapotecs of Oajaca, the latter having completely regained their independence and driven the Aztecs from their soil before the coming of the Spaniards. Other nations were conquered only in the years immediately preceding the Spanish conquest; instance the Matlaltzincas just west of Anáhuac, and the Huastecs and Totonacs of Vera Cruz. By their successful raids among these latter peoples, the Aztecs only sealed their own doom, making inveterate foes of the coast nations, whose services would have been most efficacious in resisting the fatal progress of the Castilian arms. But other tribes less warlike and powerful, or nearer the strongholds of

Digitized by Google

their conquerors, were, by means of frequent military expeditions made to check outbreaking rebellion, kept nominally subject to the Aztecs during fifty years, more or less, preceding the coming of the Spaniards, paying their annual tribute with some regularity. Outside the rocky barriers of their valley, the Mexicans maintained their supremacy only by constant war; and even within the valley their sway was far from undisputed, since several tribes, notably the Chalcas on the southern lake, broke out in open rebellion whenever the imperial armies were elsewhere occupied.

The Aztec empire proper, not restricting it to its original seat in the valley of Mexico, nor including within its limits all the nations which were by the fortunes of war forced at one time or another to pay tribute, may then be said to have extended from the valley of Mexico and its immediate environs, over the territories comprised in the present states of Mexico (with its modern subdivisions of Hidalgo and Morelos), Puebla, southern Vera Cruz, and Guerrero. Of all the nations that occupied this territory, most of them, as I have said, were of one blood and language with their masters, and all, by their character and institutions, possessed in greater or less degree the Nahua culture. Of many of the multitudinous nations occupying the vast territory surrounding the valley of Mexico, nothing is known beyond their names, and their likeness, near or remote, to the Aztecs. For a statement of their names and localities in detail, the reader is referred to the Tribal Boundaries following the chapter on the Central Mexicans in the first volume of this work. Let it be understood, therefore, that the description of Aztec institutions contained in this volume applies to all the nations of the empire as bounded above, except where special limitation is indicated; besides which it has a general application to a much wider region, in fact to the whole country north of the isthmus of Tehauntepec.

In this connection, and before attempting a descrip-

Digitized by Google

tion of the Mexican nations beyond the limits of the empire—nations more or less independent of Aztec sway—a glance at ancient Mexican history seems necessary, as well to throw light on the mutual relations of the peoples of Anáhuac, as to partially explain the broad extent of the Nahua civilization and of the Aztec idiom. The old-time story, how the Toltecs in the sixth century appeared on the Mexican table-land, how they were driven out and scattered in the eleventh century, how after a brief interval the Chichimecs followed their footsteps, and how these last were succeeded by the Aztecs who were found in possession—the last two, and probably the first, migrating in immense hordes from the far north-west—all this is sufficiently familiar to readers of Mexican history, and is furthermore fully set forth in the fifth volume of this work. It is probable, however, that this account, accurate to a certain degree, has been by many writers too literally construed; since the once popular theory of wholesale national migrations of American peoples within historic times, and particularly of such migrations from the north-west, may now be regarded as practically unfounded. The sixth century is the most remote period to which we are carried in the annals of Anáhuac by traditions sufficiently definite to be considered in any proper sense as historic records. At this period we find the Nahua civilization and institutions established on the table-land, occupied then as at every subsequent time by many tribes more or less distinct from each other. And there this culture remained without intermixture of essentially foreign elements down to the sixteenth century; there the successive phases of its development appeared, and there the progressional spirit continued to ferment for a period of ten centuries, which fermentation constitutes the ancient Mexican history. During the course of these ten centuries we may follow, now definitely, now vaguely, the social, religious, and political convulsions through which these aboriginals were doomed to pass.

Digitized by Google

From small beginnings we see mighty political powers evolved, and these overturned and thrown into obscurity by other and rival unfoldings. Religious sects in like manner we see succeed each other, coloring their progress with frequent persecutions and reformations, not unworthy of Old World mediæval fanaticism, as partisans of rival deities shape the popular superstition in conformity with their creeds. Wars, long and bloody, are waged for plunder, for territory, and for souls; now, to quell the insurrection of a tributary prince, now to repel the invasion of outer barbarian hordes. Leaders, political and religious, rising to power with their nation, faction, city, or sect, are driven at their fall into exile, and thereby forced to seek their fortunes and introduce their culture among distant tribes. Outside bands, more or less barbarous, but brave and powerful, come to settle in Anáhuac, and to receive, voluntarily or involuntarily, the benefits of its arts and science.

I have no disposition unduly to magnify the New World civilization, nor to underrate Old World culture, but during these ten centuries of almost universal mediæval gloom, the difference between the two civilizations was less than most people imagine. On both sides of the Dark Sea humanity lay floundering in besotted ignorance; the respective qualities of that ignorance it is hardly profitable to analyze. The history of all these complicated changes, so far as it may be traced, separates naturally into three chronologic periods, corresponding with what are known as the Toltec, the Chichimec, and the Aztec empires. Prior to the sixth century doubtless there were other periods of Nahua greatness, for there is little evidence to indicate that this was the first appearance in Mexico of this progressive people; but previous developments cannot be definitely followed, although affording occasional glimpses which furnish interesting matter for antiquarian speculation.

At the opening, then, of the historic times, we find

Digitized by Google

the Toltecs in possession of Anáhuac and the surrounding country. Though the civilization was old, the name was new, derived probably, although not so regarded by all, from Tollan, a capital city of the empire, but afterward becoming synonymous with all that is excellent in art and high culture. Tradition imputes to the Toltecs a higher civilization than that found among the Aztecs, who had degenerated with the growth of the warlike spirit, and especially by the introduction of more cruel and sanguinary religious rites. But this superiority, in some respects not improbable, rests on no very strong evidence, since this people left no relics of that artistic skill which gave them so great traditional fame; there is, however, much reason to ascribe the construction of the pyramids at Teotihuacan and Cholula to the Toltec or a still earlier period. Among the civilized peoples of the sixteenth century, however, and among their descendants down to the present day, nearly every ancient relic of architecture or sculpture is accredited to the Toltecs, from whom all claim descent. In fact, the term Toltec became synonymous in later times with all that was wonderful or mysterious in the past; and so confusing has been the effect of this universal reference of all traditional events to a Toltec source, that, while we cannot doubt the actual existence of this great empire, the details of its history, into which the supernatural so largely enters, must be regarded as to a great extent mythical.

There are no data for fixing accurately the bounds of the Toltec domain, particularly in the south. There is very little, however, to indicate that it was more extensive in this direction than that of the Aztecs in later times, although it seems to have extended somewhat farther northward. On the west there is some evidence that it included the territory of Michoacan, never subdued by the Aztecs; and it probably stretched eastward to the Atlantic, including the Totonac territory of Vera Cruz. Of the tribes or nations

Digitized by Google

that made up the empire none can be positively identified by name with any of the later peoples found in Anáhuac, though there can be little doubt that several of the latter were descended directly from the Toltecs and contemporary tribes; and indeed, it is believed with much reason that the semi-barbarous Otomís of Anáhuac, and several nations beyond the limits of the valley, may date their tribal history back to a period even preceding the Toltec era. During the most flourishing period of its traditional five centuries of duration, the Toltec empire was ruled by a confederacy similar in some respects to the alliance of later date between Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan. The capitals were Culhuacan, Otompan, and Tollan, the two former corresponding somewhat in territory with Mexico and Tezcuco, while the latter was just beyond the limits of the valley toward the north-west. Each of these capital cities became in turn the leading power in the confederacy. Tollan reached the highest eminence in culture, splendor, and fame, and Culhuacan was the only one of the three to survive by name the bloody convulsions by which the empire was at last overthrown, and retain anything of her former greatness.

Long-continued civil wars, arising chiefly from dissensions between rival religious factions, resulting naturally in pestilence and famine, which in the aboriginal annals are attributed to the direct interposition of irate deities, gradually undermine the imperial thrones. Cities and nations previously held in subjection, or overshadowed by the splendor and power of Tollan, take advantage of her civil troubles to enlarge their respective domains and to establish independent powers. Distant tribes, more or less barbarous, but strong and warlike, come and establish themselves in desirable localities within the limits of an empire whose rulers are now powerless to repel invasion. So the kings of Tollan, Culhuacan, and Otompan lose, year by year, their prestige, and finally, in the middle of

Digitized by Google

the eleventh century, are completely overthrown, leaving the Mexican table-land to be ruled by new combinations of rising powers. Thus ends the Toltec period of ancient Anáhuac history.

The popular account pictures the whole Toltec population, or such part of it as had been spared by war, pestilence, and famine, as migrating en masse southward, and leaving Anáhuac desolate and unpeopled for nearly a half-century, to be settled anew by tribes that crowded in from the north-west when they learned that this fair land had been so strangely abandoned. This account, like all other national migration narratives pertaining to the Americans, has little foundation in fact or in probability.

The royal families and religious leaders of the Toltecs were doubtless driven into perpetual exile, and were accompanied by such of the nobility as preferred, rather than content themselves with subordinate positions at home, to try their fortunes in new lands, some of which were perhaps included in the southern parts of the empire concerning which so little is known. That there was any essential or immediate change in the population of the table-land beyond the irruption of a few tribes, is highly improbable. The exiled princes and priests, as I have said, went southward, where doubtless they played an important part in the subsequent history of the Maya-Quiché nations of Central America, a history less fully recorded than that of Anáhuac. That these exiles were the founders of the Central American civilization, a popular belief supported by many writers, I cannot but regard as another phase of that tendency above-mentioned to attribute all that is undefined and ill understood to the great and wonderful Toltecs; nor do I believe that the evidence warrants such an hypothesis. If the pioneer civilizers of the south, the builders of Palenque, Copan, and other cities of the more ancient type, were imbued with or influenced by the Nahua culture, as is not improbable,

Digitized by Google

it certainly was not that culture as carried southward in the eleventh century, but a development or phase of it long preceding that which took the name of Toltec on the Mexican plateaux. With the destruction of the empire, the term Toltec, as applied to an existing people, disappeared. This disappearance of the name, while the institutions of the nation continued to flourish, may indicate that the designation of the people—or possibly of the ruling family—of Tollan, was not applied contemporaneously to the whole empire, and that in the traditions and records of later times, it has incidentally acquired a fictitious importance. Of the Toltec cities, Culhuacan, on the lake border, recovered under the new political combinations something of her old prominence; the name Culhuas applied to its people appears much more ancient than that of Toltecs, and indeed the Mexican civilization as a whole might perhaps as appropriately be termed Culhua as Nahua.

The new era succeeding the Toltec rule is that of the Chichimec empire, which endured with some variations down to the coming of Cortés. The ordinary version of the early annals has it that the Chichimecs, a wild tribe living far in the north-west, learning that the fertile regions of central Mexico had been abandoned by the Toltecs, came down in immense hordes to occupy the land. Numerous other tribes came after them at short intervals, were kindly received and granted lands for settlement, and the more powerful of the new-comers, in confederation with the orginal Chichimec settlers, developed into the so-called empire. Now, although this occupation of the central table-lands by successive migrations of foreign tribes cannot be accepted by the sober historian, and although we must conclude that very many of the so-called new-comers were tribes that had occupied the country during the Toltec period—their names now coming into notice with their increasing importance and power—yet it is probable that some new tribes,

Digitized by Google

sufficiently powerful to exercise a great if not a controlling influence in building up the new empire, did at this time enter Anáhuac from the immediately bordering regions, and play a prominent part, in conjunction with the rising nations within the valley, in the overthrow of the kings of Tollan. These incoming nations, by alliance with the original inhabitants, infused fresh life and vigor into the worn-out monarchies, furnishing the strength by which new powers were built up on the ruins of the old, and receiving on the other hand the advantages of the more perfect Nahua culture.

If one, and the most powerful, of these new nations was, as the annals state, called the Chichimec, nothing whatever is known of its race or language. The Chichimecs, their identity, their idiom, and their institutions, if any such there were, their name even, as a national appellation, were merged into those of the Nahua nations that accompanied or followed them, and were there lost. The ease and rapidity with which this tribal fusion of tongue and culture is represented to have been accomplished would indicate at least that the Chichimecs, if a separate tribe, were of the same race and language as the Toltecs; but however this may be, it must be conceded that, while they cannot have been the wild cave-dwelling barbarians painted by some of the historians, they did not introduce into Anáhuac any new element of civilization.

The name Chichimec at the time of the Spanish conquest, and subsequently, was used with two significations: first, as applied to the line of kings that reigned at Tezcuco; and second, to all the wild hunting tribes, particularly in the broad and little known regions of the north. Traditionally or historically the name has been applied to nearly every people mentioned in the ancient history of America. This has caused the greatest confusion among writers on the subject, a confusion which I believe can only be cleared up by the supposition that the name Chichimec, like

Digitized by Google

that of Toltec, never was applied as a tribal or national designation proper to any people while such people were living. It seems probable that among the Nahua peoples that occupied the country from the sixth to the eleventh centuries, a few of the leading powers appropriated to themselves the title Toltecs, which had been at first employed by the inhabitants of Tollan, whose artistic excellence soon rendered it a designation of honor. To the other Nahua peoples, by whom these leading powers were surrounded, whose institutions were identical, but whose polish and elegance of manner were deemed by these self-constituted autocrats somewhat inferior, the term Chichimecs, barbarians, etymologically 'dogs,' was applied. After the convulsions that overthrew Tollan and reversed the condition of the Nahua nations, the 'dogs' in their turn assumed an air of superiority, and retained their designation Chichimecs as a title of honor and nobility.

The names of the tribes represented as entering Anáhuac after the Chichimecs, but respecting the order of whose coming there is little agreement among authors, are the following: Matlaltzincas, Tepanecs, Acolhuas, Teo-Chichimecs (Tlascaltecs), Malinalcas, Cholultecs, Xochimilcas, Chalcas, Huexotzincas, Cuitlahuacs, Cuicatecs, Mizquicas, Tlahuicas, Cohuixcas, and Aztecs. Some of these, as I have said, may have entered the valley from the immediate north. Which these were I shall not attempt to decide, but they were nearly all of the same race and language, all lived under Nahua institutions, and their descendants were found living on and about the Aztec plateau in the sixteenth century, speaking, with one or two exceptions, the Aztec tongue.

In the new era of prosperity that now dawned on Anáhuac, Culhuacan, where some remnants even of the Toltec nobility remained, under Chichimec auspices regained to a great extent its old position as a centre of culture and power. Among the new na-

Digitized by Google

tions whose name now first appears in history, the Acolhuas and Tepanecs soon rose to political prominence in the valley. The Acolhuas were the Chichimecs par excellence, or, as tradition has it, the Chichimec nation was absorbed by them, giving up its name, language, and institutions. The capitals which ruled the destinies of Anáhuac down to the fifteenth century, besides Culhuacan, were Tenayocan, Xaltocan, Coatlychan, Tezcuco, and Azcapuzalco. These capitals being governed for the most part by branches of the same royal Chichimec family, the era was one of civil intrigue for the balance of power and for succession to the throne, rather than one of foreign conquest. During the latter part of the period, Tezcuco, the Acolhua capital under the Chichimec kings proper, Azcapuzalco, the capital of the Tepanecs, and Culhuacan held the country under their sway, sometimes allied to meet the forces of foreign foes, but oftener plotting against each other, each, by alliance with a second against the third, aiming at universal dominion. At last in this series of political manœuvres Culhuacan was permanently overthrown, and the Chichimec ruler at Tezcuco was driven from his possessions by the warlike chief of the Tepanecs, who thus for a short time was absolute master of Anáhuac.

But with the decadence of the Culhua power at Culhuacan, another of the tribes that came into notice in the valley after the fall of the Toltecs had been gradually gaining a position among the nations. This rising power was the Aztecs, a people traditionally from the far north-west, whose wanderings are described in picture-writings shown in another part of this volume. Their migration is more definitely described than that of any other of the many who are said to have come from the same direction, and has been considered by different writers to be a migration from California, New Mexico, or Asia. Later researches indicate that the pictured annals are in-

Digitized by Google

tended simply as a record of the Aztec wanderings in the valley of Mexico and its vicinity. Whatever their origin, by their fierce and warlike nature and bloody religious rites, from the first they made themselves the pests of Anáhuac, and later its tyrants. For some centuries they acquired no national influence, but were often conquered, enslaved, and driven from place to place, until early in the fourteenth century, when Mexico or Tenochtitlan was founded, and under a line of able warlike kings started forward in its career of prosperity unequalled in the annals of aboriginal America. At the fall of Culhuacan, Mexico ranked next to Tezcuco and Azcapuzalco, and when the armies of the latter prevailed against the former, Mexico was the most powerful of all the nations that sprang to arms, and pressed forward to humble the Tepanec tyrant, to reinstate the Acolhua monarch on his throne, and to restore Tezcuco to her former commanding position. The result was the utter defeat of the Tepanecs, and the glory of Azcapuzalco departed forever.

Thus ended in the early part of the fifteenth century the Chichimec empire—that is, it nominally ended, for the Chichimec kings proper lost nothing of their power—and, by the establishment of the confederacy already described, the Aztec empire was inaugurated. Under the new dispensation of affairs, Mexico, by whose aid chiefly Azcapuzalco had been humbled, received rank and dominion at least equal to that of Tezcuco, while from motives of policy, and in order, so far as possible, to conciliate the good-will of a strong though conquered people, Tlacopan, under a branch of the Tepanecs, with a less extensive domain, was admitted to the alliance. The terms of the confederacy seem, as I have said, never to have been openly violated; but in the first years of the sixteenth century the Aztecs had not only excited the hatred of the most powerful nations outside the bounds of Anáhuac by their foreign raids, but by their arrogant, overbearing spirit had made themselves ob-

Digitized by Google

noxious at home. Their aim at supreme power was apparent, and both Tezcuco and the independent republic of Tlascala began to tremble at the dangerous progress of their mighty neighbor. A desperate struggle was imminent, in which the Aztecs, pitted against all central Mexico, by victory would have grasped the coveted prize of imperial power, or crushed, as were the Tepanecs before them, by a coalition of nations, would have yielded their place in the confederacy to some less dangerous rival. At this juncture Cortés appeared. This renowned chieftain aided Montezuma's foes to triumph, and in turn fastened the shackles of European despotism on all alike, with a partial exception in favor of brave Tlascala. The nations which formed the Aztec empire proper were the tribes for the most part that have been named as springing into existence or notice in Anáhuac early in the Chichimec period, and the names of most of them have been preserved in the names of modern localities. It will be seen, in treating of the languages of the Pacific States, that the Aztec tongue, in a pure state, in distinct verbal or grammatical traces, and in names of places, is spread over a much wider extent of territory than can be supposed to have ever been brought under subjection to Anáhuac during either the Toltec, Chichimec, or Aztec phases of the Nahua domination. To account for this we have the commercial connections of the Aztecs, whose traders are known to have pushed their mercantile ventures far beyond the regions subjected by force of arms; colonies which, both in Toltec and Aztec times, may be reasonably supposed to have sought new homes; the exile of nobles and priests at the fall of the Toltec empire, and other probable migrations, voluntary and involuntary, of princes and teachers; the large detachments of Aztecs who accompanied the Spaniards in the expeditions by which the continent was brought under subjection; and finally, if all these are not sufficient, the unknown

Digitized by Google

history and migrations of the Nahua peoples during the centuries preceding the Toltec era.

I will now briefly notice the civilized nations beyond the limits of Anáhuac, and more or less independent of the Aztec rule, concerning whose institutions and history comparatively little or nothing is known, except what is drawn from the Aztec annals, with some very general observations or their condition made by their Spanish conquerors. Westward of the Mexican valley was the flourishing independent kingdom of Michoacan, in possession of the Tarascos, whose capital was Tzintzuntzan on Lake Patzcuaro. Their country, lying for the most part between the rivers Mexcala and Tololotlan, is by its altitude chiefly in the tierra templada, and enjoys all the advantages of a tropical climate, soil, and vegetation. Topographically it presents a surface of undulating plains, intersected by frequent mountain chains and by the characteristic ravines, and well watered by many streams and beautiful lakes; hence the name Michoacan, which signifies 'land abounding in fish.' The lake region of Patzcuaro, the seat of the Tarasco kings, is described as unsurpassed in picturesque beauty, while in the variety of its agricultural products and in its yield of mineral wealth, Michoacan was equalled by few of the states of New Spain.

If we may credit the general statements of early authors, who give us but few details, in their institutions, their manners, wealth, and power, the Tarascos were at least fully the equals of the Aztecs, and in their physical development were even superior. That they successfully resisted and defeated the allied armies of Anáhuac is sufficient proof of their military prowess, although they yielded almost without a struggle to the Spaniards after the fall of Mexico. With respect to their civilization, we must accept the statements of their superiority as the probably correct impression of those who came first in contact with this people, notwithstanding which I find no architectural or artistic

Digitized by Google

relics of a high culture within their territory. All that is known on the subject indicates that their civilization was of the Nahua type, although the language is altogether distinct from the Aztec, the representative Nahua tongue. The history of Michoacan, in the form of any but the vaguest traditions, does not reach back farther than the thirteenth century; nevertheless, as I have said, there is some reason to suppose that it formed part of the Toltec empire. The theory has even been advanced that the Tarascos, forming a part of that empire, were not disturbed by its fall, and were therefore the best representatives of the oldest Nahua culture. Their reported physical superiority might favor this view, but their distinct language, on the contrary, would render it improbable. A careful study of all that is known of this people convinces me that they had long been settled in the lands where they were found, but leaves on the mind no definite idea of their earlier history. Their later annals are made up of tales, partaking largely of the marvellous and supernatural, of the doings of certain demi-gods or priests, and of wars waged against the omnipresent Chichimecs. Branches of the great and primitive Otomí family are mentioned as having their homes in the mountains, and there are traditions that fragments of the Aztecs and other tribes which followed the Chichimecs into Anáhuac lingered on the route of their migration and settled in the fertile valleys of Michoacan. Between the Tarascos and the Aztecs, speaking a language different from either, but allied more or less intimately with the former, were the Matlaltzincas, whose capital was in the plateau valley of Toluca, just outside the bounds of Anáhuac. This was one of the tribes that have already been named as coming traditionally from the north-west. For a long time they maintained their independence, but in the last quarter of the fifteenth century were forced to yield to the victorious arms of Axayacatl, the Aztec warrior king.

Digitized by Google

Immediately below the mouth of the Mexcala, on the border of the Pacific, were the lands of the Cuitlatecs, and also the province or kingdom of Zacatollan, whose capital was the modern Zacatula. Of these two peoples absolutely nothing is known, save that they were tributary to the Aztec empire, the latter having been added to the domain of Tezcuco in the very last years of the fifteenth century.

The provinces that extended south-westward from Anáhuac to the ocean, belonging chiefly to the modern state of Guerrero, and included in what I have described as the Aztec empire proper, were those of the Tlahuicas, whose capital was Cuernavaca, the Cohuixcas, capital at Acapulco, the Yoppi on the coast south of Acapulco, and the province of Mazatlan farther inland or north-east. The name Tlapanecs is also rather indefinitely applied to the people of a portion of this territory in the south, including probably the Yoppi. Of the names mentioned we have met those of the Tlahuicas and Cohuixcas among the tribes newly springing into notice at the beginning of the Chichimec period. It is probable that nearly all were more or less closely allied in race and language to their Mexican masters, their political subjection to whom dates from about the middle of the fifteenth century

The western slope of the cordillera still farther south-west, comprising in general terms the modern state of Oajaca, was ruled and to a great extent inhabited by the Miztecs and Zapotecs, two powerful nations distinct in tongue from the Aztecs and from each other. Western Oajaca, the home of the Miztecs, was divided into Upper and Lower Miztecapan, the latter toward the coast, and the former higher up in the mountains, and sometimes termed Cohuaixtlahuacan. The Zapotecs in eastern Oajaca, when first definitely known to history, had extended their power over nearly all the tribes of Tehuantepec, besides encroaching somewhat on the Miztec boundaries. The Miztecs, notwithstanding the foreign aid of Tlascaltecs

Digitized by Google

and other eastern foes of the Aztec king, were first defeated by the allied forces of Anáhuac about 1458; and from that date the conquerors succeeded in holding their stronger towns and more commanding positions down to the conquest, thus enforcing the payment of tribute and controlling the commerce of the southern coast, which was their primary object. Tehuantepec and Soconusco yielded some years after to the conquering Axayacatl, and Zapotecapan still later to his successor Ahuitzotl; but in the closing years of the fifteenth century the Zapotecs recovered their country with Tehuantepec, leaving Socunusco, however, permanently in Aztec possession. The history of the two nations takes us no farther back than the fourteenth century, when they first came into contact with the peoples of Anáhuac; it gives a record of their rulers and their deeds of valor in wars waged against each other, against the neighboring tribes, and against the Mexicans. Prior to that time we have a few traditions of the vaguest character preserved by Burgoa, the historian of Oajaca. These picture both Miztecs and Zapotecs as originally wild, but civilized by the influence of teachers, priests, or beings of supernatural powers, who came among them, one from the south, and others from the direction of Anáhuac. Their civilization, however received, was surely Nahua, as is shown by the resemblances which their institutions, and particularly their religious rites, bear to those of the Aztecs. Being of the Nahua type, its origin has of course been referred to that inexhaustible source, the dispersion of the Toltecs, or to proselyting teachers sent southward by that wonderful people. Indeed, the Miztec and Zapotec royal families claimed a direct Toltec descent. It is very probable, however, that the Nahua element here was at least contemporaneous in its introduction with the same element known as Toltec in Anáhuac, rather than implanted in Oajaca by missionaries, voluntary or involuntary, from Tollan. I have already remarked that the presence of

Digitized by Google

Nahua institutions in different regions is too often attributed to the Toltec exiles, and too seldom to historical events preceding the sixth century. The Oajacan coast region, or tierra caliente, if we may credit the result of researches by the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, was sometimes known as Anáhuac Ayotlan, as the opposite coast of Tabasco was called Anáhuac Xicalanco. Both these Anáhuacs were inhabited by enterprising commercial peoples, whose flourishing centres of trade were located at short intervals along the coast. Material relics of past excellence in architecture and other arts of civilization abound in Oajaca, chief among which stand the remarkable structures at Mitla.

Although Tehuantepec in the later aboriginal times was subject to the kings of Zapotecapan, yet within its limits, besides the Chontales—a name resembling in its uncertainty of application that of Chichimecs farther north—were the remnants of two old nations that still preserve their independence. These were the Mijes, living chiefly by the chase in the mountain fastnesses of the north, and the Huaves, who held a small territory on the coast and islands of the lagoons just east of the city of Tehuantepec. The Mijes, so far as the vague traditions of the country reveal anything of their past, were once the possessors of Zapotecapan and the isthmus of Tehuantepec, antedating the Zapotecs and perhaps the Nahua culture in this region, being affiliated, as some believe, in institutions and possibly in language, with the Maya element of Central America. While this connection must be regarded as somewhat conjectural, we may nevertheless accept as probably authentic the antiquity, civilization, and power of this brave people. The Huaves were traditionally of southern origin, having come to Tehuantepec by sea from Nicaragua or a point still farther south. In navigation and in commerce they were enterprising, as were indeed all the tribes of this southern-coast Anáhuac, and they took gradually from the Mijes,

Digitized by Google

whom they found in possession, a large extent of territory, which, as we have seen, they were finally forced to yield up to their Zapotec conquerors.

Crossing now to the Atlantic or gulf shores, we have from the past nothing but a confused account of Olmecs, Xicalancas, and Nonohualcas, who may have been distinct peoples, or the same people under different names at different epochs, and who at some time inhabited the lowlands of Tehuantepec and Vera Cruz, as well as those of Tobasco farther south. At the time of the conquest we know that this region was thickly inhabited by a people scarcely less advanced than those of Anáhuac, and dotted with flourishing towns devoted to commerce. But neither in the sixteenth nor immediately preceding centuries can any one civilized nation be definitely named as occupying this Anáhuac Xicalanco. We know, however, that this country north of the Goazacoalco River formed a portion of the Aztec empire, and that its inhabitants spoke for the most part the Aztec tongue. These provinces, known as Cuetlachtlan and Goazacoalco, were conquered, chiefly with a view to the extension of the Aztec commerce, as early as the middle of the fifteenth century, notwithstanding the assistance rendered by the armies of Tlascala.

The plateau east of Anáhuac, sometimes known as Huitzilapan, was found by the Spaniards in the possession of the independent republics or cities of Tlascala, Huexotzinco, and Cholula. The people who occupied this part of the table-land were the Teo-Chichimecs, of the same language and of the same traditional north-western origin as the Aztecs, whom they preceded in Anáhuac. Late in the thirteenth century they left the valley of Mexico, and in several detachments established themselves on the eastern plateau, where they successfully maintained their independence of all foreign powers. As allies of the Chichimec king of Tezcuco they aided in overturning the Tepanec tyrant of Azcapuzalco; but after the subsequent dan-

Digitized by Google

gerous development of Aztec ambition, the Tlascaltec armies aided in nearly every attempt of other nations to arrest the progress of the Mexicans toward universal dominion. Their assistance, as we have seen, was unavailing except in the final successful alliance with the forces of Cortés; for, although secure in their small domain against foreign invasion, their armies were often defeated abroad. Tlascala has retained very nearly its original bounds, and the details of its history from the foundation of the city are, by the writings of the native historian Camargo, more fully known than those of most other nations outside of Anáhuac. This author, however, gives us the annals of his own and the surrounding peoples from a Tlascaltec standpoint only. Before the Teo-Chichimec invasion of Huitzilapan, Cholula had already acquired great prominence as a Toltec city, and as the residence of the great Nahua apostle Quetzalcoatl, of which era or a preceding one, the famous pyramid remains as a memento. Outside of Cholula, however, the ancient history of this region presents but a blank page, or one vaguely filled with tales of giants, its first reputed inhabitants, and of the mysterious Olmecs, from some remaining fragments of which people the Tlascaltecs are said to have won their new homes. These Olmecs seem to have been a very ancient people who occupied the whole eastern region, bordering on or mixed with the Xicalancas in the south; or rather the name Olmec seems to have been the designation of a phase or era of the Nahua civilization preceding that known as the Toltec. It is impossible to determine accurately whether the Xicalancas should be classed with the Nahua or Maya element, although probably with the former.

The coast region east of Tlascala, comprising the northern half of the state of Vera Cruz, was the home of the Totonacs, whose capital was the famous Cempoala, and who were conquered by the Aztecs at the close of the fifteenth century. They were probably

Digitized by Google

one of the ancient pre-Toltec peoples like the Otomís and Olmecs, and they claimed to have occupied in former times Anáhuac and the adjoining territory, where they erected the pyramids of the sun and moon at Teotihuacan. Their institutions when first observed by Europeans seem to have been essentially Nahua, and the abundant architectural remains found in Totonac territory, as at Papantla, Misantla, and Tusapan, show no well-defined differences from Aztec contructions proper. Whether this Nahua culture was that originally possessed by them or was introduced at a comparatively late period through the influence of the Teo-Chichimecs, with whom they become largely consolidated, is uncertain. The Totonac language is, however, distinct from the Aztec, and is thought to have some affinity with the Maya.

North of the Totonacs on the gulf coast, in the present state of Tamaulipas, lived the Huastecs, concerning whose early history nothing whatever is known. Their language is allied to the Maya dialects. They were a brave people, looked upon by the Mexicans as semi-barbarous, but were defeated and forced to pay tribute by the king of Tezcuco in the middle of the fifteenth century.

The difficulties experienced in rendering to any degree satisfactory a general view of the northern nations are very greatly augmented now that I come to treat of the Central American tribes. The causes of this increased difficulty are many. I have already noticed the prominence of the Aztecs in most that has been recorded of American civilization. During the conquest of the central portions of the continent following that of Mexico, the Spaniards found an advanced culture, great cities, magnificent temples, a complicated system of religious and political institutions; but all these had been met before in the north, and consequently mere mention in general terms of these later wonders was deemed sufficient by the con-

Digitized by Google

querors, who were a class of men not disposed to make minute observations or comparisons respecting what seemed to them unimportant details. As to the priests, their duty was clearly to destroy rather than to closely investigate these institutions of the devil. And in the years following the conquest, the association between the natives and the conquerors was much less intimate than in Anáhuac. These nations in many instances fought until nearly annihilated, or after defeat retired in national fragments to the inaccessible fastnesses of the cordillera, retaining for several generations—some of them permanently—their independence, and affording the Spaniards little opportunity of becoming acquainted with their aboriginal institutions. In the south, as in Anáhuac, native writers, after their language had been fitted to the Spanish alphabet, wrote more or less fully of their national history; but all such writings whose existence is known are in the possession of one or two individuals, and, excepting the Popol Vuh translated by Ximenes as well as Brasseur de Bourbourg, and the Perez Maya manuscript, their contents are only vaguely known to the public through the writings of their owners. Another difficulty respecting these writings is that their dependence on any original authority more trustworthy than that of orally transmitted traditions, is at least doubtful. The key to the hieroglyphics engraved on the stones of Palenque and Copan, and painted on the pages of the very few ancient manuscripts preserved, is now practically lost; that it was possessed by the writers referred to is, although not impossible, still far from proven. Again, chronology, so complicated and uncertain in the annals of Anáhuac, is here, through the absence of legible written records, almost entirely wanting, so that it is in many cases absolutely impossible to fix even an approximate date for historical events of great importance. The attempts of authors to attach some of these events, without sufficient data,

Digitized by Google

to the Nahua chronology, have done much to complicate the matter still further.

The only author who has attempted to treat of the subject of Central American civilization and antiquity comprehensively as a whole is the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg. The learned abbé, however, with all his research and undoubted knowledge of the subject, and with his well-known enthusiasm and tact in antiquarian engineering, by which he is wont to level difficulties, apparently insurmountable, to a grade which offers no obstruction to his theoretical construction-trains, has been forced to acknowledge at many points his inability to construct a perfect whole from data so meagre and conflicting. Such being the case, the futility must be apparent of attempting here any outline of history which may throw light on the institutions of the sixteenth century. I must be content, for the purposes of this chapter, with a mention of the civilized nations found in possession of the country, and a brief statement of such prominent points in their past as seem well authenticated and important.

Closely enveloped in the dense forests of Chiapas, Guatemala, Yucatan, and Honduras, the ruins of several ancient cities have been discovered, which are far superior in extent and magnificence to any seen in Aztec territory, and of which a detailed description may be found in the fourth volume of this work. Most of these cities were abandoned and more or less unknown at the time of the conquest. They bear hieroglyphic inscriptions apparently identical in character; in other respects they resemble each other more than they resemble the Aztec ruins—or even other and apparently later works in Guatemala and Honduras. All these remains bear evident marks of great antiquity. Their existence and similarity, in the absence of any evidence to the contrary, would indicate the occupation of the whole country at some remote period by nations far advanced in civilization, and closely allied in manners and customs if not in blood and language. Furthermore, the

Digitized by Google

traditions of several of the most advanced nations point to a wide-spread civilization introduced among a numerous and powerful people by Votan and Zamná, who, or their successors, built the cities referred to, and founded great allied empires in Chiapas, Yucatan, and Guatemala; and moreover, the tradition is confirmed by the universality of one family of languages or dialects spoken among the civilized nations, and among their descendants to this day. I deem the grounds sufficient, therefore, for accepting this Central American civilization of the past as a fact, referring it not to an extinct ancient race, but to the direct ancestors of the peoples still occupying the country with the Spaniards, and applying to it the name Maya as that of the language which has claims as strong as any to be considered the mother tongue of the linguistic family mentioned. As I have said before, the phenomena of civilization in North American may be accounted for with tolerable consistency by the friction and mixture of this Maya culture and people with the Nahua element of the north; while that either, by migrations northward or southward, can have been the parent of the other within the traditionally historic past, I regard as extremely improbable. That the two elements were identical in their origin and early development is by no means impossible; all that we can safely presume is that within historic times they have been practically distinct in their workings.

There are also some rather vague traditions of the first appearance of the Nahua civilization in the regions of Tabasco and Chiapas, of its growth, the gradual establishment of a power rivalling that of the people I call Mayas, and of a struggle by which the Nahuas were scattered in different directions, chiefly northward, to reappear in history some centuries later as the Toltecs of Anáhuac. While the positive evidence in favor of this migration from the south is very meagre, it must be admitted that a southern origin of the Nahua culture is far more consistent with fact and

Digitized by Google

tradition than was the north-western origin, so long implicitly accepted. There are no data by which to fix the period of the original Maya empire, or its downfall or breaking-up into rival factions by civil and foreign wars. The cities of Yucatan, as is clearly shown by Mr Stephens, were many of them occupied by the descendants of the builders down to the conquest, and contain some remnants of wood-work still in good preservation, although some of the structures appear to be built on the ruins of others of a somewhat different type. Palenque and Copan, on the contrary, have no traces of wood or other perishable material, and were uninhabited and probably unknown in the sixteenth century. The loss of the key to what must have been an advanced system of hieroglyphics, while the spoken language survived, is also an indication of great antiquity, confirmed by the fact that the Quiché structures of Guatemala differred materially from those of the more ancient epoch. It is not likely that the Maya empire in its integrity continued later than the third or fourth century, although its cities may have been inhabited much later, and I should fix the epoch of its highest power at a date preceding rather than following the Christian era. A Maya manuscript fixes the date of the first appearance in Yucatan of the Tutul Xius at 171 A. D. The Abbé Brasseur, therefore, makes this the date of the Nahua dispersion, believing, on apparently very slight foundation, the Tutul Xius to be one of the Nahua fragments. With the breaking-up of this empire into separate nations at an unknown date, the ancient history of Central America as a whole ceases, and down to a period closely preceding the conquest we have only an occasional event preserved in the traditions of two or three nations.

Yucatan was occupied in the sixteenth century by the Mayas proper, all speaking the same language, and living under practically the same institutions, religious and political. The chief divisions were the

Digitized by Google

Cocomes, Tutul Xius, Itzas, and Cheles, which seem to have been originally the designations of royal or priestly families, rather than tribal names proper of the peoples over whom they held sway. Each of these had their origin-traditions of immigrating tribes or teachers who came in the distant past to seek new homes, escape persecution, or introduce new religious ideas, in the fertile Maya plains. Some of these stranger apostles of new creeds are identified by authors with Toltec missionaries or exiles from Anáhuac. The evidence in favor of this identity in any particular case is of course unsatisfactory, but that it was well founded in some cases is both probable—commercial intercourse having undoubtedly made the two peoples mutually acquainted with each other—and is supported by the presence of Nahua names of rulers and priests, and of Nahua elements in the Yucatec religion, the same remark applying to all Central America. The ancient history of Yucatan is an account of the struggles, alliances, and successive domination of the factions mentioned. To enumerate here, in outline even, these successive changes, so vaguely and confusedly recorded, would be useless, especially as their institutions, so far as can be known, were but slightly affected by political changes among people of the same blood, language, and religion.

The Cocomes were traditionally the original Maya rulers of the land, and the Tutul Xius first came into notice in the second century, the Itzas and Cheles appearing at a much later date. One of the most prosperous eras in the later history of the peninsula of Yucatan is represented to have followed the appearance of Cuculcan, a mysterious stranger corresponding closely in his teachings, as in the etymology of his name, with the Toltec Quetzalcoatl. He became the head of the Cocome dynasty at Mayapan, and ruled the country as did his successors after him in alliance with the Tutul Xius at Uxmal, the Itzas at Chichen Itza, and the Cheles at Izamal. But later the Cocomes

Digitized by Google

were overthrown, and Mayapan destroyed by a revolution of the allies. The Tutul Xius now became the leading power, a position which they held down to the time, not long before the conquest, when the country was divided by war and civil dissensions into numerous petty domains, each ruled by its chief and independent of the rest, all in a weak and exhausted condition compared with their former state, and unable to resist by united effort the progress of the Spanish invaders whom individually they fought most bravely. Three other comparatively recent events of some importance in Yucatec history may be noticed. The Cocomes in the struggle preceding their fall called in the aid of a large force of Xicalancas, probably a Nahua people, from the Tabascan coast region, who after their defeat were permitted by the conquerors to settle in the country. A successful raid by some foreign people, supposed with some reason to be the Quichés from Guatemala, is reported to have been made against the Mayas, with, however, no important permanent results. Finally, a portion of the Itzas migrated southward and settled in the region of Lake Peten, establishing their capital city on an island in the lake. Here they were found, a powerful and advanced nation, by Hernan Cortés in the sixteenth century, and traces of their cities still remain, although it must be noted that another and older class of ruins are found in the same region, dating back perhaps to a time when the glory of the Maya empire had not wholly departed.

Chiapas, politically a part of the Mexican republic, but belonging geographically to Central America, was occupied by the Chiapanecs, Tzendales, and Quelenes. The Tzendales lived in the region about Palenque, and were presumably the direct descendants of its builders, their language having nearly an equal claim with the Maya to be considered the mother tongue. The Chiapanecs of the interior were a warlike tribe, and had before the coming of the Spaniards conquered the

Digitized by Google

other nations, forcing them to pay tribute, and successfully resisting the attacks of the Aztec allies. They also are a very old people, having been referred even to the tribes that preceded the establishment of Votan's empire. Statements concerning their history are numerous and irreconcilable; they have some traditions of having come from the south; their linguistic affinity with the Mayas is at least very slight. The Quelenes or Zotziles, whose past is equally mysterious, inhabited the southern or Guatemalan frontier.

Guatemala and northern Honduras were found in possession of the Mames in the north-west, the Pocomams in the south-east, the Quichés in the interior, and the Cakchiquels in the south. The two latter were the most powerful, and ruled the country from their capitals of Utatlan and Patinamit, where they resisted the Spaniards almost to the point of annihilation, retiring for the most part after defeat to live by the chase in the distant mountain gorges. Guatemalan history from the Votan empire down to an indefinite date not many centuries before the conquest is a blank. It recommences with the first traditions of the nations just mentioned. These traditions, as in the case of every American people, begin with the immigration of foreign tribes into the country as the first in the series of events leading to the establishment of the Quiché-Cakchiquel empire. Assuming the Toltec dispersion from Anáhuac in the eleventh century as a well-authenticated fact, most writers have identified the Guatemalan nations, except perhaps the Mames, by some considered the descendants of the original inhabitants, with the migrating Toltecs who fled southward to found a new empire. I have already made known my scepticism respecting national American migrations in general, and the Toltec migration southward in particular, and there is nothing in the annals of Guatemala to modify the views previously expressed. The Quiché traditions are vague and without chronologic order, much less definite than

Digitized by Google

those relating to the mythical Aztec wanderings. The sum and substance of the Quiché and Toltec identity is the traditional statement that the former people entered Guatemala at an unknown period in the past, while the latter left Anáhuac in the eleventh century. That the Toltecs should have migrated en masse southward, taken possession of Guatemala, established a mighty empire, and yet have abandoned their language for dialects of the original Maya tongue is in the highest degree improbable. It is safer to suppose that the mass of the Quichés and other nations of Guatemala, Chiapas, and Honduras were descended directly from the Maya builders of Palenque, and from contemporary peoples. Yet the differences between the Quiché-Cakchiquel structures and the older architectural remains of the Maya empire indicate a new era of Maya culture, originated not unlikely by the introduction of foreign elements. Moreover, the apparent identity in name and teachings between the early civilizers of the Quiché tradition and the Nahua followers of Quetzalcoatl, together with reported resemblances between actual Quiché and Aztec institutions as observed by Europeans, indicate further that the new element was ingrafted on Maya civilization by contact with the Nahuas—a contact of which the presence of the exiled Toltec nobility may have been a prominent feature. After the overthrow of the original empire, we may suppose the people to have been subdivided during the course of centuries by civil wars and sectarian struggles into petty states, the glory of their former greatness vanished and partially forgotten, the spirit of progress dormant, to be roused again by the presence of the Nahua chiefs. These gathered and infused new life into the scattered remnants; they introduced some new institutions, and thus aided the ancient people to rebuild their empire on the old foundations, retaining the dialects of the original language.

In addition to the peoples thus far mentioned, there

Digitized by Google

were undoubtedly in Nicaragua, and probably in Salvador, nations of nearly pure Aztec blood and language. The former are known among different authors as Nicaraguans, Niquirans, or Cholutecs, and they occupied the coast between lake Nicaragua and the ocean, with the lake islands. Their institutions, political and religious, were nearly the same as those of the Aztecs of Anáhuac, and they have left abundant relics in the form of idols and sepulchral deposits, but no architectural remains. These relics are, moreover, hardly less abundant in the territory of the adjoining tribes, nor do they differ essentially in their nature; hence we must conclude that some other Nicaraguan peoples, either by Aztec or other influence, were considerably advanced in civilization. The Nahua tribes of Salvador, the ancient Cuscatlan, were known as Pipiles, and their culture appears not to have been of a high order. Both of these nations probably owe their existence to a colony sent southward from Anáhuac; but whether in Aztec or pre-Aztec times, the native traditions, like their interpretation by writers on the subject, are inextricably confused and at variance. For further details on the location of Central American nations, I refer to the statement of tribal boundaries at the end of Chapter VII., Volume I., of this work.

I here close this general view of the subject, and if it is in some respects unsatisfactory, I cannot believe that a different method of treatment would have rendered it less so. To have gone more into detail would have tended to confuse rather than elucidate the matter in the reader's mind, unless with the support of extensive quotations from ever-conflicting authorities, which would have swollen this general view from a chapter to a volume. As far as antiquity is concerned, the most intricate element of the subject, I shall attempt to present—if I cannot reconcile—all the important variations of opinion in another division of this work.

Digitized by Google

In the treatment of my subject, truth and accuracy are the principal aim, and these are never sacrificed to graphic style or glowing diction. As much of interest is thrown into the recital as the authorities justify, and no more. Often may be seen the more striking characteristics of these nations dashed off with a skill and brilliance equalled only by their distance from the facts; disputed points and unpleasing traits glossed over or thrown aside whenever they interfere with style and effect. It is my sincere desire, above all others, to present these people as they were, not to make them as I would have them, nor to romance at the expense of truth; nevertheless, it is to be hoped that in the truth enough of interest will remain to command the attention of the reader. My treatment of the subject is essentially as follows: The civilized peoples of North America naturally group themselves in two great divisions, which for convenience may be called the Nahuas and the Mayas respectively; the first representing the Aztec civilization of Mexico, and the second the Maya-Quiché civilization of Central America. In describing their manners and customs, five large divisions may be made of each group. The first may be said to include the systems of government, the order of succession, the ceremonies of election, coronation, and anointment, the magnificence, power, and manner of life of their kings; court forms and observances; the royal palaces and gardens. The second comprises the social system; the classes of nobles, gentry, plebeians and slaves; taxation, tenure, and distribution of lands; vassalage and feudal service; the inner life of the people; their family and private relations, such as marriage, divorce, and education of youth; other matters, such as their dress, food, games, feasts, and dances, knowledge of medicine, and manner of burial. The third division includes their system of war, their relations with foreign powers, their warriors and orders of knighthood, their treatment of prisoners of war and

Digitized by Google

their weapons. The fourth division embraces their system of trade and commerce, the community of merchants, their sciences, arts, and manufactures. The fifth and last considers their judiciary, law courts, and legal officials. I append, as more appropriately placed here than elsewhere, a note on the etymological meaning and derivation, so far as known, of the names of the Civilized Nations.

ETYMOLOGY OF NAMES.

ACOLHUAS.—Possibly from *coloa*, 'to bend,' meaning with the prefix *atl*, 'water-colhuas,' or 'people at the bend of the water.' Not from *acolli*, 'shoulder,' nor from *colli*, 'grandfather.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 85, 89. '*Coloa*, encorvar, o entortar algo, o rodear yendo camino.' '*Acolli*, ombro.' '*Culhuia*, lleuar o otro por rodeos a alguna parte.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* *Colli*, 'grandfather,' plural *colhuan*. *Colhuacan*, or *Culiacan*, may then mean 'the land of our ancestors.' *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc. Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 204–5. 'El nombre de *aculhuas*, ó segun la ortografía mexicana, *aculhuaque*, en plural, y no *aculhuacanes*, ni *acuIhues*.' *Dicc. Univ.*, tom. i., p. 39. '*Col*, chose courbe, faisant *coloa*, *colua*, ou *culhua*, nom appliqué plus tard dans le sens d'ancêtre, parce que du *Colhuacan* primitif, des îles de la Courbe, vinrent les émigrés qui civilisèrent les habitants de la vallée d'Anahuac.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, p. 407. '*Colhua*, ou *culhua*, *culua*, de *coltic*, chose courbée. De là le nom de la cité de *Colhuacan*, qu'on traduit indifféremment, ville de la courbe, de choses recourbées (des serpents), et aussi des aïeux, de *coltzin*, aïeul.' *Id., Popol Vuh*, p. xxix.

AZTECS.—From *Aztlan*, the name of their ancient home, from a root *Aztli*, which is lost. It has no connection with *azcatl*, 'ant,' but may have some referrence to *iztac*, 'white.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 5–6. 'De *Aztlan* se deriva el nacional *Aztecatl*.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 158. '*Az*, primitif d'*azcatl*, fourmi, est le mot qui désigne, à la fois, d'une manière générale, la vapeur, le gaz, ou toute chose légère, comme le vent ou la pluie; c'est l'aile, *aztli* qui désigne aussi la vapuer, c'est le héron dans *aztatl*. Il se retrouve, avec une légère variante, dans le mot nahuatl composé, *tem-az-calli*, bain de vapeur, dans *ez-tli*, le sang ou la lave; dans les vocables quichés *atz*, bouffée du fumée, épouvantail, feu-follet....Ainsi les fourmis de la tradition haïtienne, comme de la tradition mexicaine, sont à la fois des images des feux intérieurs de la terre et de leurs exhalaisons, comme du travail des mines et de l'agriculture. Du même primitif *az* vient *Aztlan* "le Pays sur ou dans le gaz, *az-tan*, *az-dan*, la terre sèche, soulevée par les gaz ou remplie de vapeurs."' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, p. 311.

CHALCAS.—'Il nome *Chalcho* vale, Nella gemma. Il P. Acosta dice, che *Chalco* vuol dire, Nelle bocche.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 253. Buschmann believes Acosta's definition 'in the mouths' to be more

Digitized by Google

correct. *Ortsnamen*, p. 83. 'Chalca, Ce qui est le calcaire; c'est l'examen de tous les vocables mexicains, commençant en *chal*, qui m'a fait découvrir le sens exact de ce mot; il se trouve surtout dan *chal-chi-huitl*, le jade, littéralement ce qui est sorti du fond du calcaire.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, pp. 408, 406.

CHELES.—'Le *Chel* dans la langue maya est une espèce d'oiseaux particuliers à cette contrée.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 19.

CHIAPANECS.—*Chiapan*, 'locality of the *chia*' (oil-seed). *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 187. '*Chiapanèque*, du nahuatl *chiapanecatl*, c'est-à-dire homme de la rivière Chiapan (eau douce), n'est pas le nom véritable de ce peuple; c'est celui que lui donnèrent les Mexicains.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 87.

CHICHIMECS.—'*Chichi*, perro, o perra.' *Molina, Vocabulario. Chichi*, 'dog;' perhaps as inhabitants of *Chichimecan*, 'place of dogs.' *Mecatl* may mean 'line,' 'row,' 'race,' and *Chichimecatl*, therefore, 'one of the race of dogs.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 79, 81. 'Chichimèque veut dire, à proprement parler, homme sauvage....Ce mot désigne des hommes qui mangent de la viande crue et sucent le sang des animaux; car *chichiliztli* veut dire, en mexicain, sucer; *chichinaliztli*, la chose que l'on suce, et *Chichihualli*, mamelle....Toutes les autres nations les redoutaient et leur donnaient le nom de Suceurs, en mexicain, *Chichimecatechinani*....Les Mexicains nomment aussi les chiens *chichime*, parce qu'ils lèchent le sang des animaux et le sucent.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlaxcallan*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 140. '*Teuchichimecas*, que quiere decir *del todo barbados*, que por otro nombre se decian Cacachimecas, ó sea hombres silvestres.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 116. '*Chichimec* ou *chichimetl*, suceur de maguey, et de là les Chichimèques.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 171, 56. Other derivations are from *Chichen*, a city of Yucatan, and from *chichiltic*, 'red,' referring to the color of all Indians. *Id., Popol Vuh*, p. lxiii. '*Chi*....selon Vetancourt, c'est une préposition, exprimant ce qui est tout en bas, au plus profond, comme *aco* signifie ce qui est au plus haut....*Chichi* est un petit chien (*chi*-en), de ceux qu'on appelle de Chihuahua, qui se creusent des tanières souterraines....*Chichi* énonce tout ce qui est amer, aigre ou âcre, tout ce qui fait tache: il a le sens de sucer, d'absorber; c'est la salive, c'est le poumon et la mamelle. Si maintenant....j'ajoute *me*, primitif de *metl*, aloès, chose courbée, vous aurez *Chichime*, choses courbes, tortueuses, suçantes, absorbantes, amères, âcres ou acides, se cachant, comme les petits chiens terriers, sous le sol où elles se concentrent, commes des poumons ou des mamelles....Or, puisqu'il est acquis, d'après ces peintures et ces explications, qui tout cela doit s'appliquer à une puissance tellurique, errante, d'ordinaire, comme les populations nomades, auxquelles on attacha le nom de *Chichimeca*.' *Id., Quatre Lettres*, pp. 111–12.

CHOLULTECS.—From *choloa*, meaning 'to spring,' 'to run,' 'to flee,' or 'place where water springs up,' 'place of flight,' or 'fugitives.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 100. 'C'est du lieu d'où ils étaient sortis primitivement, ou plutôt à cause de leur qualité actuelle d'exilés, qu'ils prirent ensuite le nom

Digitized by Google

de *Cholutecas.*' '*Cholutecas*, mieux *Cholultecas* c'est-à-dire, Exilés, et aussi, Habitants de Cholullan.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 79.

CHONTALES.—'*Chontulli*, estrangero o forastero.' *Molina, Vocabulario; Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, p. 21; *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 133; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 47.

COCOMES.—'*Cocom* signifie écouteur, croyant. *Landa, Rel. de las Cosas de Yucatan*, p. 39. 'Cocom est un nom d'origine nahuatl; il est le pluriel de cohuatl, serpent....Dans la langue maya, le mot cocom a la signification d'écouteur, celui qui entend; cette étymologie nous paraît plus rationnelle que la première.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 78.

COHUIXCAS.—Ayala translates the name of their province Cuixca, 'tierra de lagartijas.' *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, p. 48.

CUITLAHUACS.—'*Cuitlatl*, excremento, y genéricamente cosa sucia.' *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, p. 47. '*Cuitlahuac*, Dans celui qui a les Excréments, de *cuitlatl*, excrément, déjection de l'homme ou de l'animal, mais que le chroniste mexicain applique ici aux déjections du volcan voisin de la Grande-Base....de là le nom de *teo-cuitlatl*, excréments divins, donné aux métaux précieux, l'or avec l'adjectif jaune, l'argent avec l'adjectif blanc.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, p. 407. *Cuitlatlan*, 'locality of dirt.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 15. '*Cuitlatl*, mierda.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* The name of the Cuitlatecs seems to have no separate etymological meaning.

CULHUAS.—See Acolhuas. The two people are not supposed to have been the same, but it is probable that they are identical in the derivation of their names.

HUASTECS.—'*Huaxtlan* es una palabra mexicana que significa, "donde hay, ó abunda *huaxi*," fruto muy conocido en México con el nombre castellanizado de *guaje*. Compónese aquella palabra de *huaxin*, perdiendo *in* por contraccion, muy usada en mexicano al componerse las palabras, y de *tlan*, partícula que significa "donde hay, ó abunda algo," y que sirve para fórmar colectivos. De *huaxtlan* es de donde, segun parece, viene el nombre gentilicio *huaxtecatl*, que los españoles convirtieron en *huaxteca* ó *huaxteco*.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., pp. 5–6; *Buschamann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 12–13. 'El que es inhábil ó tosco, le llaman....*cuextecatl*.' From the name of their ruler, who took too much wine. 'Así por injuria, y como alocado, le llamaban de *Cuextecatl*.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 134–5, 143–4.

HUEXOTZINCAS.—Diminutive of *huexotla*, 'willow-forest.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 100

ITZAS.—From the name of Zamná, the first Yucatan civilizer. 'Le llamaban tambien Ytzamná, y le adoraban por Dios.' *Cogolludo, Hist. de Yucathan*, p. 196. '*Itzmat-ul*, que quiere dezir el que recibe y posee la gracia, ó rozio, ó sustancia del cielo.' '*Ytzen caan, ytzen muyal*, que era dezir yo soy el rozio ó sustancia del cielo y nubes.' *Lizana*, in *Landa, Rel. de las Cosas de Yucatan*, p. 356. 'Suivant Ordoñez, le mot *itza* est composé de *itz*, doux, et de *hà*, eau.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 15.

MALINALCAS.—'*Malina*, nitla, torcer cordel encima del muslo.' '*Ma-*

Digitized by Google

linqui, cosa torcida.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* '*Malinal* est le nom commun de la liane, ou des cordes tordues.' '*Malina*, tordre, qui fait *malinal*, liane ou corde. Ou bien plus littéralement de choses tournées, percée à jour, de *mal*, primitif de *mamali*, percer, tarauder, et de *nal*, de part en part, tout autour. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, pp. 407–8.

MAMES.—El verdadero nombre de la lengua y de la tribu es mem, que quiere decir tartamudos porque los pueblos que primero les oyeron hablar, encontraron semejanza entre los tardos para pronunciar, y la manera con que aquellos decian su lengua.' *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, p. 24. 'A esta lengua llaman *Mame*, é indios *mames* á los de esta sierra, porque ordinariamente hablan y responden con esta palabra *man*, que quiere decir *padre*' *Reynoso*, in *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., pp. 83–4. '*Mem* veut dire bègue et muet.' '"Mem," mal à propos défiguré dans Mame par les Espagnols, servit depuis généralement à désigner les nations qui conservèrent leur ancienne langue et demeurèrent plus ou moins indépendentes des envahisseurs étrangers.' Mam 'veut dire ancien, veillard.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 119. Mam sometimes means grandson. *Id., Popol Vuh*, p. 41.

MATLALTZINCAS.—'El nombre *Matlalcincatl*, tomóse de *Matlatl* que es la red con la cual desgranaban el maiz, y hacian otras cosas....Tambien se llaman *Matlatzincas* de hondas que se dicen *tlematlate*, y así *Matlatzincas* por otra interpretacion quiere decir, honderos ó fondibularios; porque los dichos *Matlatzincas* cuando muchachos, usaban mucho traer las hondas y de ordinario las traían consigo, como los *Chichimecas* sus arcos, y siempre andaban tirando con ellas. Tambien les llamaban del nombre de red por otra razon que és la mas principal, porque cuando á su idolo sacrificaban alguna persona, lo echaban dentro en una red, y allí le retorcian y estrujaban con la dicha red, hasta que le hacian echar los intestinos. La causa de llamarse *coatl* Ramirez dice que "debe leerse *cuaitl* (cabeza). Coatl significa culebra," cuando es uno, y *qüaqüatas* cuando son muchos és, porque siempre traían la cabeza ceñida con la honda; por lo cual el vocablo se decia *qüa* por abreviatura, que quiere decir *quaitl* que es la cabeza, *yta* que quiere decir *tamatlatl* (Molina says, 'Honda para tirar es *tematlatl, tlatematlauiloni*') ques es la honda, y así quiere decir *quatlatl* hombre que trae la honda en la cabeza por guirnalda: tambien se interpreta de otra manera, que quiere decir hombre de cabeza de piedra.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 128, and *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, pp. 29–30. '*Matlatzinia*, dar palmadas.' '*Matlatepito*, red pequeña.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* From *matlatl*, 'net,' meaning therefore 'small place of nets.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p 13. 'De *Matlatl*, le filet, les mailles.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, p. 408. '*Matlatzinco* es una palabra mexicana que significa "lugarcito de las redes," pues se compone de *matlat*, red, y la particula *tzinco* que expresa diminucion. Fácilmente se comprende, pues, que *matlatzinca* viene de *matlatzinco*, y que la etimolgía exige que estas palabras se escriban con *c* (mejor *k*) y no con *g* como hacen algunos autores.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 500.

MAYAS.—'"*Mai*," une divinité ou un personnage des temps antiques, sans doute celui à l'occasion duquel le pays fut appelé *Maya*.' *Brasseur de Bour-*

Digitized by Google

bourg, in *Landa, Rel. de las Cosas de Yucatan*, p. 42. '*Maya* ou *Mata*, nom antique d'une partie du Yucatan, paraît signifier aussi la terre.' *Id.*, p. lxx. 'Maayhà, non adest aqua, suivant Ordoñez, c'est-à-dire, Terre sans eau.' *Id., Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 76. The terminations *a* and *o* of this name are Spanish. *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. ii., p. 35.

Mizquicas.—'*Mizquitl*, arbol de goma para tinta.' *Molina, Vocabulario. Mizquitl*, a tree yielding the pure gum arabic, a species of acacia. *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p 104.

Mietecs.—'La palabra mexicana *Mixtecatl*, es nombre nacional, derivado de *mixtlan*, lugar de nubes ó nebuloso, compuesto de *mixtli*, nube, y de la terminacion *tlan*.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 39. *Mixtlan*, 'place of clouds.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 18. '*Mixtecapan*....pays des brouillards.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 146.

Nahuas.—'Todos los que hablan claro la lengua mexicana que les llaman *nahóas*, son descendientes de los Tultecas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 114. '*Nahoatl ó nahuatl*, segun el diccionario de Molina, significa *cosa que suena bien*, de modo que viene à ser un adjetivo que aplicado al sustantivo *idioma*, creo que puede traducirse por *armonioso*.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 158. Something of fine, or clear, or loud sound; *nahuatlato* means an interpreter; *nahauti*, to speak loud; *nahautia*, to command. The name has no connection whatever with *Andhuac. Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 7–8. 'Molina le traduit par *Ladino*, instruit, expert, civilisé, et lui donne aussi un sens qui se rapporte aux sciences occultes. On n'en trouve pas, toutefois, la racine dans le mexicain. La langue quichée en donne une explication parfaite: il vient du verbe *Nao* ou *Naw*, connaître, sentir, savoir, penser; *Tin nao*, je sais; *Naoh*, sagesse, intelligence. Il y a encore le verbe radical *Na*, sentir, soupçonner. Le mot *Nahual* dans son sens primitif et véritable, signifie donc littéralement "qui sait tout;" c'est la même chose absolument que le mot anglais *Know-all*, avec lequel il a tant d'identité. Le Quiché et le Cakchiquel l'emploient fréquemment aussi dans le sens de mystérieux, extraordinaire, merveilleux.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 101–2, 194.

Nonohualcas.—The Tutul-Xius, chiefs of a Nahuatl house in Tulan, seem to have borne the name of *Nonoual*, which may have given rise to *Nonohualco* or *Onohualco*. '*Nonoual* ne serait-il pas une altération de *Nanaual* ou *Nanahuatl*?' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Rel de las Cosas de Yucatan*, p. 420.

Olmecs.—Olmecatl was the name of their first traditionary leader. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 152. *Olmecatl*, may mean an inhabitant of the town of *Olman;* but as *mecatl* is also used for 'shoot,' 'offspring,' 'branch,' the word probably comes from *olli*, and means 'people of the gum.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 16.

Otomís. 'El vocablo *Otomitl*, que es el nombre de los *Otomies*, tomáronlo de su caudillo, el caul se llamaba *Oton*.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 122. Not a native word, but Mexican, derived perhaps from *otli*, 'road,' and *tomitl*, 'animal hair,' referring possibly to some peculiar mode of wearing the hair. *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 18–19. '*Otho* en la misma lengua othomí quiere decir *nada*, y *mi*, quieto, ó sentado, de manera que

Digitized by Google

traducida literalmente la palabra, significa nada-quieto, cuya idea pudiéramos expresar diciendo *peregrino ó errante.*' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 118; *Návera, Disertacion*, p. 4. 'Son étymologie mexicaine, Otomitl, signifie la flèche d'Oton. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 158.

PIPILES.—A reduplication of *pilli*, which has two meanings, 'noble' and 'child,' the latter being generally regarded as its meaning in the tribal name. *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, pp. 137–8. So called because they spoke the Mexican language with a childish pronunciation. *Juarros' Hist. Guat.*, p. 224.

POKOMAMS.—'*Pokom*, dont la racine *pok* désigne une sorte de tuf blanc et sablonneux....La termination *om* est un participe présent. De *Pokom* vient le nom de Pokomam et de Pokomchi, qui fut donné à ces tribus de la qualité du sol où ils bâtirent leur ville.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 122.

QUICHÉS.—'La palabra *quiché, kiché, ó quitze*, significa *muchos árboles.*' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. ii., p. 124. 'De *qui* beaucoup, plusieurs, et de *che*, arbre; ou de *queche, quechelah, qechelah*, la forêt.' *Ximenez*, in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. cclxv.

TARASCOS.—'Tarasco viene de *tarhascue*, que en la lengua de Michoacan significa suegro, ó yerno segun dice el P. Lagunas en su Gramática.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 273. '*Taras* en la lengua mexicana se dice *Mixcoatl*, que era el dios de los *Chichimecas.*' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 138. 'Á quienes dieron el nombre de tarascos, por el sonido que les hacian las partes genitales en los muslos al andar.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Méj.*, tom. ii., p. 105; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. des Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 57.

TEPANECS.—*Tepan*, 'stony place,' from *tetl*, or *tecpan*, 'royal palace.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 92. '*Tecpantlan* signifie auprès des palais.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. cx. 'Cailloux roulés sur la roche, *te-pa-ne-ca*, littéralement ce qui est mêlé ensemble sur la pierre; ou bien *te-pan-e-ca*, c'est-à-dire avec des petites pierres sur la roche ou le solide, *e*, pour *etl*, le haricot, frijol, étant pris souvent dans le sens d'une petite pierre sur une surface, etc.' *Id., Quatre Lettres*, p. 408.

TLAHUICAS.—From *tlahuitl*, 'cinnabar,' from this mineral being plentiful in their country. *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 93. *Tlahuilli*, 'poudres brillantes.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, p. 422. '*Tlauia*, alumbrar a otros con candela o hacha.' *Molina, Vocabulario.*

TLAPANECS.—'Y llámanlos tambien tlapanecas que quiere decir *hombres almagrados*, porque se embijaban con color.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 135. From *tlalpantli*, 'ground;' may also come from *tlalli*, 'land.' *Buschamann, Ortsnamen*, p. 162. *Tlapallan*, 'terre colorée.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. lxiii. *Tla*, 'feu.' *Id., Quatre Lettres*, p. 416. 'Tlapani, quebrarse algo, o el tintorero que tiñe paños.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* Probably a synonyme of Yoppi, q. v. *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, pp. 26–7.

TLAŞCALTECS.—'*Tlaxcalli*, tortillas de mayz, o pan generalmente.' *Molina, Vocabulario. Tlaxcalli*, 'place of bread or tortillas,' the past participle of *ixca*, 'to bake or broil.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 93.

Digitized by Google

TOLTECS.—'*Toltecayotl*, maestria de arte mecanica. *Toltecatl*, official de arte mecanica. *Toltecauia*, fabricar o hazer algo el maestro.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* 'Los *tultecas* todos se nombraban *chichimecas*, y no tenian otro nombre particular sino este que tomaron de la curiosidad, y primor de las obras que hacian, que se llamaron obras *tultecas* ó sea como si digesemos, oficiales pulidos y curiosos como ahora los de Flandes, y con razon, porque eran sutiles y primorosos en cuanto ellos ponian la mano, que todo era muy bueno.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 107. Toltecs, 'people of Tollan.' Tollan, 'place of willows or reeds,' from *tolin*, 'willow, reed.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 76. '*Toltecatl* était le titre qu'on donnait à un artiste habile.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 194. Tollan: 'Elle est frappante....par l'identité qu'elle présente avec le nom de *Metztli* ou le Croissant. En effet, ce qu'elle exprime, d'ordinaire, c'est l'idée d'un "pays recorbé" ou incliné. Sa première syllabe *tol*, primitif de *toloa*, "abaxar, inclinar la cabeça," dit Molina, "entortar, encorvar," dit-il ailleurs, signifie donc baisser, incliner la tête, se tortuer, courber, ce qui, avec la particule locale *lan* pour *tlan* ou *tan*, la terre, l'endroit, annonce une terre ou un pays recourbé, sens exact du mot *tollan*. Du même verbe vient *tollin*, le jonc, le roseau, dont la tête s'incline au moindre vent; de là, le sens de Jonquière, de limné, que peut prendre *tollan*, dont le hiéroglyphe représente précisément le son et la chose, et qui paraît exprimer doublement l'idée de cette terre fameuse de la Courbe ou du Croissant, basse et marécageuse en beaucoup d'endroits suivant la tradition.... Dans sa (the word *toloa*) signification active, Molina le traduit par "tragar," avaler, engloutir, ce qui donne alors pour *tollan*, le sens de terre engloutie, abîmée, qui comme vous le voyez, convient on ne peut mieux dans le cas présent. Mais si *tollan* est la terre engloutie, si c'est en même temps le pays de la Courbe, Metztli ou le Croissant, ces deux noms, remarquez-le, peuvent s'appliquer aussi bien au lieu où il a été englouti, à l'eau qui se courbait le long des rivages du Croissant, soit à l'intérieur des grandes golfes du nord et du midi, soit au rivage convexe, tourné comme le genou de la jambe, vers l'Orient. C'est ainsi qu'on retrouve l'identification continuelle de l'idée mâle avec l'idée femelle, du contenu et du contenant, de *tollan*, le pays englouti, avec *tollan*, l'océan engloutisseur, de l'eau qui este contenue et des continents qui l'enserrent dans leurs limites. Ajoutons, pour compléter cette analyse, que *tol*, dans la langue quichée, est un verbe, dont *tolan* le passé, et qu'ainsi que *tulan* il signifie l'abandon, la nudité, etc. De *tol*, faites *tor*, dans la même langue, et vous aurez avec *toran*, ce qui est tourné ou retourné, comme en mexicain, demême que dans *turn* (touran) vous trouverez ce qui a été renversé, bouleversé de fond en comble, noyé sous les eaux, etc. Dans la langue maya, *tul* signifie remplir, combler, et *an*, comme en quiché, est le passé du verbe: mais si à *tul* on ajoute *ha* ou *a*, l'eau, nous avons *Tuhla* ou *Tula*, rémpli, submergé d'eau. En dernière analyse, *tol* ou *tul* paraît avoir pour l'origine *ol*, *ul*, couler, venir, suivant le quiché encore; primitif d'*olli*, ou bien d'*ulli*, en langue nahuatl, la gomme élastique liquide, la boule noire du jeu de paume, qui deviente le hiéroglyphe de l'eau, remplissant les deux golfes. Le préfixe *t* pour *ti* serait une préposition; faisant *to*, il signifie l'orbite de l'œil, en quiché, image de l'abîme que la boule norie remplit com-

Digitized by Google

me sa prunelle, ce dont vous pouvez vous assurer dans la figure de la page suivante; *to* est, en outre, l'aide, l'instrument, devenant *tool;* mais en mexicain, *to*, primitif de *ton*, est la chaleur de l'eau bouillante. *Tol*, contracté de *to-ol*, pourrait donc avoir signifié "le liquide bouillant," ou la venue de la chaleur bouillante, de l'embrasement. Avec *teca*, étendre, le mot entier *tol-teca*, nous aurions donc, étendre le courbé, etc., et *tol-tecatl*, le toltèque, serait ce qui étend le courbé ou l'englouti, ou bien l'eau bouillante, etc. Ces étymologies rentrent donc toutes dans la même idée qui, sous bien des rapports, fait des Toltèques, une des puissances telluriques, destructrices de la terre du Croissant.' *Id., Quatre Lettres*, pp. 118–20.

TOTONACS.—From *tototl* and *nacatl*, 'bird-flesh;' or from *tona*, 'to be warm.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 13. '*Totonaco* significa á la letra, tres corazones en un sentido, y tres panales en otro,' from *toto*, 'three,' and *naco*, 'heart,' in the Totonac language. *Dominguez*, in *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. i., pp. 226–7. '*Totonal*, el signo, en que alguno nasce, o el alma y espiritu.' *Molina, Vocabulario.*

TUTUL-XIUS.—'Le nom des Tutul-Xiu paraît d'origine nahuatl; il serait dérivé de *totol, tototl*, oiseau, et de *xiuitl*, ou *xihuitl*, herbe.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Rel. de las Cosas de Yucatan*, p. 47.

XICALANCAS.—'*Xicalli*, vaso de calabaça.' *Molina, Vocabulario. Xicalli*, 'place of this species of calabash or drinking-shell.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 17. 'Xicalanco, la Ville des courges ou des tasses faites de la courge et appelée Xicalli dans ces contrées, et dont les Espagnols ont fait Xicara.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 110.

XOCHIMILCAS.—From *xochitl*, 'flower,' and *milli*, 'piece of land,' meaning 'place of flower-fields.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 94. '*Xochimicque* captiuos en guerra.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* '*Xochimilca*, habitants de *Xochimilco*, lieu où l'on sème tout en bas de la Base, nom de la terre végétale et fertile où l'on ensemençait, *m'il*, qu'on retourne, d'où le mot *mil* ou *milli*, champ, terre ensemencée, et sans doute aussi le latin *milium*, notre *mil* et *millet*.' 'J'ajouterai seulement que ce nom signifie dans le langage ordinaire, ceux qui cultivent de fleurs, de *xochitl*, fleur, lit éralement, ce qui vit sous la base.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Quatre Lettres*, pp. 406–8.

YOPPI.—'Llámanles *yopes* porque su tierra se llama *Yopinzinco*.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 135. 'Inferimos....que yope, yopi, jope, segun se encuentra escrita la palabra en varios lugares, es sinónimo de tlapaneca.' *Orozco y Berra, Geografia*, pp. 26–7. *Yopaa*, 'Land of Tombs.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 9.

ZAPOTECS.—'*Tzapotl*, cierta fruta conocida.' *Molina, Vocabulario. Tzapotlan*, 'place of the zapotes, trees or fruits.' *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, p. 16. 'Derivado de la palabra mexicana *tzapotlan*, que significa "lugar de los *zapotes*," nombre castellanizado de una fruta muy conocida.' *Pimetnel, Cuadro*, tom. i., p. 319. '*Zapotecapan* est le nom que les Mexicains avaient donné à cette contrée, à cause de la quantité et de la qualité supérieure de ses fruits. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 38.

ZOTZILES.—'*Zotzil*, murciélago.' *Pimentel, Cuadro*, tom. ii., p. 245. Zotzilha 'signifie la ville des Chauves-Souris.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 88.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER III.

GOVERNMENT OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

SYSTEM OF GOVERNMENT—THE AZTEC CONFEDERACY—ORDER OF SUCCESSION—ELECTION OF KINGS AMONG THE MEXICANS—ROYAL PREROGATIVES—GOVERNMENT AND LAWS OF SUCCESSION AMONG THE TOLTECS AND IN MICHOACAN, TLASCALA, CHOLULA, HUEXOTZINCO, AND OAJACA—MAGNIFICENCE OF THE NAHUA MONARCHS—CEREMONY OF ANOINTMENT—ASCENT TO THE TEMPLE—THE HOLY UNCTION—ADDRESS OF THE HIGH-PRIEST TO THE KING—PENANCE AND FASTING IN THE HOUSE CALLED TLACATECCO—HOMAGE OF THE NOBLES—GENERAL REJOICING THROUGHOUT THE KINGDOM—CEREMONY OF CORONATION—THE PROCURING OF SACRIFICES—DESCRIPTION OF THE CROWN—CORONATIONS, FEASTS, AND ENTERTAINMENTS—HOSPITALITY EXTENDED TO ENEMIES—CORONATION SPEECH OF NEZAHUALPILLI, KING OF TEZCUCO, TO MONTEZUMA II. OF MEXICO—ORATION OF A NOBLE TO A NEWLY ELECTED KING.

THE prevailing form of government among the civilized nations of Mexico and Central America was monarchical and nearly absolute, although some of the smaller and less powerful states, as, for instance, Tlascala, affected an aristocratic republican system. The three great confederated states of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan were each governed by a king, who had supreme authority in his own dominion, and in matters touching it alone. Where, however, the welfare of the whole allied community was involved, no one king could act without the concurrence of the others; nevertheless, the judgment of one who was held to be especially skilful and wise in any question

Digitized by Google

under consideration was usually deferred to by his colleagues. Thus in matters of war, or foreign relations, the opinion of the king of Mexico had most weight; while in the administration of home government, and in decisions respecting the rights of persons, it was customary during the reigns of the two royal sages of Tezcuco, Nezahualcoyotl and Nezahualpilli, to respect their counsel above all other.[1] The relative importance of these three kingdoms must, however, have shown greater disparity as fresh conquests were made, since in the division of territory acquired by force of arms, Tlacopan received only one fifth, and of the remainder, judging by the relative power and extent of the states when the Spaniards arrived, it is probable that Mexico took the largest share.[2]

In Tezcuco and Tlacopan the order of succession was lineal and hereditary, in Mexico it was collateral and elective. In the two former kingdoms, however,

[1] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 95; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 354.

[2] Ixtlilxochitl, for whose patriotism due allowance must be made, writes: 'Es verdad, que el de Mexico y Tezcuco fueron iguales en dignidad señorío y rentas; y el de Tlacopan solo tenia cierta parte como la quinta, en lo que era rentas y despues en los otros dos.' *Hist. Chichimeca*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 238. Zurita also affirms this: 'Dans certaines, les tributs étaient répartis en portions égales, et dans d'autres on en faisait cinq parts: le souverain de Mexico et celui de Tezcuco en prélevaient chacun deux, celui de Tacuba une seule.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 12. 'Quedó pues determinado que á los estados de Tlacopan se agregase la quinta parte de las tierras nuevamente conquistadas, y el resto se dividiese igualmente entre el príncipe y el rey de Méjico.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 164. Brasseur de Bourbourg agrees with and takes his information from Ixtlilxochitl. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 191. Torquemada makes a far different division: 'Concurriendo los tres, se diese la quinta parte al Rei de Tlacupa, y el Tercio de lo que quedase, à Neçalhualcoiotl; y los demas, à Itzcohuatzin, como à Cabeça Maior, y Suprema.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 146. As also does Clavigero: 'Si diede quella Corona (Tlacopan) a Totoquihuatzin sotto la condizione di servir con tutte le sue truppe al Re di Messico, ogni volta che il richiedesse, assegnando a lui medesimo per ciò la quinta parte delle spoglie, che si avessero dai nemici. Similmente Nezahualcojotl fu messo in possesso del trono d'Acolhuacan sotto la condizione di dover soccorrere i Messicani nella guerra, e perció gli fu assegnata la terza parte della preda, cavatane prima quella del Re di Tacuba, restando l'altre due terze parti pel Re Messicano. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 224. Prescott says it was agreed that 'one fifth should be assigned to Tlacopan, and the remainder be divided, in what proportion is uncertain, between the other powers.' *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 18.

Digitized by Google

although the sons succeeded their fathers, it was not according to birth, but according to rank; the sons of the queen, or principal wife, who was generally a daughter of the royal house of Mexico, being always preferred to the rest.[3] In Mexico, the eldest surviving brother of the deceased monarch was generally elected to the throne, and when there were no more brothers, then the nephews, commencing with the eldest son of the first brother that had died; but this order was not necessarily observed, since the electors, though restricted in their choice to one family, could set aside the claims of those whom they considered incompetent to reign; and indeed, it was their particular duty to select from among the relatives of the deceased king the one best fitted to bear the dignity and responsibility of supreme lord.[4] During the early days of the Mexican mon-

[3] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 356; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 12–13; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 116; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 577.

[4] Torquemada writes: 'Esta fue costumbre de estos Mexicanos, en las Elecciones, que hacian, que fuesen Reinando sucesivamente, los Hermanos, vnos despues de otros, y acabando de Reinar el vltimo, entraba en su lugar, el Hijo de Hermano Maior, que primero avia Reinado, que era Sobrino de los otros Reies, qui à su Padre avian sucedido.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 107. 'Los Reies [of Mexico] no heredaban, sino que eran elegidos, y como vimos en el Libro de los Reies, quando el Rei moria, si tenia hermano, entraba heredando; y muerto este, otro, si lo avia; y quando faltaba, le sucedia el sobrino, Hijo de su hermano maior, à quien, por su muerte, avia sucedido, y luego el hermano de este, y así discurrian por los demas.' *Id.*, tom. ii., p. 177. Zurita states that in Tezcuco and Tlacopan, and their dependent provinces, 'le droit de succession le plus ordinaire était celui du sang en ligne directe de père en fils; mais tous les fils n'héritaient point, il n'y avait que le fils aîné de l'épouse principale que le souverain avait choisie dans cette intention. Elle jouissait d'une plus grande considération que les autres, et les sujets la respectaient davantage. Lorsque le souverain prenaient une de ses femmes dans la famille de Mexico, elle occupait le premier rang, et son fils succédait, s'ils était capable.' Then, without definitely stating whether he is speaking of all or part of the three kingdoms in question, the author goes on to say that, in default of direct heirs, the succession became collateral; and finally, speaking in this instance of Mexico alone, he says, that in the event of the king dying without heirs, his successor was elected by the principal nobles. In a previous paragraph he writes: 'L'ordre de succession variait suivant les provinces; les mêmes usages, à peu de différence prés, étaient reçus à Mexico, à Tezcuco et à Tacuba.' Afterward, we read: 'Dans quelques provinces, comme par exemple à Mexico, les frères étaient admis á la succession, quoiqu'il y eût des fils, et ils gouvernaient successivement.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans*,

Digitized by Google

archy, the king was elected by vote of the whole people, who were guided in their choice by their leaders; even the women appear to have had a voice in the

Voy., série ii., tom. i., pp. 12–18. M. l'Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, taking his information from Zurita, and, indeed, almost quoting literally from the French translation of that author, agrees that the direct line of succession obtained in Tlacopan and Tezcuco, but asserts, regarding Mexico, that the sovereign was elected by the five principal ministers of the state, who were, however, restricted in their choice to the brothers, nephews, or sons of the deceased monarch. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 576–7. Pimentel also follows Zurita. *Memoria*, p. 26. Prescott affirms that 'the sovereign was selected from the brothers of the deceased prince, or, in default of them, from his nephews.' *Mex.*, vol. 1, p. 93. Sahagun merely says: 'Escogian uno de los mas nobles de la linea de los señores antepasados,' who should be a valiant, wise, and accomplished man. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 318. 'Per non lasciar troppa libertà agli Elettori, e per impedire quanto fosse possibile, gl'inconvenienti de' partiti, o fazioni, fissarono la corona nella casa d'Acamapitzin; e poi stabilirono per legge, che al Re morto dovesse succedere uno de'suoi fratelli, e mancando i fratelli, uno de'suoi nipoti, e se mai non ve ne fossero neppur di questi, uno de'suoi cugini restando in balia degli Elettori lo scegliere tra i fratelli, o tra i nipoti del Re morto colui, che riconoscessero più idoneo pel governo, schivando con sí fatta legge parecchj inconvenienti da noi altrove accennati.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 112. Leon Carbajal quotes this almost literally. *Discurso*, pp. 54–5. That the eldest son could put forward no claim to the crown by right of primogeniture, is evident from the following: 'Quando algun Señor moria y dexava muchos hijos, si alguno se alzava en palacio y se queria preferir á los otros, aunque fuese el mayor, no lo consentia el Señor á quien pertenecia la confirmacion, y menos el pueblo. Antes dexavan pasar un año, ó mas de otro, en el qual consideravan bien que era mejor para regir ó governar el estado, y aquel permanecia por señor.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii. Señor Carbajal Espinosa says that from the election of Chimalpopoca, who succeeded his brother Huitzilihuitl, and was the third king of Mexico, 'quedó establecida la ley de elegir uno de los hermanos del rey difunto, y á falta de éstos un sobrino, cuya práctica se observó constantemente, como lo harémos ver, hasta la ruina del imperio mexicano.' *Hist. de Mex.*, tom. i., p. 334. 'El Imperio era monárquico, pero no hereditario. Muriendo el Emperador los gefes del Imperio antiguamente se juntaban y elegian entre sí mismos al que creian mas digno, y por el cual la intriga, el manejo, la supersticion, eran mas felizmente reconocidas.' *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., p. 114. 'Tambien auia sucession por sangre, sucedia el hijo mayor, siendo para ello, y sino el otro: en defeto de los hijos sucedian nietos, y en defeto dellos yua por eleccion.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xv. As the order in which the Mexican kings actually did follow each other should be stronger proof of what was the law than any other evidence, I take from the Codex Mendosa the following list: Acamapichtli, who is usually spoken of as the first king, succeeded Tenuch, although it is not stated that he was related to him in any way; then came Huicilyhuitl, son of Acamapichtli; Chimalpupuca, son of Huicilyhuitl; Yzcoaci, son of Acamapichtli; Huehuemoteccuma, son of Huicilyhuitl; Axayacaci, son of Tecocomochtli, and grandson of Yzcoaci; Tiçoçicatzi, son of Axayacaci; Ahuiçoçin, brother of Tiçoçicatzi; Montecçuma, son of Axayacaci; thus, according to this author, we see, out of nine monarchs, three succeeded directly by their sons, and three by their brothers. *Esplicacion*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 42–53. See further, *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, and *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.* These writers differ slightly from the collection above quoted, but in no important respect.

Digitized by Google

matter at this period.[5] Afterward, the duty of electing the king of Mexico devolved upon four or five of the chief men of the empire. The kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan were also electors, but with merely an honorary rank; they ratified the decision of the others, but probably took no direct part in the election, although their influence and wishes doubtless carried great weight with the council. As soon as the new king had been chosen, the body of electors was dissolved, and others were appointed in their place, whose duties also terminated with their first electoral vote.[6]

[5] 'After the death of Acamapichtli, the first king of Mexico, a general council was held, and the people were addressed as follows: 'Ya es fallido nuestro rey Acamapichtli, á quien pondrémos en su lugar, que rija y gobierne este pueblo Mexicano? Pobres de los viejos, niños y mugeres viejas que hay; que será de nosotros á donde irémos á demandar rey que sea de nuestra patria y nacion Mexicana? hablen todos para de cual parte elegirémos rey, ó ninguno puede dejar de hablar, pues á todos nos importa para el reparo, y cabeza de nuestra patria Mexicana esté.' Upon Huitzilihuitl being proposed, 'todos juntos, mancebos, viejos y viejas respondieron á una: que sea mucho de enhorabuena, que á él quieren por señor y rey.' *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 10. Sahagun's description of their manner of electing kings appears also to be more appropriate to this early period than to a later date: 'Cuando moria el señor ó rey para eleger otro, juntábanse los senadores que llamaban *tecutlatoque*, y tambien los viejos del pueblo que llamaban *achcacauhti*, y tambien los capitanes soldados viejos de la guerra que llamaban *Iauiequioaque*, y otros capitanes que eran principales en las cosas de la guerra, y tambien los Sátrapas que llamaban *Tlenamacazque ò papaoaque:* todos estos se juntaban en las casas reales, y allí deliberaban y determinaban quien habia de ser señor.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 318; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 439.

[6] 'The exact number and rank of these electors is hard to determine. 'Si le souverain de Mexico mourait sans héritier, les principaux chefs lui choisissaient un successeur dont l'élection était confirmée par les chefs supérieurs de Tezcuco et Tacuba.' *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 15–16. Pimentel follows this, *Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 26: 'Tutti e due i Re [of Tezcuco and Tlacopan] furono creati Elettori onorarj del Re di Messico, il qual onore soltanto riducevasi a ratificare l'elezion fatta da quattro Nobili Messicani, ch'erano i veri Elettori.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 224. 'Despues en tiempo de Izcoatl quarto Rey, por consejo y orden de vn sabio y valeroso hombre, que tuuieron llamado Tlacaellèl se señalaron quatro electores, y a estos juntamente con dos señores, o Reyes sujetos al Mexicano, que eran el de Tezcùco, y el de Tacuba, tocaua hazer la elecion.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 439. These four electors 'de ordinario eran hermanos, o parientes muy cercanos del Rey. Llamauan a estos Tlacohecalcàtl, que significa el Príncipe de las lanças arrojadizas, que era vn genero de armas que ellos mucho vsauan.' *Id.*, p. 441. 'Seis electores elegian el Emperador, dos de cuales eran siempre los príncipes de Tescuco á de Acolhuacan y de Tacuba, y un príncipe de la sangre real.' *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., p. 114. 'Four of the principal nobles, who had been chosen by their own body in the preceding reign, filled the office of electors, to whom were added, with merely an honorary rank, however, the two royal allies of Tezcuco and Tlacopan.

Digitized by Google

This plan of election was not without its advantages. As the persons to whom the choice was intrusted were great ministers or lords who lived at court, they had better opportunities of observing the true character of the future candidates for the throne than the common people, who are ever too apt to judge, by pleasing exterior rather than by real merit, those with whose private life they can have no acquaintance. In the next place, the high private rank of the Mexican electors placed them beyond the ordinary influence of bribery or threats; and thus the state was in a measure free from that system of corruption which makes the voice of the people a mockery in more democratic communities, and which would have prevailed to a far greater extent in a country where feudal relations existed between lord and vassal. Then again, the freedom of choice accorded to electors enabled them to prevent imbeciles from assuming the responsibilities of kingship, and thus the most conspicuous evil of an hereditary monarchy was avoided.

The almost absolute authority vested in the person

Prescott's Mex., vol. i., p. 23. Brasseur de Bourbourg gives the style and title of each elector, and says they were five in number, but does not state his authority. 'Les principaux dignitaires du royaume, le Cihuacohuatl ou Ministre suprême de la justice et de la maison du roi, le Tlacochcalcatl, Généralissime ou Maître de la maison des Armes, l'Atempanecatl, ou Grand-Maître des Eaux, l'Ezhuahuacatl, ou le Maître du Sang, et le Tlillancalqui, ou chef de la Maison-Noire, composant entre eux le conseil de la monarchie, élisaient celui qui leur paraissait le plus apte aux affaires publiques, et lui donnaient la couronne.... Il est douteux que les rois de Tetzcuco et de Tlacopan aient jamais pris une parte directe à ce choix.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 577–8. At the foot of the same page is the following note: 'Si havia duda ó diferencia quien debia de ser rey, averiguase lo mas aina que podian, y sino poco tenian que hacer (los señores de Tetzcuco y Tlacapan). *Gomara, Crónica de Nueva-España, ap. Barcia*, cap. 99. This quotation is not to be found, however, in the place indicated. 'Crearon cuatro electores, en cuya opinion se comprometian todos los votos del reino. Eran aquellos funcionarios, magnates y señores de la primera nobleza, comunmente de sangre real, y de tanta, prudencia y probidad, cuanta se necesitaba para un cargo tan importante.' *Carabajal, Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 578. 'Fue el quinto Rey, Motezuma primero deste nombre; y porque, para la elecion auia quatro eletores, con los quales interuenian los Reyes de Tezcuco y de Tacuba. Se juntò con ellos Tlacaellel como Capitan general, y saliò eligido su sobrino Motezuma.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xiii. After the king in rank, 'eran los quatro electores del Rey, que tambien sucedian por elecion, y de ordinario eran hermanos, o parientes cercanos del Rey, y a estos llamauan en su lengua, principes de las lanças arrojadizas, armas que ellos vsauan.' *Id.*, cap. xix.

Digitized by Google

of the sovereign rendered great discrimination necessary in his selection. It was essential that the ruler of a people surrounded by enemies and continually bent upon conquest should be an approved and valiant warrior; having the personal direction of state affairs, it was necessary that he should be a deep and subtle politician; the gross superstition and theocratic tendencies of the governed required the governor to be versed in religion, holding the gods in reverence; and the records of the nation prove that he was generally a man of culture, and a patron of art and science.

In its first stages the Mexican monarchy partook rather of an aristocratic than of an absolute nature. Though the king was ostensibly the supreme head of the state, he was expected to confer with his council, which was composed of the royal electors, and other exalted personages, before deciding upon any important step;[7] and though the legislative power rested entirely in his hands, the executive government was intrusted to regularly appointed officials and courts of justice. As the empire, owing to the able administration of a succession of conquering princes, increased in greatness, the royal power gradually increased, although I find nothing of constitutional amendments or reconstructions until the time of Montezuma II., when the authority of all tribunals was reduced almost to a dead letter, if opposed to the desires or commands of the king.

The neighboring independent and powerful king-

[7] Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 441, gives the names of three military orders, of which the four royal electors formed one; and of a fourth, which was of a sacerdotal character. All these were of the royal council, and without their advice the king could do nothing of importance. Herrera helps himself to this from Acosta almost word for word: dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xix. Sahagun implies that this supreme council was composed of only four members: 'Elegido el señor, luego elegian otros cuatro que eran como senadores que siempre habian de estar al lado de él, y entender en todos los negocios graves de reino (estos cuatro tenian en diversos lugares diversos nombres).' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 318. According to Ixtlilxochitl the council whose duties corresponded to this in Tezcuco was composed of fourteen members. *Hist. Chichimeca*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 243; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 183.

Digitized by Google

dom of Michoacan was governed by an absolute monarch, who usually resided at his capital, on Lake Patzcuaro. Over each province was placed a governor, chosen from the first ranks of the nobility, who ruled with great if not absolute authority, in the name of the king, and maintained a court that was in almost every respect a miniature of that of his sovereign. The order of succession was hereditary and lineal, the eldest son generally succeeding to the throne. The selection of a successor, however, was left to the reign ing king, who, when he felt himself to be near his end, was at liberty to choose from among his sons the one whom he thought best fitted to govern. In order to test his capability and accustom him to handling the reins of government, and that he might have the old monarch's advice, the chosen heir immediately began to exercise the functions of king. A custom similar to this existed among the ancient Toltecs. Their kings were only permitted to reign for a *xiuhmolpilli*, that is to say, an 'age,' which was fifty-two years, after which time the eldest son was invested with royal authority and commenced to reign.[8] When the old Michoacan monarch fell sick, the son who had been nominated as his successor immediately despatched messengers to all the grandees of the kingdom, with orders to repair immediately to the capital. None was exempt from being present, and a failure to comply with the summons was held to be lèse-majesté. Having assembled at the palace, if the invalid is able to receive them, the nobles pass one by one through his chamber, and with words of condolence and en couragement seek to comfort him. Before leaving the palace each mourner deposits in the throne-room certain presents, brought for the occasion, as a more substantial testimonial of his sorrow. If, however, the physicians pronounce the royal patient beyond hope of recovery, no one is allowed to see him[9]

[8] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 37.
[9] *Beaumont, Crón. de Mechoacan*, pp. 52, 54–5; *Torquemada, Monarq*

Digitized by Google

He who reads the romantic story of the conquest feels his heart warm toward that stanch little nation of warriors, the Tlascaltecs. There is that about the men who ate their meat saltless for fifty years rather than humble themselves before the mighty despots of Mexico, that savors of the same material that defied the Persian host at Thermopylæ Had the Tlascaltecs steadily opposed the Spaniards, Cortés never could have gone forward to look upon the face of King Montezuma, nor backward to King Charles as the conqueror of New Spain; the warriors who routed their allied enemies on the bloody plains of Poyauhtlan assuredly could have offered the hearts of the invaders an acceptable sacrifice to the gods of Tlascala. The state of Tlascala, though invariably spoken of as a republic, was certainly not so in the modern acceptation of the term. At the time of the conquest it was governed by four supreme lords, each independent in his own territory, and possessed of equal authority with the others in matters concerning the welfare of all.[10] A parliament or senate, composed of these four lords and the rest of the nobility, settled the affairs of government, especially those relating to peace and war. The law of succession was much the same as in Michoacan. The chief before his death named the son whom he wished to succeed him, who, however, did not, as in Michoacan, commence to govern until after his father's death. The old chief's choice was restricted in two ways: in the first place, the approval of his three colleagues was necessary;

Ind., tom. ii., pp. 338, 523; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 138; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 17; *Gomara, Conq Mex.*, fol. 310–11, *Pimentel, Mem. Raza Indígena*, p. 27; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 82 In the *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 265–6, we read: 'Dese Stadt ende Provincie wierden voor de comste der Spaenjaerden soo treffelick gheregeert, als eenighe van die Landen, daer was een Cacique die absolutelick regeerde, staende onder de ghehoorsaemheydt van de groote Heere van Tenoxtitlan.' The old chronicler is mistaken here, however, as the kingdom of Michoacan was never in any way subject to Mexico.

[10] Clavigero says that the city of Tlascala was divided into four parts, each division having its lord, to whom all places dependent on such division were likewise subject. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 155.

Digitized by Google

and secondly, legitimate sons, that is the sons of a wife to whom he had been united according to certain forms, must take precedence of his other children. In default of sons, the brothers of the deceased chief succeeded [11] In any event the property of the late ruler was inherited by his brothers, who also, according to a custom which we shall find to be almost universal among the civilized peoples of the New World, married his widows.[12] Such information as I find upon the subject ascribes the same form of government to Cholula and Huexotzinco, that was found in Tlascala.[13] The Miztecs and Zapotecs acknowledged one supreme chief or king; the law of inheritance with them was similar to that of Tlascala, except that in default of sons a daughter could inherit.[14] The Zapotecs appear, at least in the more ancient times, to have been, if possible, even more priest-ridden than their neighbors; the orders of priests existing among them were, as will be seen elsewhere, numerous, and seem to have possessed great power, secular as well as sacerdotal. Yopaa, one of their principal cities, was ruled absolutely by a pontiff, in whom the Zapotec monarchs had a powerful rival. It is impossible to overrate the reverence in which this spiritual king was held. He was looked upon as a god, whom the earth was not worthy to hold nor the sun to shine upon. He profaned his sanctity if he so much as touched the ground with his foot. The officers who bore his palanquin upon their shoulders were members of the first Zapotec families; he scarcely deigned to look upon anything about him. He never appeared in public, except with the most extraordinary pomp,

[11] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 200, 276, tom., pp. 347-9; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib ii.; *Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 252; *Pimentel, Mem. Raza Indígena*, p. 27; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 411.

[12] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 197.

[13] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 350-1.

[14] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii. Brasseur de Bourbourg writes: 'Dans les divers états du Mixtecapan, les heritages passaient de mâle en mâle, sans que les femmes pussent y avoir droit.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 39, this may, however, refer merely to private property.

Digitized by Google

and all who met him fell with their faces to the ground, fearing that death would overtake them were they to look upon the face of the holy Wiyatao, as he was called. The most powerful lords never entered his presence except with eyes lowered and feet bared, and even the Zapotec princes of the blood must occupy a seat before him lower than his own. Continence was strictly imposed upon the Zapotec priests, and especially was it incumbent upon the pontiff of Yopaa, from the eminence of his position, to be a shining light of chastity for the guidance of those who looked up to him; yet was the pontifical dignity hereditary in the family of the Wiyatao. The way in which this paradox is explained is as follows: On certain days in each year, which were generally celebrated with feasts and dances, it was customary for the high-priest to become drunk. While in this state, seeming to belong neither to heaven nor to earth, one of the most beautiful of the virgins consecrated to the service of the gods was brought to him. If the result of this holy debauch proved to be a male infant, the child was brought up with great care as a prince of the royal family. The eldest son of the reigning pontiff inherited the throne of Yopaa, or in default of children, the high-priest's nearest relative succeeded. The younger children devoted themselves to the service of the gods, or married and remained laymen, according to their inclination or the paternal wish; in either case the most honorable and important positions usually fell to their lot.[15]

The pomp and circumstance which surrounded the Aztec monarchs, and the magnificence of their every-day life, was most impressive. From the moment of his coronation the Aztec sovereign lived in an atmosphere of adulation unknown to the mightiest potentate of the Old World. Reverenced as a god, the

[15] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, cap. 53; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ*, tom. iii., pp. 29–30.

Digitized by Google

haughtiest nobles, sovereigns in their own land, humbled themselves before him; absolute in power, the fate of thousands depended upon a gesture of his hand.

The ceremony of anointment, which preceded and was entirely distinct from that of coronation, was an occasion of much display. In Mexico, as soon as the new king was elected, which was immediately after the funeral of his predecessor, the kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan were sent for to be present at the ceremony of anointment; all the great feudatory lords who had been present at the funeral of the late king were also invited to attend. When all are assembled the procession sets out for the temple of Huitzilopochtli, the god of war. The kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan, surrounded by all the most powerful nobles of the realm, bearing their ensigns and insignia of rank, lead the van. Next comes the king elect, naked, excepting only the maxtli, or cloth about the loins; following these are the lesser nobles, and after them the common people. Silently the procession wends its way along the streets; no beat of drum nor shout of people is heard above the tramping. The road in advance is as free from obstruction as a corridor in the royal palace; no one moves among the multitude that string along its edges, but all stand with bended head and eyes downcast until the solemn pageant has passed, when they close in with the jostling and whispering crowd that follows. Arrived at the temple the king and that part of the procession which precedes him ascend to the summit. During the ascent he is supported on either side by a great lord, and such aid is not superfluous, for the staircases, having in all one hundred and fourteen steps, each a foot high, are so arranged that it is necessary to go completely round the building several times before reaching the top. On the summit the king is met by the high-priest and his colleagues, the people meanwhile waiting below. His first action upon reaching

Digitized by Google

the summit is to pay reverence to the image of the god of battles by touching the earth with his hand and then carrying it to his mouth. The high-priest now anoints the king throughout his entire body with a certain black ointment, and sprinkles him with water which has been blessed at the grand feast of Huitzilopochtli, using for this purpose branches of cedar and willow and leaves of maize;[16] at the same time he addresses a few words of counsel to him. The newly anointed monarch is next clothed with a mantle, on which are represented skulls and bones, to remind him, we are told, that even kings are mortal; his head is covered with two cloths, or veils, one blue and the other black, and decorated in a similar manner; about his neck is tied a small gourd, containing a certain powder, which is esteemed a strong preservative against disease, sorcery, and treason. A censer containing live coals is put into his right hand, and into his left a bag of copal, and thus accoutred and provided he proceeds to incense the god Huitzilopochtli.[17] This act of worship he per-

[16] Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 474, writes: 'Pusieronle Corona Real, y vngieronle, como fue costumbre hazerlo con todos sus Reyes, con vna vncion que llamauan diuina, porque era la misma con que vngian su ydolo.' Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 360, says that Acosta is mistaken, for he observes that 'la Corona que llamaba Copilli, no se daba en esta ocasion, sino que en lugar de ella, le ponian las mantas dichas sobre la Cabeça, ni tampoco era la vncion la misma que la de los Idolos; porque la Divina, que èl [Acosta] nombra, era de Ulli, y Sangre de Niños, con que tambien vngian al Sumo Sacerdote;' but Torquemada here directly contradicts a previous statement of his own, tom. i., p. 102, where he says that immediately after the election, having seated the king elect upon a throne, 'le pusieron la Corona Real en su Cabeça, y le vntaron todo el Cuerpo, con la Vncion, que despues acostumbraron, que era la misma con que vngian à su Dios,' thus using almost the same words as Acosta. Leon y Gama, *Dos Piedras*, says that the water used at the anointing was drawn from the fountain Tozpalatl, which was held in great veneration, and that it was first used for this purpose at the anointment of Huitzilihuitl, second king of Mexico.

[17] Sahagun states that the king was dressed upon this occasion in a tunic of dark green cloth, with bones painted upon it; this tunic resembled the huipil, or chemise of the women, and was usually worn by the nobles when they offered incense to the gods. The veil was also of green cloth ornamented with skulls and bones, and in addition to the articles described by other writers, this author mentions that they placed dark green sandals upon his feet. He also affirms that the four royal electors were confirmed in their office at the same time as the king, being similarly dressed, save that the color of their costume was black, and going through the same performances after him, except, of course, the anointment. *Sagahun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii.,

Digitized by Google

forms on his knees, amid the cheers of the people below, and the playing of musical instruments. He has concluded now, and the high-priest again addresses a short speech to him. Consider well, sire, he says, the great honor which your subjects have conferred upon you, and remember, now that you are king, that it is your duty to watch over your people with great care, to look upon them as your children, to preserve them from suffering, and to protect the weak from the oppression of the strong. Behold before you the chiefs of your kingdom, together with all your subjects, to whom you are both father and mother, for it is to you they turn for protection. It is now your place to command and to govern, and most especially it is your duty to bestow great attention upon all matters relating to war, to search out and punish criminals without regard to rank, to put down rebellion, and to chastise the seditious. Let not the strength of religion decline during your reign, see that the temples are well cared for, let there be ever an abundance of victims for sacrifice, and so will you prosper in all your undertakings and be beloved of the gods. Gomara affirms that the high-priest imposed an oath upon the king that during his reign he would maintain the religion of his ancestors, and observe their laws; that he would give offence to none, and be valiant in war; that he would make the sun to shine, the clouds to give rain, the rivers to flow, and the earth to bring forth fruits in abundance.[18] The allied kings and the nobles next address him to the same purpose; to which the king answers with thanks and promises to exert himself to the utmost of his power for the happiness of the state.

The speeches being ended, the procession again winds round the temple, until, following terrace after terrace, it finally reaches the ground in the same order that it went up. The king now receives homage and gifts

p. 319. Gomara says they hung upon the king's neck 'vnas correas coloradas largas y de muchos ramales: de cuios cabos colgauan ciertas insignias de rei, como pinjantes.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 305.

[18] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 306.

Digitized by Google

from the rest of the nobility, amidst the loud acclaims of the people. He is next conducted to a temple called Tlacatecco, where during four days he remains alone, doing penance, and eating but once a day, with the liberty, however, of choosing his own food. Twice in each twenty-four hours he bathes, once at noon and once at midnight, and after each bath he draws blood from his ears, and offers it, together with some burnt copal, to Huitzilopochtli. The remainder of his time during these four days he occupies in praying the gods to endow him with the wisdom and prudence necessary to the ruler of a mighty kingdom. On the fifth day he is conducted in state to the royal palace, where the feudatory lords come to renew the investiture of their feifs. Then follow great public rejoicings, with games, feasts, dances, and illuminations.

The coronation was, as I have stated, a ceremony distinct from the anointment. To prepare for it, it was necessary that the newly elected king should go out to war, to procure victims for the sacrifices necessary on such an occasion. They were never without enemies upon whom war might be made; either some province of the kingdom had rebelled, or Mexican merchants had been unjustly put to death, or insult had been offered to the royal ambassadors, or, if none of these excuses was at hand, the importance of the occasion alone rendered war justifiable. Of the manner in which war was waged, and of the triumphal return of the victorious army, I shall speak in another place. It appears that when a king of Mexico was crowned, the diadem was placed upon his head by the king of Tezcuco. The crown, which was called by the Mexicans *copilli*, was in shape like a small mitre, the fore part of which stood erect and terminated in a point, while the hinder part hung down over the neck. It was composed of different materials, according to the pleasure of the wearer; sometimes it was of thin plates of gold, sometimes it was woven of golden thread

Digitized by Google

and adorned with beautiful feathers.[19] Accounts of the particular ceremonies used at the coronation are wanting, but all agree that they were of unparalleled splendor. The new king entertained most sumptuously at his own palace all the great nobles of his realm; honors were conferred with a lavish hand, and gifts were made in profusion both by and to the king. Splendid banquets were given in which all the nobility of the kingdom participated, and the lower classes were feasted and entertained with the greatest liberality. The fondness of the Aztecs for all kinds of public games and festivals is evidenced in the frequency of their feasts, and in no way could a newly elected monarch better secure a place in the affections of his subjects than by inaugurating his reign with a series of splendid entertainments. The strange fascination which this species of enjoyment possessed for them is shown by the fact that strangers and foreigners came from afar to witness the coronation feasts, and it is related that members of hostile nations were frequently discovered disguised among the crowd, and were not only allowed by the clemency of the king to past unmolested, but were provided with seats, from which they could obtain a good view of the proceedings, and where they would be secure from insult.[20] One of the prin-

[19] The crown used by the early Chichimec sovereigns was composed of a herb called *pachxochitl*, which grew on the rocks, surmounted by plumes of the royal eagle, and green feathers called *Tecpilotl*, the whole being mounted with gold and precious stones, and bound to the head with strips of deer-skin. *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chichimeca*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. xi., p 213. In another place, *Relaciones*, in *id.*, p. 336, the same writer says that the crown differed according to time and season. In time of war it was composed of royal eagle feathers, placed at the back of the head, and held together with clasps of gold and precious stones; in time of peace the crown was made of laurel and green feathers of a very rare bird called Quezaltotolc; in the dry season it was made of a whitish moss which grew on the rocks, with a flower at the junction called *teoxuchutl*.

[20] Concerning anointment and coronation, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 102; tom. ii., pp. 83, 359–69; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 20–9; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 113–15; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 318–21; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xv.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 305–6; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 356, 439–40, 474; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 309; *Tezozomoc, Crón. Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 142–3. In addition to the numerous

Digitized by Google

cipal features of the day was the congratulatory speech of one monarch to another, which was courteous and flattering and filled with good advice; the following address of Nezahualpilli, king of Tezcuco, to Montezuma II., on the occasion of the accession of the latter to the throne of Mexico, will illustrate·

The great good fortune, most mighty lord, which has befallen this kingdom in deserving thee for its monarch is plainly shown by the unanimity with which thou wast elected, and by the general rejoicing of the people thereat. And they have reason to rejoice; for so great is the Mexican empire that none possessed of less wisdom, prudence, and courage than thou were fit to govern it. Truly is this people beloved of the gods, in that they have given it light to choose that which is best; for who can doubt that a prince who, before he came to the throne, made the nine heavens his study[21] will, now that he is king, obtain the good things of the earth for his people?

works of acknowledged authority on the subject of aboriginal American civilization, there are a number of others, chiefly of modern date, that treat more or less completely of the matter. Many of these are mere compilations, put together without regard to accuracy or consistency; others are works which deal ostensibly with other Spanish American matters, and only refer to the ancient civilization in passing; their accounts are usually copied bodily from one or two of the old writers; some few profess to exhaust the subject; in these latter, however, the authors have failed to cite their authorities, or at best have merely given a list of them. To attempt to note all the points on which these writers have fallen into error, or where they differ from my text, would prove as tiresome to the reader as the result would be useless. It will therefore be sufficient to refer to this class of books at the conclusion of the large divisions into which this work naturally falls. About the system of government, laws of succession, ceremonies of election, anointment, and coronation, of the Aztecs and other nations included in this division, see *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 578–83, 596; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 8–14, 51–2; *Touron, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 6–7, 25–38; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 204–7; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mexicain*, pp. 119, 150–8, 229–30, 244; *Lafond, Voyages*, tom. i., p. 119; *Poinsett's Notes Mex., app.*, pp. 22–3; *Macgregor's Progress of America*, p. 21; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, pp. 24–6, 41–3; *Hassel, Mex. Guat.*, p. 247; *Dilworth, Conq. Mex.*, p. 45; *Pradt. Cartas*, pp. 106, 176; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 9, 14–19, 22–3, 32–6, 68; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 59–75, 186; *Cortés, Aventuras, pref*, pp. 7–13; *Chambers' Jour.*, vol. iv., p. 253; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, p. 97.

[21] 'Que antes de Reinar avia investigado los nueve dobleces de el Cielo.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 194. Ortega, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 306, writes: 'Quel el que siendo particular supo penetrar los secretos del cielo;' 'that he who, being a private individual, could penetrate the secrets of heaven,' which appears more intelligible.

Digitized by Google

Who can doubt that his well-tried courage will be even greater now that it is so much needed? Who can believe that so mighty and powerful a prince will be found wanting in charity toward the orphan and the widow? Who can doubt that the Mexican people are favored of the gods, in having for a king one to whom the great Creator has imparted so much of his own glory that by simply looking upon his face we are made to partake of that glory? Rejoice, O happy land! for the gods have given thee a prince who will be a firm pillar for thy support, a father and a refuge for thy succor, a more than brother in pity and mercy toward his people. Verily, thou hast a king who will not avail himself of his high place to give himself up to sloth and pleasure, but who, rather, will lie sleepless through the night, pondering thy welfare. Tell me, then, most fortunate land, have I not reason for saying, Rejoice and be happy! And thou most noble and puissant lord, be of good heart, for as the high gods have appointed thee to this office, so will they grant thee strength to fill it; and be well assured that the gods who have been so gracious to thee during these many years will not now fail in their goodness; by them hast thou been raised to thy present exalted position; we pray that with their help thou mayest continue to hold it during many happy years to come.[22]

It is probable that the orations used upon those occasions by the Aztecs were, like their prayers, not spoken ex tempore, nor even prepared beforehand by the speaker; most likely they were in the form of a fixed ritual, each being prepared to suit a special occasion, such as the coronation or burial of a monarch, and repeated as often as such an occasion occurred. Some orations must be delivered by particular persons; others needed only an eloquent speaker. Sahagun gives us a speech which was addressed to a newly elected king. It could be delivered, he says,

[22] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 194–5.

Digitized by Google

by one of the high-priests, or by a noble noted for his eloquence, or by some delegate from the provinces who was an eloquent speaker, or possibly by some learned senator, or other person well versed in the art of speech-making. The language is constrained and quaint, and possibly tiresome, but as a specimen of Aztec oratory I give it in full, adhering to the sense, and as clearly as possible to the words of the original.

O king, most pitiful, most dovout, and best beloved, more worthy to be esteemed than precious stones or choice feathers, thou art here by the will of the Lord our God, who has appointed thee to rule over us in the place of the kings thy ancestors, who, dying, have let fall from their shoulders the burden of government under which they labored, even as one who toils up a hill heavy laden. Perchance these dead ones still remember and care for the land which they governed, now, by the will of God, a desert in darkness, and desolate without a king; peradventure they look with pity upon their country, which is become a place of briers and barren, and upon their poor people who are orphans, fatherless and motherless, knowing not nor understanding those things which are best; who are unable to speak for dumbness, who are as a body without a head. He who has lately left us was strong and valorous: for a few short days he was lent to us, then like a vision he slipped from our midst, and his passing was as a dream, for the Lord our God hath called him to rest with the dead kings, his ancestors, who are to-day in a manner shut from our sight in a coffer. Thus was he gathered to his people, and is even now with our father and mother, the God of Hell, who is called Mictlantecutli. Will he, peradventure, return from the place to which he is gone? May it not be that he will come back to us? Gone is he forever, and his kingdom has lost him. Never again, through all coming time, may we see his face, nor those who come after us. He is gone from our sight forever. Our light is put out; we, whom he

Digitized by Google

illumined, whom he carried, as it were, upon his shoulders, are abandoned, and in darkness, and in great peril of destruction. Behold he has left his people and the throne and seat whereon our Lord God placed him, and which he made it his constant aim to hold in peace and quietness. He did not cover his hands and feet with his mantle for laziness, but with diligence did he work for the good of his people. In thee, O most compassionate king, we have a great solace and joy; in thee hath the Lord God given us a sun-like glory and splendor. God points at thee with his finger, he hath written down thy name in red letters. It is fixed above and below, in heaven and in hell, that thou shalt be king and possess the throne and seat and dignity of this kingdom, the root of which was deep planted long ago by thine ancestors, they themselves being its first branches. To thee, sire, is intrusted the care of the seignory. Thou art the successor of the lords, thy predecessors, and must bear the burden they bore; upon thy back must thou place the load of this kingdom; to the strength of thy thighs and thine arms does the Lord God intrust the government of the common people, who are capricious and hard to please. For many years must thou support and amuse them as though they were young children; during all thy life must thou dandle them in thine arms, nurse them on thy lap, and soothe them to sleep with a lullaby. O our lord, most serene and estimable, this thing was determined in heaven and in hell; this matter was considered, and thou wast signalled out, upon thee fell the choice of the Lord our God. Was it possible that thou couldst hide thyself or escape this decision? In what esteem dost thou hold the Lord God? With what respect dost thou consider the kings and great nobles who have been inspired by God to choose thee for our father and mother, whose election is divine and irrevocable?

This being so, O our lord, see that thou girdest thyself for thy task, that thou puttest thy shoulder to the

Digitized by Google

burden which has been imposed upon thee. Let the will of God be obeyed. Perchance thou wilt carry this load for a space, or it may be that death will cut thee off, and thy election be as a dream. Take heed, therefore, that thou art not ungrateful, setting small store by the benefits of God. Be assured that he sees all secret things, and that he will afflict thee in such manner as may seem good to him. Peradventure he will send thee into the mountains and waste places, or he will cast thee upon dirt and filthiness, or some fearful and ugly thing will happen to thee; perchance thou shalt be defamed and covered with shame, or discord and revolt shall arise in thy kingdom, so that thou shalt fall into contempt and be cast down; perhaps other kings, thine enemies, may rise up against thee and conquer thee; or possibly the Lord may suffer famine and want to desolate they kingdom. What wilt thou do if in thy time thy kingdom should be destroyed, and the wrath of our God should visit thee in a pestilence? Or if the light of thy splendor should be turned into utter darkness, and thy dominions laid waste? Or if death should come upon thee while thou art yet young, or the Lord God should set his foot upon thee before thou hast fully gathered up the reins of government? What wilt thou do if God on a sudden should send forth armies of enemies against thee, from the wilderness or from the sea, from the waste and barren places where men wage war and shed blood that the thirst of the sun and the earth may be slaked? Manifold are the punishments of God for those who offend him. Wherefore, O our king, it behooves thee with all thy strength to do that which is right in the fulfilment of thine office, taking care that this be done with tears and sighs, and continual prayer to the Lord our God, the invisible, the impalpable. Draw near to him, sire, weeping, and in all sincerity, that he may help thee to govern in peace. Beware that thou receivest with kindness and humility those that approach thee in

Digitized by Google

grief and despair. Neither speak nor act rashly, but hear calmly and to the end all complaints brought before thee; do not harshly interrupt the words of the speaker, for thou art the image of the Lord God, in thee is represented his person, thou art his reliance, with thine mouth he speaks, with thine ear he listens. Be no respecter of persons, sire, but punish all alike, and justly, for thou hast thy power of God, thy right hand to punish is as the claws and teeth of God, for thou art his judge and executioner. Do justice, therefore, heeding the wrath of none; this is the command of God, who hath given the doing of these things into thine hand. Take care that in the high places of the lords and judges there be nothing done snatchingly nor in haste, that there be no hot words nor deeds done in anger. Say not now in thine heart, I am the lord, my will is law, but rather let this be an occasion for the humbling of thy valor and the lowering of thy self-esteem. Look to it that thy new dignities be not the means of puffing thee up with pride and haughtiness, but in place thereof ponder often on thy former lowly estate, from which, without desert, thou wast taken and placed where thou now art. Say to thine heart, Who was I? Who am I? Not by mine own deserts did I attain this high place, but by the will of God; verily all this is a dream, and not sober truth. Be watchful, sire, that thou dost not rest free from care, that thou dost not grow heedless with pleasure, and become a glutton and wine-bibber, spending in feasting and drunkenness that which is earned by the sweat of thy subjects; let not the graciousness which God has shown in electing thee king be repaid with profanity, folly, and disturbances.

O king and grandchild of ours, God watches over those that govern his kingdoms, and when they do wrong he laughs at them; he mocks and is silent; for he is the Lord our God, he does what he pleases, he scoffs at whom he pleases; we are the work of his hand, in the hollow of his palm he tosses us to and fro

Digitized by Google

even as balls and playthings, he makes a mockery of us as we stumble and fall, he uses us for his ends as we roll from side to side. Strive hard, O king, to do what thou hast to do little by little. Perchance the number of our sins has rendered us unworthy, and thy election will be to us a vision that passes; or perchance it may be the will of the Lord that thou possess the royal dignity for a time; perchance he will prove thee, and put thee to the test, and if thou art found wanting, will set up another in thy place. Are not the friends of the Lord great in number? Art thou the only one whom he holds dear? Many are the friends of the Lord; many are those that call upon him; many are those that lift up their voices before him, many are those that weep before him; many are those that tearfully pray to him; many are those that sigh in his presence; verily all these are uncountable. There are many generous and prudent men of great ability and power, who pray to the Lord and cry aloud to him; behold, therefore, there are not lacking others beside thyself on whom to confer the dignity of king. Peradventure as a thing that endures not, as a thing seen in sleep, the Lord gives thee this great honor and glory; peradventure he gives thee to smell of his tender sweetness, and passes it quickly over thy lips. O king, most fortunate, bow down and humble thyself; weep with sadness and sigh; pray fervently and do the will of the Lord by night as well as by day, during the time he sees fit to spare thee. Act thy part with calmness, continually praying on thy throne with kindness and softness. Take heed that thou givest none cause for pain or weariness or sorrow, that thou settest thy foot upon none, that thou frightest none with angry words or fierce looks. Refrain also, O our king, from all lewd jests and converse, lest thou bring thy person into contempt; levity and buffoonery are not fit for one of thy dignity. Incline not thine ear to ribaldry, even though it come from a near relative, for though as a man thou art mortal, yet in respect

Digitized by Google

to thine office thou art as God. Though thou art our fellow-creature and friend, our son and our brother, yet are we not thine equals, nor do we look upon thee as a man, in that thou now art the image of the Lord God; he it is that speaks within thee, instructing us and making himself heard through thy lips; thy mouth is his mouth, thy tongue is his tongue, thy face is his face. Already he has graced thee with his authority, he has given thee teeth and claws that thou mayest be feared and respected. See to it, sire, that thy former levity be now laid aside, that thou take to thyself the heart of an old man, of one who is austere and grave. Look closely to thine honor, to the decency of thy person, and the majesty of thine office; let thy words be few and serious, for thou art now another being. Behold the place on which thou standest is exceeding high, and the fall therefrom is perilous. Consider that thou goest on a lofty ridge and upon a narrow path having a fearful depth sheer down on either side, so that it is impossible to swerve to the right or to the left without falling headlong into the abyss. It also behooves thee, sire, to guard thyself against being cross-grained and fierce and dreaded as a wild beast by all. Combine moderation with rigor, inclining rather to mercy than to pitilessness. Never show all thy teeth nor put forth the full length of thy claws. Never appear startled or in fear, harsh or dangerous; conceal thy teeth and claws; assemble thy chief men together, make thyself acceptable to them with gifts and kind words. Provide also for the entertainment of the common people according to their quality and rank; adapt thyself to the different classes of the people and ingratiate thyself with them. Have a care and concern thyself about the dances, and about the ornaments and instruments used at them, for they are the means of infusing a warlike spirit into men. Gladden the hearts of the common people with games and amusements, for thus wilt thou become famous and be beloved, and even after death

Digitized by Google

thy fame will live, and the old men and women who knew thee will shed tears of sorrow for thine absence. O most fortunate and happy king, most precious treasure, bear in mind that thou goest by a craggy and dangerous road, whereon thou must step with firmness, for in the path of kings and princes there are many yawning gulfs and slippery places, and steep, pathless slopes, where the matted thorn-bushes and long grass hide pitfalls having pointed stakes set upright in them. Wherefore it behooves thee to call upon thy God with moanings and lamentations, to watch constantly, and to shun the harlot, who is a curse and a sickness to man. Sleep not lightly in thy bed, sire, but rather lie and ponder the affairs of thy kingdom; even in thy slumbers let thy dreams be of the good things in thy charge, that thou mayest know how best to distribute them among thy lords and courtiers, for there are many who envy the king, and would fain eat as he eats and drink as he drinks, wherefore is it said that kings 'eat the bread of grief.' Think not, sire, that the royal throne is a soft and pleasant seat, for there is nothing but trouble and penitence. O blessed and most precious king, it is not my wish to cause pain to thine heart nor to excite thy wrath and indignation; it is sufficient for me that I have many times stumbled and slipped, aye, and have even fallen, during this discourse of mine; enough for me are the faults of the speech which I have spoken, going, in a manner, with jumps like a frog before our Lord God, the invisible, the impalpable, who is here and listening to us, who has heard distinctly the slightest of the words which I have spoken stammeringly and with hesitation, in bad order and with unapt gestures; but in doing this I have complied with the custom which obliges the aged men of the state to address a newly elected king. In like manner have I done my duty to our God who hears me, to whom I make an offering of this my speech. Long mayest thou live and reign, O lord and king. I have spoken.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IV.

PALACES AND HOUSEHOLDS OF THE NAHUA KINGS.

EXTENT AND INTERIOR OF THE GREAT PALACE IN MEXICO—THE PALACE OF NEZAHUALCOYOTL, KING OF TEZCUCO—THE ZOÖLOGICAL COLLECTIONS OF THE NAHUA MONARCHS—MONTEZUMA'S ORATORY—ROYAL GARDENS AND PLEASURE-GROUNDS—THE HILL OF CHAPULTEPEC—NEZAHUALCOYOTL'S COUNTRY RESIDENCE AT TEZCOZINCO—TOLTEC PALACES—THE ROYAL GUARD—THE KING'S MEALS—AN AZTEC CUISINE—THE AUDIENCE-CHAMBER—AFTER-DINNER AMUSEMENTS—THE ROYAL WARDROBE—THE KING AMONG HIS PEOPLE—MEETING OF MONTEZUMA II. AND CORTÉS—THE KING'S HAREM—REVENUES OF THE ROYAL HOUSEHOLD—POLICY OF AZTEC KINGS.

IN the preceding chapter we have seen how the monarchs were chosen, and anointed, and crowned, and feasted, and lectured; now let us follow them to their homes. And here I must confess I am somewhat staggered by the recitals. It is written that as soon as the new king was formally invested with the right of sovereignty, he took possession of the royal palaces and gardens, and that these abodes of royalty were on a scale of magnificence almost unparalleled in the annals of nations. How far we may rely on these accounts it is difficult to say; how we are to determine disputed questions is yet more difficult. In the testimony before us, there are two classes of evidence: one having as its base selfishness, superstition, and patriotism; the other disaffection, jealousy, and hatred. Between these contending evils, fortunately, we may

Digitized by Google

at least approximate to the truth. To illustrate: there can be no doubt that much concerning the Aztec civilization has been greatly exaggerated by the old Spanish writers, and for obvious reasons. It was manifestly to the advantage of some, both priests and adventurers, to magnify the power and consequence of the people conquered and the cities demolished by them, knowing full well that tales of mighty realms, with countless man-eaters and fabulous riches, would soonest rouse the zeal and cupidity of the Spaniards, and best secure to them both honors and supplies. Gathered from the lips of illiterate soldiers little prone to diminish the glory of their achievements in the narration, or from the manuscripts of native historians whose patriotic statements regarding rival states no longer in existence could with difficulty be disproved, these accounts passed into the hands of credulous writers of fertile imagination, who drank in with avidity the marvels that were told them, and wrote them down with superhuman discrimination—with a discrimination which made every so-called fact tally with the writings of the fathers. These writers possessed in an eminent degree the faculty called by latter-day scholars the imaginative in history-writing. Whatever was told them that was contrary to tradition was certainly erroneous, a snare of the devil; if any facts were wanting in the direction pointed out by doctrines or dogmas, it was their righteous duty to fill them in. Thus it was in certain instances. But to the truth of the greater part of these relations, testimony is borne by the unanimity of the authors, though this is partly owing to their copying each from the writings of the others; and more conclusively, by the architectural remains which survived the attacks of the iconoclastic conquerors, and the golden and bejewelled ornaments of such exquisite workmanship as to equal if not surpass anything of the kind in Europe, which ornaments were sent to Spain as proofs of the richness of the country. At this distance of time it

Digitized by Google

is impossible to draw a definite line between the true and the false; nor do I feel it my duty to dogmatize in these matters, but rather to tell the tale as I find it, at the same time laying every shade of evidence before the reader.

The principal palace in the city of Mexico was an irregular pile of low buildings, enormous in extent, constructed of huge blocks of *tetzontli*, a kind of porous stone common to that country, cemented with mortar. The arrangement of the buildings was such that they enclosed three great plazas or public squares, in one of which a beautiful fountain incessantly played. Twenty great doors opened on the squares and on the streets, and over these was sculptured in stone the coat of arms of the kings of Mexico—an eagle gripping in his talons a jaguar.[1] In the interior were many halls, each of immense size, and one in particular is said by a writer who accompanied Cortés, known as the Anonymous Conqueror, to have been of sufficient extent to contain three thousand men; while upon the terrace that formed its roof thirty men on horseback could have gone through the spear exercise.[2] In addition to these there were more than one hundred smaller rooms, and the same number of marble baths, which, together with the fountains, ponds, and basins in the gardens, were supplied with water from the neighboring hill of Chapultepec. There were also splendid suites of apartments retained for the use of the kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan and their attendants when they visited Mexico,

[1] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ix. Though it is more than probable that Gomara means the same thing, yet the manner in which he expresses it leaves us in some doubt whether the tiger might not have been standing over the eagle. 'El escudo de armas, que estaua por las puertas de palacio y que traen las vanderas de Motecçuma, y las de sus antecessores, es vna aguila abatida a vn tigre, las manos y vñas puestas como para hazer presa.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 108 'Het Wapen dat boven de Poorte stont, was een Arent die op een Griffioen nederdaelde, met open Clauwen hem ghereet maeckende, om syn Roof te vatten.' *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 246.

[2] *Relatione fatta per vn gentil 'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309.

Digitized by Google

and for the ministers and counsellors, and the great lords and their suites, who constantly resided at the capital. Besides these, the private attendants of the king—and their name was legion—had to be provided for; so that when we consider the other extensive buildings, such as the harem, in which, according to some authorities, were nearly three thousand women; the armory, the granaries, storehouses, menageries, and aviaries, which either formed part or were in the immediate vicinity of the palace buildings, we are prepared somewhat to credit the Anonymous Conqueror aforesaid when he affirms that, although he four times wandered about the palace until he was tired, with no other purpose than to view its interior, yet he never succeeded in seeing the whole of it.[3] The walls and floors of halls and apartments were many of them faced with polished slabs of marble, porphyry, jasper, obsidian, and white tecali;[4] lofty columns of the same fine stones supported marble balconies and porticos, every niche and corner of which was filled with wondrous ornamental carving, or held a grinning grotesquely sculptured head. The beams and casings were of cedar, cypress, and other valuable woods, profusely carved and put together without nails. The roofs of the palace buildings formed a suite of immense terraces, from which a magnificent view of the whole city could be obtained. Superb mats of most exquisite finish were spread upon the marble floors; the tapestry that draped the walls and the curtains that hung before the windows were made of a fabric most wonderful for its delicate texture, elegant designs, and brilliant colors; through the halls and corridors a thousand golden censers, in which burned precious spices and perfumes, diffused a subtile odor.[5]

[3] *Ib.*

[4] 'Le tecali paraît être la pierre transparente semblable à l'albâtre oriental, dont on faisait un grand usage à Mexico, et dont les réligieux se servirent même pour faire une espèce de vitres à leurs fenêtres. On en trouve encore de ce genre dans plusieurs couvents de la Puebla de los Angeles.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 8.

[5] Incense-offering among the Mexicans, and other nations of Anáhuac,

Digitized by Google

The palace built by Nezahualcoyotl, king of Tezcuco, even surpassed that of Montezuma in many respects. The Tezcucan historian, Ixtlilxochitl, has given a full description of it, which I partially translate. The collection of buildings, which composed not only the royal residence, but also the public offices and courts of law, extended from east to west twelve hundred and thirty-four and a half yards, and from north to south nine hundred and seventy-eight yards. These were encompassed by a wall made of adobes strongly cemented together, and standing on a foundation of very hard mortar, six feet in width at the base. On its southern and eastern sides the wall was three times a man's stature in height; on the western side, toward the lake, and on the northern side, it rose to the height of five times a man's stature.[6] For one third of the distance from the base to the top, the wall grew gradually thinner, while the remainder was of one thickness.[7] Within this inclosure were the royal dwelling, the council-chambers, and other halls and apartments. There were also two large plazas, the outer one of which served as the public market-place. The inner court-yard was surrounded by the various courts of justice, and other halls where matters relative to science, art, and the army were judicially and otherwise considered, all of which will be described in their place, and also a hall where the archives of the kingdom were preserved. In the centre of the court-yard, which was also used as a market-place, was a tennis-court; on the west side were the apartments of the king, more than three hundred in number, all admirably arranged; here

was not only an act of religion toward their gods, but also a piece of civil courtesy to lords and ambassadors. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 51. Cortés during his march to the capital was on more than one occasion met by a deputation of nobles, bearing censers which they swung before him as a mark of courtesy.

[6] Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 177, makes in both cases the 'estado' the same measure as the 'vara,' that is, three feet, a clumsy error certainly, when translating such a sentence as this: 'Que tenia de grueso dos varas, y de alto tres estados.'

[7] 'A manera de estribo,' writes Ixtlilxochitl.

Digitized by Google

were also storehouses for tribute, and splendid suites of apartments reserved for the use of the kings of Mexico and Tlacopan when they visited Texcuco. These apartments led into the royal pleasure-gardens, which were artistically laid out with labyrinthian walks winding through the dark foliage, where often the uninitiated would lose themselves; then there were sparkling fountains, and inviting baths, and shady groves of cedar and cypress, and ponds well stocked with fish, and aviaries filled with birds of every hue and species, besides extensive menageries.[8] The city of Mexico, however, furnished the largest collection of animals, or at all events, it is more fully described by the conquerors than others. The Aztec monarchs took special pleasure in maintaining zoölogical collections on an immense scale, which fancy was probably more fully indulged by Montezuma II. than by any other. That prince caused to be erected in the city of Mexico an immense edifice, surrounded by extensive gardens, which was used for no other purpose than to keep and display all kinds of birds and beasts.

One portion of this building consisted of a large open court, paved with stones of different colors, and divided into several compartments, in which were kept wild beasts, birds of prey, and reptiles. The larger animals were confined in low wooden cages made of massive beams. They were fed upon the intestines of human sacrifices, and upon deer, rabbits, and other animals. The birds of prey were distributed according to their species, in subterranean chambers, which were more than seven feet deep, and upwards of seventeen feet in length and breadth. Half of each chamber was roofed with slabs of stone, under which perches were fixed in the wall, where the birds might sleep and be protected from the rain; the other half was covered only with a wooden grating, which

[8] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 242–3.

Digitized by Google

admitted air and sunlight. Five hundred turkeys were daily killed for food for these birds. Alligators were kept in ponds walled round to prevent their escape, and serpents in long cages or vessels, large enough to allow them to move about freely. These reptiles were also fed on human blood and intestines. Mr Prescott tells us that the whole of this menagerie "was placed under the charge of numerous keepers, who acquainted themselves with the habits of their prisoners, and provided for their comfort and cleanliness."

Thomas Gage, the shrewd old English heretic, takes another view. In his quaint though free and slashing style he writes: "But what was wonderful to behold, horrid to see, hideous to hear in this house, was the Officers' daily occupations about these beasts, the floor with blood like a gelly, stinking like a slaughter-house, and the roaring of the Lions, the fearful hissing of the Snakes and Adders, the doleful howling and barking of the Wolves, the sorrowful yelling of the Ownzes and Tigres, when they would have meat. And yet in this place, which in the night season seemed a dungeon of hell, and a dwelling-place for the Devil, could a heathen Prince pray unto his Gods and Idols; for near unto this Hall was another of a hundred and fifty foot long and thirty feet broad, where was a chappel with a roof of silver and gold in leaf, wainscotted and decked with great store of pearl and stone, as Agats, Cornerines, Emeralds, Rubies, and divers other sorts; and this was the Oratory where Montezuma prayed in the night season, and in that chappel the Devil did appear unto him, and gave him answer according to his prayers, which as they were uttered among so many ugly and deformed beasts, and with the noise of them which represented Hell itself, were fitted for a Devil's answer."[9]

[9] *Gage's New Survey*, p. 99. Concerning this oratory, see *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., tom. i., cap. l. Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 296, asserts that the gold and silver plates with which the walls and roof were coated, were almost as thick as a finger, and that the first con-

Digitized by Google

In another part of the building was an immense hall which served as an aviary, in which were collected specimens of all the birds in the empire, excepting those of prey. They were of infinite variety and splendid plumage; many specimens were so difficult to obtain that their feathers brought almost fabulous prices in the Mexican market; while some few, either because of their extreme rarity or their inability to live in confinement, did not appear even in the royal aviary, except in imitation, for we are told that, both in Mexico and Tezcuco, all kinds of birds and animals that could not be obtained alive were represented in gold and silver so skilfully that they are said to have served the naturalist Hernandez for models. But to attain this honor, a bird must indeed have been a rara avis, a very phœnix, for it is related by Torquemada and many others, on the authority of a Spanish eye-witness, that the Emperor Montezuma II. happening one day to see a sparrow-hawk soaring through the air, and "taking a fancy to its beauty and mode of flight," ordered his followers to catch it without delay and bring it alive to his hand; and such were the efforts made and care used, that in an incredibly short space of time, "they captured that fierce and haughty hawk as though it had been but a gentle domestic pigeon, and brought it to the king."[10]

Marble galleries, supported upon jasper pillars, all of one piece, surrounded this building, and looked out upon a large garden, wherein were groves of rare trees, choice shrubbery and flowers, and fountains filled with fish. But the prominent feature of the garden was ten large ponds for the use of water-fowl, some of which were filled with fresh and some with salt water, according to the nature of the birds that frequented them. Each pond was surrounded with tessellated marble

querors did not see this chapel or oratory, because Montezuma always went to the temple to pray, and probably, as the natives declared, knowing the covetousness of the Spaniards, he purposely concealed all this wealth from them; it is also said that when Mexico was taken, the natives destroyed this chapel, and threw its treasures into the lake.

[10] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 297.

Digitized by Google

pavement, and shaded by clumps of trees. As often as the water began to stagnate, it was drained off and renewed. Montezuma is said to have passed much of his time here, alone, or with his women, seated in the shade, amid the plashing of fountains and odor of flowers, musing upon affairs of state, or diverting his mind from such cares by watching the motions of the strange birds upon the water.

No less than three hundred persons were employed in attending upon the water-fowl and the birds in the aviary; feeding them, and in the moulting season carefully gathering the gorgeous plumes, which served as material for the celebrated Aztec feather-work. The habits of the birds were closely studied, and great care was taken that every species should be supplied with the food best suited to its taste, whether it consisted of worms, insects, or seeds. The fish with which the water-fowl were supplied amounted to one hundred and fifty pounds daily. In another hall a collection of human monstrosities was kept. As we shall presently see, many of these unfortunate creatures were trained to play the part of jesters at the royal table. Yet another hall contained a number of albinos, or white Indians, who were considered a great curiosity.

In addition to these city palaces, the Aztec monarchs had numerous equally splendid country residences, besides whole tracts of country set apart as royal hunting-grounds. In these parts timber was not allowed to be cut nor game disturbed, which regulations were enforced with great rigor.

The principal country villa of Montezuma II., and the only one of which any signs are yet visible, was situated upon the hill of Chapultepec, which stood in a westerly direction from the city of Mexico. In the days of the Aztec kings, the lake of Tezcuco washed the base of the hill, round which the royal grounds stretched for miles in every direction. The gardens were laid out in terraces, that wound down the hillside amid dense groves of pepper-trees, myrtles, and cy-

Digitized by Google

presses, innumerable fountains and artificial cascades. Little of the ancient glory of either palace or gardens is now left, except the natural beauty of the foliage that clothes the hill, and the magnificent view to be obtained from the summit. Two statues of Montesuma II. and his father, cut in bass-relief on the porphyry rock, were still to be seen, Gama tells us, in the middle of the last century; but these are now gone, swept away by the same ruthless hands that laid waste the hanging gardens and tore down halls and monuments until the groves of gigantic cypresses are all that is left standing in the gardens of Chapultepec that ministered to the pleasures of the ancient owners. Peter Martyr, describing the palace at Iztapalapan, writes in the language of an early translator: "That house also hath orchardes, finely planted with diuers trees, and herbes, and flourishing flowers, of a sweete smell. There are also in the same, great standing pooles of water with many kinds of fish, in the which diuers kindes of all sortes of waterfoule are swimminge. To the bottome of these lakes, a man may descend by marble steppes brought farr of. They report strange thinges of a walke inclosed with nettinges of Canes, least any one should freely come within the voyde plattes of grounde, or to the fruite of the trees. Those hedges are made with a thousande pleasant deuises, as it falleth out in those delicate purple crosse alleyes, of mirtle, rosemary, or boxe, al very delightful to behold."[11]

Nezahualcoyotl, the Tezcucan Solomon, was no whit behind his royal brother of Mexico in the matter of splendid country residences and gardens. Not content with the royal pleasure-grounds called Huectecpan, writes the Chichimec historian,[12] this great king made others, such as the forest so famous in Tezcotzincan history, and those called Cauchiacac, Tzinacamoztoc,

[11] *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii.

[12] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. iv., pp. 251-2.

Digitized by Google

Cozcaquauhco, Cuetlachatitlan, or Tlateitec, and those of the lake Acatelelco, and Tepetzinco; he likewise marked out a large tract, where he might pass his leisure moments in hunting. These gardens were adorned with fountains, drains, sewers, ponds, and labyrinths, and were planted with all kinds of flowers and trees, both indigenous and foreign.

But Nezahualcoyotl was not one to overlook utility in laying out his grounds. Five large patches of the most fertile lands lying near the capital were brought under cultivation and the products appropriated exclusively to the use of the royal household.

Certain towns and provinces in the vicinity of the court furnished attendants and laborers for the palaces, gardens, and plantations. In return for such service said towns and provinces were exempt from taxation and enjoyed certain privileges. The manner of service was divided; thus twenty-eight towns supplied those who attended to the cleanliness and order of the royal buildings and waited upon the king and his suite; fourteen of these towns [13] did service during one half of the year and the remainder [14] during the other half. Five towns provided attendants for the king's chamber,[15] and eight provinces,[16] with their dependent towns, furnished, each in its turn, foresters, gardeners, and agricultural laborers for the woods and gardens, ornamental or otherwise.

King Nezahualcoyotl's favorite country residence,

[13] Their names, as given by Ixtlilxochitl, *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 251, were Huexotla, Coatlichan, Coatapec, Chimalhuacan, Ytztapalocan, Tepetlaoztoc, Acolman, Tepechpan, Chiuhnauhtlan, Teioiocan, Chiauhtla, Papalotlan, Xaltocan, and Chalco.

[14] Otompan, Teotihuacan, Tepepolco, Cempoalon, Aztaquemecan, Ahuatepec, Axapochoc, Oztoticpac, Tizayocan, Tlalanapan, Coioac, Quatlatlauhcan, Quauhtlacca, and Quatlatzinco. *Ib.*

[15] 'Para la recámara del rey,' namely: Calpolalpan, Mazaapan, Yahualiuhcan, Atenco, and Tzihuinquilocan. *Ib.* It is unreasonable to suppose that these so-called 'towns' were really more than mere villages, since the kingdoms proper of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, of which they formed only a fraction, were all contained in a valley not two hundred miles in circumference.

[16] Tolantzinco, Quauhchinanco, Xicotepec, Pauhatla, Yauhtepec, Tepechco, Ahuacaiocan, and Quauhahuac. *Ib.*; see also *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 167.

Digitized by Google

some remains of which are still visible, was at Tezcozinco, on a conical hill lying about two leagues from Tezcuco. A broad road, running between high hedges, and probably winding spirally round the hill, appears to have led up to the summit,[17] which, however, could be reached in a shorter time by means of a flight of steps, many of which were cut into the living rock, and the remainder made of pieces of stone firmly cemented together. Dávila Padilla, who wrote in the latter part of the sixteenth century, says that he counted five hundred and twenty of these steps, without reckoning those that had already crumbled to pieces.[18] He furthermore adds that for the last twelve steps in the ascent the staircase was tunnelled through the solid rock, and became so narrow that only one person could pass at a time. Dávila Padilla inquired the reason of this of the natives, and was told by them, as they had heard it from their fathers, that this narrow passage enabled the Tezcucan monarch to assert his rank by taking precedence of his royal visitors when they went in a body to worship the idol that stood upon the summit—not a very polite proceeding, certainly.[19] Water was brought over hill and dale to the top of the mountain by means of a solid stone aqueduct. Here it was received in a large basin, having in its centre a great rock, upon which were inscribed in a circle the hieroglyphics representing the years that had elapsed since Nezahualcoyotl's birth, with a list of his most noteworthy achievements in each.[20]

[17] 'La cerca tan grande que tenia para subir á la cumbre de él y andarlo todo.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 251.

[18] 'Para subir hasta esta cumbre se passan quinientos y veynte escalones, sin algunos que estan ya deshechos, por auer sido de piedras sueltas y puestas à mano: que otros muchos escalones ay, labrados en la propia peña con mucha curiosidad. El año pasado los anduue todos, y los contè, para deponer de vista.' *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 619. Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 186, citing the above author, gives five hundred and twenty as the whole number of steps, without further remark.

[19] Torquemada also mentions this staircase. *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 436.

[20] 'Esculpida en ella en circunferencia los años desde que habia nacido el rey Nezahualcoiotzin, hasta la edad de aquel tiempo.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist.*

Digitized by Google

Within this circle the royal coat of arms was sculptured, the elaborate device of which it is almost impossible to imagine from the clumsy description of it given by Ixtlilxochitl. As nearly as I can make it out, certain figures representing a deer's foot adorned with feathers and having a precious stone tied to it, a hind supporting an arm which grasps a bow and arrows, and a corseleted warrior, wearing a helmet with its ear-pieces, formed the centre; these were flanked by two houses, one in flames and falling to pieces, the other whole and highly ornamented; two tigers of the country, vomiting fire and water, served as supporters; the whole was surrounded by a border composed of twelve heads of kings and great nobles. From this basin the water was distributed through the gardens in two streams, one of which meandered down the northern side of the hill, and the other down the southern side. Dávila Padilla relates that there also stood upon the summit an image of a coyote, hewn from the living rock, which represented a celebrated fasting Indian.[21] There were likewise several towers or columns of stone, having their capitals made in the shape of a pot, from which protruded plumes of feathers, which signified the name of the place. Lower down was the colossal figure of a winged beast, called by Ixtlilxochitl a lion,[22] lying down, with its face toward the east, and bearing in its mouth a sculptured portrait of the king; this statue was generally covered with a canopy adorned with gold and feather-work.[23]

Chich., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 252. Prescott says that the hieroglyphics represented the 'years of Nezahualcoyotl's reign.' *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 182.

[21] *Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 619. 'This figure was, no doubt, the emblem of Nezahualcoyotl himself, whose name....signified "hungry fox."' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 183, note 42.

[22] 'Un leon de mas de dos brazas de largo con sus alas y plumas.' *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 252.

[23] These figures were destroyed by order of Fr Juan de Zumárraga, first Bishop of Mexico. *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 619; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 252. The injury wrought by this holy iconoclast is incalculable. Blinded by the mad fanaticism of the age, he saw a devil in every Aztec image and hieroglyph; his hammers did more in a few years to efface all vestiges of Aztec art and greatness than time and decay could have done in as many centuries. It is a few such

Digitized by Google

A little lower yet were three basins of water, emblematic of the great lake, and on the borders of the middle one three female figures were sculptured on the solid rock, representing the heads of the confederated states of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan.[24] Upon the northern side of the hill was another pond; and here upon the rock was carved the coat of arms of the city of Tollan, which was formerly the chief town of the Toltecs; upon the southern slope of the hill was yet another pond, bearing the coat of arms and the name of the city of Tenayuca, which was formerly the head town of the Chichimecs. From this basin a stream of water flowed continually over the precipice, and being dashed into spray upon the rocks, was scattered like rain over a garden of odorous tropical plants.[25] In the garden were two baths, dug out of

men as this that the world has to thank for the utter extinction in a few short years of a mighty civilization. In a letter to the Franciscan Chapter at Tolosa, dated June 12, 1531, we find the old bigot exulting over his vandalism. 'Very reverend Fathers,' he writes, 'be it known to you that we are very busy in the work of converting the heathen; of whom, by the grace of God, upwards of one million have been baptized at the hands of the brethren of the order of our seraphic Father Saint Francis; five hundred temples have been levelled to the ground, and more than twenty thousand figures of the devils they worshipped have been broken to pieces and burned.' And it appears that the worthy zealot had even succeeded in bringing the natives themselves to his way of thinking, for further on he writes: 'They watch with great care to see where their fathers hide the idols, and then with great fidelity they bring them to the religious of our order that they may be destroyed; and for this many of them have been brutally murdered by their parents, or to speak more properly, have been crowned in glory with Christ.' *Dicc. Univ., App.*, tom. iii., p. 1131.

[24] There is a singular confusion about this passage. In *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 252, Ixtlilxochitl is made to write: 'Un poquito mas abajo estaban tres albercas de agua, y en la del medio estaban en sus bordos tres damas esculpidas y labradas en la misma peña, que significaban la gran laguna; y las *ranas* las cabezas del imperio.' In *Prescott's Mex., App.*, vol. iii., pp. 430–2, Ixtlilxochitl's description of Tezcozinco is given in full; the above-quoted passage is exactly the same here, except that for *ranas*, frogs, we read *ramas*, branches. Either of these words would render the description incomprehensible, and in my description I have assumed that they are both misprints for *damas*. Mr Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 182–3, surmounts the difficulty as follows: 'On a lower level were three other reservoirs, *in each of which stood a marble statue of a woman*, emblematic of the three states of the empire.' This is inaccurate as well as incomplete, inasmuch as the figures were not statues, each standing in a basin, but were all three cut upon the face of the rock-border of the middle basin.

[25] I have no doubt that this is the basin known to modern travellers as the 'Baths of Montezuma, of which Ward says that it is neither of the proper shape, nor large enough for a bath, but that it more probably 'served

Digitized by Google

one large piece of porphyry,[26] and a flight of steps also cut from the solid rock, worked and polished so smooth that they looked like mirrors, and on the front of the stairs were carved the year, month, day, and hour in which information was brought to king Nezahualcoyotl of the death of a certain lord of Huexotzinco, whom he esteemed very highly, and who died while the said staircase was being built.[27] The garden is said to have been a perfect little paradise. The gorgeous flowers were all transplanted from the distant tierra caliente; marble pavilions, supported on slender columns, with tessellated pavements and sparkling fountains, nestled among the shady groves and afforded a cool retreat during the long summer days. At the end of the garden, almost hidden by the groups of gigantic cedars and cypresses that surrounded it,

to receive the waters of a spring, since dried up, as its depth is considerable, while the edge on one side is formed into a spout.' *Mexico*, vol. ii., p. 297. Of late years this excavation has been repeatedly described by men who claim to have visited it, but whose statements it is hard to reconcile. Bullock mentions having seen on this spot 'a beautiful basin about twelve feet long by eight wide, having a well about five feet by four deep in the centre, surrounded by a parapet or rim two feet six inches high, with a throne or chair, such as is represented in ancient pictures to have been used by the kings. There are steps to descend into the basin or bath; the whole cut out of the living porphyry rock with the most mathematical precision, and polished in the most beautiful manner.' *Mexico*, vol. ii., pp. 125–6. Latrobe says there were 'two singular basins, of perhaps two feet and a half in diameter, not big enough for any monarch bigger than Oberon to take a duck in.' *Rambler*, p. 187; *Vigne's Travels*, vol. i., p. 27, mentions 'the remains of a circular stone bath....about a foot deep and five in diameter, with a small surrounding and smoothed space cut out of the solid rock.' Brantz Mayer, who both saw it and gives a sketch of it, writes: 'The rock is smoothed to a perfect level for several yards, around which seats and grooves are carved from the adjacent masses. In the centre there is a circular sink, about a yard and a half in diameter, and a yard in depth, and a square pipe, with a small aperture, led the water from an aqueduct, which appears to terminate in this basin.' *Mex. as it Was*, p. 234. Beaufoy says that two thirds up the southern side of the hill was a mass of fine red porphyry, in which was an excavation six feet square, with steps leading down three feet, having in the centre a circular basin four and a half feet in diameter and five deep, also with steps. *Mex. Illustr.*, p. 195. 'On the side of the hill are two little circular baths, cut in the solid rock. The lower of the two has a flight of steps down to it; the seat for the bather, and the stone pipe which brought the water, are still quite perfect.' *Tylor's Anahuac*, p. 152.

[26] 'Tras este jardin se seguian los baños hechos y labrados de peña viva, que con dividirse en dos baños era de una pieza.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 252.

[27] *Ib.*

Digitized by Google

was the royal palace,[28] so situated that while its spacious halls were filled with the sensuous odors of the tropics, blown in from the gardens, it remained sheltered from the heat.[29]

If the ancient traditions may be believed, the Toltec monarchs built as magnificent palaces as their Aztec successors. The sacred palace of that mysterious Toltec priest-king, Quetzalcoatl, had four principal halls, facing the four cardinal points. That on the east was called the Hall of Gold, because its halls were ornamented with plates of that metal, delicately chased and finished; the apartment lying toward the west was named the Hall of Emeralds and Turquoises, and its walls were profusely adorned with all kinds of precious stones; the hall facing the south was decorated with plates of silver and with brilliant colored sea-shells, which were fitted together with great skill. The walls of the fourth hall, which was on the north, were red jasper, covered with carving and ornamented with shells. Another of these palaces or temples, for it is not clear which they were, had also four principal

[28] Dávila Padilla says that some of the gateways of this palace were formed of one piece of stone, and he saw one beam of cedar there which was almost ninety feet in length and four in breadth. *Hist. Fund. Mex.*, p. 620.

[29] Concerning the royal buildings, gardens, etc., of the Aztecs, compare *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., tom. i., cap. l.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 167, 296–8; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 243–4, 251–2; *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fund. Mex.*, pp. 619–20; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 302–9; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 196; *Acosta's Hist. Nat. Ind.*, p. 484; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 271–4; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 305–7, 504; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 69; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 181–5; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 107–11; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 315–19; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 110–11; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ix.–xi.; *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 245–6, 343; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 97–9; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii., iv., x.; *Chevalier, Mexique*, pp. 30–2; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 177–84, vol. ii., pp. 65, 115–21; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 8–11; *Pimentel, Raza Indígena*, p. 57; *Tápia, Relacion*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. ii., pp. 581–3. Other works of no original value, which touch on this subject, are *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 15, 244, 65–6, 234–7; *Ranking's Hist. Researches*, pp. 347–51; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mexicain*, pp. 90–4, 109; *Macgregor's Progress of America*, p. 22; *Dilworth's Conq. Mex.*, pp. 66, 70; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pt i., p. 125.

Digitized by Google

halls decorated entirely with feather-work tapestry. In the eastern division the feathers were yellow; in the western they were blue, taken from a bird called Xiuhtototl; in the southern hall the feathers were white, and in that on the north they were red.[30]

The number of attendants attached to the royal houses was very great. Every day from sunrise until sunset the antechambers of Montezuma's palace in Mexico were occupied by six hundred noblemen and gentlemen, who passed the time lounging about and discussing the gossip of the day in low tones, for it was considered disrespectful to speak loudly or make any noise within the palace limits. They were provided with apartments in the palace,[31] and took their meals from what remained of the superabundance of the royal table, as did, after them, their own servants, of whom each person of quality was entitled to from one to thirty, according to his rank. These retainers, numbering two or three thousand, filled several outer courts during the day.

The king took his meals alone, in one of the largest halls of the palace. If the weather was cold, a fire was kindled with a kind of charcoal made of the bark of trees, which emitted no smoke, but threw out a delicious perfume; and that his majesty might suffer no inconvenience from the heat, a screen ornamented with gold and carved with figures of the idols[32] was placed between his person and the fire. He was seated upon a low leather cushion, upon which were thrown various soft skins, and his table was of a similar description, except that it was larger and rather higher, and was covered with white cotton cloths of the finest texture. The dinner-service was of the finest ware of Cholula, and many of the goblets were of gold and

[30] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 107–8.

[31] Close to the great audience-hall was a very large court-yard, 'en que avia çient aposentos de veynte é çinco ó treynta piés de largo cada uno sobre sí en torno de dicho patio, é allí estaban los señores prinçipales apossentados, como guardas del palaçio ordinarias.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 501.

[32] 'Vna como tabla labrada con oro, y otras figuras de idolos.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68.

Digitized by Google

silver, or fashioned of beautiful shells. He is said to have possessed a complete service of solid gold, but as it was considered below a king's dignity to use anything at table twice, Montezuma, with all his extravagance, was obliged to keep this costly dinner-set in the temple. The bill of fare comprised everything edible, of fish, flesh, and fowl, that could be procured in the empire or imported from beyond it. Relays of couriers were employed in bringing delicacies from afar, and as the royal table was every day supplied with fresh fish brought, without the modern aids of ice and air-tight packing, from a sea-coast more than two hundred miles distant, by a road passing chiefly through a tropical climate, we can form some idea of the speed with which these couriers travelled. There were cunning cooks among the Aztecs, and at these extravagant meals there was almost as much variety in the cooking as in the matter cooked. Sahagun[33] gives a most formidable list of roast, stewed, and boiled dishes of meat, fish, and poultry, seasoned with many kinds of herbs, of which, however, the most frequently mentioned is chile.[34] He further describes many kinds of bread, all bearing a more or less close resemblance to the modern Mexican tortilla,[35] and all most tremendously named; imagine, for instance, when one wished for a piece of bread, having to ask one's neighbor to be good enough to pass the totanquitlaxcallitlaquelpacholli; then there were tamales of all kinds,[36]

[33] *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 297–302.

[34] This pungent condiment is at the present day as omnipresent in Spanish American dishes as it was at the time of the conquest; and I am seriously informed by a Spanish gentleman who resided for many years in Mexico, and was an officer in Maximilian's army, that while the wolves would feed upon the dead bodies of the French that lay all night upon the battlefield, they never touched the bodies of the Mexicans, because the flesh of the latter was completely impregnated with chile. Which, if true, may be thought to show that wolves do not object to a diet seasoned with garlic.

[35] Described too frequently in vol. i., of this series, to need repetition.

[36] The tamale is another very favorite modern Mexican dish. The natives generally make them with pork; the bones are crushed almost to powder; the meat is cut up in small pieces, and the whole washed; a small quantity of maize paste, seasoned with cinnamon, saffron, cloves, pimento, tomatoes, coarse pepper, salt, red coloring matter, and some lard added to it, is placed on the fire in a pan; as soon as it has acquired the consistency

Digitized by Google

and many other curious messes, such as frog-spawn, and stewed ants cooked with chile; but more loathsome to us than even such as these, and strangest of all the strange compounds that went to make up the royal carte, was one highly seasoned and probably savory-smelling dish, so exquisitely prepared that its principal ingredient was completely disguised, yet that ingredient was nothing else than human flesh.[37] Each dish was kept warm by a chafing-dish placed under it. Writers do not agree as to the exact quantity of food served up at each meal, but it must have been immense, since the lowest number of dishes given is three hundred,[38] and the highest three thousand.[39] They were brought into the hall by four hundred pages of noble birth, who placed their burdens upon the matted floor and retired noiselessy. The king then pointed out such viands as he wished to partake of, or left the selection to his stèward, who doubtless took pains to study the likes and dislikes of the royal palate. This steward was a functionary of the highest rank and importance; he alone was privileged to place the designated delicacies before the king upon the

of a thick gruel it is removed, mixed with the meat, some more lard and salt added, and the mass kneaded for a few moments; it is then divided into small portions, which are enveloped in a thin paste of maize. The tamales thus prepared are covered with a banana-leaf or a corn-husk, and placed in a pot or pan over which large leaves are laid. They are allowed to boil from one hour and a half to two hours. Game, poultry, vegetables, or sweetmeats are often used instead of pork.

[37] Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 229, regrets that certain persons, out of the ill-will they bore the Mexicans, have falsely imputed to Montezuma the crime of eating human flesh without its being well seasoned, but he admits that when properly cooked and disguised, the flesh of those sacrificed to the gods appeared at the royal board. Some modern writers seem to doubt even this; it is, however, certain that cannibalism existed among the people, not as a means of allaying appetite, but from partly religious motives, and there seems no reason to doubt that the king shared the superstitions of the people. I do not, however, base the opinion upon Oviedo's assertion, which smacks strongly of the 'giant stories' of the nursery, that certain 'dishes of tender children' graced the monarch's table. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 501. Bernal Diaz, *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68, also cannot withstand the temptation to deal in the marvellous, and mentions 'carnes de muchachos de poca edad;' though it is true the soldier-like bluntness the veteran so prided himself upon comes to his aid, and he admits that perhaps after all Montezuma was not an ogre.

[38] *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68.

[39] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 501.

Digitized by Google

table; he appears to have done duty both as royal carver and cup-bearer, and according to Torquemada, to have done it barefooted and on his knees.[40] Everything being in readiness, a number of the most beautiful of the king's women[41] entered, bearing water in round vessels called xicales, for the king to wash his hands in, and towels that he might dry them, other vessels being placed upon the ground to catch the drippings. Two other women at the same time brought him some small loaves of a very delicate kind of bread made of the finest maize flour, beaten up with eggs. This done, a wooden screen, carved and gilt, was placed before him, that no one might see him while eating.[42] There were always present five or six aged lords, who stood near the royal chair barefooted, and with bowed heads. To these, as a special mark of favor, the king occasionally sent a choice morsel from his own plate. During the meal the monarch sometimes amused himself by watching the performances of his jugglers and tumblers, whose marvellous feats of strength and dexterity I shall describe in another place; at other times there was dancing, accompanied by singing and music; there were also present dwarfs, and professional jesters, who were allowed to speak, a privilege denied all others under penalty of death, and after the manner of their kind, to tell sharp truths in the shape of jests. The more solid food was followed by pastry, sweetmeats, and a magnificent dessert of fruit. The only beverage drank at the meal was chocolate,[43] of which about fifty jars were pro-

[40] *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 229.

[41] Bernal Diaz, *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68, says there were four of these women; Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 229, says there were twenty.

[42] 'E ya que començaua á comer, echauanle delante vna como puerta de madera muy pintada de oro, porque no le viessen comer.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68. 'Luego que se sentaba à la Mesa, cerraba el Maestre-Sala vna Varanda de Madera, que dividia la Sala, para que la Nobleça de los Caballeros, *que acudia à verle comer*, no embaraçase la Mesa.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 229. 'Tosto che il Re si metteva a tavola, chiudeva lo Scalco la porta della Sala, acciocchè nessuno degli altri Nobili lo vedesse mangiare.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 270.

[43] 'A potation of chocolate, flavored with vanilla and other spices, and so prepared as to be reduced to a froth of the consistency of honey, which

Digitized by Google

vided;[44] it was taken with a spoon, finely wrought of gold or shell, from a goblet of the same material. Having finished his dinner, the king again washed his hands in water brought to him as before, by the women. After this several painted and gilt pipes were brought, from which he inhaled through his mouth or nose, as suited him best, the smoke of a mixture of liquid-amber and an herb called tobacco.[45] His siesta over, he devoted himself to business, and proceeded to give audience to foreign ambassadors, deputations from cities in the empire, and to such of his lords and ministers as had business to transact with him. Before entering the presence-chamber, all, no matter what their rank might be, unless they were of the blood-royal, were obliged to leave their sandals at the door, to cover their rich dresses with a large coarse mantle, and to approach the monarch barefooted and with downcast eyes, for it was death to the subject who should dare to look his sovereign in the face.[46] The king usually answered through his secretaries,[47] or when he deigned to speak

gradually dissolved in the mouth.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 125. 'This was something like our chocolate, and prepared in the same way, but with this difference, that it was mixed with the boiled dough of maise, and was drunk cold.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.* [Lockhart's translation, Lond., 1844, vol. i., note, p. 393]. 'La bebida es agua mezclada con cierta harina de unas almendras que llaman *cacao*. Esta es de mucha sustancia, muy fresca, y sabrosa y agradable, y no embriaga.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.

[44] 'Entonces no mirauamos en ello; mas lo que yo vi, que traian sobre cincuenta jarros grandes hechos de buen cacao con su espuma, y de lo que bebia.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68. Oviedo, as usual, is content with no number less than three thousand: 'É luego venian tres mill *xicalos* (cántaros ó ánforas) de brevage.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 501. Las Casas makes it three hundred: 'A su tiempo, en medio ò en fin de los manjares segun la costumbre que tenian, entravan otros trescientos pajes, cada uno con un vaso grande que cabia medio azumbre [about a quart] y aun tres quartillos de la bebida en el mismo, y servia el un vaso al rey el maestresala, de que bebia lo que le agradava.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.

[45] 'Vnas yervas que se dize tabaco.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68.

[46] Only five persons enjoyed the privilege of looking Montezuma II. in the face; the kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan, and the lords of Quauhtitlan, Coyouacan, and Azcapuzalco. *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi. Bernal Diaz says that all who approached the royal seat made three reverences, saying in succession, 'Lord,' 'My lord,' 'Sublime lord.' *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68.

[47] This custom of speaking through a secretary was adopted by the other Aztec monarchs as well as Montezuma, and was also imitated by many of

Digitized by Google

directly to the person who addressed him, it was in such a low tone as scarcely to be heard,[48] at the same time he listened very attentively to all that was communicated to him, and encouraged those who, from embarrassment, found difficulty in speaking. Each applicant, when dismissed, retired backward, keeping his face always toward the royal seat. The time set apart for business having elapsed, he again gave himself up to pleasure, and usually passed the time in familiar badinage with his jesters, or in listening to ballad-singers, who sang of war and the glorious deeds of his ancestors, or he amused himself by looking on at the feats of strength and legerdemain of his jugglers and acrobats; or sometimes, at this hour, he would retire to the softer pleasures of the harem. He changed his dress four times each day, and a dress once worn could never be used again. Concerning this custom, Peter Martyr, translated into the quaintest of English, writes: "Arising from his bed, he is cloathed after one maner, as he commeth forth to bee seene, and returning backe into his chamber after he hath dined, he changeth his garments: and when he commeth forthe againe to supper, hee taketh another, and returning backe againe the fourth which he weareth vntill he goe to bed. But concerning 3. garments, which he changeth euery day, many of them that returned haue reported the same vnto me, with their owne mouth: but howsoeuer it be, all agree in the changing of garmentes, that being once taken into the wardrope, they are there piled vp on heaps, not likely to see the face of Muteczuma any more: but what manner of garmentes they be, we will elswhere declare, for they are very light. These things being

the great tributary lords and governors of provinces who wished to make as much display of their rank and dignity as possible. See *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 184; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 205.

[48] 'Lo que los señores hablaban y la palabra que mas ordinariamente decian al fin de las pláticas y negocios que se les comunicaban, eran decir con muy baja voz *tlaa*, que quiere decir "sí, ó bien, bien."' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 184.

Digitized by Google

obserued, it wil not be wōdred at, that we made mention before concerning so many garments presented. For accounting the yeares, and the dayes of the yeares, especially, wherein Muteczuma hath inioyed peace & howe often he changeth his garments euery daye, all admiration will cease. But the readers will demand, why he heapeth vp so great a pile of garments, & that iustly. Let them knowe that Muteczuma vsed to giue a certeine portion of garments to his familiar friends, or well-deseruing soldiers, in steed of a beneuolence, or stipend, when they go to the wars, or returne from ye victory, as Augustus Cæsar lord of the world, a mightier Prince than Muteczuma, commāded only a poore reward of bread to be giuen ouer & aboue to such as performed any notable exployt, while being by Maro admonished, that so smal a larges of bread was an argumēt y^t he was a bakers son: then although it be recorded in writig that Cæsar liked ye mery cōceit, yet it is to be beleued y^t he blushed at that diuinatiō, because he promised Virgil to alter his dispositiō & that hereafter he would bestow gifts worthy a great king, & not a bakers son."[49]

The kings did not often appear among their people,[50] though we are told that they would sometimes go forth in disguise to see that no part of the religious feasts and ceremonies was omitted, to make sure that the laws were observed, and probably, as is usual in such cases, to ascertain the true state of public opinion with regard to themselves.[51] Whenever they did appear abroad, however, it was with a parade that corresponded with their other observances. Upon these occasions the king was seated in a magnificent litter, overshadowed by a canopy of feather-work, the whole being adorned with gold and precious stones, and carried upon the shoulders of four noblemen. He was

[49] *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv.

[50] Torquemada writes of Montezuma II.: 'Su trato con los Suios, era poco: raras veces se dejaba vèr, y estabase encerrado mucho tiempo, pensando en el Govierno de su Reino.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 205.

[51] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 205.

Digitized by Google

attended by a vast multitude of courtiers of all ranks, who walked without speaking, and with their eyes bent upon the ground. The procession was headed by an official carrying three wands, whose duty it was to give warning of the king's approach, and by others who cleared the road of all obstructions.[52] All who chanced to meet the royal party instantly stopped, and remained motionless with heads bent down, like friars chanting the Gloria Patri, says Father Motolinia, until the procession had passed. When the monarch alighted, a carpet was spread upon the ground for him to step on. The meeting of Montezuma II. and Cortés, as described by Bernal Diaz, will show the manner in which the Aztec kings were attended when out of doors.

"When we arrived at a spot where another narrow causeway led toward Cuyoacan, we were met by a number of caciques and distinguished personages, all splendidly dressed. They had been sent by Montezuma to meet us and welcome us in his name; and as a sign of peace each touched the earth with his hand and then kissed it.[53] While we were thus detained, the lords of Tezcuco, Iztapalapa, Tacuba, and Cuyoacan advanced to meet the mighty Montezuma, who was approaching seated on a splendid litter, and escorted by a number of powerful nobles. When we arrived at a place not far from the capital, where were certain fortifications, Montezuma, descending from his litter, came forward leaning on the arms of some of the attendant lords, while others held over him a canopy of rich feather-work ornamented with silver and gold, having an embroidered border from which hung pearls and chalchihuis stones.[54] Montezuma was very sumptuously dressed, according to his custom, and

[52] Picking up straws, says Las Casas: 'É iban estos oficiales delante quitando las pajas del suelo por finas que fuesen.' *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.

[53] This was the Aztec manner of salutation, and is doubtless what Bernal Diaz means when he writes: 'Y en señal de paz tocauan con la mano en el suelo, y besauan la tierra con la mesma mano.' *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 65.

[54] Green stones, more valued than any other among the Aztecs.

Digitized by Google

had on his feet a kind of sandals, with soles of gold, the upper part being studded with precious stones. The four grandees[55] who supported him were also very richly attired, and it seemed to us that the clothes they now wore must have been held in readiness for them somewhere upon the road, for they were not thus dressed when they first came out to meet us. And besides these great lords there were many others, some of whom held the canopy over the king's head, while others went in advance, sweeping the ground over which he was to walk, and spreading down cotton cloths that his feet might not touch the earth. Excepting only the four nobles upon whose arms he leaned, and who were his near relatives, none of all his followers presumed to look in the king's face, but all kept their eyes lowered to the ground in token of respect."[56]

Besides the host of retainers already mentioned, there were innumerable other officers attached to the royal household, such as butlers, stewards, and cooks of all grades, treasurers, secretaries, scribes, military officers, superintendents of the royal granaries and arsenals, and those employed under them. A great number of artisans was constantly kept busy repairing old buildings and erecting new ones, and a little army of jewellers and workers in precious metals resided permanently at the palace for the purpose of supplying the king and court with the costly ornaments that were eventually such a windfall for the conquerors, and over the description of which they one and all so lovingly linger. Nor was the softer sex unrepresented at court. The Aztec sovereigns were notorious for their uxoriousness. Montezuma II. had in his harem at least one thousand women, and this number is increased by most of the historians to three thousand, including the female attendants and slaves. Of these we are

[55] Cortés himself says that the king was supported by two grandees only; one of whom was his nephew, the king of Tezcuco, and the other his brother, the lord of Iztapalapa. *Cartas*, p. 85.

[56] *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 65.

Digitized by Google

told on good authority that he had one hundred and fifty pregnant at one time, all of whom killed their offspring in the womb;[57] yet notwithstanding this wholesale abortion, he had more than fifty sons and daughters. His father had one hundred and fifty children, of whom Montezuma II. killed all his brothers, and forced his sisters to marry whom he pleased; at least such is the import of Oviedo's statement.[58] Nezahualpilli, of Tezcuco, had between seventy and one hundred children.[59] Camarga tells us that Xicotencatl, one of the chiefs of Tlascala, had a great number of sons by more than fifty wives or concubines.[60] These women were the daughters of the nobles, who thought themselves honored by having a child in the royal harem. Occasionally the monarch presented one of his concubines to some great lord or renowned warrior, a mark of favor which thenceforth distinguised the recipient as a man whom the king delighted to honor. The seraglio was presided over by a number of noble matrons, who kept close watch and ward over the conduct of their charges, and made daily reports to the king, who invariably caused the slightest indiscretion to be severely punished. Whether eunuchs were employed in the Aztec harems is uncertain; this, however, we read in Motolinia: "Moteuczomatzin had in his palace dwarfs and little hunchbacks, who when children were with great ingenuity made crook-backed, ruptured,[61] and disjointed, because the lords in this country made the same use of them as at the present day the Grand Turk does of eunuchs."[62]

[57] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 230; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 107; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ix.; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 67; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 246. Clavigero disbelieves the report that Montezuma had one hundred and fifty women pregnant at once. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 268. Oviedo makes the number of women four thousand. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 505.

[58] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 505.

[59] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 435.

[60] *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 169.

[61] 'Quebraban,' which probably here means 'castrated.'

[62] 'Tenia Moteuczomatzin en su palacio enanos y corcobadillos, que de industria siendo niños los hacian jibosos, y los quebraban y descoyuntaban, porque de estos se servian los señores en esta tierra como ahora hace el Gran

Digitized by Google

The enormous expenditure incurred in the maintenance of such a household as this was defrayed by the people, who, as we shall see in a future chapter, were sorely oppressed by over-taxation. The management of the whole was intrusted to a head steward or major-domo, who, with the help of his secretaries, kept minute hieroglyphic accounts of the royal revenue. Bernal Diaz tells us that a whole apartment was filled with these account-books.[63] In Tezcuco, writes Ixtlilxochitl, the food consumed by the court was supplied by certain districts of the kingdom, in each of which was a gatherer of taxes, who, besides collecting the regular tributes, was obliged to furnish the royal household, in his turn, with a certain quantity of specified articles, for a greater or less number of days, according to the wealth and extent of his department. The daily supply amounted to thirty-one and a quarter bushels of grain; nearly three bushels and three quarters of beans;[64] four hundred thousand ready-made tortillas; four xiquipiles[65] of cocoa, making in all thirty-two thousand cocoa-beans;[66] one hundred cocks of the country;[67] twenty loaves of salt; twenty great baskets of large chiles, and twenty of small chiles; ten baskets of tomatoes, and ten of seed.[68] All this was furnished daily for seventy days by the city of Tezcuco and its suburbs, and by the districts of Atenco and Tepepulco; for sixty-five days by the district of Quauhtlatzinco; and for forty-five days by the districts of Azapocho and Ahuatepec.[69]

Such, as full in detail as it is handed down to us, was

Turco de eunucos.' *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 184–5. Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 298, uses nearly the same words.

[63] *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68.

[64] 'Otros tres Tlacopintlix de frisoles.' The Tlacopintlix was one 'fanega,' and three 'almudes,' or one bushel and a quarter.

[65] 'Xiquipilli, costal, talega, àlforja, o bolsa.' *Molina, Vocabulario.*

[66] 'Treinta y dos mil cacaos,' possibly cocoa-pods instead of cocoa-beans.

[67] 'Cien gallos.' Probably turkeys.

[68] Probably pumpkin or melon seed.

[69] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 241.

Digitized by Google

the manner in which the Aztec monarchs lived. The policy they pursued toward their subjects was to enforce obedience and submission by enacting laws that were calculated rather to excite awe and dread than to inspire love and reverence To this end they kept the people at a distance by surrounding themselves with an impassable barrier of pomp and courtly etiquette, and enforced obedience by enacting laws that made death the penalty of the most trivial offences. There was little in common between king and people; as is ever the case between a despot and his subjects. The good that the kings did by their liberality and love of justice, and the success they nearly all achieved by their courage and generalship, merited the admiration of their subjects. On the other hand, the oppression which they made their vassals feel, the heavy burdens they imposed upon them, their own pride and arrogance, and their excessive severity in punishments, engendered what we should now call a debasing fear, but which is none the less an essential element of progress at certain stages.[70]

[70] Concerning the king's manner of living and the domestic economy of the royal household, see *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 84–5, 109–13; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 66–8; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 286–322; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxi.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 167–8, 205–6, 228–31, 298, tom. ii., p. 435; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 184–5; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii., iv.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 103–4, 107–8; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 507; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 307, 501, 505; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 268–71; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. v., vii., ix., xii.–xiii., dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xiv.; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 189–91; *Ortega*, in *Id.*, pp. 310–17; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 246; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 97, 100–1; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 284, tom. iv., pp. 9–13; *Prescott's Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 121–9; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 362; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., pp. 117–18. Other works of more or less value bearing on this subject are: *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 25–38, 355–7, 359; *Bussiere, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 109, 119–22, 254–5; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 204–7; *Dufey, Résumé*, tom. i., pp. 136–7; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, pp. 83, 93–5; *Ranking's Hist. Researches*, pp. 315–16, 321–3, 342–7, 350; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, p. 136; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 582–4; *Lafond, Voyages*, tom. i., pp. 104–5; *Cooper's Hist. N. Amer.*, pp. 112–13; *Dilworth's Conq. Mex.*, pp. 65–6, 70–1; *Hawks*, in *Hakluyt's Voy.*, vol. iii., p. 469; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 19, 82–3; *Incidents and Sketches*, p. 60; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 63–6, 209–11, 234, 242; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, p. 52; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pp. 123–5.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER V.

THE PRIVILEGED CLASSES AMONG THE NAHUAS.

TITLES OF THE NOBILITY AND GENTRY—THE POWER OF THE NOBLES—THE ARISTOCRACY OF TEZCUCO—THE POLICY OF KING TECHOTLALATZIN—PRIVILEGES OF THE NOBLES—MONTEZUMA'S POLICY—RIVALRY BETWEEN NOBLES AND COMMONS—THE KNIGHTLY ORDER OF TECUHTLI—CEREMONY OF INITIATION—ORIGIN OF THE ORDER—THE NAHUA PRIESTHOOD—THE PRIESTS OF MEXICO—DEDICATION OF CHILDREN—PRIESTESSES—PRIESTHOOD OF MIZTECAPAN—THE PONTIFF OF YOPAA—TRADITION OF WIXIPECOCHA—THE CAVE OF YOPAA—THE ZAPOTEC PRIESTS—TOLTEC PRIESTS—TOTONAC PRIESTS—PRIESTS OF MICHOACAN, PUEBLA, AND TLASCALA.

DESCENDING in due order the social scale of the Aztecs, we now come to the nobility, or, more properly speaking, the privileged classes. The nobles of Mexico, and of the other Nahua nations, were divided into several classes, each having its own peculiar privileges and badges of rank. The distinctions that existed between the various grades, and their titles, are not, however, clearly defined. The title of Tlatoani was the highest and most respected; it signified an absolute and sovereign power, an hereditary and divine right to govern. The kings, and the great feudatory lords who were governors of provinces, and could prove their princely descent and the ancient independence of their families, belonged to this order. The title of Tlatopilzintli was given to the eldest son of the king, and that of Tlatoque to all the princes in

Digitized by Google

general. Tlacahua signified a lord without sovereignty, but who had vassals under his orders, and was, to a certain extent, master of his people. The appellation of Pilli was given to all who were noble, without regard to rank. Axcahua was a rich man, a proprietor of wealth in general, and Tlaquihua, a landed proprietor, or almost the same thing as an English country gentleman.

The title of Tlatoani was invariably hereditary, but many of the others were conferred only for life, as a reward for important military or other services to the state. Of the tenure by which they held their lands, I shall have occasion to speak hereafter.

The power of the nobles, as a body, was very great; according to some accounts, there were, in Montezuma's realms, thirty great lords who each controlled one hundred thousand vassals, and three thousand other lords also very powerful. A number of nobles possessing such formidable power as this would, if permitted to live on their estates, some of which were a long distance from the capital, have been a constantly threatening source of danger to the crown; at any moment an Aztec Runnimede might have been expected. To guard against any such catastrophe, the more powerful nobles were required to reside in the capital, at least during the greater part of each year; and permission to return to their homes for a short time could only be obtained on condition that they left a son or brother as a guaranty of good faith during their absence.[1]

In the kingdom of Tezcuco were twenty-six great fiefs,[2] each independent of the rest and having several fiefs of less importance subjected to it. The greater part of these great chiefs bore the sovereign title of Tlatoani, or a similar one. They recognized no prerogative of the king except his right to preside at

[1] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 231; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 502.

[2] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 88; Veytia, *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 182, makes the number twenty-seven.

Digitized by Google

their grand assemblies, to receive their homage upon his accession to the throne, to levy certain tributes in their provinces, and to call upon them to appear in the field with a contingent of troops in case of war. For the rest, each Tlatoani was perfectly independent in his own domain, which he governed with the same omnipotence as the king of Tezcuco himself. Notwithstanding the precautions taken, it frequently happened that one of these great feudatories would feel himself strong enough to set the authority of the king at defiance, but as their private feuds generally prevented any number of the Tlatoanis from uniting their forces against the crown, the rebels were in most instances speedily reduced to subjection; in which event the leaders either suffered death or were degraded from their rank.

They were an unruly family, these overgrown vassals, and the Aztec monarchs were often at their wit's end in endeavors to conciliate and keep them within bounds. Torquemada tells us that Techotlalatzin, king of Tezcuco, was sorely harassed by the powerful nobles of his realm. He accordingly set about remedying the evil with great prudence and perseverance. His first step was to unite, by strong bonds of interest, the less important nobles to the crown. To this end he heaped favors upon all. The vanity of some he flattered by conferring the dignity and title of Tlatoani upon them, to others he gave wealth and lands. By this means he weakened the individual power of the great vassals by increasing their number, a policy the efficiency of which has been frequently proved in the old world as well as in the new. Techotlalatzin next proceeded to summon them one after another to court, and then, under pretence of being in constant need of their advice, he formed twenty-six of their number into a council of state, obliging them by this means to reside constantly in the capital. With this council he conferred upon all grave and difficult questions, whatever might be their nature. It was the

Digitized by Google

duty of its members to draw up and issue ordinances, both for the general government and for the administration of affairs in particular provinces; and to enact laws for enforcing good order in towns and villages, as well as those relating to agriculture, science and art, military discipline, and the tribunals of justice.

At the same time Techotlalatzin created a large number of new offices and honorary trusts, which were dependent on the crown. Four of the most powerful nobles were invested with the highest dignities. The first, with the title Tetlahto, was made commander-in-chief of the army, and president of the military council. The second was entitled Yolqui; his office was that of grand master of ceremonies; it was his duty to receive and introduce the ambassadors and ministers of foreign princes, to conduct them to court, to lodge them and provide for their comfort, and to offer them the presents appointed by the king. The third lord received the title of Tlami or Calpixcontli; he was master of the royal household, and minister of finance, and was assisted in his functions by a council of other nobles. It was the duty of this body to keep strict account of all taxes paid by the people; its members were required to be well informed as to the exact condition of each town and province, with the nature of its produce, and the fertility of its soil; they had also to distribute the taxes with equality and justice, and in proportion to the resources of the people. The care and management of the interior of the palace was also intrusted to them, and it was their place to provide all the food for the consumption of the royal household. The fourth great officer was styled Amechichi; he acted as grand chamberlain, and attended to the king's private apartments. Like the Tlami, he was assisted by other nobles. A fifth officer was afterward appointed, who bore the title of Cohuatl, and superintended the workers in precious metals, jewels, and feathers, who were employed by

Digitized by Google

the court. At first sight it may appear that such duties as these would be below the dignity of a haughty Aztec grandee, yet we find the nobles of Europe during the middle ages not only filling the same positions, but jealous of their right to do so, and complaining loudly if deprived of them. Sismondi tells us that the count of Anjou, under Louis VI., claimed the office of grand seneschal of France; that is, to carry dishes to the king's table on state days. The court of Charlemagne was crowded with officers of every rank, some of the most eminent of whom exercised functions about the royal person which would have been thought fit only for slaves in the palace of Augustus or Antonine. The free-born Franks saw nothing menial in the titles of cup-bearer, steward, marshal, and master of the horse, which are still borne by some of the noblest families in many parts of Europe.

As soon as habits of submission and an appreciation of the honors showered upon them had taken root among his great vassals, Techotlalatzin subdivided the twenty-six provinces of his kingdom into sixty-five departments. The ancient lords were not by this measure despoiled of all their authority, nor of those estates which were their private property; but the jurisdiction they exercised in person or through their officials was greatly diminished by the nomination of thirty-five new governors, chosen by the king, and of whose fidelity he was well assured. This was a mortal blow to the great aristocrats, and a preliminary step toward the total abolition of feudal power. But the master-stroke was yet to come. The inhabitants of each province were carefully counted and divided into sections. They were then changed about from place to place, in numbers proportioned to the size and population of the territory. For example, from a division containing six thousand people, two thousand were taken and transported into the territory of another lord, from the number of whose vassals two thousand

Digitized by Google

were also taken and placed upon the vacated land in the first lord's possessions; each noble, however, retained his authority over that portion of his vassals which had been removed. By this means, although the number of each lord's subjects remained the same, yet as a large portion of each territory was occupied by the vassals of another, a revolt would be difficult. Nor could two nobles unite their forces against the crown, as care was taken that the interchange of dependents should not be effected between two estates adjoining each other.

These measures, despotic as they were, were nevertheless executed without opposition from either nobles or people—such was the awe in which the sovereign was held, and his complete ascendancy over his subjects.[3]

The privileges of the nobles were numerous. They alone were allowed to wear ornaments of gold and gems upon their clothes, and indeed, in their entire dress, as we shall presently see, they were distinguished from the lower classes. The exact limits of the power they possessed over their vassals is not known, but it was doubtless nearly absolute. Fuenleal, bishop of Santo Domingo, writes to Charles V. of the lower orders, that "they were, and still are, so submissive that they allow themselves to be killed or sold into slavery without complaining."[4] In Mexico their power and privileges were greatly augmented by Montezuma II., who, we are told, ousted every plebeian that held a position of high rank, and would allow none who were not of noble birth to be employed in his palace or about his person. At the time of this monarch's accession there were many members of the royal council who were men of low extraction; all

[3] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 88 et seq.; see also *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., pp. 182 et seq.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 428 et seq.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 353 et seq.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 502; *Herrera*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xii.

[4] *Lettre*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 251.

Digitized by Google

these he dismissed and supplied their places with creatures of his own.

It is related that an old man who had formerly been his guardian or tutor had the boldness to remonstrate with him against such a course; telling him with firmness that he acted contrary to his own interests, and advising him to weigh well the consequences of the measures he was adopting. To banish the plebeians from the palace, added the old man, was to estrange them forever from the king; and the time would come when the common people would no longer either wish or dare to look upon him. Montezuma haughtily made answer that this was precisely what he wished; it was a burning shame, he said, that the low and common people should be allowed to mix with the nobles in the royal service; he was astonished and indignant that his royal predecessors had so long suffered such a state of things to be.[5]

By these measures the services of many brave soldiers, promoted, as a reward for their gallantry, from the ranks of the people, were lost to the crown; nor were such men likely to be slow to show their discontent. The new policy, incited by a proud aristocracy, struck exactly those men who had the best right to a share in the government. It was the officers promoted for their merits from the ranks who had contributed most to the success of the Mexican arms; it was the great merchants who, by their extended commerce, had made the wealth of the country. A spirit of rivalry had long existed between the poor well-born nobles and the wealthy base-born merchants. During many successive reigns the importance of the latter class had been steadily increasing, owing to the valuable services they had rendered the state. From the earliest times they were permitted a certain degree of familiarity with the kings, who took great delight in hearing them recount the wonderful adventures they had met with while on their long

[5] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 196.

Digitized by Google

expeditions into strange parts. Doubtless the royal ear did not always meet the truth unembellished, any more than did that of Haroun Alraschid upon similar occasions, but probably the monarchs learned many little secrets in this way that they could never know by other means. Afterward these merchants were admitted to the royal councils, and during the latter years of the reign of Ahuitzotl we find them enjoying many of the exclusive privileges hitherto reserved to the warrior aristocracy.

The merchants appear to have partly brought upon themselves the misfortunes which subsequently overtook them, by aggravating the envious feelings with which they were already regarded. Not content with being admitted to equal privileges with the nobles, and vexed at not being able to vie with them in brilliant titles and long lines of illustrious ancestry, they did their utmost to surpass them in the magnificence of their houses, and in the pomp which they displayed upon every occasion. At the public feasts and ceremonies, these parvenus outshone the proudest nobles by the profuseness of their expenditure; they strove for and obtained honors and exalted positions which the aristocracy could not accept for lack of wealth; they were sparing of money in no place where it could be used for their own advancement. It is easy to conceive the effect such a state of things had on the proud and overbearing nobles of Mexico. On several occasions they complained to their kings that their order was losing its prestige by being obliged to mix on equal terms with the plebeians; but the services that the great commercial body rendered every day to the crown were too material to allow the kings to listen patiently to such complaints. During the reign of Ahuitzotl, the pride of the merchants had reached its zenith; it is not therefore surprising that the leaders of the aristocratic party, when that monarch was dead, elected as his successor Montezuma II., a prince well known for his partiality for the higher classes. His

Digitized by Google

policy, as events proved, was a far less wise one than that of Techotlalatzin of Tezcuco, of which we have already spoken. By not restraining his overweening pride he prepared the way for disaffection and revolt; he furnished his enemies with weapons which they were not slow to use; he alienated the affections of his subjects, so that when aid was most needed there was none to help him, and when, fettered and a prisoner in the hand of the Spaniards, he called upon his people, the only replies were hoots and missiles.

The generals of the army and military officers of the higher ranks must of course be included among the privileged classes; usually, indeed, they were noble by birth as well as influential by position, and in Mexico, from the time of Montezuma's innovations, this was always the case. There were several military orders and titles which were bestowed upon distinguished soldiers for services in the field or the council. Of those which were purely the reward of merit, and such as could be attained by a plebeian, I shall speak in a future chapter. There was one, however, the membership of which was confined to the nobility; this was the celebrated and knightly order of the Tecuhtli.

To obtain this rank it was necessary to be of noble birth, to have given proof in several battles of the utmost courage, to have arrived at a certain age, and to have sufficient wealth to support the enormous expenses incurred by members of the order.

For three years before he was admitted, the candidate and his parents busied themselves about making ready for the grand ceremony, and collecting rich garments, jewels, and golden ornaments, for presents to the guests. When the time approached, the auguries were consulted, and a lucky day having been fixed upon, the relations and friends of the candidate, as well as all the great nobles and Tecuhtlis that could be brought together, were invited to a sumptuous banquet. On the morning of the all-important day

Digitized by Google

the company set out in a body for the temple of Camaxtli,[6] followed by a multitude of curious spectators, chiefly of the lower orders, intent upon seeing all there is to see. Arrived at the summit of the pyramid consecrated to Camaxtli, the aspirant to knightly honors bows down reverently before the altar of the god. The high-priest now approaches him, and with a pointed tiger's bone or an eagle's claw perforates the cartilage of his nose in two places, inserting into the holes thus made small pieces of jet or obsidian,[7] which remain there until the year of probation is passed, when they are exchanged for beads of gold and precious stones. This piercing the nose with an eagle's claw or a tiger's bone signifies, says Torquemada, that he who aspires to the dignity of Tecuhtli must be as swift to overtake an enemy as the eagle, as strong in fight as the tiger. The high-priest, speaking in a loud voice, now begins to heap insults and injurious epithets upon the man standing meekly before him. His voice grows louder and louder; he brandishes his arms aloft, he waxes furious. The assistant priests are catching his mood; they gather closer about the object of the pontiff's wrath; they jostle him, they point their fingers sneeringly at him, and call him coward. For a moment the dark eyes of the victim gleam savagely, his hands close involuntarily, he seems about to spring upon his tormentors; then with an effort he calms himself and is passive as ever. That look made the taunters draw back, but it was only for a moment: they are upon him again; they know now that he is strong to endure, and they will prove him to the uttermost. Screaming insults in his ears, they tear his garments piece by piece from his body until nothing but the maxtli is left, and the man

[6] Camaxtli was the Tlascaltec god of war, corresponding with and probably the same as the Mexican Huitzilopochtli. The order of Tecuhtli being held in higher esteem in Tlascala than elsewhere, the ceremony of initiation is generally described as it took place in that state.

[7] 'Unas piedras chequitas de piedra negra, y creo eran de la piedra de que hacen las navajas.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvii.

Digitized by Google

stands bruised and naked in their midst. But all is useless, their victim is immovable, so at length they leave him in peace. He has passed safely through one of the severest ordeals of the day, but that fierce look a while ago was a narrow escape; had he lifted a finger in resistance, he must have gone down from the temple to be scorned and jeered at by the crowd below as one who had aspired to the dignity of Tecuhtli, yet who could restrain his temper no better than a woman. The long months of careful preparation would have been all in vain, his parents would have spat upon him for vexation and shame, perchance he would have been punished for sacrilege. But he is by no means a member of the coveted order yet. He is next conducted to another hall of the temple,[8] where he commences his noviciate, which is to last from one to two years, by four days of penance, prayer, and fasting. As soon as he is conducted to this hall the banquet which has been prepared for the guests commences, and after a few hours of conviviality each returns to his home.

During these first four days the candidate's powers of endurance are sorely taxed. The only articles of furniture allowed him are a coarse mat and a low stool; his garments are of the coarsest description. When night comes, the priests bring him a black preparation with which to besmear his face, some spines of the maguey plant to draw blood from his body with, a censer, and some incense. His only companions are three veteran warriors, who instruct him in his duties and keep him awake, for during the four days he is only allowed to sleep for a few minutes at a time, and then it must be sitting upon his stool. If, overcome by drowsiness, he exceed this time, his guardians thrust the maguey

[8] 'Se iba à vna de las Salas, ò Aposentos de los Ministros que servian al Demonio, que se llamaba Tlamacazcalco.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 362. It seems unlikely, however, that the candidate would be taken to another temple at this juncture. Brasseur explains the name of the hall to which he was taken as 'le Lieu des habitations des Ministres, prêtres de Camaxtli.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 587.

Digitized by Google

thorns into his flesh, crying: Awake, awake! learn to be vigilant and watchful; keep your eyes open that you may look to the interests of your vassals. At midnight he goes to burn incense before the idol, and to draw blood from different parts of his body as a sacrifice. He then walks round the temple, and as he goes he burns paper and copal in four holes in the ground, which he makes at the four sides of the building, facing the cardinal points; upon each of these fires he lets fall a few drops of blood drawn from his body. These ceremonies he repeats at dawn and sunset. He breaks his fast only once in twenty-four hours, at midnight; and then his repast consists merely of four little dumplings of maize-meal, each about the size of a nut, and a small quantity of water; but even this he leaves untasted if he wishes to evince extraordinary powers of endurance. The four days having elapsed, he obtains permission from the high-priest to complete his time of probation in some temple of his own district or parish; but he is not allowed to go home, nor, if married, to see his wife during this period.

For two or three months preceding his formal admission into the order, the home of the postulant is in a bustle of preparation for the coming ceremony. A grand display is made of rich stuffs and dresses, and costly jewels, for the use of the new knight when he shall cast off his present chrysalis husk of coarse nequen and emerge a full-blown Tecuhtli. A great number of presents are provided for the guests; a sumptuous banquet is prepared, and the whole house is decorated for the occasion. The oracles are again consulted, and upon the lucky day appointed the company assemble once more at the house of the candidate, in the same manner as at the commencement of his novitiate. In the morning the new knight is conducted to a bath, and after having undergone a good scrubbing, he is again carried, in the midst of music and dancing, to the temple of Camaxtli. Accompa-

Digitized by Google

nied by his brother Tecuhtlis, he ascends the steps of the teocalli. After he has respectfully saluted the idol, the mean garments he has worn so long are taken off, and his hair is bound up in a knot on the top of his head with a red cord, from the ends of which hang some fine feathers; he is next clad in garments of rich and fine materials, the principal of which is a kind of tunic, ornamented with a delicately embroidered device, which is the insignia of his new rank; in his right hand he receives some arrows and in his left a bow. The high-priest completes the ceremony with a discourse, in which he instructs the new knight in his duties, tells him the names which he is to add to his own, as a member of the order; describes to him the signs and devices which he must emblazon on his escutcheon, and impresses upon his memory the advantages of being liberal and just, of loving his country and his gods. As soon as the newly made Tecuhtli has descended into the court of the temple, the music and dancing recommence, and are kept up until it is time to begin the banquet. This is served with great magnificence and liberality, and, to the guests at least, is probably the most interesting feature of the day. In front of each person at table are placed the presents inteded for him, consisting of costly stuffs and ornaments in such quantity that each bundle was carried with difficulty by two slaves; each guest is also given a new garment, which he wears at table.

The value of the gifts was proportioned to the rank of the receiver, and such distinctions must be made with great care, for the Aztec nobility were very jealous of their rights of precedence. The places of such nobles as had been invited to the feast but were, from illness or other cause, unable to attend were left vacant, and their share of presents and food was placed upon the table exactly as if they had been present; Torquemada tells us, moreover, that the same courtesy was extended to the empty seat as to the actual

Digitized by Google

guest.[9] Upon these occasions the absent noble generally sent a substitute, whose seat was placed next to that of the person he represented. On the following day the servants and followers of the guests were feasted and presented with gifts, according to the means and liberality of the donor.

The privileges of the Tecuhtlis were important and numerous. In council they took the first places, and their votes outweighed all others; in the same manner at all feasts and ceremonies, in peace or in war, they were always granted preëminence. As before remarked, the vast expenses entailed upon a Tecuhtli debarred the honor from many who were really worthy of it. In some instances, however, when a noble had greatly distinguished himself in war, but was too poor to bear the expenses of initiation, these were defrayed by the governor of his province, or by the other Tecuhtlis.[10]

The origin of the order of Tecuhtli is not known. Both the Toltecs and the Tlascaltecs claim to have established it. Veytia, however, asserts that this was not the case, but that it was first instituted by Xolotl, king of the Chichimecs.[11] M. l'Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg infers from ancient Toltec history that the ceremony of initiation and the probation of the candidate derive their origin from the mysterious rites of which traces are still found among the nations of Mexico and Central America. The traditions relating to Votan and Quetzalcoatl, or Gucumatz, evidently allude to it. The birth of Ceacatl-Quetzalcoatl is celebrated by his father, Mixcohua-Camaxtli, at Culhuacan, with great rejoicings and the creation of a great

[9] 'Y à las Sillas solas que representaban las Personas ausentes, hacian tanta cortesia, y le captaban Benevolencia, como si realmente estuvieran presentes los Señores que faltaban.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 364.

[10] Concerning the ceremony of initiation, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 361–6; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvii.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 306–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 120–1; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 147–9.

[11] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., pp. 58–60.

Digitized by Google

number of knights; it is these same knights who are afterward sent to avenge his death upon his assassins at Cuitlahuac, a town which appears, since that time, to have been always the principal place of residence of the order. After the separation of Cholula from the rest of the Toltec empire by Ceacatl-Quetzalcoatl, that town, together with Huexotzinco and Tlascala, appears to have had special privileges in this particular. It is in these places that after the conquest of the Aztec plateau by the Teo-Chichimecs, we find most of their chiefs bearing the title of Tecuhtli; it may be that the priests were forced into confirming their warlike conquerors in the honor, or it may be that they did so voluntarily, hoping by this means to submit the warriors to their spiritual power. This, however, is certain, that the rank of Tecuhtli remained to the last the highest honor that a prince or soldier could acquire in the states of Tlascala, Cholula, and Huexotzinco.[12]

The priesthood filled a very important place among the privileged classes, but as a succeeding volume has been set apart for all matters relating to religion, I will confine myself here to such an outline of the sacerdotal system as is necessary to make our view of Aztec social distinctions complete. The learned abbé, M. Brasseur de Bourbourg, gives us a very correct and concise account of the Mexican priesthood, a partial translation of which will answer the present purpose.

Among the nations of Mexico and Central America, whose civilization is identical, the priesthood always occupied a high rank in the state, and up to the last moment its members continued to exercise a powerful influence in both public and private affairs. In Anáhuac the priestly offices do not appear to have been appropriated exclusively by an hereditary caste; all had an equal right to fill them, with the exception of the offices about the temple of Huitzilopochtli, at Mexico, which were granted to some families dwelling

[12] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 586.

Digitized by Google

in certain quarters of that city.[13] The ministers of the various temples, to be fitted for an ecclesiastical career, must be graduates of the Calmecac, colleges or seminaries to which they had been sent by their parents in their infancy. The dignities of their order were conferred by vote; but it is evident that the priests of noble birth obtained almost invariably the highest honors. The quarrels between the priest and warrior classes, which in former times had brought so much harm to the Mexican nation, had taught the kings to do their best to effect a balance of power between the rival bodies; to this end they appropriated to themselves the privilege of electing priests, and placed at the head of the clergy a priest or a warrior of high rank, as they saw fit; this could be all the more easily done, as both classes received the same education in the same schools.

The august title of Topiltzin, which in ancient times expressed the supreme military and priestly power, came to mean, in after years, a purely ecclesiastical authority. In Tezcuco and Tlacopan, where the crown was inherited in a direct line by one of the sons of the deceased monarch, the supreme pontiff was usually selected from among the members of the royal family; but in Mexico, where it involved, almost always, the duties of Tlacochcalcatl, or commander-in-chief of the army, and, eventually, succession to the throne, the office of high-priest, like that of king, was elective. The election of the spiritual king, for so we may call him, generally followed close upon that of the temporal monarch, and such was the honor in which the former was held, that he was consecrated with the same sacred unguent with which the king was anointed. In this manner Axayacatl, Montezuma II., and Quauhtemoc were each made pontiff before the royal crown was placed upon their head. The title of him who held this dignity was Mexicatl-Teohuatzin, that is to say, the 'Mexican lord of sacred things;' he

[13] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xv.

Digitized by Google

added also, besides a great number of other titles, that of Teotecuhtli, or 'divine master,' and he was, by right, high-priest of Huitzilopochtli; he was the 'head of the church,' and of all its branches, not only at Mexico, but in all the provinces of the Mexican empire; he had absolute authority over all priests, of whatever rank, and the colleges and monasteries of every class were under his control. He was elected by the two dignitaries ranking next to himself in the sacerdotal hierachy. The Mexicatl-Teohuatzin was looked upon as the right arm of the king, particularly in all matters of war and religion, and it rarely happened that any important enterprise was set on foot without his advice. At the same time it is evident that the high-priest was, after all, only the vicar and lieutenant of the king, for on certain solemn occasions the monarch himself performed the functions of grand sacrificer.

The Quetzalcoatl, that is, the high-priest of the god of that name, was almost equal in rank to the Mexicatl-Teohuatzin; but his political influence was far inferior. The ordinary title of the priests was Teopixqui, or 'sacred guardian;' those who were clothed with a higher dignity were called Huey-Teopixqui, or 'great sacred guardian.' The Huitznahuac-Teohuatzin and the Tepan-Teohuatzin followed, in priestly rank, the high-priest of Huitzilopochtli; they were his vicars, and superintended the colleges and monasteries in every part of his kingdom. The Tlaquimilol-Tecuhtli, or 'grand master of relics,'[14] took charge of the ornaments, furniture, and other articles specially relating to worship. The Tlillancalcatl, or 'chief of the house of Tlillan,' exercised the functions of principal sacristan; he took care of the robes and utensils used by the high-priest. The choristers were under the orders of the Ometochtli, the high-priest of the god so named, who had, as director of the singing-

[14] The Tlaquimilloli, from whence the title is derived, was a sacred package or bundle, containing relics of gods and heroes.

Digitized by Google

schools, an assistant styled Tlapitzcatzin; it was this latter officer's duty to instruct his pupils in the hymns which were chanted at the principal solemnities. The Tlamacazcatlotl, or 'divine minister,' overlooked the studies in the schools; another priest discharged the duties of grand master of the pontifical ceremonies; another was archdeacon and judge of the ecclesiastical courts; the latter had power to employ and discharge the attendants in the temples; besides these there was a crowd of other dignitaries, following each other rank below rank in perfect order.

In Mexico and the other towns of the empire, there were as many complete sets of priests as there were temples. Besides the seventy-eight sanctuaries dedicated to Huitzilopochtli, which were in part directed by the priests we have already enumerated, the capital contained many others. Each had jurisdiction in its own section, which corresponded to our parish; the priests and their pupils dwelling in a school or college which adjoined the temple.

It was the province of the priests to attend to all matters relating to religion and the instruction of youth. Some took charge of the sacrifices, others were skilled in the art of divination; certain of them were intrusted with the arrangement of the festivals and the care of the temple and sacred vessels, others applied themselves to the composition of hymns and attended to the singing and music. The priests who were learned in science superintended the schools and colleges, made the calculations for the annual calendar, and fixed the feast-days; those who possessed literary talent compiled the historical works, and collected material for the libraries. To each temple was attached a monastery, or we might call it a chapter, the members of which enjoyed privileges similar to those of our canons.

The Tlamacazqui, 'deacons' or 'ministers,' and the Quaquacuiltin, 'herb-eaters,' were those who dedicated themselves to the service of the gods for life.

Digitized by Google

They led a very ascetic life; continence was strictly imposed upon them, and they mortified the flesh by deeds of penance in imitation of Quetzalcoatl, who was their patron deity. The name of Tlamacazcayotl, signifying 'government of the religious,' was given to these orders, and they had monasteries for the reception of both sexes. The high-priest of the god Quetzalcoatl was their supreme lord; he was a man of great authority, and never deigned to put his foot out of doors unless it was to confer with the king. When a father of a family wished to dedicate one of his children to the service of Quetzalcoatl, he with great humility advised the high-priest of his intention. That dignitary deputed a Tlamacazqui to represent him at the feast which was given in his honor, and to bring away the child. If at this time the infant was under four years of age, a slight incision was made on his chest, and a few drops of blood were drawn as a token of his future position. Four years was the age requisite for admission into the monastery. Some remained there until they were of an age to enter the world, some dedicated their whole lives to the service of the gods; others vowed themselves to perpetual continence. All were poorly clothed, wore their hair long, lived upon coarse and scanty fare, and did all kinds of work At midnight they arose and went to the bath; after washing, they drew blood from their bodies with spines of the maguey plant; then they watched and chanted praises of the gods until two in the morning. Notwithstanding this austerity, however, these monks could betake themselves alone to the woods, or wander through the mountains and deserts, there in solitude to spend the time in holy contemplation.

Females were consecrated to the service of the gods in several ways. When a girl was forty days old, the father carried her to the neighboring temple; he placed in her little hands a broom and a censer, and thus presented her to the Teopixqui, or priest, who by

Digitized by Google

accepting these symbols of his future state, bound himself to perform his part of the engagement. As soon as the little one was able to do so in person, she carried a broom and a censer to the temple, with some presents for the priest; at the required age she entered the monastery. Some of the girls took an oath of perpetual continence; others, on account of some vow which they had made during sickness, or that the gods might send them a good husband, entered the monastery for one, two, three, or four years. They were called Cihautlamacasque, 'deaconesses,' or Cihuaquaquilli, 'eaters of vegetables.' They were under the surveillance of a number of staid matrons of good character; upon entering the monastery each girl had her hair cut short.[15] They all slept in one dormitory, and were not allowed to disrobe before retiring to rest, in order that they might always be ready when the signal was given to rise. They occupied themselves with the usual labors of their sex; weaving and embroidering the tapestry and ornamental work for the temple. Three times during the night they rose to renew the incense in the braziers, at ten o'clock, at midnight, and at dawn.[16] On these occasions a matron led the procession; with eyes modestly bent upon the ground, and without daring to cast a glance to one side or the other, the maidens filed up one side of the temple, while the priests did the same on the other. so that all met before the altar. In returning to the dormitory the same order was observed. They spent part of the morning in preparing bread and confectionery, which they placed, while warm, in the temple, where the priests partook of it after sacrifice.[17]

[15] Clavigero asserts that the hair of such only as entered the service on account of some private vow was cut.

[16] Clavigero says that only a part of them rose upon each occasion. 'S'alzavano alcune due ore incirca innanzi alla mezza notte, altre alla mezza notte, ed altre allo spuntar del di per attizzar, e mantener vivo il fuoco, e per incensare gl'Idoli.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 42.

[17] 'Elles passaient une partie de la matinée a preparer le pain en galette et les pâtisseries qu'elles présentaient, toutes chaudes, dans le temple, où les prêtres allaient les prendre apres l'oblation.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*,

Digitized by Google

The young women, for their part, fasted strictly; they first broke their fast at noon, and with the exception of a scanty meal in the evening, this was all they ate during the twenty-four hours. On feast-days they were permitted to taste meat, but at all other times their diet was extremely meagre. While sweeping the temple they took great care never to turn their back to the idol, lest the god should be insulted.

If one of these young women unhappily violated her vows of chastity, she redoubled her fasting and severity, in the fear that her flesh would rot, and in order to appease the gods and induce them to conceal her crime, for death was the punishment inflicted on the Mexican vestal who was convicted of such a trespass. The maiden who entered the service of the gods for a certain period only, and not for life, did not usually leave the monastery until she was about to be married. At that time the parents, having chosen a husband for the girl, and gotten everything in readiness, repaired to the monastery, taking care first to provide themselves with quails, copal, hollow canes filled with perfume, which Torquemada says they called *poquietl*, a brazier for incense, and some flowers. The girl was then clothed in a new dress, and the party went up to the temple; the altar was covered with a cloth upon which were placed the presents they had brought with them, accompanied by sundry dishes of meats and pastry. A complimentary speech was next made by the parents to the Tequaquilli, or chief priest of the temple, and when this was concluded the girl was taken away to her father's house. But of those young men and maidens who stayed in the temple-schools for a time only, and received a regular course of instruction at the hands of the priests, it is my intention to speak further when treating of the education of the Mexican youth. The

Hist. Nat. Civ., tom. iii., p. 556. Clavigero says they prepared the offering of provisions which was presented to the idols: 'Tutte le mattine praparavano l'obblazioni di commestibili da presentarsi agl'Idoli.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 42

Digitized by Google

original accounts are rather confused on this point, so that it is difficult to separate with accuracy those who entered with the intention of becoming permanent priests from those who were merely temporary scholars.

The ordinary dress of the Mexican priests differed little from that of other citizens; the only distinctive feature being a black cotton mantle, which they wore in the manner of a veil thrown back upon the head. Those, however, who professed a more austere life, such as the Quaquaquiltin and Tlamacazqui before mentioned, wore long black robes; many among them never cut their hair, but allowed it to grow as long as it would; it was twisted with thick cotton cords, and bedaubed with unctuous matter, the whole forming a weighty mass, as inconvenient to carry as it was disgusting to look at. The high-priest usually wore, as a badge of his rank, a kind of fringe which hung down over his breast, called Xicolli; on feast-days he was clothed in a long robe, over which he wore a sort of chasuble, or cope, which varied in color, shape, and ornamentation according to the sacrifices he made and the divinity to which he offered them.[18]

Among the Miztecs and Zapotecs the priests had as much or even more influence than among the Mexicans. In briefly reviewing the sacerdotal system of these nations, let us once more take M. Brasseur de Bourbourg for our guide.

The kingdom of Tilantongo, which comprised upper Miztecapan, was spiritually governed by the high-priest of Achiuhtla; he had the title of Taysacaa,[19]

[18] Clavigero writes: 'L'insegna de' Sommi Sacerdoti di Messico era un fiocco, o nappa di cotone pendente dal petto, e nelle feste principali vestivansi abiti sfarzosi, ne' quali vedevansi figurate le insegne di quel Dio, la cui festa celebravano.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 38. The most important works that can be consulted concerning the Mexican priesthood are *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 549–59; from which I have principally taken my account; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 163–5, 175–91; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, caps. cxxxiii., cxxxix., cxl.; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 112 et seq., 218–23, lib. iii., pp. 276–7; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 323–5; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 335–42; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xv.–xvii; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 36 et seq.

[19] This is the title given by the Spanish authors; it is probably derived

Digitized by Google

and his power equalled, if it did not surpass, that of the sovereign. This office, it appears, was reserved for the royal family, and was transmitted from male to male; a member of any free family could, however, become a sacaa, or simple priest. All, even to the successor of the Taysacaa, had to submit to a vigorous novitiate of one year's duration, and to this rule no exceptions were made. Up to the time of commencing his novitiate, and for four years after it was ended, the candidate for the priesthood was supposed to have led a perfectly chaste life, otherwise he was judged unworthy to be admitted into the order. His only food during the year of probation was herbs, wild honey, and roasted maize; his life was passed in silence and retirement, and the monotony of his existence was only relieved by waiting on the priests, taking care of the altars, sweeping the temple, and gathering wood for the fires.

When four years after his admission to the priesthood had elapsed, during which time he seems to have served a sort of apprenticeship, he was permitted to marry if he saw fit, and at the same time to perform his priestly functions. If he did not marry he entered one of the monasteries which were dependent on the temples, and while performing his regular duties, increased the austerity of his life. Those priests who were intrusted with the higher and more important offices, such as the instruction of youth or a seat in the royal council, were selected from the latter class. The king, or the nobles, each in his own state, provided for their wants, and certain women, sworn to chastity, prepared their food. They never left the monastry except on special occasions, to assist at some feast, to play at ball in the court of their sovereign lord, to go on a pilgrimage for the accomplishment of a vow made by the king or by themselves, or to take their place at the head of the army, which, on

from *tay*, a man, and *sacaa*, a priest. *Vocabul. en lengua Mixteca, etc.*, according to *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 17, note.

Digitized by Google

certain occasions, they commanded. If one of these monks fell sick, he was well cared for in the monastery; if he died, he was interred in the court of the building. If one of them violated his vow of chastity, he was bastinadoed to death.

In Zapotecapan the supreme pontiff was called the Wiyatao;[20] his residence was in the city of Yopaa,[21] and there he was from time immemorial spiritual and temporal lord, though indeed he made his temporal power felt more or less throughout the whole kingdom; and he appears in the earliest history of this country as master and lord of both the princes and the people of those nations who acknowledged him as the supreme head of their religion. The origin of the city of Yopaa is not known; it was situated on the slope of Mount Teutitlan,[22] which in this place formed a valley, shut in by overshadowing rocks, and watered by a stream which lower down flowed into the river Xalatlaco. The original inhabitants of this region were the disciples and followers of a mysterious, white-skinned personage named Wixipecocha. What race he belonged to, or from what land he came when he presented himself to the Zapotecs, is not known; a certain vague tradition relates that he came by sea from the south, bearing a cross in his hand, and debarked in the neighborhood of Tehuantepec;[23] a statue representing him is still to be seen on a high rock near the village of Magdalena. He is described as a man of a venerable aspect, having a bushy white beard, dressed in a long robe and a cloak, and wearing a covering upon his head resembling a monk's

[20] Wiyatao, Burgoa writes *huijatoo*, and translates 'great watchman;' the Zapotec vocabulary translates it by the word *papa*, or priest.

[21] Yopaa, Burgoa also writes Lyobaa and Yobaa; it signifies the Place of Tombs, from *Yo*, place or ground, and *paa*, tomb, in the Zapotec tongue, 'the centre of rest.'

[22] Teutitlan was its name in the Nahuatl language. Its Zapotecan name was Xaquiya.

[23] *Rasgos y señales de la primera predicacion en el Nuevo-Mundo*, MS. de Don Isidro Gondra; *Carriedo, Estudios históricos y estadísticos del Estado Oaxaqueño*, Mexico, 1850, tom. i., cap. i.; quoted in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 9.

Digitized by Google

cowl. The statue represents him seated in a pensive attitude, apparently occupied in hearing the confession of a woman who kneels by his side.[24] His voice, to accord with his appearance, must have been of remarkable sweetness. Wixipecocha taught his disciples to deny themselves the vanities of this world, to mortify the flesh with penance and fasting, and to abstain from all sensual pleasures. Adding example to precept, he utterly abjured female society, and suffered no woman to approach him except in the act of auricular confession, which formed part of his doctrine.[25] This extraordinary conduct caused him to be much respected; especially as it was an unheard-of thing among these people for a man to devote his life to celibacy. Nevertheless, he was frequently persecuted by those whose vices and superstitions he attacked. Passing through one province after another he at length arrived in the Zapotec valley, a large portion of which was at that time occupied by a lake named Rualo. Afterward, being entered into the country of the Miztecs, to labor for their conversion, the people sought to take his life. Those who were sent to take him prisoner overtook him at the foot of Cempoaltepec, the most lofty peak in the country; but at the moment they thought to lay hands upon him, he disappeared suddenly from their sight, and soon afterward, adds the tradition, his figure was seen standing on the summit of the highest peak of the mountain. Filled with astonishment, his persecutors hastened to scale the rocky height. When after great labor they arrived at the point where they had seen the figure, Wixipecocha appeared to them again for a moment, then as suddenly vanished, leaving no traces of his presence save the imprints of his feet deeply impressed upon the rock where he had stood.[26] Since

[24] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., cap. lxxii.

[25] *Rasgos y señales de la primera predicacion en el Nuevo-Mundo*, MS. de Don Isidro Gondra; quoted in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 10.

[26] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., cap. lxxii.

Digitized by Google

then we do not know that Wixipecocha reappeared in the ordinary world, though tradition relates that he afterwards showed himself in the enchanted island of Monapostiac, near Tehuantepec, whither he probably went for the purpose of obtaining new proselytes. In spite of the silence which history maintains concerning the time of his advent and the disciples which he left behind him, there can be no doubt that the priests of Yopaa did not continue to promulgate his doctrines, or that the Wiyatao, the supreme pontiff in Zapotecapan, was not there as the vicar and successor of the prophet of Monapostiac. Like the ancient Brahmans of Hindustan, the first disciples of Wixipecocha celebrated the rites of their religion in a deep cave, which M. de Bourbourg thinks was most probably hollowed out in the side of the mountain by the waters of the flood. This was afterward used as a place of worship by the Wiyataos, who, as the number of their proselytes increased, brought art to the aid of nature, and under the hands of able architects the cave of Yopaa was soon turned into a temple, having halls, galleries, and numerous apartments all cut in the solid rock. It was into the gloomy recesses of this temple that the priests descended on solemn feast-days to assist at those mysterious sacrifices which were sacred from the profane gaze of the vulgar, or to take part in the burial rites at the death of a king.[27]

The classes of religious men were as numerous and their names and duties as varied among the Zapotecs as elsewhere. A certain order of priests who made the interpreting of dreams their special province were called Colanii Cobee Pécala. Each form of divination was made a special study. Some professed to foretell the future by the aid of stars, earth, wind, fire, or water; others, by the flight of birds, the entrails of sacrificial victims, or by magic signs and circles. Among other divinities a species of parroquet, with

[27] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., cap. liii.

Digitized by Google

flaming plumage, called the *ara*,[28] was worshipped in some districts. In this bird a god was incarnate, who was said to have descended from the sky like a meteor. There were among the Zapotecs hermits or fakirs, who passed their entire lives in religious ecstasy and meditation, shut up in dark caves or rude huts, with no other companion but an ara, which they fed respectfully upon a species of altar; in honor of the bird they lacerated their flesh and drew blood from their bodies; upon their knees they kissed it morning and evening, and offered it with their prayers sacrifices of flowers and copal.

Priests of a lower order were styled Wiyana and Wizaechi, and the monks Copapitas. The influence which they were supposed to have with the gods, and the care which they took to keep their number constantly recruited with scions of the most illustrious families, gained them great authority among the people. No noble was so great but he would be honored by having a son in the temple. They added, also, to the credit of their profession by the strict propriety of their manners, and the excessive rigor with which they guarded their chastity. Parents who wished to consecrate one of their children to the service of the gods, led him, while still an infant, to the chief priest of the district, who after carefully catechising the little one, delivered him over to the charge of the master of the novices. Besides the care of the sanctuary, which fell to their lot, these children were taught singing, the history of their country, and such sciences as were within their comprehension.

These religious bodies were looked upon with much respect. Their members were taught to bear themselves properly at home and in the street, and to preserve a modest and humble demeanor. The least infraction of the rules was severely punished; a glance or a sign which might be construed into a carnal de-

[28] So called from the cry of *ara, ara*, which it constantly repeats.

Digitized by Google

sire was punished as criminal, and those who showed by their actions a strong disposition to violate their vow of chastity were relentlessly castrated.

The Wiyanas were divided into several orders, but all were ruled in the most absolute manner by the pontiff of Yopaa. I have already spoken of the veneration in which this spiritual monarch was held, and of the manner in which he surmounted the difficulty of having children to inherit the pontifical chair, when continence was strictly imposed upon him.[29]

The ordinary dress of the Zapotec priests was a full white robe, with openings to pass the arms through, but no sleeves, this was girt at the waist with a colored cord. During the ceremony of sacrifice, and on feast-days, the Wiyatao wore, over all, a kind of tunic, with full sleeves, adorned with tassels, and embroidered in various colors with representations of birds and animals. On his head he wore a mitre of feather-work, ornamented with a very rich crown of gold; his neck, arms, and wrists were laden with costly necklaces and bracelets; upon his feet were golden sandals, bound to his legs with cords of gold and bright colored thread.[30]

The Toltec sacerdotal system so closely resembled the Mexican already described that it needs no further description in this volume. Their priests wore a long

[29] See this vol., pp. 142–4.

[30] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., cap., liii. Of the Miztec high-priest Torquemeda writes: 'Se vestia, para celebrar sus Fiestas, de Pontifical, de esta manera. Unas Mantas mui variadas de colores, matiçadas, y pintadas de Historias acaecidas à algunos de sus Dioses poniase vnas como Camisas, ò Roquetes, sin mangas (à diferencia de los Mexicanos) que llegaban mas abajo de la rodilla, y en las piernas vnas como antiparas, que le cubrian la pantorrilla; y era esto casi comun à todos los Sacerdotes Sumos, y calçado con que adornaban las Estatuas de los Dioses; y en el braço izquierdo, vn pedaço de manta labrada, à manera de liston, como suelen atarse algunos al braço, quando salen à Fiestas, ò Cañas, con vna borla asida de ella, que parecia manipulo. Vestia encima de todo vna Capa, como la nuestra de Coro, con vna borla colgando à las espaldas, y vna gran Mitra en la cabeça, hecha de plumas verdes, con mucho artificio, y toda sembrada, y labrada de los mas principales Dioses, que tenian. Quando bailaban, en otras ocasiones, y patios de los Templos (que era el modo ordinario de cantar sus Horas, y reçar su Oficio) se vestian de ropa blanca pintada, y vnas ropetas, como camisetas de Galeote.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom., ii, p. 217.

Digitized by Google

black robe reaching to the ground; their heads were covered with a hood, and their hair fell down over their shoulders and was braided. They rarely put sandals on their feet, except when about to start on a long journey.[31] Among the Totonacs six great ecclesiastics were elected, one as high-priest, one next to him in rank, and so on with the other four. When the high-priest died, the second priest succeeded him. He was anointed and consecrated with great ceremony; the unction used upon the occasion was a mixture of a fluid called in the Totonac tongue *ole*, and blood drawn at the circumcision of children.[32] There existed also among these people an order of monks devoted to their goddess Centeotl. They lived a very austere and retired life, and their character, according to the Totonac standard, was irreproachable. None but men above sixty years of age, who were widowers of virtuous life and estranged from the society of women, were admitted into this order. Their number was fixed, and when one of them died another was received in his stead. They were so much respected that they were not only consulted by the common people, but likewise by the great nobles and the high-priest. They listened to those who consulted them, sitting upon their heels, with their eyes fixed upon the ground, and their answers were received as oracles even by the kings of Mexico. They were employed in making historical paintings, which they gave to the high-priest that he might exhibit them to the people The common Totonac priests wore long black cotton robes with hoods; their hair was braided like the other common priests of Mexico, and anointed with the blood of human sacrifices, but those who served the goddess Centeotl were always dressed in the skins of foxes or coyotes.[33] At Izacapu, in Mi-

[31] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Atiq.*, tom. ix., p. 327.

[32] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxiii.

[33] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxi.; *Torquemada, Monarq.*

Digitized by Google

choacan, there was a pontiff named Curinacanery, who was looked upon with such deep veneration that the king himself visited him once a year to offer him the first fruits of the season, which he did upon his knees, having first respectfully kissed his hand. The common priests of Michoacan wore their hair loose and dishevelled; a leathern band encircled their foreheads; their robes were white, embroidered with black, and in their hands they carried feather fans.[34] In Puebla they also wore white robes with sleeves, and fringed on the edges.[35] The papas, or sacrificing priests of Tlascala, allowed their hair to grow long and anointed it with the blood of their victims.[36] Much more might be written concerning the priests of these countries, but as it does not strictly come within the province of this volume, it is omitted here.[37]

Ind., tom. ii., p. 181; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 44; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. xiv.

[34] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 52–3. Herrera says of the priests of Michoacan: 'Trahian los cabellos largos, y coronas abiertas en la cabeça, como los de la Yglesia Catolica, y guirnaldas de fluecos colorados.' *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. x.

[35] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 438.

[36] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 201.

[37] Less important, or more modern, authorities that treat of the privileged classes among the Aztecs, are *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 19–22; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 495–504; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., pp. 114–15; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 108–14; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 303–6, 337; *Dilworth's Conq. Mex.*, p. 36; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 14–19, 32–5; *Hazart, Kirchen-Geschichte*, tom. ii., pp. 503–5; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 74, 235–6, 264–5; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pt i., pp. 73–7, 98–100; *Cortes, Aventuras*, pref., p. 6; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 201–2; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 59–70, 88–98, 209–10; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 12–13, 19; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 116–120.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VI.

PLEBEIANS, SLAVES, TENURE OF LANDS, AND TAXATION.

INFLUENCE OF THE COMMONERS — OPPRESSION BY NOBLES — DEPRIVED OF OFFICE BY MONTEZUMA II. — CLASSES OF SLAVES — PENAL SLAVES — VOLUNTARY SLAVERY — SLAVE MARKET AT AZCAPUZALCO — PUNISHMENT AND PRIVILEGES OF SLAVES — DIVISION OF LANDS — CROWN LANDS — LANDS OF THE NOBLES — MUNICIPAL PROPERTY — PROPERTY OF THE TEMPLES — TENURE OF LANDS IN ZAPOTECAPAN, MIZTECAPAN, MICHOACAN, TLASCALA, CHOLULA, AND HUEXOTZINCO — SIMILARITY TO FEUDAL SYSTEM OF EUROPE — SYSTEM OF TAXATION — MUNICIPAL TAXES — LICE TRIBUTE — TRIBUTE FROM CONQUERED PROVINCES — REVENUE OFFICERS — INJUSTICE OF MONTEZUMA II.

No writer seems to have thought it worth while to define the exact condition of the lower orders of free citizens among the Aztecs. In Mexico, under the earlier kings, they appear to have enjoyed considerable privileges. They were represented in the royal councils, they held high offices at court and about the king's person, their wishes were consulted in all affairs of moment, and they were generally recognized as an important part of the community. Gradually, however, their power lessened as that of the nobles increased, until, in the time of Montezuma II., they were, as we have seen, deprived of all offices that were not absolutely menial, and driven from the palace. Still there is no doubt that from the earliest times the plebeians were always much oppressed by the nobles, or that, as the bishop of Santo Domingo,

Digitized by Google

before quoted,[1] remarks, "they were, and still are, so submissive that they allow themselves to be killed or sold into slavery without complaining." Father Acosta, also, writes that "so great is the authority which the caciques have assumed over their vassals that these latter dare not open their lips to complain of any order given them, no matter how difficult or disagreeable it may be to fulfil; indeed, they would rather die and perish than incur the wrath of their lord; for this reason the nobles frequently abuse their power, and are often guilty of extortion, robbery, and violence towards their vassals."[2] Camargo tells us that the plebeians were content to work without pay for the nobles, if they could only insure their protection by so doing.[3]

Of those who stood below the macehuales, as the plebeians were called, and lowest of all in the social scale, the slaves, we have more definite information. Slavery was enforced and recognized by law and usage throughout the entire country inhabited by the Nahua nations. There were in ancient Mexico three classes of slaves; namely, prisoners of war, persons condemned for crime to lose their freedom, and those who sold themselves, or children sold by their parents. The captor of a prisoner of war had an undisputed right to doom his prize to be sacrificed to the gods; this power he almost invariably exerted, and it was held a punishable crime for another to deprive him of it by rescuing the prisoner or setting him free.[4] Sahagun tells us that the captor could, if he chose, either sell or hold his prisoners as slaves; and if among them any man or woman showed unusual ability in music, embroidering, weaving, or other domestic occupation, he or she was frequently purchased by the king or some noble or wealthy man, and em-

[1] See page 191 of this volume.

[2] *Acosta, De procuranda indorum salute;* quoted in *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 81.

[3] *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 130.

[4] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 134–6; *Cortés, Carta Inéd.*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 474.

Digitized by Google

ployed in his house, and thus saved from the sacrifice.[5] The offences which the Aztecs punished with slavery were the following: firstly, failure on the part of any relation of a person convicted of high treason to give timely information of the plot to the proper authorities, provided he or she had knowledge of it, the wives and children of the traitor being also enslaved; secondly, the unauthorized sale of a free man or woman or of a free child kidnapped or found astray, the kidnapper fraudulently asserting such person to be a slave, or such child to be his own; thirdly, the sale or disposal, by a tenant or depositary, of another's property, without the permission of the owner or his representative, or of a proper legal authority; fourthly, hindering a collared slave from reaching the asylum of the sovereign's palace, provided it was the act of one who was not the owner or the owner's son; fifthly, stealing things of value, or being an inveterate thief; sixthly, stealing from a field a certain number of ears of corn or of useful plants, exception being made to this law when the act was committed by a child under ten years of age, or when the stolen property was paid for; seventhly, the impregnating, by a free man, of another's female slave, if the woman died during her pregnancy, or in consequence of it. This latter statement is contradicted by Torquemada, upon the strength of information given him, as he alleges, by Aztecs well acquainted with the laws of their country.[6]

[5] *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. i., pp. 32–3; see also tom. ii., lib. vii., pp. 258–9, lib. ix., pp. 353, 370. The Anonymous Conqueror agrees with Sahagun: 'Tutti quei che si pigliauano nella guerra, ò erano màgiati da loro, ò erano tenuti per schiaui.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 304. Motolinia, however, asserts that *all* prisoners of war were sacrificed; 'por que ningun esclavo se hacian en ellas, ni rescataban ninguno de los que en las guerras prendian, mas todos los guardavan para sacrificar.' *Carta al Emperador Cárlos V.*, Jan. 2, 1555, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 272. Gomara also confirms this with a grim joke: 'Los catiuos en guerra no siruian de esclauos, sino de sacrificados: y no hazian mas de comer para ser comidos.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 320–1; see also fol. 309.

[6] 'Algunos quisieron decir, que si vn libre tenia acceso à alguna Esclava, y quedaba preñada de la copula, era Esclavo el Varon que cometiò acto con Esclava, y servia al Señor de la Esclava; pero esto no fue asi,

Digitized by Google

Gomara asserts, though he allows that others deny it, that when a man died insolvent, his son or his wife became the property of his creditors.[7] Torquemada affirms that it was customary for a creditor to look for payment of his claim to the estate, real or personal, if any there was, but no member of the debtor's family was awarded to him to cancel the debt.[8] It sometimes happened that persons too poor to pay their taxes were put up for sale, but this mostly occurred in conquered provinces. Penal slaves did not become the property of the king or the state, but were publicly sold to private persons, or assigned to the parties whom they had injured; nor were such offenders held to be slaves, or their punishment considered to have commenced until they had been formally delivered to the new owner.

Among those who voluntarily surrendered their freedom for a consideration, besides such as were driven by extreme poverty to do so, were the indolent who would not trust to their own exertions for a livelihood, gamesters to obtain the wherewithal to satisfy their passion for gambling,[9] and harlots to provide themselves with showy clothing and finery. The two latter classes were not obliged to go into service until after the expiration of a year from the time of receiving the consideration for which they sold themselves.

Slaves were continually offered for sale in the public market-place of every town, but the principal slave-mart in the Mexican empire seems to have been the town of Azcapuzalco, which was situated about two leagues from the city of Mexico; it occupied the site of the ancient capital of the Tepanec kingdom, which was destroyed by King Nezahualcoyotl of Tezcuco. Great numbers of slaves were brought to Azcapuzalco from all the provinces; and it is said that

segun confesion de los mismos Indios Sabios, que sabian sus Leies, y las practicaban.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 566.

[7] *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 320.

[8] *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 566.

[9] *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. xxii., xxiii.

Digitized by Google

the merchants who traded in them had to adopt great precautions to prevent their property from being stolen or rescued on the journey. With a view to advantageous sales, the slaves thus exposed in the public markets were kept well clothed and fed, and were forced to dance and look cheerful.

Parents could pawn or sell a son as a slave, but were allowed to take him back on surrendering another son to serve in his stead; on such occasions the master was wont to show his generosity by allowing an extra compensation for the new servant. There was yet another kind of slavery, called by the Mexicans *huehuetlatlacolli*, meaning 'ancient servitude.' When one or more families were entirely destitute and famine-stricken, they sold a son to some noble, and bound themselves to always 'keep that slave alive,' that is to say, to supply another to fill his place if he died or became incapacitated. This obligation was binding upon each member of the families making the contract, but was null and void if the man who was actually serving died in his master's house, or if his employer took from him anything that he had lawfully acquired; therefore, to prevent this forfeiture of ownership, the master neither took from his slave anything but personal service, nor allowed him to dwell in his house. It frequently happened that as many as four or five families were bound in this manner to supply a noble and his heirs with a slave. But in 1505 or 1506, a year of famine in the country, Nezahualpilli of Tezcuco, foreseeing the evils that this system of perpetual contract would entail upon his subjects if the scarcity of food continued long, repealed the law, and declared all families exempt from its obligations; it is recorded that Montezuma II. soon after followed his example.[10]

Slavery in Mexico was, according to all accounts,

[10] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 564–5; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 303. Brasseur de Bourbourg asserts that these contracts remained in force down to the time of the Spanish conquest. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 611.

Digitized by Google

a moderate subjection, consisting merely of an obligation to render personal service, nor could that be exacted without allowing the slave a certain amount of time to labor for his own advantage. Slaves were kindly treated, and were allowed far greater privileges than any in the Old World; they could marry and bring up families, hold property, including other slaves to serve them, and their children were invariably born free. There is, however, some obscurity on this point, as Sahagun tells us that in the year Ce Tochtli, which came round every fifty-two years, there was generally a great famine in the land, and at that time many persons, driven to it by hunger, sold not only themselves as slaves, but also their children and descendants for countless generations.[11] Very young or poor slaves lived at the home of their master, and were treated almost as members of the family; the other slaves lived independently, either on their owner's land, or upon their own. It frequently happened that a master succumbed to the charms of one of his female slaves and made her his wife, or that a comely bondman found favor in the sight of his mistress, and became her lord; nor was this so strange as it may at first appear, there being no difference of race or color to make such alliances repugnant or shameful. Feelings of affection and respect existed, as a rule, between master and servant. A slave who had served long and faithfully was often intrusted with the stewardship of his owner's household and property; and on the other hand, if the master through misfortune should become poor, his bondmen would cheerfully labor for his support. No well-behaved slave could

[11] 'Y cuando acontecia la dicha hambre, entónces se vendian por esclavos muchos pobres hombres y mugeres, y comprábanlos los ricos que tenian muchas provisiones allegadas, y no solamente los dichos pobres se vendian a sí mismos, sino que tambien vendian á sus hijos, y á sus descendientes, y á todo su linaje, y así eran esclavos perpetuamente, porque decian que esta servidumbre que se cobraba en tal tiempo, no tenia remedio para acabarse en algun tiempo, porque sus padres se habian vendido por escapar de la muerte, ó por librar su vida de la última necesidad.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vii., pp. 258–9.

Digitized by Google

be sold without his consent, unless his owner could prove that poverty or debt made such sale unavoidable; nor could such faults as laziness, disobedience, or running away be punished without due warning, which the master for his own justification usually gave in the presence of respectable witnesses. If after this had occurred two or three times the slave continued refractory, a wooden collar was placed on his neck, and then his master was authorized to transfer him against his will. Purchasers of a collared slave always inquired how many times he had been so disposed of before, and if after two or three such sales he continued incorrigible, he could be sold for the sacrifice. But even yet he has one chance left: if he can escape from his master's premises and gain the court-yard of the royal palace, he not only avoids punishment, but he is from that day forth a free man; moreover, no person, save his owner or his owner's sons, is allowed in any manner to prevent him from reaching the asylum, under penalty of being made the slave of him whom he attempts to deprive of his chance for freedom.

The sale of a slave was conducted with much formality, and must be made in the presence of at least four respectable witnesses; in cases of self-sale the witnesses acted as conscientious arbitrators to secure the highest price and most favorable conditions for him who sold himself. The usual price for an average slave was twenty mantles, equivalent to one load of cotton cloth; some were worth less, while others brought as many as forty mantles.

Slavery among the Nahua nations appears, then, to have been only a partial deprivation of a freeman's rights. As a slave was permitted to possess property and even other slaves of his own, and as his children were born free and he had complete control of his own family, we can scarcely say he lost his citizenship, although it is true he was not eligible for public office. It was a common practice for a master during his

Digitized by Google

life-time, or on his death-bed, to emancipate his slaves, but if no such provision were made, they went to the heirs with the rest of the property. Murder of a slave, even by his master, was a capital offence.

Yet in spite of all this testimony in favor of the mildness of slavery among the Nahua nations, there is still room for some reasonable doubt concerning the patriarchal character of the system; inasmuch as we are told that many slaves, not mentioned as being prisoners of war or criminals, as well as servants, dwarfs, or deformed persons, and purchased children, were put to death at religious feasts and royal funerals.[12]

The lands were divided between the crown, the nobility, the various tribes or clans of the people, and the temples. The division, however, was by no means equal, by far the greater portion being appropriated

[12] 'Vendian niños recien nacidos, y de dos años, para cumplir sus promesas, y ofrecer en los templos, como nosotros las candelas, y sacrificarlos para alcançar sus pretensiones.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvi. 'Porque como andaban todos los Reinos, con sus mercancias, traian de todos ellos muchos esclavos, los quales, si no eran todos, à lo menos, los mas, sacrificaban.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 272. 'Porque casi todos los que sacrificaban á los idolos eran los que prendian en las guerras ....mui poquitos eran los otros que sacrificavan.' *Motolinia, Carta al Emperador Cárlos V.*, Jan. 2, 1555, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 264, 272. 'Luego proponian un parlamento á los esclavos, enanos y corcobados, diciendo: hijos mios, id á la buena ventura con vuestro señor Axayaca á la otra vida....Luego le abrieron el pecho, teniendolo seis ó siete sacerdotes, y el mayoral le sacaba el corazon, y todo el dia y toda la noche ardía el cuerpo del rey, con los corazones de los miserables esclabos que morian sin culpa.' *Tezozmoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 90, 142. 'Sacrificando en sus honras doscientos esclavos, y cien esclavas.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chichimeca*, in *Id.*, pp. 282, 250. 'Quando moria algun principal, matavan juntamente con él un esclavo, y enterravan con él para que le fuese á servir.' *Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Id.*, vol. v., p. 130. 'Avec lui, de jeunes filles, des esclaves et des bossus.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 202. 'Se quemaba junto con sus cuerpos y con los corazones de los cautivos y esclavos que mataban.' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, p. 35; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 453, 573–4; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 6, 8; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 65. Among those who in later times have treated of slavery among the Nahua nations are the follwoing: *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 261; *Dapper, Neue Welt*, p. 294; *Chevalier, Mex., Ancien et Mod.*, p. 62; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 155–6; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 541; *Klemm Cultur-Geschichte*, pp. 69–70; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 14–15; *Simon's Ten Tribes*, p. 273.

Digitized by Google

by the king and the aristocracy.[13] All landed property was duly surveyed, and each estate was accurately marked out on maps or paintings, kept on file by a competent officer in the district where they were situated. The crown lands were painted in purple, those of the nobility in scarlet, and those of the *calpullis*, or wards, in light yellow. Certain portions of the crown property, called *tecpantlalli*, or 'lands of the palace,' were granted to nobles of the rank of Tecuhtli, who were called *tecpanpouhque* or *tecpantlaca*, 'people of the palace.' They had the free use and enjoyment of such lands, and in return certain services were expected of them. It was their duty to attend to the repairs and proper arrangement of the royal residences, and to cultivate and keep in order the royal gardens, for all of which they had to provide the necessary number of workmen; besides this they were obliged to wait on the king and accompany him whenever he appeared in public. Although in consideration of these services the 'people of the palace' paid no rent, yet the eminent domain of their lands was vested in the sovereign. When one of them died, his eldest son inherited his privileges, subject to the same obligations, but if he changed his residence to another part of the country, or died without male issue, the usufruct was forfeited and the land reverted to the sovereign, who transferred it to another usufructuary, or left the choice of one to the community in whose district the property was situated.[14] The produce of other lands belonging to the crown was set apart for the support of the royal household, and for benevolent purposes.

In conquered provinces, the habits and customs, and established form of government of the vanquished, were usually respected. The sovereigns of Anáhuac retained the native princes in power, and allowed the

[13] *Toribio* and *Olarte*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 405.

[14] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 545–6; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 122.

Digitized by Google

people to keep their property; but they invariably set apart a certain part of the territory, proportioned to the conquest, which became the property of the conquering monarch. These lands, called *yaotlalli*, which means 'war lands,' were cultivated by the conquered people for the benefit of their conqueror. If they belonged to Mexico, their name was *mexicatlalli;* if to Acolhuacan, *acolhua-tlalli*, and so on.[15]

The lands of the nobility were called *pillalli*, and were either ancient possessions of the nobles transmitted by inheritance from father to son, or were rewards of valor granted by the king. They were held by various tenures; some of them could be alienated at the will of the owner, subject only to the restriction that they should not pass into the hands of a plebeian; others were entailed upon the eldest male issue, and could not be otherwise disposed of. Many of the Aztec estates were of very ancient origin. After the Chichimecs obtained undisputed possession of the valley of Mexico, their chief or sovereign, Xolotl, made grants of land to his own people, and to others who acknowledged him as their supreme lord, under the condition that the grantees should render service to the crown with their persons, vassals, and estates, whenever he should require it of them, and the same policy was adopted by his successors.[16] Sons generally inherited their fathers' estates by right of primogeniture, but if the eldest son was judged incapable of taking proper care of the property, the father left it to whichever son he pleased, stipulating, however, that the heir should insure a competency to him he had supplanted.[17] In the republic of Tlascala

[15] *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 67; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 603; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 61; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 40.

[16] *Boturini, Idea*, p. 165; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 208, 216, 224–5, 241; *Id., Relaciones*, in *Id.*, pp. 339–43, 346, 353, 386–7, 395, 451, 453; *Heredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, MS., pp. 51–2; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 189; *Vetancvrt, Teatro, Mex.*, pt ii., pp. 13–14.

[17] Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvii., says that brothers

Digitized by Google

daughters could not inherit an estate, the object being to prevent landed property from going into the hands of strangers. In the kingdoms of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, it is probable that the law was the same in this respect, but the authorities give us no information concerning the matter.[18] These feudatories paid no rent for their lands, but were bound to assist their suzerain, the king, with their persons, vassals, and fortunes in all cases of foreign or civil war. Each king, on his accession, confirmed the investiture of estates derived from the crown.[19] The lands of the people were called *calpulli*, and every city was divided into as many of these as there were wards in it, and the whole number of calpulli being collectively named *altepatlalli*. The calpulli, as well as the *tlaxicalli*, or streets, were all measured out and their boundaries marked, so that the inhabitants of one ward or street could not invade the possessions of another. Each of these divisions belonged to its respective community, and was of greater or less extent and importance according to the partition which had been made by the first settlers in Anáhuac. The owners of a calpulli were all members of the same clan, or tribe, and their district bore their name. The right of tenure was perpetual and inalienable, and was the common property of the commnnity, and not of individuals. Any member of the community not possessed of any land had the right to ask for a portion suitable to his position and requirements, which was granted him. This portion he was entitled to hold as long as he cultivated and improved it, and he could transmit it to his

inherited estates, and not sons; but this assertion is not borne out by any other authority.

[18] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 348; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 123.

[19] *Fuenleal, Lettre*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 252–4; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 68; *Witt, Lettre*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 287; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 63; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 535; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 231; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 48–9, 65; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 122–4; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 304; *Vetancvrt, Teatro, Mex.*, pt ii., pp. 53–4.

Digitized by Google

heirs; he had no authority to sell his portion, but he could let it to another for a number of years. If he neglected to cultivate it for two years, the head man of the calpulli remonstrated with him; if he paid no heed to this warning, he was ousted the following year in favor of some other person; a reasonable excuse for such neglect was, however, always accepted. If the land assigned to any one proved unfruitful and barren, he was at liberty to abandon it and another portion was granted him. Under no pretext whatever could any person settle upon the land lawfully occupied by another, nor could the authorities of the calpulli deprive the latter of his right. If a land-owner died without heirs, his portion was considered vacant and assigned to the first applicant for it. If a calpulli was in great need, the authorities were allowed to lease its lands, but under no circumstances were the inhabitants permitted to work on the lands of another district. The elders of the tribe formed the council of the calpulli; this body elected a principal, called *calpullec*, whose duty it was to watch over the interests of the community; he acted only with the advice and consent of the council. Each city set apart a piece of land in the suburbs wherefrom to supply the needs of the army in time of war. These portions were called *milchimalli*, or *cacalomilli*, according to the kind of grain they produced, and were cultivated jointly by all the calpullis. It was not unusual for the kings to make a life grant of a portion of the people's property to some favorite noble, for though there is no doubt that the calpulli lands of right belonged to the people, yet in this respect, as in others, the kings were wont to usurp a power not their own.[20] Every tem-

[20] 'Ce n'est pas qu'ils eussent ces terres en propre; car, comme les seigneurs exerçaient un pouvoir tyrannique, ils disposaient des terrains et des vassaux suivant leur bon plaisir. Les Indiens n'étaient donc, proprement dit, ni propriétaires ni maîtres de ces villages; ils n'étaient que les laboureurs ou les amodiateurs des seigneurs terriers, de telle façon que l'on pourrait dire que tout le territoire, soit des plaines, soit des montagnes, dépendait du caprice des seigneurs et qu'il leur appartenait, puisqu'ils y exercaient un pouvoir tyrannique, et que les Indiens vivaient au jour le

Digitized by Google

ple, great and insignificant, had its own lands and country estates, the produce of which was applied to the support of the priests and of public worship; the tenants who occupied these lands were looked upon as vassals of the temples. The chief priests, who, on the temple lands, exercised a power similar to that of the royal governors, frequently visited these estates to inspect their condition and to administer justice to their tenants. The temple of Huitzilopochtli was considered the wealthiest in Mexico. Torquemada says that in Tezcuco fifteen large cities furnished the temples of that kingdom with wood, provisions, and other necessaries.[21] Clavigero makes the number of towns twenty-nine.[22]

Throughout Zapotecapan and Miztecapan landed property was invariably transmitted from male to male, females being excluded from the succession. No one had the right to sell his land in perpetuity; the law forbade its transfer out of a family either by marriage or otherwise; and if a proprietor was compelled by the force of necessity to dispose of his real estate, it returned after the lapse of some years to his son or his nearest relative, who paid to the holder the consideration for which it had been pledged, or its equivalent.[23] In Miztecapan the first-born son, before taking possession of his inheritance, had to do penance for a year; he was confined in a religious house, clothed in rags. daubed with India-rubber juice, and

jour; les seigneurs partageant entre eux tous leurs produits.' *Simancas, De l'Ordre de Succession*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 224–5; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Id.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 51–7; *Fuenleal, Lettre*, in *Id.*, tom. v., p. 221; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 603–7; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 590; *Variedades Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 158–9; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 35–6; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 153–5.

[21] *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 164.

[22] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 36. See further: *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 141; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 558–9; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 36; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., p. 13; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, p. 43; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 117–18.

[23] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 188; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 39–40.

Digitized by Google

his face and body rubbed with fetid herbs; during that time he had to draw blood repeatedly from his body and limbs, and was subjected to hard labor and privation. At the expiration of the year he was washed with odorous water by four girls, and then conducted by friends to his house with great pomp and festivity.[24]

Early writers say nothing about the tenure of lands among the Tarascos of Michoacan, but merely state in general terms that the sovereign's power over the lives and property of his subjects was unlimited.[25]

The tenure of lands in the republic of Tlascala had its origin in the division made at the time when the country was first settled, which was as follows: Any Tecuhtli who established an entail, called *teccalli*, or *pilcalli*, took for his own use the best and largest part of the lands that fell to his lot or were awarded to him in the partition, including woods, springs, rivers, and lakes; of the remainder, a fair division was made among his servitors and vassals, or in other words, his soldiers, friends, and kinsmen. All were bound to keep the manor-house in repair and to supply their lord with game, flowers, and other comforts, and he in his turn was expected to entertain, protect, and feed them in his house. To these kinsmen, friends, and servitors was given the name of *teixhuihuan*, meaning the 'grandchildren of the manor-house.' In this manner all the nobles divided their land. All were greatly respected by their vassals. They derived their income from the taxes that their tenants paid them out of what they obtained from the chase, from the soil, and by raising domestic animals.[26]

No information has reached us respecting the provisions under which land was held in Cholula and

[24] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 54; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 95–6.

[25] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 52.

[26] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 176; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 276–7.

Digitized by Google

Huexotzinco, or among the Totonacs. In the province of Pánuco, the eldest son was the sole inheritor of land, and therefore the only one that paid tribute; the other sons had to rent land from those who were in possession of it.[27]

There can be no doubt that in all this there is, as so many writers have observed, a strong resemblance to the feudal systems of Europe. The obligation of military service, and other relations of lord and vassal, smack strongly of the institutions of the Middle Ages, but, as Mr Prescott says, the minor points of resemblance "fall far short of that harmonious system of reciprocal service and protection which embraced, in nice gradation, every order of a feudal monarchy. The kingdoms of Anáhuac were in their nature despotic, attended, indeed, with many mitigating circumstances, unknown to the despotisms of the East; but it is chimerical to look for much in common—beyond a few accidental forms and ceremonies—with those aristocratic institutions of the Middle Ages which made the court of every petty baron the precise image in miniature of that of his sovereign." I have no inclination to draw analogies, believing them, at least in a work of this kind, to be futile; and were I disposed to do so, space would not permit it. Nations in their infancy are almost as much alike as are human beings in their earlier years, and in studying these people I am struck at every turn by the similarity between certain of their customs and institutions and those of other nations; comparisons might be happily drawn between the division of lands in Anáhuac and that made by Lycurgus and Numa in Laconia and Rome, or between the relations of Aztec master and slave and those of Roman patron and client, for the former were nearly as mild as the latter; but the list of such comparisons would never be complete, and I am fain to leave them to the reader.

[27] *Witt, Lettre,* in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 289.

Digitized by Google

The people of Anáhuac and of the surrounding countries paid taxes to the crown and to the temples, either with personal service or with the productions or results of their labor; in short, with everything useful. We have seen that in the kingdom of Tezcuco twenty-nine cities were appointed to provide the king's household with everything requisite of food, furniture, and so forth, and were consequently exempt from all other taxes. Fourteen of these cities served in this manner during one half of the year, and fifteen during the other half. They likewise furnished the working-men and laborers, such as water-carriers, sweepers, tillers of the palace lands, and gardeners. Boys who were too young to do men's work were required to provide annually four hundred armfuls of wood for the fires which were kept up day and night in the principal rooms of the palace. The young men of Tollantzinco, either themselves or through their servants, supplied fine rushes for mats, stools, or seats, called *icpalli*, pine-wood splinters for lighting fires, other wood for torches, *acayetl*, or pipes with tobacco, various kinds of dyes, liquid amber, both in cakes and in vessels, copal incense in their golden cylinders, and a large quantity of other articles, which it is unnecessary to specify.[28] Manufacturers paid their taxes with the objects produced by their industry. Journeymen mechanics, such as carpenters, masons, workers in feathers and precious metals, and musicians, were, according to Oviedo, exempt from such tax, and in lieu thereof rendered personal service to the sovereign without remuneration.[29] Merchants paid their taxes with such articles as they traded in. The last class of tribute-payers were the *tlamaitl*, tenants attached to a nobleman's land, who tilled the same for their own benefit. They were obliged to do a certain amount of work every year for the landlord, and to render mili-

[28] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 241–2.

[29] *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 535, 305–6.

Digitized by Google

tary service when it was required of them by the sovereign. Brasseur says that these tenants paid no tribute to the king, but his statement is contradicted by Clavigero.[30] Taxes paid in fruit and grain were collected immediately after harvest; other tributes were collected at different times through the year. In each town there was a magazine for storing the revenues, from which supplies were drawn as required. In the vicinity of Mexico it was customary to convey the agricultural produce into the capital, in order that the inhabitants, who, being surrounded with the waters of the lake, had no land of their own to cultivate, might be regularly supplied with food. There was no uniform system of collecting taxes from the merchants and manufacturers. Payments were made by them in accordance with their circumstances and the nature of the articles they contributed. There were about three hundred and seventy tributary towns in the Mexican empire, some of which paid their taxes every twenty days, and some every four days, while others only did so once in six months, or even only once a year. The people of Tlatelulco, says Purchas,[31] "were charged for tribute, alwayes to repaire the Church called Huiznahuac. Item, fortie great Baskets (of the bignesse of half a Bushell) of cacao ground, with the Meale of Maiz (which they called *Chianpinoli*), and euery Basket had sixteene hundred Almonds of Cacao. Item, other fortie Baskets of Chianpinoli. Item, eight hundred burthens of great Mantels. Item, eightie pieces of Armour, of slight Feathers, and as many Targets of the same Feathers, of the deuices & colours as they are pictured. All the which tribute, except the said armes and targets, they gaue euery 24. dayes,[32] and the said armes and targets they gaue for tribute

[30] 'Nè i Vasalli de' Feudatari erano esenti da' tributi, che pagavano al Re gli altri Vassalli della Corona.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 122–7.

[31] *His Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1080.

[32] In the *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 54, we read that it was paid every eighty days.

Digitized by Google

out once in the whole yeere. The said tribute had his beginning since the time of Quauhtlatoa and Moquihuix, which were Lords of Tlatilulco. The Lords of Mexico, which first enioyned to those of Tlatilulco, to pay tribute, and to acknowledge their subiection, were Yzcoatçi and Axiacaçi." Sometimes merchants' guilds or individuals did not pay their taxes at the regular assessment of the town in which they lived, but did so according to prior arrangement made with the revenue officers.

In addition to the taxes levied upon private individuals, each town contributed a large number of cotton garments, with a certain quantity of breadstuffs and feathers, and such other productions as were a specialty of the province in which it was situated. Mazatlan, Xoconocho, Huehuetlan, and other towns on the Pacific coast paid, besides the cotton garments, four thousand bundles of fine feathers of divers colors, two hundred sacks of cocoa, forty tiger-skins, and one hundred and sixty birds of a certain species. Coyolapan, Atlacuechahuaxan, Huaxyacac, and other towns of the Zapotecs, forty pieces of gold of a specified size, and twenty sacks of cochineal. Tlachquiauhco, Ayotlan, and Teotzapotlan, twenty vessels of a fixed size filled with gold-dust. Tochtepec, Otlatitlan, Cozamalloapan, Michapan, and other places on the gulf of Mexico, besides cotton garments, cocoa, and gold, paid twenty-four thousand bundles of exquisite feathers of various qualities and colors, six necklaces, two of which were of the finest emerald, and four of the commoner description, twenty ear-rings of amber set in gold, and an equal number made of crystal rock, one hundred pots of liquid amber, and sixteen thousand loads of India-rubber. Tepeyacac, Quecholac, Tecamachalco, Acatzinco, and other towns of that region of country, each contributed four thousand sacks of lime, four thousand loads of solid reed for building purposes, with as many of smaller reed for making darts, and eight thousand loads of reeds filled with

Digitized by Google

aromatic substances. Malinaltepec, Tlalcozauhtitlan, Olinallan, Ichcatlan, Qualac, and other southern towns situated in the warm region, paid each six hundred measures of honey, forty large jars of yellow ochre for paint, one hundred and sixty copper shields, forty round plates of gold of fixed dimensions, ten small measures of fine turquoises, and one load of smaller turquoises. Quauhnahuac, Panchimalco, Atlacholoayan, Xiuhtepec, Huitzilac, and other towns of the Tlahuicas, paid each sixteen thousand large leaves of paper, and four thousand *xicalli*, or gourds, of different sizes. Quauhtitlan, Tehuilloyocan, and other neighboring towns, each gave eight thousand mats and eight thousand *icpalli*, or stools. Some cities paid their taxes with fire-wood, stone, and beams for building; others with copal-gum; others sent to the royal houses and forests a certain number of birds and animals, such as Xilotepec, Michmaloyan, and other cities of the Otomís, which were each compelled to furnish yearly forty live eagles to the king. After the Matlaltzincas were made subject to the Mexican crown by King Axayacatl, they were required not only to pay a heavy tax in kind, but also to keep under cultivation a field of seven hundred *toesas*[33] by three hundred and fifty, for the benefit of the army. As the Saxon king imposed a tax of wolves' heads upon his subjects for the purpose of ridding his kingdom of those ravenous animals, so did the Mexican monarchs exact from those who were too poor to pay the regular taxes a certain quantity of snakes, scorpions, centipedes, and other obnoxious creatures. Lice, especially, were contributed in large numbers in Mexico.[34] It is related that soon after Cortés arrived in the city of Mexico certain cavaliers of his force, among whom

[33] The toesa is the same thing as the French toise, which is 6.3945 English feet, or seven Castilian feet.

[34] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 17–18; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 206; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 275; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 366; *Cortes, Hist. N. España*, p. 173.

Digitized by Google

were Alonso de Ojeda and Alonso de Mata, were roaming through the royal palace, admiring its great extent and all its wonders, doubtless with an eye to plunder, when they came across some bags, filled with some soft, fine, and weighty material; never doubting but that it must be valuable, they hastened to untie the mouth of one of the sacks, when to their disgust and disappointment they found its contents to consist of nothing but lice, which, as they afterwards ascertained, had been paid as tribute by the poor.[35] Duties were levied upon property, manufactures, and articles exposed for sale in the market-places, in proportion to the wealth of the person taxed or the value of the merchandise sold. Produce and merchandise of every description, carried into the city of Mexico, were subject to toll duties, which were paid into the royal treasury.

The proportion in which taxes were paid is stated at from thirty to thirty-three per cent, or about one third of everything made and produced. Oviedo affirms that each tax-payer, in addition to one third of his property, delivered one out of every three of his children, or in lieu thereof a slave, for the sacrifice; if he failed to do this, he forfeited his own life.[36]

The government had in the head town of each province large warehouses for the storage of breadstuffs and merchandise received by the tax-gatherers;

[35] Torquemada adds: 'Ai quien diga, que no eran Piojos, sino Gusanillos; pero Alonso de Ojeda en sus Memoriales, lo certifica de vista, y lo mismo Alonso de Mata.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 461.

[36] 'Dábanle sus vassallos en tributo ordinario de tres hijos uno, y el que no tenia hijos avia de dar un indio ó india para sacrificar á sus dioses, ó si no lo daban, avian de sacrificarle á él.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 502. Nowhere else do I find mention of such a custom, although in Michoacan the despotic power of the king, and his tyrannous abuse of it, led to almost the same results. In Michoacan: 'Tributauan al Rey quanto tenian y el queria, hasta las mugeres y hijos, si los queria; de manera que eran mas que esclauos, y viuian en terrible seruidumbre.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. x., dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiii. 'Si bien todas las atenciones dedicadas á los decorosos mugeriles privilegios destrulan la sujecion del tributo á sus Monarcas, sirviendolos en la ceguedad de ofrecerles no solo la hacienda, y la vida, sino á sus proprias mugeres, en caso de discurrir aceptable el vergonzoso obsequio.' *Salazar y Olarte, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 69–70.

Digitized by Google

also auditing offices to which the *calpixques*, or stewards of the revenue, were required to render a very strict account of their collections, and such as were convicted of embezzlement were immediately put to death and their property confiscated.[37] In the royal treasury were paintings by which were recorded the tributary towns, and the quantity and kind of tribute paid by each. In the Codex Mendoza may be seen thirty-six such paintings, each one of which represents the principal towns of one or of several provinces of the empire, together with the quantity and quality of the taxes and the time when they were paid.[38]

The personal and ordinary service consisted in providing every day the water and wood needed at the chiefs' houses; this was distributed from day to day among the towns or wards, and thus each individual was occupied in rendering such service once or twice in the year at the utmost. Residents in the vicinity were the only ones so subjected, and then, in consideration of such service, were exempted from paying a portion of the imposts. Other labor was mostly done by slaves, of whom there were large numbers. Foreign provinces, subjected by the empire without having made any resistance, were not required to pay a fixed tribute, but sent several times in the year whatever they thought proper, as a present to the king, who showed himself more or less gracious according to the value of the presents. No calpixques, or tax-gatherers, were placed in such provinces by the Mexican sovereign, but they continued under the rule of their own chiefs. Such countries as were reduced by war had to submit to the rigorous conditions imposed by the conqueror, and bore the name of *tequitin tlacotl*, which means 'paying tribute like slaves.' Over them were stationed stewards and calpixques, who had authority even over the lords of the country, and who,

[37] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 307.

[38] *Codex Mendoza*, in *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1080–1101; *Id.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 54–89, vol. i., plates xix.–lvii.; *Cortés, Hist. N. España*, p. 176; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 110.

Digitized by Google

besides recovering the tributes, forced men to cultivate land, and women to spin, weave, and embroider for their private benefit; indeed, so great was their tyranny that whatever they coveted they were sure to obtain by fair means or foul. The kings of Tezcuco and Tlacopan, and other sovereign lords, allies of the king of Mexico, shared these tributes if they aided in the conquest.[89]

The sovereigns selected the calpixques from among the Axtec *pilli*, or nobles of inferior rank. They were under the supervision of the chief treasurers or *huey-calpixques*, who resided at the several capitals, and it was their duty to gather the tributes or taxes, and to see that the lands belonging to the municipalities or to private persons were kept under cultivation. The duties of these calpixques were not very arduous at first, as the people generally hastened to pay their taxes before being called upon; but during the reign of Montezuma II. the taxes increased so enormously, owing to the great extravagance of the court, that this commendable zeal cooled down very considerably. The bulk of the immense wealth which the conquerors saw with so much admiration at Montezuma's court was the result of this excessive taxation, and it was one of the main causes of that alienation of the people from their sovereign which rendered the conquest a possible achievement. Notwithstanding the easy disposition of the tax-payers, they could not submit patiently to a yoke so onerous The merchants, whose trading expeditions had been so useful to the state in former times, were no less overwhelmed by the taxes than the inhabitants of conquered provinces by the tributes. It was among that powerful class that the first symptoms of defection were noticed. To the main grievance was added the tyranny and harshness exhibited by the revenue officers in collecting the taxes. They carried a small rod in one hand

[89] *Tápia, Relacion*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. ii., p 592.

Digitized by Google

and a feather fan in the other, and accompanied by a large retinue of understrappers, went through cities and fields, unmercifully maltreating the unfortunate beings who could not promptly comply with their demands, and even selling them into slavery; at least, it is certain that such sales occurred in conquered provinces.

From the first years of his reign, Montezuma II. began to oppress the merchants with heavy taxation, even upon the most trifling things. The greatest sufferers were the retail dealers, who had to pay excessive duties upon the merchandise they introduced into the principal *tianguez*, or market-place, from which such merchandise was taken to the lesser market-places. But the king and his creatures finding that this did not directly injure the wholesale traders, among whom were the judges of the mercantile court—that is to say, the consuls and syndics, so to name them, of the company of Tlatelulco—witnesses were soon found to trump up charges of high treason against them, which ended in their being put to death, and their goods and chattels confiscated and distributed among the people of the royal household. A very large portion of the taxes and tributes was expended in supporting the army, the public employees, the poor and destitute, such as widows, orphans, and the aged, and also in providing food for the people in times of great scarcity, but almost as large a portion was appropriated by the king to his own uses.[40] It was by such

[40] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind*, tom. i., pp. 147, 206, 231, 461, tom. ii., pp. 545-7. 560; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 111-13; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxli.; *Toribio and Olarte*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, serie i., tom. x., pp. 401-8; *Funleal*, in *Id.*, pp. 244-54; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Id*, série ii., tom. v., p. 301; *Simancha*, in *Id.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 229-31; *Camargo, Hist Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 180, 198-9; *Witt, Lettre*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v, pp 284-93; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 491-2; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol 68; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 189-90, 193-8; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 38-40; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 417-19; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 36-7; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp 99, 101, 437, 495, 589-93, 631, tom. ii., p. 203; *Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 240; *Dicc. Univ.*, tom. x., p 637; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 606-9; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp

Digitized by Google

acts as these that Montezuma II. undid the work of his fathers, and spoiled the harmony of his realm by caring only for his own glory and that of his court.

36, 45–6, 58; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, pp. 42–5; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, pp. 55, 59, 68–72, 211; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 206–8; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 153–8, *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., p. 13; *Lang's Polynesian Nat.*, p 99; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, p. 83; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 25–9, 38; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp 23, 65.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VII.

EDUCATION, MARRIAGE, CONCUBINAGE, CHILDBIRTH, AND BAPTISM.

EDUCATION OF THE NAHUA YOUTH—MANNER OF PUNISHMENT—MARRIAGE PRELIMINARIES—NUPTIAL CEREMONY—OBSERVANCE AFTER MARRIAGE—MAZATEC, OTOMÍ, CHICHIMEC, AND TOLTEC MARRIAGES—DIVORCE—CONCUBINAGE—CEREMONIES PRELIMINARY TO CHILDBIRTH—TREATMENT OF PREGNANT WOMEN—PROCEEDINGS OF MIDWIFE—SUPERSTITIONS WITH REGARD TO WOMEN WHO DIED IN CHILDBED—ABORTION—BAPTISM—SPEECHES OF MIDWIFE—NAMING OF CHILDREN—BAPTISM AMONG THE TLASCALTECS, MIZTECS, AND ZAPOTECS—CIRCUMCISION AND SCARIFICATION OF INFANTS.

IN examining the domestic customs of the Nahua nations, it will be as well to first inquire how their children were reared and instructed. The education of a child was commenced by its parents as soon as it was able to walk, and was finished by the priests. Aside from the superstitious and idolatrous flavor with which everything Aztec was more or less tainted, the care taken to mould aright the minds of the youth of both sexes is worthy of admiration. Both parents and priests strenuously endeavored to inspire their pupils with a horror of vice and a love of truth. Respect for their elders and modesty in their actions was one of their first lessons, and lying was severely punished.

In a series of ancient Aztec paintings, which give a hieroglyphical history of the Aztecs, are represented

Digitized by Google

the manner in which children were brought up, the portion of food allowed them, the labors they were employed in, and the punishments resorted to by parents for purposes of correction. Purchas relates that the book containing this picture-history, with interpretations made by natives, was obtained by the Spanish governor, who intended it for a present to the emperor Charles V. The ship on which it was carried was captured by a French man-of-war, and the book fell into the hands of the French king's geographer, Andrew Thevet. At his death it was purchased for twenty French crowns by Richard Hakluyt, then chaplain to the English ambassador at the French court, and was left by him in his last will and testament to Samuel Purchas, who had wood-cut copies made from the original and published them, with explanatory text, for the benefit of science and learning. In that part of the work which relates to the bringing up and education of children—a specimen page of which is given in the chapter of this volume which treats of hieroglyphics—a boy and girl with their father and mother are depicted; three small circles, each of which represents one year, show that the children are three years of age, while the good counsel they are receiving issues visibly from the father's lips; half an oval divided in its breadth shows that at this age they were allowed half a cake of bread at each meal. During their fourth and fifth years the boys are accustomed to light bodily labor, such as carrying light burdens, while the girl is shown a distaff by her mother and instructed in its use. At this age their ration of bread is a whole cake. During their sixth and seventh years the pictures show how the parents begin to make their children useful. The boy follows his father to the market-place, carrying a light load, and while there occupies himself in gathering up grains of corn or other trifles that happen to be spilt about the stalls. The girl is represented as spinning, under the close

Digitized by Google

surveillance of her mother, who lectures and directs her at the same time. The allowance of bread is now a cake and a half, and continues to be so until the children have reached their thirteenth year. We are next shown the various modes of punishing unruly children. When eight years old they are merely shown the instruments of punishment as a warning. At ten, boys who were disobedient or rebellious were bound hand and foot and pricked in different parts of the body with thorns of the maguey; girls were only pricked in the hands and wrists; if this did not suffice, they were beaten with sticks. If they were unruly when eleven years old, they were held over a pile of burning chile, and forced to inhale the smoke, which caused great pain.[1] At twelve years of age a bad boy was bound hand and foot and exposed naked in a damp place during an entire day; the naughty girl of the same age was obliged to rise in the night and sweep the whole house.[2] From the age of thirteen years the allowance of bread was increased to two cakes Between the ages of thirteen and fifteen, the boys were employed in bringing wood from the mountains by land or in canoes, or in catching fish; the girls spent their time in grinding corn, cooking, and weaving. At fifteen, the boys were delivered to the priests to receive religious instruction, or were educated as soldiers by an officer called Achcauhtli.[3]

The schools and seminaries were annexed to the temples, and the instruction of the young of both

[1] Clavigero writes: 'Nella dipintura cinquantesimaseconda si rappresentano due ragazzi d undici anni, ai quali per non essersi emendati con altri gastighi, fanno i lor Padri ricevere nel naso il fumo del *Chilli*, o sia peverone.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 103. But this is a mistake; in this picture we see a girl being punished by her mother in the manner described, and a boy by his father.

[2] Clavigero mentions this girl as 'una putta....cui fa sua Madre spazzar la notte tutta la casa, e parte della strada.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 103.

[3] For these picture-writings, and the interpretations of them, see *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1103–7; *Codex Bodleian*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., plates 59–62; *Codex Mendoza*, in *Id.*, vol. i., and vol. v., pp. 92–7; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 536–75; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 102–3.

Digitized by Google

sexes was a monopoly in the hands of the priests. In general, boys were sent to the colleges between the ages of six and nine years; they were dressed in black, their hair was left uncut,[4] and they were placed under the charge of priests specially appointed for that purpose, who instructed them in the branches most suitable to their future calling. All were instructed in religion, and particular attention was given to good behavior and morals. No women were permitted to enter the college, nor could the youths on any account have communication with the other sex. At certain seasons they were required to abstain from various kinds of food.

The schools, or colleges, were of two distinct classes. Those attended by the common people were called *telpochcalli*, or 'houses of the youths;' there was one of these in each quarter of the city, after the manner of our public schools, and the parents of the district were required to enter their children at the age of four or five years. The telpochtlato, or 'chief of youth,' instructed them how to sweep the sanctuary, to replenish the fire in the sacred censers, to clean the schoolhouse, to do penance more or less severe according to their age, and to go in parties to the forest to gather wood for the temple. Each pupil took his meals at the house of his parents, but all were obliged to sleep in the seminary. At nightfall all assembled in the *cuicacalco*, or 'house of song,' and were there taught the arts of singing and dancing, which formed part of a Mexican education; they were also exercised here

[4] 'Tenian estas gentes tambien por ley que todos los niños llegados á los seis años hasta los nueve habian de enviar los padres á los Templos para ser instruidos en la doctrina y noticia de sus leyes las cuales contenian casi todas las virtudes esplicadas la en ley natural.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxv., ccxv. 'Todos estos religiosos visten de negro y nunca cortan el cabello....y todos los hijos de las personas principales, así señores como ciudadanos honrados, estan en aquellas religiones y hábito desde edad de siete ú ocho años fasta que los sacan para los casar.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 105. 'Cuando el niño llegaba á diez ó doce años, metianle en la casa de educacion ó *Calmecac*.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 326; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 302; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 187.

Digitized by Google

in the use of arms.[5] At the age of fifteen or sixteen, or sometimes earlier, it was customary for the parents to withdraw their children from the telpochcalli, that they might follow a trade or profession, but this was never done without first making a present to the telpochtlato. The schools at which the sons of the nobility and those destined to be priests were educated were called *calmecac*, which means a college, or monastery. The pupils did not do as much manual labor as those educated in the telpochcalli, nor did they take their meals at home, but in the building. They were under the supervision of priests of the Tlamacazqui order, who instructed them in all that the plebeians learned, besides many of the arts and sciences, such as the study of heroic songs and sacred hymns, which they had to learn by heart, history, religion, philosophy, law, astronomy, astrology, and the writing and interpreting of hieroglyphics. If not quick and diligent, they were given less food and more work; they were admonished to be virtuous and chaste, and were not allowed to leave the temple, until with their father's permission they went out from it to be married, or, in the case of a youth of strength and courage, to go to the wars; those who showed qualities fitted for a military life were exercised in gymnastics and trained to the use of weapons, to shoot with the bow, manage the shield, and to cast darts at a mark. Their courage, strength, and endurance underwent severe tests; they were early afforded opportunities of realizing the hardships of camp life, and while boys, were sent to carry provisions to the soldiers, upon which occasions their behavior was closely watched, and a display of courage met with suitable promotion and reward.[6]

[5] A native author asserts that this 'house of song' was frequently the scene of debauch and licentiousness. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 553.

[6] 'Los hijos de los nobles no se libraban tampoco de faenas corporales, pues hacian zanjas, construian paredes y desempeñaban otros trabajos semejantes, aunque tambien se les enseñaba á hablar bien, saludar, hacer rever-

Digitized by Google

Annexed to the temples were large buildings used as seminaries for girls. The maidens who were educated in them were principally the daughters of lords and princes. They were presided over by matrons or vestal priestesses, brought up in the temple, who watched over those committed to their care with great vigilance. Day and night the exterior of the building was strictly guarded by old men, to prevent any intercourse between the sexes from taking place; the maidens could not even leave their apartments without a guard; if any one broke this rule and went out alone, her feet were pricked with thorns till the blood flowed. When they went out, it was together, and accompanied by the matrons; upon such occasions they were not allowed to raise their eyes, or in any way take notice of any one; any infringement of these rules was visited with severe punishment. The maidens had to sweep those precincts of the temple occupied by them, and attend to the sacred fire; they were taught the tenets of their religion, and shown how to draw blood from their bodies when offering sacrifice to the gods. They also learned how to make featherwork, and to spin, and weave mantels; particular attention was given to their personal cleanliness; they were obliged to bathe frequently, and to be skilful and diligent in all household affairs. They were taught to speak with reverence, and to humble themselves in the presence of their elders, and to observe a modest and bashful demeanor at all times. They rose at day-break, and whenever they showed themselves idle or rude, punishment was inflicted. At night the pupils slept in large rooms in sight of the matrons, who watched them closely. The daughters of nobles, who entered the seminaries at an early age, remained there until taken away by their parents to be married.[7]

encias y, lo que es mas importante, aprendian la astronomía, la historia y demas conocimientos que aquellas gentes alcanzaban.' *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 66; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 444–6.

[7] 'Iban tan honestas que no alzaban los ojos del suelo, y si se descuida-

Digitized by Google

Children brought up in the house of their parents were taught the worship of the gods, and were frequently conducted to the temple in order that they might witness the religious performances. Military men instructed their sons in the use of weapons and the art of war, and lost no opportunity of inuring them to danger, always endeavoring to inspire courage and daring. Laborers and artisans usually taught their children their own trade. The sons of the nobles who were placed in the seminaries were never permitted to go out unless accompanied by one of the superiors of the temple; their food was brought to them by their parents. The punishments inflicted were excessively severe. Liars had thorns thrust into their lips; and sometimes, if the fault was frequent, their lips were slightly split. Those who were negligent or disobedient were bound hand and foot, and pricked with thorns or badly pinched. A girl who was detected looking at or speaking to a man was severely punished; and if addicted to walking the streets, her feet were tied together and pricked with sharp thorns.[8]

There was in Tezcuco, during the reign of Nezahualcoyotl, a large seminary, built upon the west side of the temple, which consisted of several spacious halls and rooms, with a court-yard, and was called the *tlacoteo*. Here the king's sons were brought up and instructed. The guardians and tutors who had charge of them took much pains to instruct them in

ban, luego les hacian señal que recogiesen la vista....las mujeres estaban por sí en piezas apartadas, no salian las doncellas de sus aposentos á la huerta ó verjeles sin ir acompañadas con sus guardas....Siendo las niñas de cinco años las comenzaban á enseñar á hilar, tejer y labrar, y no las dejaban andar ociosas, y á la que se levantaba de labor fuera de tiempo, atábanle los piés, porque asentase y estuviese queda.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 121–2.

[8] See further, for information on the education of the Mexicans, *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 421–3; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 17–18; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 563–4; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 144–5; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xix.; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 267–8; *Fuenleal*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 251; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv.; *Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 239; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 38–47; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 119–20.

Digitized by Google

everything becoming their high estate. Besides the use of arms, they were taught all the arts and sciences as far as then known, and were made fully acquainted with the practical working of precious metals and stones. Separate rooms were devoted to the use of the king's daughters, where they were given an education fitting their station. In accordance with a law of the realm, the king, his children and relatives, with their guardians and masters, and the grandees of the kingdom, came together every eighty days, in a large hall of the tlacoteo; all were seated according to rank; the males on one side, and the females on the other. All the men, even those of royal blood, were dressed in coarse garments of *nequen*, or maguey-fibre. An orator ascended a sort of pulpit and commenced a discourse, in which he censured those who had done badly during the last eighty days, and praised those who had done well; this he did without favor, not even hesitating to blame the king if he saw fit. The discourse was delivered with such eloquence and feeling as generally to move the audience to tears.[9]

Sahagun, Motolinia, Mendieta, and other early writers, who were well acquainted with the Mexican language, give us specimens of the exhortations delivered by parents to their children. I select one from the first-mentioned author, as an example: "Give ear unto me and hearken, O my sons," says the Mexican parent, "because I am your father; and I, though unworthy, am chosen by the gods to rule and govern this city. Thou who art my first-born and the eldest of thy brothers; and thou the second, and thou the third, and thou the last and least—know that I am anxious and concerned, lest some of you should prove worthless in after life; lest, peradventure, not one among you should prove worthy to bear my dignities and honors after me; perhaps it is the will of the gods that the house which I have with so great labor built

[9] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 244–5.

Digitized by Google

up shall fall to the ground and remain a ruin and a dung-hill; that my name shall be no more remembered among men; that after my death no man shall speak well of me. Hear now the words that I shall speak unto you, that you may learn how to be of use in the world, and how to draw near unto the gods that they may show favor to you; for this I say unto you, that those who weep and are grieved; those who sigh, pray and ponder; those who are watchful at night, and wakeful in the morning; those who diligently keep the temples cleanly and in order; those who are reverent and prayerful—all these find favor with the gods; to all such the gods give riches, honor, and prosperity, even as they give them to those who are strong in battle. It is by such deeds the gods know their friends, and to such they give high rank and military distinctions; success in battle, and an honorable place in the hall of justice; making them parents of the sun, that they may give meat and drink, not only to the gods of heaven, but also to the gods of hell; and such as are thus honored are revered by all brave men and warriors; all men look on them as their parents, because the gods have shown them favor; and have rendered them fit to hold high offices and dignities and to govern with justice; they are placed near the god of fire, the father of all the gods, whose dwelling is in the water surrounded by turreted walls of flowers, and who is called Ayamictlan and Xiuhteeutli; or they are made lords of the rank of Tlacatecutli or Tlacochtecutli, or they are given some lower post of honor. Perchance they are given some such office as I now hold, not through any merit of my own, but because the gods know not my unworthiness. I am not what I am by my own asking; never did I say, I wish to be so and so, I desire this or that honor; the gods have done me this honor of their own will, for surely all is theirs, and all that is given comes from their hand; nor shall any one say, I desire this or that honor, for the gods give as they please and to whom

Digitized by Google

they please, and stand in need of counsel from none. Hearken, my sons, to another sorrow that afflicts me when I arise at midnight to pray and do penance. Then I ponder many things, and my heart rises and sinks even as one who goes up and down mountains, for I am satisfied with no one of you. Thou, my eldest son, dost not give any sign of improvement, I see in thee nothing manly, thou remainest ever a boy, thy conduct does not become an elder brother. And thou, my second son, and thou, my third, I see in you no discretion or manliness; peradventure it is because you are second and third that you have become careless. What will become of you in the world? Lo, now, are you not the children of noble parents? Your parents are not tillers of the soil or wood-cutters. What, I say again, will become of you? Do you wish to be nothing but merchants, to carry a staff in your hands and a load on your backs? Will you become laborers and work with your hands? Hearken, my sons, and give heed unto my words, and I will point out to you those things which you shall do. See to the proper observance of the dances, and the music, and the singing, for thus will you please both the people and the gods; for with music and singing are favors and riches gained. Endeavor to learn some honorable trade or profession, such as working in feathers or precious metals; for by such means bread can be obtained in time of necessity. Pay attention to every branch of agriculture, for the earth desires not food or drink, but only to bring forth and produce. Your fathers sought to understand these things, for though they were gentlemen and nobles they took care that their estates should be properly cultivated. If you think only of your high rank and are unmindful of these things, how will you support your family? In no part of the world does any one support himself by his gentility only. But above all, study well to provide all those things which are necessary for the sustenance of the body, for these are the very foundation

Digitized by Google

of our being, and rightly are they called *tonacaiutlto-mio*, that is to say, our flesh and bones, because it is by them that we work, live, and are strong. There is no man in the world but what eats, for each one has a stomach and intestines. The greatest lords need food, the most valiant warrior must carry a bag of victuals. By the sustenance of the body life is upheld, by it the world is peopled. See, therefore, my sons, that you be careful to plant the corn and the magueys, for do we not know that fruit is the delight of children; truly it cools and quenches the thirst of the little ones. And you, boys, do you not like fruit? But how will you get it if you do not plant and grow it? Give heed, my sons, to the conclusion of my discourse, and let it be written upon your hearts. Many more things could I say, but my task would never be ended. A few more words only will I add that have been handed down to us from our forefathers. Firstly, I counsel you to propitiate the gods, who are invisible and impalpable, giving them your whole soul and body. Look to it that you are not puffed up with pride, that you are neither obstinate, nor of a weak, vacillating mind, but take heed to be meek and humble, and to put your trust in the gods, lest they visit your transgressions upon you, for from them nothing can be hidden; they punish how and whom they please. Secondly, my sons, endeavor to live at peace with your fellow-men. Treat all with deference and respect; if any speak ill of you, answer them not again; be kind and affable to all, yet converse not too freely with any; slander no man; be patient, returning good for evil, and the gods will amply avenge your wrongs. Lastly, my children, be not wasteful of your goods nor of your time, for both are precious; at all seasons pray to the gods and take counsel with them; be diligent about those things which are useful. I have spoken enough, my duty is done. Peradventure you will forget or take no heed of my words. As

Digitized by Google

you will. I have done my duty; let him profit by my discourse who chooses."[10]

The customary marrying age for young men was from twenty to twenty-two, and for girls from eleven to eighteen.[11] Marriages between blood relations or those descended from a common ancestor were not allowed. A brother could, and was enjoined to, marry his deceased brother's wife, but this was only considered a duty if the widow had offspring by the first marriage, in order that the children might not be fatherless.[12] When a youth reached a marriageable age, he or his parents asked permission of his teacher. He seldom was allowed any choice of his own, but was expected to abide by the selection of his parents. It rarely happened that a marriage took place without the sanction of parents or relatives, and he who presumed to choose his own wife, or married without such consent, had to undergo penance, and was looked upon as ungrateful, ill-bred, and apostate. In some parts the high-priest commanded them to marry when they arrived at the proper age, and he who refused to comply was obliged to remain continent through life, and dedicate the remainder of his days to the service of the gods. Should he afterward repent and desire to marry, he was despised by all his friends and publicly denounced as infamous, inasmuch as he had shown himself to be devoid of firmness, and unable to keep the vow of chastity to which he had voluntarily bound himself; nor would any respectable woman afterward accept him as a husband. In Tlascala, if any one carelessly allowed the time to pass by without taking a wife, or deciding upon a life

[10] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 113–19. A literal translation of Sahagun would be unintelligible to the reader. I therefore have merely followed as closely as possible the spirit and sense of this discourse. For further exhortations and advice to children, see *Id.*, pp. 119–52; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles*, pp. 112; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 493–9; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom ii., pp. 104–9.

[11] Although Gomara says 'casan ellos a los veinte años, y aun antes: y ellas á diez.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 314.

[12] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 16.

Digitized by Google

of chastity, his hair was cut short, and he was driven out from the company of the youths with whom he was educated.

Cutting the hair formed a part of the marriage ceremony, but the mode of cutting was different from that of the penalty.[13] When the time came for the parents to choose a wife for their son, all the relations were called together and informed by the father that the youth had now reached an age when he should be provided with a wife; for that he was now a man, and must learn how to perform the duties of a man, and refrain from boyish tricks and promiscuous intercourse with women. The youth was then summoned before his parents, and his father addressed him, saying: "My son, thou art now a man, and it seems to us proper to search among the maidens for a wife for thee. Ask thy tutors for permission to separate thyself from thy friends, the youths with whom thou hast been educated. Make known our wishes to those called Telpuchtlatoque, who have the charge of thee." The youth in answer expressed his willingness and desire to enter into their plans. The parents then set about preparing a quantity of food, such as tamales, chocolate, and other dishes; and also provided a small axe, which was to bear a part in the next proceeding. The repast being prepared, an invitation was sent to the priests who were instructors of the youth, accompanied with presents of food and pipes of tobacco; all the relations were also invited. When the meal was finished, the relations, and guardians of the ward in which the parents of the pair lived, seated themselves. Then one of the youth's relations, addressing the priestly instructors of the youth said:

[13] 'Por otro respecto no era pena trasquilar los tales mancebos, sino ceremonia de sus casamientos: esto era, por que dejando la cabellera significaba dejar la lozania y liviandad de mancebo; y asi como desde adelante habia de criar nueva forma de cabellos, tuviese nueva seso y cordura para regir su muger y casa. Bien creo que debia de haber alguna diferencia en estos trasquilados cuando se trasquilaban por ceremonia ó por pena.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxix.; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 577

Digitized by Google

"Here, in the presence of all, we beg of you not to be troubled because this lad, our son, desires to withdraw from your company, and to take a wife; behold this axe, it is a sign that he is anxious to separate from you; according to our Mexican custom, take it, and leave us the youth." Then the priest answered: "I and the young men with whom your son has been educated have heard how that you have determined to marry him, and that from henceforward forever he will be parted from us; let everything be done as you wish." The tutor of the youth next addressed him, entreating him to persevere in the paths of virtue, not to forget the teachings he has received, and to continue to be a zealous servant of the gods; he advised him that as he was now about to take a wife he must be careful to provide for her support, and to bring up and instruct his children in the same manner as he had been educated. He adjured him to be courageous in battle, to honor and obey his parents, to show respect to his seniors and all aged persons; and so the speaker ambled morally along at some length, but I spare the reader the remainder of the discourse.[14] The priests then took their leave, bearing the axe with them, and the young man remained in his father's house.

Soon after this the parents called the relations together once more to consult upon the selection of a maiden suitable to be the wife of their son. Their first act, and one that was of paramount importance, was to ascertain the day and sign of his birth. If they were unable to remember or calculate the sign, they called in the aid of astrologers, or soothsayers, who by certain reckonings and ceremonies interpreted all they sought to know. The birthday and sign of the damsel were in like manner ascertained. If the horoscope of both was favorable, the astrologers predicted a happy union with prosperity and good fortune to both; but if the signs did not agree, they foretold

[14] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 152–3; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles*, p. 125; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxix.

Digitized by Google

adversity and evil fortune, and it became necessary to choose another maiden. Once assured of a favorable combination according to the auguries, steps were taken to obtain the consent of the girl's parents. For this purpose the parents and relatives of the youth commissioned two old women, chosen from among the most discreet and virtuous of the district, who were to act as negotiators in the affair; these were called *cihuatlanque.* They went on the part of the bridegroom and conveyed the message to the parents or nearest relatives of the young girl. Their first visit was made shortly after midnight or upon the following morning, upon which occasion they took with them some presents to offer to the girl's parents. Upon their arrival they commenced a suitable address, in which they formally solicited the hand of the girl in marriage. The first overture was invariably rejected and some frivolous excuse given, even though the girl's relatives might be more desirous of the match than those who solicited it. The embassy was told that the girl was not yet of an age to marry, or that she was not worthy of the honor offered her. After some few more such compliments had been paid, the matrons returned to those who had sent them. A few days having elapsed, the old women were sent back bearing more presents, and with instructions to again solicit the alliance, and to define clearly the position of the suitor, his qualifications and riches. Upon this second interview the negotiations assumed a more business-like aspect; the conversation turned upon the portion that each would bring to the other, and finally the relatives of the girl consented to consider the affair; yet they still maintained a semblance of reluctance, insisting that the girl was not worthy to become the wife of so estimable a young man; but adding that, as the matter was urged with so much importunity, they would on the morrow assemble all the relations of the young woman, that they might consult together about the affair; they then closed

Digitized by Google

the conference by inviting their visitors to be present on that occasion and receive their final decision.

The next day the parents of the girl called a meeting of all her relatives, at which the proposed alliance was discussed with due deliberation; and the girl being called before them, much good advice was given her; her duties as a wife were defined, she was charged to serve and please her husband, and not bring disgrace upon her parents. Information of their decision was then sent to the parents of the young man, and preparations for a fitting celebration of the wedding commenced. The augurs were consulted and requested to name a lucky day for the ceremony; the signs *Acatl*, *Ozomatli*, *Cipactli*, *Quauhtli*, or *Calli*, were deemed most favorable, and one or other of them was generally selected for the celebration of the nuptials. Several ensuing days were spent by both families in preparing for the marriage celebration, and in issuing invitations to friends and relations. The ceremony was always performed at the house of the bridegroom's parents, where the best room was put in order for the occasion; the roof and walls were festooned with green branches and garlands of flowers, disposed with great taste, and the floor was strewn with the same. In the centre stood a brazier containing fire. When all the arrangements were completed, certain of the bridegroom's friends and relatives went to the house of his intended to conduct her to the room. If the distance was great, or the bride the daughter of a lord or great personage, she was borne upon a litter, otherwise she was carried on the back of the bride's-woman, or sponsor, accompanied by a large concourse of people, disposed in two rows and bearing torches. The bride occupied the centre of the procession, and immediately about her walked her nearest relatives. As the procession passed, many of the lookers-on profited by the occasion, to point her out to their own daughters as an example worthy of emulation.

Digitized by Google

The bridegroom met his bethrothed at the entrance of his house, preceded by four women bearing lighted torches; in his hands he carried a censer with burning incense, and another was given to the bride; with these they at once perfumed each other, and the groom, taking her by the hand, led her into the room prepared for the ceremony. They were then seated upon an ornamented and painted mat spread close to the fireplace, the woman being placed on the left of the man.[15] The bridegroom's mother then came forward with presents for her daughter-in-law, and dressed her in a *huipil*, or short chemise, at the same time laying at her feet a *cuatli*, or skirt, richly embroidered and worked. Next the bride's mother gave presents to the bridegroom; she covered him with a mantle, which she fastened at the shoulder, and placed a maxtli or breech-clout at his feet. The most important part in the ceremony was next performed by the priest, who made a long address to the betrothed couple, in which he defined the duties of the married state, and pointed out to them the obedience a wife should observe toward her husband, and the care and attention the latter should give to her, how that he was bound to maintain and support her, and the children they might have. He was enjoined to bring up and educate his children near him, teaching all according to their abilities, to make them useful members of society, and to instruct them in habits of industry. A wife's duties, he said, were to labor and aid her husband in obtaining sustenance for their family.

[15] 'Venian los de la casa del mozo á llevar á la moza de parte de noche: llevábanla con gran solemnidad *acuestas* de una matrona, y con muchas hachas de teas encendidas en dos rencles delante de ella.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 82, 157. 'Pronuba, quam *Amantesam* vocabant, sponsam tergo gestans, quatuor fœminis comitantibus quæ pineis tædis, prælucerent, illam post Solis occasum, ad limen domus in qua parentes sponsi manebant, sistebat.' *Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 239. 'La celebracion era que la desposada la llevaba á cuestas á prima noche una amanteca, que es medica, é hiban con ellas cuatro mujeres con sus achas de pino resinado encendidas, con que la hiban alumbrando, y llegada á casa del desposado, los padres del desposado la salian á recibir al patio de la casa, y la metian en una sala donde el desposado la estava aguardando.' *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 99.

Digitized by Google

Both were exhorted to be faithful to one another, to maintain peace and harmony between themselves, to overlook each other's failings, and to help one another, ever bearing in mind that they were united for life by a tie which only death could sever. The rites of marriage were always conducted with much solemnity, and during the ceremony nothing was said or done contrary to the rules of modesty and decorum. At the conclusion of the address the couple stood up, and the priest tied the end of the man's mantle to the dress of the woman; they then walked seven times round the fire, casting therein copal and incense, and giving presents to each other, while their friends and relatives threw chains of flowers about their necks and crowned them with garlands.[16] The mother-in-law of the bride now brought some food, and gave four mouthfuls to the bride to eat, and afterward gave the same quantity to the bridegroom. They then received the congratulations of their friends, while at the same time a dance was performed to the sound of musical instruments. Accompanied by the dancers and musicians, the newly wedded pair was conducted to the temple, at the door of which the tlamacaxques, or priests, appeared to receive them. While the company remained below, the wedded couple with their sponsors and parents ascended the steps of the temple. The priest wore his robes of ceremony, and carried in his hand an incensory filled with incense, with which

[16] 'Un sacerdote ataba una punta del *huipilli*, ó camisa de la doncella, con otra del *tilmatli*, ó capa del jóven.' *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 557. 'Al tiempo que los novios se avian de acostar ó dormir en uno, tomaban la halda delantera de la camisa de la novia, é atábanla á la manta de algodon que tenia cubierta el novio.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 548. 'Unas viejas que se llaman *titici*, ataban la esquina de la manta del mozo, con la falda del vipil de la moza.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 83. 'Hechos los tratados, comparecian ambos contrayentes en el templo, y uno de los sacerdotes exâminaba su voluntad con preguntas rituales; y despues tomaba con una mano el velo de la muger, y con otra el manto del marido, y los añudaba por los extremos, significando el vínculo interior de las dos voluntades. Con este género de yugo nupcial volvian á su casa, en compañia del mismo sacerdote: donde....entraban á visitar el fuego doméstico, que á su parecer, mediaban en la paz de los casados, y daban siete vueltas á él siguiendo al sacerdote.' *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 432-3.

Digitized by Google

he proceeded to perfume them. He then placed himself between the two, with the man on his right and the woman on his left, and taking them by the hands, led them to the altar of the idol, muttering prayers as he went. The altar reached, he placed upon each of the parties a very fine and showy shawl woven and variegated with many colors, in the centre of which was painted a skeleton, as a symbol that death only could now separate them from each other. He then perfumed them again with the incensory, and led them back to the door of the temple, where they were received by the assemblage and accompanied to their home with dancing and music. The marriage ceremonies being finished, the relatives and friends partook of a banquet, and amidst much rejoicing congratulated each other on the new relations they had acquired. In the feasting, drinking, and dancing the bridal pair took no part; they had now to enter upon a season of fasting and penance, which lasted four days, in the strict retirement of their room, where they were closely guarded by old women; on no account were they permitted to leave their room except for the necessary calls of nature, or to offer sacrifice to the gods; the time was to be passed in prayer, and on no account were they to allow their passions to get the better of them or indulge in carnal intercourse. Such weakness on their part would, they believed, bring discord or death or some other dire misfortune between them. The close confinement, the watchful guard and imposed penances, were intended to calm their passions and purify their minds, whereby they would be more fitted to undertake the duties before them, and not be led astray by unruly desires. What small supply of sustenance they received in the four days of their retirement was carried to them by the old women who had charge of them, and during this time they neither washed nor bathed themselves; they were dressed in new garments, and wore certain charms and regalia pertaining to their patron idol. At midnight they

Digitized by Google

came forth to offer sacrifice and burn incense on the altar in their house, in front of which they also left food offerings for their god; this they did during the four days of abstinence, while their friends and relatives continued their rejoicings, festivities, and dancing.[17] Upon the fourth night, when the marriage was to be consummated, two priests of the temple prepared a couch of two mats, between which were placed some feathers and a stone somewhat the color of an emerald, called *chalchiuite;* underneath, they put a piece of tiger-skin, and on top of all they spread some cotton cloths. At the four corners of the bed were placed green reeds perfumed, and thorns of the maguey with which the pair were to draw blood from their tongues and ears when they sacrificed to the gods.[18] The following morning the bridal pair took the bed on which they had lain, with the cloths, reeds, and food they had offered to their god during the four days of penance, to the temple, and left them as a thanksgiving offering.[19] If any charcoal or ashes were found

[17] 'Quedando los esposos en aquella estancia durante los cuatro dias siguientes, sin salir de ella, sino á media noche para incensar á los ídolos y hacerles oblaciones de diversas especies de manjares.' *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 557. 'Á la media noche y al medio dia salian de su aposento á poner encienso sobre un altar que en su casa tenian.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 128. 'Los padrinos llevaban á los novios á otra pieza separada, donde los dejaban solos, encerrándolos por la parte de afuera, hasta la mañana siguiente, que venian á abrirles, y todo el concurso repetia las enhorabuenas, suponiendo ya consumado el matrimonio.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 26.

[18] The position of the tiger-skin is doubtful. 'Ponian tambien vn pedaço de cuero de Tigre, debajo de las esteras.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 415. 'Ponian un pedazo de cuero de tigre encima de las esteras.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 128. 'La estera sobre que habian dormido, que se llamaba *petatl*, la sacaban al medio del patio, y allí la sacudian con cierta ceremonia, y despues tornaban á ponerla en el lugar donde habian de dormir.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., p. 158.

[19] 'Otra ceremonia, casi como esta, vsaban los del Pueblo de Israèl, acerca del acostar los Novios, la primera noche de sus Bodas, que les ponian vna sabana, ó lienço, para que en èl se estampase el testimonio de la virginidad, que era la sangre, que del primer acto se vertia, la qual se quitaba de la cama delante de testigos, que pudiesen afirmar haverla visto, con la señal de la sangre, que comprobaba la corrupcion de la Doncella y embuelta, ò doblada, la ponian en cierto lugar, diputado para esto, donde quedaba guardada, en memoria de la limpieça, y puridad, con que la dicha Doncella venia á poder de su Marido. Seria posible, que quisiese significar entre estos Indios lo mismo, este cuidado de los viejos, de traer manta, ó sabana, y tenderla sobre la cama de los desposados, para los primeros actos matrimoniales;

Digitized by Google

in the bridal-chamber they considered it an evil omen, but if, on the other hand, a grain of corn or other seed was found, they considered it a sign of a long and prosperous life and a happy union. A baptismal ceremony was next performed, the wedded pair being placed on green reed mats, while the priests poured water over them. Nobles received four ablutions with water in honor of *Chalchihuitlicue*, the goddess of waters, and four of wine, in reverence to *Tezcatzoncatl*, the god of wine. After the bath they were dressed in new vestments, the bride's head was adorned with white feathers and her hands and feet with red. To her husband was given a thurible, filled with incense wherewith to perfume his household gods. At the conclusion of these ceremonies, a further distribution of dresses and presents was made, and the company partook of food and wine, while the scene was enlivened with songs and dances. Some more good advice, of which the Aztecs seem to have had a never-failing store, was then given to the wedded pair by the mothers-in-law or nearest relatives, and thus ended the nuptial ceremonies, which were conducted in accordance with the means of the principal parties concerned.[20] In some places, proof of the maiden's virginity was required on the morning following the consummation of the marriage. In such case, the sponsers entered the room where the wedded pair had passed the night and demanded the bride's chemise; if they found it stained with blood they brought it out, placed it on a stick, and exhibited it to all present as an evidence that the bride was a virgin; then a dance was formed and the procession went through all the place, carrying the chemise on a stick, dancing and

y es creible, que seria este el intento, pues la ropa, y esteras, que sirvieron en este Sacrificio, se llevaban al Templo, y no servian mas en casa, como ni mas, ni menos la ceremonia antigua de guardar la sabana, con sangre, entre los Hebreos, en lugar particular, y seguro.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 416.

[20] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 116–20, 127–8; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 416; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 548–9; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 158–60; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 19.

Digitized by Google

expressing their joy, and this was called 'dancing the chemise.' If it happened that the chemise was unstained, tears and lamentations took the place of rejoicing, abuse and insults were heaped upon the bride, and her husband was at liberty to repudiate her.[21] In the kingdom of Miztecapan, before the ceremony of tying their mantles together was performed, it was customary to cut a lock of hair from the bridegroom's head and from the bride's, after which they took each other by the hand and their dresses were tied by the ends. The man then took the girl on his back and carried her a short distance; which proceeding terminated the nuptials.

In Ixcatlan, he who desired to get married presented himself before the priests, and they took him to the temple, where, in presence of the idols he worshipped, they cut off some of his hair, and showing it to the people, shouted, "This man wishes to get married." From thence he was obliged to descend and take the first unmarried woman he met, in the belief that she was especially destined for him by the gods. They were then married according to the customary Mexican rites. The Mazatec bridegroom abstained for the first fifteen days of his wedded life from carnal knowledge of his wife, and both spent the time in fasting and penance. Among the Otomís it was not considered an offence for an unmarried man to deflour a single woman. The husband was permitted to repudiate the woman the day following his marriage if she did not please him; but if he remained satisfied upon that occasion, he was not afterwards allowed to send her away. They had then to undergo a period of penance and abstinence and remain secluded for twenty or thirty days, during which time they were to abstain from all sexual intercourse, to draw blood from themselves as a sacrifice, and to bathe frequently. The Chichimecs, although they contracted marriage at a very early age, could not have legitimate

[21] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., pp. 26–7.

Digitized by Google

connection with their wives until the woman was forty years old. After their intercourse with the Toltecs, this custom began to be abolished, although the princes and nobles observed it rigorously for some time longer. Marriage with near relatives was never permitted among them, and polygamy was strictly prohibited.[22]

Among the Mexicans divorce was permitted, but as a general rule was discouraged. In the event of discord arising between man and wife so that they could not live together peacefully, or where one or other of the parties had just cause of complaint, they applied to a judge for permission to separate. Such permission was not granted unless good and sufficient cause was shown in support of the application. The judge investigated the case with much care and attention, closely examining the parties in reference to their marital relations; whether they had been married with the consent of their parents, and if all the ceremonies of marriage had been fully observed. If the answers proved that the parties had not been married according to the usual rites and ceremonies, or if they had been living together in a state of fornication, the judge refused to interfere between them; but if he found they had properly complied with the regulations governing marriage, he used his best efforts to reconcile them; he reminded them of the solemn obligations

[22] For further information relating to marriage ceremonies and customs, see *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 125–8; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 83, 186, 412–20, 496–7; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 81–3, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 152–62, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 116–17; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., pp. 23–7, 178; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxix., clxxv.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 214; *Id., Relaciones*, in *Id.*, pp. 327, 335, 340, 400; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 374–5; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 189, tom. iii., pp. 79, 565–7; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 33–5; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 298, 314–16; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvi., dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xvii.; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 308–9; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 265; *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., p. 484; *Alegre, Hist. Comp. de Jesus*, tom. i., p. 279; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 555–9, 577; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 202–3; *Touron, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 11–12; *Simon's Ten Tribes*, pp. 274–5; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 145–7; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 15–30; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 89–93, 111.

Digitized by Google

appertaining to the marriage contract, and warned them not to bring disgrace upon themselves and their parents by breaking the bonds by which they were united, thereby creating a scandal in the community. If his endeavors to effect a reconciliation were of no avail, and he found that one or other of the parties had just cause of complaint, a license to separate could be issued, but more frequently the judge refused to interfere in the matter, and dismissed them with a stern reproval. Marriage was looked upon as a solemn and binding tie only to be dissolved by death, and any attempt or desire to annul the contract was deemed a disgrace and a bad example. Under these circumstances, divorce was always discouraged both by the magistrates and the community. A judge was generally unwilling to sanction with the authority of the law the annulment of so binding an engagement; therefore only a tacit consent was given by the court, by which the whole onus of the disgrace attending a separation was thrown upon the parties themselves. When a dissolution took place between man and wife, they could not again under any circumstances be united; the divorce once effected, no subsequent condonation could authorize their living together.[23]

We have no information how or on what terms a division of property was made in the event of a dissolution of marriage, or to which of the parties the custody of the children belonged. The ancient historians throw no light upon the subject. As much

[23] 'Nunca sentenciaban en disfavor del Matrimonio, ni consentian, que por autoridad de Justicia, ellos se apartasen; porque decian ser cosa ilicita, y de mucho escandalo para el Pueblo, favorecer, con autoridad publica, cosa contraria à la raçon; pero ellos se apartaban de hecho, y este hecho se tolerabа, aunque no en todos, segun el mas, ò menos escandalo, que se engendraba en el Pueblo. Otros dicen, que por Sentencia difinitiva, se hacia este Repudio, y Divorcio....los Jueces sentenciaban (si acaso concedemos, que havia sentencia) que se apartasen, y quedasen libres, y sin obligacion el vno, al otro; pero no de la murmuracion del Pueblo, que buelto contra ellos, decian ser dignos de grandisima pena, por haver quebrado la Fè è integridad del Matrimonio, y haver dado tan mal exemplo à la Republica.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 442; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 20–1; *Monglave, Résumé*, p. 31; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 131.

Digitized by Google

deference and respect was shown to old age, it is probable that the decision of such matters was left to the influence and wisdom of the friends and relatives, and that through their intervention equitable arrangements were made.

Concubinage, of which there were three classes, was permitted throughout the Mexican empire The first class was the union of young men with unmarried women, before they arrived at the age when they were expected to marry. All young men, with the exception of those who were consecrated to a perpetual chastity, were allowed to have concubines. The youth usually asked his parents to select a girl for him, and the one upon whom their choice fell cohabited with him. Such women were called *tlacacavili.* No contract was made nor any ceremony performed; the connection was a simple private arrangement of the relatives on both sides. When a girl lived with an unmarried man as his concubine without the consent of her parents, she was called *temecauh,* which had a more general signification. It does not appear, however, that concubinage among the unmarried men was common; on the contrary, the manner in which parents are reputed to have brought up their children, and the care taken by the priests in their education, would seem to show that such a practice was discouraged, or rather tolerated than allowed, and it is probable the custom was chiefly confined to the sons of nobles and wealthy men. When a young man arrived at the age when he should marry, he was expected to dispense with his concubine that he might marry the girl selected by his parents to be his lawful wife. He could, however, legitimize the connection between his concubine and himself by notifying his parents of his wishes and having the usual marriage ceremonies performed; she then became his lawful wife and was called *ciuatlantli.* If while they lived together in concubinage the woman had a child, her parents then required that he should at one restore her to them,

Digitized by Google

or make her his wife, as they considered it proper that having a child she should also have a husband as a legal protector. Young women were not dishonored by living in a state of concubinage, nor were their chances of contracting advantageous marriages in any degree lessened.

The second order of concubines might rather be termed, perhaps, the less legitimate wives of married men; with them the tying of garments constituted the entire marriage ceremony; the husband could not repudiate them without just cause and the sanction of the courts, but neither they nor their children could inherit property; in this respect they were treated as concubines, but nevertheless they were called *Ciuatlantli*, which corresponds with the latin word *uxor*, and was the title borne by the first and legitimate wife.

The third class of concubines was merely kept mistresses; with them no marriage rite of any kind was performed. They were kept usually by the nobles and chief men, who could afford to maintain large establishments; they occupied a third rank in the domestic circle after the principal wife and less legitimate ones, and were called *ciuanemactli*, or *tlaciuantli*, if their master had obtained them from their parents; those whom he took without such permission were called *tlaciuaantin*.[24]

The Toltec kings could only marry one woman, and in case of her death could not marry again or live in concubinage with any woman; the same rule held

[24] 'Tengono molte moglie, & tante quante ne possono mantenere come i mori, però come si è detto, vna è la principale & patrona & i figliuoli di qsta hereditano, & quei dell'altre no, che non possono anzi son tenuti per bastardi. Nelle nozze di questa patrona principale fan no alcune cirimonie, il che non si osserua nelle nozze dell'altre.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 310. See, further, *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 376; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, cap. ccxiii., ccxiv., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antq.*, vol. viii., pp. 127–8; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 20–7; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 169, 197; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 107; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 430–1; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 260; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iv., dec. v., lib. x.

Digitized by Google

good with their queens in the event of the king dying first. Prostitution among the Mexicans was tolerated, but at the same time was restrained within certain bounds; that is, the law took cognizance of the practice as regarded the women engaged in such traffic. It was looked upon as a necessary evil, and the law did not interfere with men who consorted with prostitutes; but the latter, if they plied their traffic too openly or with too great frequency, so as to create a public scandal and become a nuisance, were punished according to the extent of the offence.[25]

We may suppose that, the marriage ceremonies being concluded, the young couple were left in peace, and that for a time there was a truce to the speech-making and ever-ready advice of anxious parents and meddling relatives. But this respite was generally of brief duration. As soon as the woman found herself to be pregnant, all her friends and relations were immediately upon the tiptoe of expectation and interest again. The parents were at once informed of the interesting event, and a feast was prepared, of which all who had been present at the wedding partook. After the repast, the inevitable speeches commenced. An old man, squatting on his hams, first spoke in behalf of the husband, referring to the precious burden carried by the pregnant woman and to the future prospects of the child; after a while another relieved the speaker and pursued the subject in the same strain; the man and his wife then responded, dwelling upon the pleasure in store for them, and expressing their hopes that, with the favor of the gods, it might be realized. The parents of the pair were next addressed directly by one of the guests upon the same theme and made a reply. Certain

[25] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, cap. ccxiii., ccxiv., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 127; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 376; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 27–8; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 37–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 132–3.

Digitized by Google

elderly relatives then seized the opportunity to admonish and instruct the young woman, to which she made a suitable answer, thanking them for their solicitude on her behalf.[26]

During the months of her pregnancy, the mother was very careful to insure the safety and health of the child, though many of the rules observed for this purpose were of a partly superstitious nature. Thus, sleeping in the day-time would contort the child's face; approaching too near the fire or standing in the hot sun would parch the fœtus; hard and continued work, lifting weights, running, mental excitement, such as grief, anger, or alarm, were particularly avoided; in case of an earthquake all the pots in the house were covered up or broken to stop the shaking; eating *tzictli*, or *chicle*, was thought to harden the palate of the unborn child, and to make its gums thick so that it would be unable to suck, and also to communicate to it a disease called *netentzzoponiztli;* neither must the edible earth, of which, as we shall see in a future chapter, the Mexicans were very fond, be eaten by the mother, lest the child should prove weak and sickly; but everything else the woman fancied was to be given her, because any interference with her caprices might be hurtful to her offspring.[27] Moderation in sexual connection with her husband was recommended to a woman from one to three months advanced in pregnancy, but total abstinence in this respect was thought to be injurious to the unborn child; during the later stages of the woman's pregnancy, however, the husband abstained entirely from having intercourse with her.[28] When the time for the confinement drew near,

[26] I have thought it unnecessary to give these speeches in full, but the reader can find them all together in *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 161–73.

[27] Sahagun adds: 'Mandaba que á la preñada la diesen de comer suficientemente y buenos manjares, calientes y bien guisados, con especialidad cuando á la preñada le viene su purgacion, ó como dicen la regla, y esto llaman que la criatura se laba los pies, porque no se halle ésta en vacio, ó haya alguna vaciedad ó falta de sangre ó humor necesario, y así reciba algun daño.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., p. 182.

[28] Sahagun's original MS. contains twenty-four additional lines on this subject, but these his editor deems too indelicate to print. *Id.*, p. 181.

Digitized by Google

another feast was prepared and the usual invitations were issued. When all were gathered an old man was the first to speak, on behalf of the married couple. By virtue of his long experience in these matters, he recommended that the pregnant woman be placed in the *xuchicalli*, or bath, under the protection of Xuchicaltzin, the god of the bath, and of Yoalticitl, goddess of the bath and of childbirth. He further advised the parents to select a competent *ticitl*, or midwife. This functionary having been named, a female relative of the husband addressed her, asking her to accept the trust, praising her qualifications, and exhorting her to exert her utmost skill and care. The mother and relatives of the wife also made brief speeches to the same purpose. The midwife elect then expressed her wish and intention to do all in her power.[29] Wealthy people frequently employed several midwives, who, for some days prior to the birth, busied themselves in waiting on their patient, and putting everything in readiness for the important hour. Zuazo states that some of these acted merely as witnesses to the fact of the birth.[30]

The 'hour of death,' as the time of confinement was named, having arrived, the patient was carried to a room previously set in order for the purpose; here her hair was soaped and she was placed in a bath to be washed. Care was taken that the water should not be too hot, lest the fœtus should be scalded; in some cases the woman was beaten on the back with maize leaves which had been boiled in the water used for the bath. The midwife next proceeded to rub and press the abdomen of the patient in order to set the child in place. If the pain grew worse, soothing remedies were administered. A decoction of *cihoapatli*

[29] For these addresses, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 174–83.

[30] 'Se llegan algunas mujeres como parteras, y otras como testigos para ver si el parto es supuesto ó natural; y al tiempo del nacer no permiten que la criatura llegue á la tierra con la vida; é antes que se la corten le hacen cier tas señales en el corpezuelo.' *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 363–4.

Digitized by Google

herbs was given to promote the delivery; should this not prove effective, however, a small piece, about an inch and a half long, of the tail of the *tlaquatzin* or *tlaquatl*, was given, which is a very powerful emetic. If after all the woman got no ease, it was concluded that she would die. In cases of great danger, prayers were addressed to Cioacoatl, Quilaztli, Yoalticitl, and other deities. Should the child die in the womb, it was removed piecemeal, unless the parents objected, in which case the mother was left to die.

Mocioaquezqui, 'brave woman,' was the name given to her who died in childbed. After death the body was washed, dressed in good new clothes, and buried with great ceremony in the court-yard of the temple dedicated to the 'celestial women.'[31] Talismanic virtues were supposed to reside in the corpse; thus, the middle fingers of the left hand, and the hair, were thought to make their possessor irresistible in battle; soldiers, therefore, sought by every means, fair or foul, to procure them. Thieves believed that the left hand and arm of the corpse would strike terror into their victims, and they therefore engaged sorcerers to procure it. The birth of twins was believed to foretell the death of one of the parents at the hands of their child; to prevent this, one of the infants was killed.[32] Abortion was not unusual, and was procured by taking a decoction of certain herbs; the crime was nevertheless punished with death.[33] If everything went well, and the woman was easily delivered, the midwife gave a loud cry of triumph. She next addressed some words of counsel to the child, and

[31] *Cihuapipiltin*, or *Ciuapipilti*. A long description of the burial rites upon these occasions, in *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 186–91. These will, however, be described in a future chapter.

[32] Motolinia, *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 130, and Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 84, who seems to have copied from him, are the authorities for this, but the custom could not have been very general, for it is said that in Tlascala the mother assigned a breast to each of the twins.

[33] The principal authority on the matter of pregnancy and childbirth, and the one whom I have thus far followed, is Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 160–92.

Digitized by Google

then proceeded to wash it. Turning to the water, she addressed the goddess of waters, Chalchihuitlicue, asking her favor and protection for the child. Then taking some water, the midwife breathed upon it, gave some to the infant to taste, and then touched its head and chest therewith, saying: "Come, my son [or daughter], to Chalchihuitlicue; it is for her to bear you on the back and in her arms throughout this life!" Then, placing the infant in the water, she continued: "Enter thou into the water called *metlalac* and *tuspalac;* may it wash thee, and may the omnipotent cleanse from thee all ill that is inherent in thee from the beginning of the world and from before the beginning. Begone, all evil imparted to thee by thy father and thy mother."[34] Having washed the child, the midwife clothed it, addressing it meanwhile in whispers of welcome and admonition. Then raising her voice, she complimented the mother on her bravery and endurance.[35] A female relative next praised the fortitude of the patient, who in her response dilated on the trouble and pain she had gone through, and expressed her joy at the treasure vouchsafed her by the gods. The midwife then closed the ceremony by congratulating the grandparents and assembled friends. A few days after the confinement, the mother took a bath in the temazcalli, and indulged in rich food and wine; on this occasion a feast was also tendered to invited friends, who partook of it near the spot where the woman bathed.

All these elaborate preparations and midwife ceremonies at birth could, however, only have been in vogue among the well-to-do classes, for the Mexican women, were, as a rule, little affected by the troubles of child-bearing; their training and manner of life

[34] Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 86, differs from Sahagun in these prayers or invocations; Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 445. Klemm, *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 36, and Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 560, follow Clavigero more or less closely.

[35] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 199–200; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 445–6.

Digitized by Google

were not calculated to make them delicate. Motolinia, and many with him, say, for instance, that the Tlascaltec women delivered themselves, the mother applying to a neighbor only at the birth of her first child.[36]

It was now time to cast the nativity of the infant. For this purpose the services of a *tonalpouhqui*, or horoscopist, were engaged. These tonalpouhquis were a highly respected class, and were therefore approached with much respect, and liberally feed with mantles, food, and other articles. Having been told the hour of birth, the horoscoper consulted his book for the sign of the day on which the infant was born.[37] If the birth had taken place exactly at midnight, the signs for the closing and breaking day were combined. Comparing the birthday sign with the other twelve signs, as well as with the principal sign of the group, he deduced the required fortune, and, if the augury was favorable, dwelt on the honors and happiness in store for the infant. Should the augury prove unfavorable, as well as the sign for the fifth day after birth, which was the occasion of the second bath, or baptism, this ceremony was postponed to another day, generally the most favorable of the thirteen. in order

[36] The Teocnichimec husband undertook the office of midwife when the birth took place on the road. He heated the back of his wife with fire, threw water over her in lieu of a bath, and gave her two or three kicks in the back after the delivery, in order to promote the issue of superfluous blood. The new-born babe was placed in a wicker basket, and thrown over the back of the mother, who proceeded on her journey. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 191–203; also *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 445–6; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 86; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 560; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 551-2, 673, etc. The utensils which served at the birth of the child were, according to Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxix., offered at the fountain or river where the mother washed herself.

[37] By Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 282–328, and Duran, *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. ii., the signs of the calendar and their subdivisions are described at length. Each sign had thirteen subsigns, representing the same number of days, by whom its good or bad import was moderated to a certain extent. Under certain signs the child was liable to become a drunkard, under another a jester, under a third a warrior, and so on. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 560, and Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 552, state that the sign which had been most frequent at this period during the past thirteen years was also considered by the astrologer.

Digitized by Google

to moderate, if possible, the threatened misfortune. The fortune-teller dilated upon the troubles in store for the infant, and the vices it would develop, but 'hedged' his oracle by adding that the adjoining signs contained certain redeeming features which might have power to counterbalance the evil import of the birth-day sign.[38]

Preparations are now made for the baptism. The portals of the dwelling are decorated with green branches, flowers and sweet-smelling herbs are scattered over the floors and court-yard, and the approaches to the house are carefully swept; tamales are cooked, maize and cacao ground, and delicacies of every description prepared for the table, not forgetting the liquors; for any shortcoming in this respect would reflect severely on the hospitality of the host.[39] The relatives of the family assemble before sunrise, and other friends drop in as the day advances; each, as he congratulates the host, presents a gift of clothing for the infant, and receives in his turn a present of mantles, flowers, and choice food.[40] In the course of the morning the midwife carries the infant to the court-yard, and places it upon a heap of leaves, beside which are set a new *apaxtle*, or earthenware vessel, filled with clear water, and several miniature implements, insignia of the father's trade or profession. If he is a noble or a warrior, the articles consist of a small shield, and a bow with arrows of a corresponding size, placed with their heads directed toward the four cardinal points. Another set of arms, made from dough of amaranth-seed, and bound together with the dried navel-string of the child, is also prepared. If the child is a girl, there are placed beside it, instead of the

[38] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 215–17; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 449.

[39] A long description of this feast, the table, attendance, etc., is given by Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 332–6, and by Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 457–8. I shall have occasion to describe it in a future chapter of this volume, devoted to such matters.

[40] The poorer classes contented themselves with an interchange of flowers and food.

Digitized by Google

little weapons, a spindle and distaff, and some articles of girl's clothing. When the sun rises, the midwife sets her face and the face of the child toward the west, and addressing the infant, says: "O eagle, O tiger, O brave little man and grandson of mine, thou hast been brought into the world by thy father and mother, the great lord and the great lady. Thou wast created in that house which is the abode of the supreme gods that are above the nine heavens. Thou art a gift from our son Quetzalcoatl, the omnipresent; be joined to thy mother, Chalchihuitlicue, the goddess of water." Then placing her dripping fingers on the lips of the child, she continues: "Take this, for upon it thou hast to live, to wax strong, and flourish; by it we obtain all necessary things; take it." Then touching the child on the breast with her moistened fingers, she says: "Take this holy and pure water, that thine heart may be cleansed." Then the midwife pours water on the child's head, saying: "Receive, O my son, the water of the Lord of the World, which is our life, with which we wash and are clean; may this celestial light blue water enter into thy body and there remain; may it destroy and remove from thee all evil and adverse things that were given thee before the beginning of the world; behold, all of us are in the hands of Chalchihuitlicue, our mother." She now washes the body of the child, exclaiming: "Evil, wheresoever thou art, begone! avaunt! for the child liveth anew and is born again; once more it is purified; a second time is it renewed of our mother, Chalchihuitlicue." Then lifting up the little one toward heaven, she addresses Ometochtli and Omecioatl:[41] "Behold, O Lord, the creature which thou hast sent to this place of sorrow, affliction, and anguish, to this world; give it, O Lord, of thy gifts and inspiration, for thou art the great god and the great goddess." Then stooping as if to set the child down, she raises it a second time,

[41] A dual deity, uniting both sexes in one person.

Digitized by Google

crying upon the goddess of the waters:[42] "O lady goddess, mother of the gods, inspire this child with thy virtue." A third time she stoops, and raising the child toward heaven, addresses the gods: "O lords celestial and gods who dwell in heaven, behold this creature whom ye have sent among men, fill it with your spirit and mercy, that it may live." A fourth time she sets down and raises the babe, and calling now upon the sun and the earth, she says:[43] "O our Lord, Sun, father of all, and thou, O Earth, our mother, take ye this child for your own, and, as it is born for war,[44] so let it die defending the cause of the gods, and be permitted to enjoy the delights prepared in heaven for the brave."

The midwife now takes the implements and prays to the patron deity of the trade or profession they represent on behalf of the child; then she places the mantle upon the shoulders of the infant, girds on the little maxtli, and asks the boys present to give the child a name. This was, however, merely a matter of form; the parents really had the choosing of the name and told it to the boys. It was usually taken either from the sign of the day, or from a bird or animal, in the case of a boy; the girls were named from flowers, and this rule was especially observed by the Toltecs and Miztecs. Sometimes a child took its name from some important event which occurred at the time of its birth; as when the Tlascaltec chief, Citlalpopoca, 'smoking star,' was so named because at his birth a flaming comet was seen in the sky. Sometimes children were named after the feast held at the time of their nativity; thus boys born during the festival of the renewal of the sacred fire, called *toxilmolpilia*,

[42] Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., p. 220, makes the midwife, in this instance, call upon Citlalatonac. This goddess was, however, identical with Ometochtli and Omecioatl (see, more especially, *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 472), to whom the preceding prayer was directed. Clavigero and Torquemada assert that the prayer was addressed to the water goddess.

[43] Sahagun addresses the Sun god only.

[44] We may presume that the midwife is here addressing the child of a warrior.

Digitized by Google

were named *molpilli*, 'a tied object,' and girls *xiuhnenetl*, 'little doll of the year of fire. Occasionally a child was named after some renowned ancestor. A second name could be acquired by valiant deeds in battle. Motolinia adds that sons of prominent men took a surname from the dignity or office held by the father, either in youth or manhood; or they inherited it with the estate at the death of the parent. Children born during the last five days of the year, called *nemontemi*, 'unlucky days,' were considered unfortunate; boys born under such circumstances were often named *nemoquichtli*, 'unlucky man,' and girls *nencihuatl*, 'unlucky woman.'[45]

The midwife, having baptized the child, now calls upon it three times by its new name; admonishing it to make good use of the implements or weapons placed in its hands.[46] It is thereupon carried into the house, preceded by torch-bearers, and placed in the cradle, before which the midwife offers prayers to Yoalticitl, 'goddess of the cradle,' commending the child to her care, and beseeching her to nourish and protect it; then, turning to the cradle, she adds: "O thou, the mother of the child, receive this babe with gentleness, taking heed not to injure it." Then she places the child in the cradle, the parents meanwhile calling upon Yoalticitl to protect it, and upon Yoaltecutli, 'the god of night,' to lull it to sleep. During this cere-

[45] Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 84, Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 287, and Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 287, translates Nemoquichtli and Nencihuatl 'useless man' and 'useless woman.' Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 454–6, discusses names, why and how they were applied, in Mexico and elsewhere. Motolinia, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 37, states that the name given at baptism was discarded for one applied by the priest, when the parents carried the child to the temple in the third month. See also *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 22, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix. Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 312, says that the name given by the priest was the surname, nobles sometimes taking a third name. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 562, says that several additional names could be taken under various circumstances. In *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 90, it is stated that the name was given by three boys who sat by eating *yxcue*.

[46] Boturini states that the infant is thereupon passed four times through the fire. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 88; but this ceremony is described elsewhere in this volume as taking place in the temple.

Digitized by Google

mony, which is termed *tlacoculaquilo*, or 'the act of placing the child in the cradle,' the boys of the village, dressed to imitate soldiers, enter the house, seize certain food previously prepared for them, called the 'child's navel,' scatter the rest, and rush forth, munching and shouting the child's name and future destinies. The lights, called *ocote*, which have been used during the ceremonies, must be left to burn out, and the fire that was lighted on the birthday must be kept brightly burning until after the baptizing, nor is any one allowed to borrow from its flame, for that would injure the prospects of the child. The umbilical cord is buried with the mimic weapons in a place where a battle may be expected to take place on a future day. The girl's instruments and navel-string are buried under a metate. The afterbirth is interred in a corner of the house. After the cradling ceremony the guests proceed to the banqueting-room, where they seat themselves according to age and rank.

The festivities lasted twenty days,[47] or even longer, if the father was wealthy, during which time the house was kept open to all comers. Each visitor presented his gifts and made a speech to the infant on the duties, honors, and happiness in store for it, and adorning his discourse according to the rank of the parents, or his own courtesy. He next congratulated the mother, then the midwife, urging her further care of the infant, and lastly the father, referring to his character and services, and wishing him joy. If the father was a lord, the neighboring princes sent an embassy, preceded by numerous presents, and a chosen orator delivered a congratulatory address before the father and those present, to which an old man responded on behalf of all, commenting upon the good wishes of the neighboring nobles. The orator of the embassy then begged that the shortcomings of his former speech might be excused, and was answered by the oldest or most respected person present, on the parents'

[47] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 330–6.

Digitized by Google

behalf. The female friends who came to inspect the infant rubbed the joints of the body, especially the knees, with ashes, thinking that this would strengthen them and prevent the bones from becoming loose. The same was done to the children who accompanied them.[48] In some parts the baptismal ceremony consisted in putting some quicklime upon the child's knee, and saying to it: "O thou little one, that hast come into the world to suffer, suffer and be silent. Thou livest, but thou shalt die; much pain and anguish shall come upon thee; thou shalt become dust, even as this lime, which was once stone."[49] If a boy, an arrow or dart was then placed in the child's left hand, to indicate that he must be brave and defend his country; if a girl, she was given a distaff, as a sign that she must become industrious in all womanly pursuits.[50] In Tlascala and Miztecapan the infant was bathed in a sacred spring, which, it was thought, would avert misfortune. Mendieta says that the midwife merely sprinkled the child a certain number of times, first with wine and then with water.[51] Among the Zapotecs both mother and child were washed in a river, and invocations were addressed to all land and aquatic animals, entreating their favor and deprecating their anger;[52] it was also customary to assign some animal or bird to a child, as its *nagual*, or tutelary genius, and with the fortune of such creature its fate was supposed to be so intimately connected that the death of one involved the death of the other.[53] Burgoa adds further that this was assigned by lot, but it is stated elsewhere, and with greater probability if we may judge by similar superstitions in the Old World, that the first bird or beast that appeared after

[48] It was believed, says Torquemada, that this rubbing of their own limbs had a strengthening effect upon the new born. *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 457.

[49] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 312.

[50] *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 18.

[51] *Hist. Eccles.*, p. 107.

[52] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., fol. 329.

[53] *Id.*, fol. 395.

Digitized by Google

the birth of the child was appointed its spiritual protector.[54]

Whether the custom of circumcision, which has been the great prop of argument in favor of the Jewish origin of the Aztecs, really obtained among these people, has been doubted by numerous authors. Although circumcision was certainly not by any means general, yet sufficient proof exists to show that it was in use in some form among certain tribes. Las Casas and Mendieta state that the Aztecs and Totonacs practised it, and Brasseur de Bourbourg has discovered traces of it among the Mijes. Las Casas affirms that the child was carried to the temple on the twenty-eighth or twenty-ninth day after birth; there the high-priest and his assistant placed it upon a stone, and cut off the prepuce at the root; the part amputated they afterward burned to ashes. Girls of the

[54] The following are contradictory accounts of baptism. On the fourth day the child and mother took a purification bath, and the assembled guests were feasted on zamorra, a dish made from maize and the flesh of hens, deer, etc. Three days after, the mother carried the child to the adjoining ward, accompanied by six little boys, if it was a male child, otherwise six girls went with her, to carry the implements or insignia of the father's trade. Here she washed the child in a stream, and then returned home. Two years after a feast was served in the house of the most intimate neighbor, who was asked to name the child, and with him it remained and was held as a member of his family. *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 306–8. The infant was carried to the temple, where the priest made an oration on the miseries to be endured in this world, and placed a sword in the right hand of the child and a buckler in the left; or, if it was destined to be a mechanic, an artisan's tool; if a girl it received a distaff. The priest then took the child to the altar and drew a few drops of blood from its body with a maguey-thorn or knife, after which he threw water over it, delivering certain imprecations the while. *Touron, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 12–13. The implements were placed in the hands of the child by the priest before the idol. *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 374. Also *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xvii. The child underwent three baptisms or baths. *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 364. On the seventh day the baptism took place, and a dart was placed in the hand of the child to signify that he should become a defender of his country. *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Id.*, p. 37. In *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), tav. xxxi., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 181, it is stated that the child was sprinkled with a bunch of ficitle dipped in water, and fumigated with incense before receiving its name. Offerings were made at the temple which the priest divided among the school children. Tylor, in his *Anahuac*, p. 279, and *Primitive Culture*, vol. ii., pp. 429–36, gives short reviews of the baptismal ceremony and its moral import.

Digitized by Google

same age were defloured by the finger of the priest, who ordered the mother to repeat the operation at the sixth year. Zuazo adds that these rites were only performed upon the children of great men, and that there was no compulsion in the matter, the parents having the option of having their children defloured or circumcised at any time within five years.[55]

In the fifth month, at Huitzilopochtli's festival, all children born during the year were scarified on the breast, stomach, or arms, and by this means received as followers of their god.[56] At the festival in honor of Teteionan or Toci, 'mother of the gods,' in the eleventh month, the women delivered during the year underwent purification and presented their children. In the evening a signal was sounded from the temple, and the mothers, dressed in their best, accompanied by friends, and preceded by torch-bearers and servants carrying the babes, made the tour of the town or quarter; a halt was made at every temple to leave an offering and a lighted torch for the presiding goddess. At the temple of Toci extra offerings were made, including *tzocoyotl*, cakes of flour and honey; and here the priest performed the ceremony of purification by pronouncing certain prayers over the women.[57] In

[55] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 83–4; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 107–8; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 364; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 35. Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 73, reviews the subject of circumcision and denies that it was ever practised. Ternaux-Compans, *Voy.*, série i., p. 45, tom. x., referring to Diaz' statement that all Indians of the Vera Cruz Islands are circumcised, says that he must have confounded the custom of drawing blood from the secret organs with circumcision. Cogolludo, *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 191, says circumcision was unknown to the Indians of Yucatan. Duran and Brasseur evidently consider the slight incisions made for the purpose of drawing blood from the prepuce or ear, in the eleventh month, as the act. Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 538, following Clavigero, holds the scarification of breast, stomach, and arms to be the circumcision referred to by other authors. Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., and especially Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 374, consider the incision on the prepuce and ear to have been mistaken for circumcision, and state that it was chiefly performed upon sons of great men; they do not state when the ceremony took place.

[56] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 266; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 538.

[57] This rite was followed by another, which usually took place in the temple of Huitzilopochtli. The priest made a slight incision on the ear of

Digitized by Google

the eighteenth month of every fourth year, the children born since the last corresponding feast were taken to the temple, where their ears were pierced with a sharp bone, and macaw-feathers, *tlachcayotl*, inserted; the god-father and god-mother, or, as they are termed, uncles and aunts, whose duty it was to initiate the children into the service of the gods, holding them during the operation.[58]

An offering of flour of the *chian* seed was made, and the god-father was presented with a red robe, the god-mother with a huipil. Each child was then passed through the flames of a fire prepared for the purpose; the priest next took its head between his hands, and in that manner lifted it bodily from the ground. Everyone thereupon went home to feast, but at noon the god-father and god-mother returned to the temple and executed a dance, holding the children on their backs, and giving them pulque to drink, in very small cups. This went on till dusk, when they retired to their houses to continue the dancing and drinking. This feast and month, Itzcalli, 'growth,' obtained its name from the ceremony of squeezing the heads of children, which, it was thought, would make them grow; but it was also called the 'feast of the intoxication of boys and girls.'[59]

Among the Miztecs, the mother took hot baths for twenty days after delivery, at the end of which time a feast was held in honor of the goddess of the bath, the child sharing in the honors of the occasion.[60]

the female child, and on the ear and prepuce of the male, with a new obsidian knife handed to him by the mother, then, throwing the knife at the feet of the idol, he gave a name to the infant, at the request of the parent, after duly considering the horoscope and signs of the times. *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. iii., quoted by Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 525–6. Duran really states that these ceremonies took place in the fourth month, but as Toci's festival occurs in the eleventh month, Brasseur alters the evident mistake. The naming of the infant may have been a mere confirmation of the name given by the midwife.

[58] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 286.

[59] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 189–90. Sahagun translates Itzcalli by 'growth,' but other authors differ from him, as we shall see in a future chapter on the calendar.

[60] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.

Digitized by Google

They also gave the child a feast on its first birthday. Great care was exercised to make children hardy and strong, and no mother, however high in rank, allowed her child to be given to a nurse, unless her own health demanded such a step. The test of a wet-nurse was to press out a drop of milk upon the nail, when if it did not run, the milk was considered good.[61] No food was given to the child the first day, in order to create an appetite.[62] It was suckled for three years, in some places much longer;[63] and during this time the mother adhered to a diet that would keep up the quality of the milk; many abstained from intercourse with their husbands for the same period, to prevent the possibility of another child interfering with the proper nurture of the first one. Another feast was given at the weaning of the child. Gomara mentions that a kind of head-flattening was practised; he says that the infants were so placed in the cradle as not to allow the occiput to grow, for such a development was considered ugly.[64] Humboldt, however, says that the Aztecs never flattened the head. That it was practised to a considerable extent in remote times by people inhabiting the country, seems to be shown by the deformed skulls found in their graves, and by the sculptured figures upon the ruins. Klemm states that the cradle consisted of a hard board to which the infant was bound in such a manner as to cause the malformation. The cradle among the poor Aztecs was generally of light cane, and could be tied to the back of the mother.[65]

[61] *Motolinia Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 77; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 460–1.

[62] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 312.

[63] *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 553.

[64] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318.

[65] The authorities on childbirth, baptism, and circumcision are *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 187–90, lib. iv., pp. 281–337, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 160–222, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 119–20; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 2–73, 86–89; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 83–4, 266, 286, 445–61; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., lib. iii., cap. xii., lib. iv., cap. xvi.; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxv., clxxix.; *Codex Mendoza*, pp. 90–1, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v.; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*,

Digitized by Google

tom. i., pp. 37–8, 77, 108; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Id.*, pp. 363–4; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 107–8, 139; *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., fol. 329. 395; *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 18; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 203; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 538, 551–5, 673; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 240, tom. iii., pp. 35, 525–6, 560–3; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 374; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 312, 317–18; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 12–13; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 306–8; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 32, 265; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 36–9; *Bussierre L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 140–1; *D'Avity, L'Amérique*, tom. ii., p. 73; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 199–200; *Ritos Antiguos*, pp. 22–3, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix.; *Leat, Novus Orbis*, p. 239; *Adair's Amer. Ind.*, p. 217; *Müller, Reisen*, tom. iii., pp. 118–20; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1102–3, 1140; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., p. 101; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. iii.; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 45; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 90; *Morton's Crania Amer.*, p. 147; *Delafield's Antiq. Amer.*, p. 19.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER VIII.

NAHUA FEASTS AND AMUSEMENTS.

EXCESSIVE FONDNESS FOR FEASTS—MANNER OF GIVING FEASTS—SERVING THE MEAL—PROFESSIONAL JESTERS—PARTING PRESENTS TO GUESTS—ROYAL BANQUETS—TOBACCO-SMOKING—PUBLIC DANCES—MANNER OF SINGING AND DANCING—THE NETETELIZTLI—THE DRAMA AMONG THE NAHUAS—MUSIC AND MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS—NAHUA POETRY—ACROBATIC FEATS—THE NETOLOLIZTLI, OR 'BIRD DANCE'—PROFESSIONAL RUNNERS—THE GAME OF TLACTLI—GAMES OF CHANCE—THE PATOLIZTLI, OR 'BEAN GAME'—TOTOLOQUE, MONTEZUMA'S FAVORITE GAME.

THE excessive fondness of the Aztecs for feasts and amusements of every kind seems to have extended through all ranks of society. Every man feasted his neighbor, and was himself in turn feasted. Birthdays, victories, house-warmings, successful voyages or speculations, and other events too numerous to enumerate were celebrated with feasts. Every man, from king to peasant, considered it incumbent upon him to be second to none among his equals in the giving of banquets and entertainments, and as these involved the destribution of costly presents among his guests, it often happened that the host ruined himself by his hospitality; indeed, it is said that many sold themselves into slavery that they might be able to prepare at least one feast that would immortalize their memory.[1] More-

[1] *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 20, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix.

Digitized by Google

over the priests, with the subtle policy characteristic of their class, took advantage of this disposition to ordain long and frequent celebrations in honor of innumerable gods; in short, it is difficult to conceive what part of the year could have been saved for business from what seems to have been a continual round of merry-making.

The grandeur of the feast depended, of course, upon the wealth of the host, the rank of the guests, and the importance of the event celebrated. For many days before a noble or wealthy man entertained his friends, an army of servants were employed in sweeping the approaches to the house, decorating the halls and courts with branches and garlands, erecting *chinamas*, or arbors, and strewing the floors with flowers and sweet herbs; others prepared the table service, killed and dressed dogs, plucked fowls, cooked tamales, baked bread, ground cacao, brewed drinks, and manufactured perfumed cigarettes. Invitations were in the mean time sent to the guests. These on their arrival were presented with flowers, as a token of welcome. Those of a superior condition to the host were saluted after the Aztec fashion by touching the hand to the earth and then carrying it to the lips. On some occasions garlands were placed upon the heads of the guests and strings of roses about their necks, while copal was burned before those whom the host delighted specially to honor. While waiting for the meal the guests employed their time in walking freely about the place, complimenting their host on the tasteful manner in which the house was decorated, or admiring the fine shrubbery, green grass plats, well-kept flower-beds, and sparkling fountains in the gardens.

Dinner being announced, all took their seats, according to rank and age, upon mats or *icpalli*, stools, ranged close along the walls.[2] Servants then entered

[2] The highest in rank or consideration sat on the right side, and those of inferior degree on the left; young men sat at the ends on both sides, according to their rank. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., pp. 347–8.

Digitized by Google

with water and towels, with which each guest washed his hands and mouth. Smoking-canes were next presented on *molcaxetes*, or plates, to stimulate the appetite. The viands, kept warm by chafing dishes, were then brought in upon artistically worked plates of gold, silver, tortoise-shell, or earthenware. Each person before beginning to eat threw a small piece of food into a lighted brazier, in honor of Xiuhtecutli, the god of fire,[3] probably by way of grace. The numerous highly seasoned dishes of meat and fish having been duly discussed, the servants cleared the tables and feasted upon the remains of the banquet in company with the attendants of the guests.[4] Vessels called *teutecomatls*, filled with chocolate, each provided with a spoon to stir the fluid with, were then brought on, together with water for washing the hands and rinsing the mouth. The women who were present on these occasions, although they sat apart from the men, received a kind of spiced gruel instead of cacao. The old people, however, were plied with *octli*, a very potent beverage, until they became drunk, and this was held to be an indispensable part of the ceremony.

The smoking-canes were now once more produced, and while the guests reclined luxuriously upon their mats enjoying the greatful influence of the fragrant leaf which we are told by Bernal Diaz they called 'tobacco,' and sipping their drinks, the music suddenly struck up, and the young folks, or perhaps some professionals, executed a dance, singing at the same time an ode prepared for the occasion, as well as other songs. Dwarfs, deformed beings, and curious objects were

[3] Speaking of this Xiuhtecutli, Torquemada says: 'Honrabanlo como á Dios, porque los calentaba, cocia el Pan y guisaba la Carne, y por esto en cada Casa le veneraban; y en el mismo Fogòn, ò Hogar, quando querian comer, le daban el primer bocado de la vianda, para que allí se quemase; y lo que avian de beber, lo avia de gustar primero, hechando en el fuego parte de el licor.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 57. Sahagun says the morsel of food was thrown into the fire in honor of the god Tlaltecutli: 'Antes que comenzasen á comer los convidados la comida que les habian puesto, tomaban un bocado de la comida, y arrojábanlo al fuego á honra del dios Tlaltecutli, y luego comenzaban á comer.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., p. 333.

[4] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 457.

Digitized by Google

also introduced to vary the entertainment; but the professional jesters were the favorites, and the jokes made by them raised many a laugh, though this was rather forced perhaps by those at whose expense said jokes were cracked, for these fools were fully as privileged as their contemporary European brothers of motley, and sometimes spoke very biting truths in the shape of a jest; in some cases they were disguised in the costume of a foreign nation, whose dialect and peculiarities they imitated; at other times they would mimic old women, well-known eccentric individuals and so forth.

The nobles kept a number of these jesters for their own amusement, and often sent them to a neighboring brother noble to propound riddles; taking care to provide them with means to pay forfeit should the riddle be solved.[5]

These private banquets generally lasted till midnight, when the party broke up. Each guest received at parting presents of dresses, gourds, cacao-beans, flowers, or articles of food. Should any accident or shortcoming have marred the pleasure of the party, the host would sooner repeat the entertainment than have any slur rest upon his great social venture. In any case it was doubtless difficult for the good man to escape censure either for extravagance or stinginess.

At the royal feasts given when the great vassals came to the capital to render homage to their sovereign, the people flocked in from the provinces in great numbers to see the sights, which consisted of theatrical representations, gladiatorial combats, fights between wild beasts, athletic sports, musical performances, and poetical recitations in honor of kings, gods, and heroes. The nobles, in addition to this, partook daily of banquets at the palace, and were presented by the monarch with costly gifts.[6]

Sahagun, Hist. Gen., tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 292.

[6] For description of feasts, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 457–8; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 332–6, tom. ii., lib. ix.,

Digitized by Google

To the tobacco-loving reader it will be interesting to learn how the weed was smoked in the New World before it was introduced into the Old by the immortal Jean Nicot, whose name be forever blessed. The habit of smoking did not possess among the Nahuas the peculiar character attached to it by the North American natives, as an indispensable accessory to treaties, the cementing of friendship, and so forth, but was indulged in chiefly by the sick, as a pastime and for its stimulating effect. The origin of the custom among the Nahuas may be traced to the use of reed-grass, filled with aromatic herbs, which was lighted and given to guests that they might diffiuse the perfume about them; gradually they came to puff the reeds and swallow the smoke, pretending to find therein a remedy against headache, fatigue, phlegm, sleeplessness, etc. Three kinds of tobacco were used, the *yetl*, signifying tobacco in general, obtained from a large-leaved plant, the *picyetl*, from a small but stronger species, and *quauyetl*, a less esteemed kind known later on as wild tobacco. Clavigero asserts that the *picyetl* and *quauyetl* were the only species known among the Mexicans. It was generally smoked after dinner in the form of paper, reed, or maize-leaf cigarettes, called *pocyetl*, 'smoking tobacco,' or *acayetl*, 'tobacco-reed,' the leaf being mixed in a paste, says Veytia, with *xochiocotzotl*, liquid amber, aromatic herbs, and pulverized charcoal, so as to keep smouldering when once lighted, and shed a perfume. The picyetl tobacco was smoked later in the day, without admixture, and somewhat in the shape of cigars. The smoke was inhaled, and the nose closed, in order that none of the grateful qualities should be lost. Wooden, metal, or bamboo tubes were sometimes used instead of cigarettes. Snuff-

pp. 359–60, 364–5; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 645–6; *Id.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1858, tom. clix., pp. 74–6; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 152–7; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 178; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 210–11; *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 20, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix.

Digitized by Google

ing the pulverized leaf is an ancient custom which we owe to them.[7]

Dancing was the favorite Aztec amusement, and the fanciful arrangement of their dances, as well as the peculiar grace of their motions, is highly praised by all the old chroniclers Dancing, and especially religious dances, formed an important part of an Aztec youth's education, and much trouble was taken by the priests to instruct them in it.

The preparations for the great public dances, when the performers numbered thousands,[8] were on an immense scale. The choirs and bands attached to the service of the various temples were placed under the supervision of a leader, usually a priest, who composed the ode of the day, set it to music, instructed the musicians, appointed the leaders of the dance, perfected the arrangements generally, observed that all did their duty, and caused every fault or negligence to be severely punished.[9] The *Netetelitzli* dance took place either in the plaza or in the court-yard of the temple, in the centre of which mats were spread for the musicians. The nobles and aged men formed a circle nearest to the drums, the people of less importance formed another circle a little distance behind, and the young people composed the third ring. Two leading dancers directed the movements, and whatever steps they made were imitated by the performers. When all was ready, a whistle gave the signal, and the drums were beaten lightly to a well-known tune started by the leaders and taken up by the dancers, who at the same time began to move their feet, arms, heads, and, bodies in perfect accord. Each verse or couplet was repeated

[7] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 49–51; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 227; *Hernandez, Nova Plant.*, p. 173; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 525; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 646; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 684; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 12–13.

[8] 'Iuntauanse a este bayle, no mil hombres, como dize Gomara, pero mas de ocho mil.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. viii.

[9] Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 315, ever prepared with capital punishment, states that 'el señor les mandaba prender, y otro dia los mandaba matar.'

Digitized by Google

three or four times, the dancers keeping time with their *ayacachtli*, or rattles. Each must keep his relative position in the circle, and complete the circuit at the same time; the inner circle, therefore, moved at a slow, dignified pace, suited to the rank and age of the men composing it; the second proceeded somewhat faster, while the dancers in the outer circle approached a run as the dance became livelier. The motions were varied; at one time the dancers held one another by the hand, at another round the waist; now they took the left-hand neighbor for partner, now the right, sometimes facing one way, sometimes another. The first song ended, which referred to the event of the day, a popular ode, treating of their gods, kings, or heroes, was taken up and sung in a higher scale and to a livelier measure, the dance meanwhile constantly increasing in animation. This was the case with all the succeeding songs, each one becoming higher and shriller as it proceeded; flutes, trumpets, and sharp whistles were sometimes added to the band to increase the effect. When one set of dancers became tired, another took its place, and so the dance continued through the whole day, each song taking about an hour. Jesters and clowns in various disguises circulated between the lines, cutting capers, cracking jokes, and serving refreshments. Herrera states that the solemn *mitote* was danced by twos in the outer circle.[10] At private dances, two parallel lines were usually formed, the dancers turning in various directions, changing partners, and crossing from line to line.[11] Sometimes one stepped from each line, and performed a pas de deux while the others looked on. The 'ribbon dance' resembled the English May-pole dance to a certain extent. A pole fifteen to twenty feet high was erected on a smooth piece of ground, and twenty or more persons, each seizing the end of a colored ribbon attached to its summit, began to dance about the

[10] *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xix.
[11] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 180.

Digitized by Google

mast, crossing each other and winding in apparent confusion, until the pole was covered with a motley texture of a certain design. When the band became too short, the plaiting was unwound by reversing the order of the dance. They had a number of other mitotes, or dances, varying chiefly in the colors worn by the dancers, the finery, painting, and disguises, and conforming to the text of the songs, such as the *huexotzincaiutl*, *anaoacaiutl*, *cuextecaiutl*, *tocotin*, and others to be described under religious festivals.[12] Children from four to eight years of age, the sons of nobles, took part in some dances and sang the soprano, and the priests joined in the solemn performances. Certain dances, as the *netecuitotoli*,[13] could only be performed by the king and nobles,[14] a space being always set apart for the sovereign when he danced. Women joined the men in some dances, but generally danced apart. Certain dancing-houses of bad repute termed *cuicoyan*, 'great joy of women,' were open to females at night, and were then scenes of unmitigated debauch.[15] Great pains were taken to appear as fine as possible at the dances; noted warriors appeared magnificently dressed, and occasionally bearing shields set with feathers; nobles in court-dress of rich mantles knotted at the shoulders, fanciful maxtlis round the loins, tassels of feathers and gold in the hair, lip-ornaments of gold and precious stones, gold rings in the ears, bracelets of the same metal set with plumes, or strings of chalchiuites and turquoises round the wrists and other parts of the arms, and some had gold bells attached to the ankles; the gayly colored dresses of the lower class were decorated with feathers and embroidery; garlands and flowers encircled the head, necklaces of shells and beans hung about the neck,

[12] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 308–9; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 181–2.

[13] Netecuhytotiliztli, according to *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 286.

[14] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 189.

[15] *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 87.

Digitized by Google

bracelets clasped the arms and legs, and all carried nosegays. The women also shone in huipiles, gayly colored, fancifully embroidered, and set with fringes.[16]

The drama scarcely equalled in excellence the choral dance, yet in this respect, as in others, the Nahuas showed considerable advancement. Thalia presided more frequently than Melpomene over the play, which generally took the character of a burlesque. The performers mostly wore masks of wood, or were disguised as animals. No special building was devoted to the drama, but the lower porch of a temple usually served as the stage; some large towns, however, boasted of a permanent stage, erected in the centre of the plaza. The principal of these was at Tlatelulco, and consisted of a terrace of stone and lime, thirteen feet high, by thirty in breadth. When in use it was decorated with foliage, and mats of various colors, whereon was emblazoned the coat of arms of the city, were hung all round it. At Cholula the porch of the temple of Quetzalcoatl served as a stage; this was whitewashed and adorned with arches of branches, feathers, and flowers, from which hung birds, rabbits, and other curious objects. Here the people congregated after dinner on gala-days to witness the performance, in which deaf, lame, blind, deformed, or sick people, or sometimes, merchants, mechanics, or prominent citizens, were mimicked, burlesqued, and made fun of. Each actor endeavored to represent his rôle in the most grotesque manner possible. He who was for the moment deaf gave nonsen-

[16] 'I Plebei si travestivano in varie figure d'animali con abiti fatti di carta, e di penne, o di pelli'—no doubt to distinguish them from the gentry when they joined in the dance. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 179–81, and others who follow him. In *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 130–3, is a long description of feast-day dress. For description of dances, see *Id.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 308–9, 314–15; *Torquemada, Monarq Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 550–2; *D'Avity, L'Amérique*, tom. ii., p. 68; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 267–8; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 446–9; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1064–5; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 643–5; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 669–71; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 140–3; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 61, 87; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 106–7; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 56–8; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. viii., dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xix., and Translation, Lond. 1726, vol. iii., p. 227, with cut.

Digitized by Google

sical answers to questions put to him; the sick man depicted the effects of pain, and so forth. When these had exhausted their stock of jokes, others entered, as beetles, frogs, or lizards, croaking, whistling, and skipping about the stage after the manner of the creatures they represented. The boys from the temples also appeared as birds and butterflies, and flocked into the trees in the court-yard. Each performer rehearsed his part before appearing in public, and great care was taken that no blunder should mar the beauty of the plot. The priests added to the fun by blowing mud-balls at the actors through wooden tubes, and praising or censuring the performance in a jocular manner. The entertainment concluded with a ball, which was attended by all the actors.[17]

Some authors have spoken very favorably of the dramatic skill of the Nahuas. Clavigero is not inclined to indorse this opinion, although he thinks a great advance would have been made in this direction had the Mexican empire survived another century—a very natural conclusion, certainly. The ceremonies at the religious festivals often partook of a dramatic character, as will be seen presently.[18]

Music, a principal attraction at our theatrical entertainments, did not play an important part on the Nahua stage, and though we hear of singers appearing, instrumental concert is not mentioned. Aside from this, the high importance attached to music is evident from the myth of its origin. According to this myth no less a personage than Tezcatlipoca[19] brought, or sent for, music from the sun, and constructed a bridge of whales and turtles, symbols of strength, by which to convey it to the earth.

Drums, horns, shells, trumpets, and shrill whistles

[17] *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 144–5, has it that the audience also attended this ball.

[18] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 391–2; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Mexico*, tom. ii., pp. 76–8; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 59–60; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 674–6.

[19] For an account of Tezcatlipoca, see vol. iii. of this work.

Digitized by Google

made from cleft bones were the instruments most used. The drum was the favorite, and the beating of several in nice accord sufficed alone for an accompaniment to the song and the dance. Two kinds of drum are mentioned; of these, the *huehuetl*[20] was a hollow cylinder of wood about three feet high, and a foot and a half in diameter, curiously carved and painted, and having its upper end covered with a dressed deer-skin, tightened or loosened in tuning, and played upon with the hands. The other kind of drum was called the *teponaztli*, 'wing of the stone-vapor;' this was entirely of wood, and had no opening but two parallel slits in one side, the enclosed piece being divided in the centre so as to form two tongues, each of which increased in thickness toward its extremity; the drum was placed in a horizontal position, and the sound was produced by beating the tongues with sticks tipped with rubber balls. This drum varied in length from a toy of a few inches to five feet. Sometimes it was carved in the shape of a man, woman, or animal, and lay lengthways on trestles. The huehuetl gave forth a dull sound resembling that of the East Indian tom-tom. These drums, when of the largest size, could be heard at a distance of two miles.[21] The teponaztli produced a melancholy sound, which is considered by Brasseur de Bourbourg to have been a symbol of the hollow warning noise preceding the annihilation of Earth, which was symbolized by the instrument itself.[22] The *tetzilacatl* was a kind of gong made of copper and struck with a hammer of the same material. The *ayacachtli* was a rattle of copper, perforated and filled with pebbles, used by dancers.

The ancient writers unite in praising the perfect unison and good time observed by the singers, both in solo and quartette, with chorus and responses, and they mention particularly the little boys of from four

[20] Called *tlapanhuehuetl* by Tezozomoc and Brasseur de Bourbourg.
[21] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 179, etc.
[22] *Quatre Lettres*, p. 94.

Digitized by Google

to eight years of age, who rendered the soprano in a manner that reflected great credit on the training of their priestly tutors. Each temple and many noblemen kept choirs and bands of professional musicians, usally led by a priest, who composed odes appropriate to every occasion, and set them to music. Bass singers were rare, and were prized in proportion to their rarity. They had a great number of popular songs or ballads which were well known in all classes. Young people were obliged to learn by heart long epics, in which were recounted the glorious deeds of heroes in battle and the chase; or didactic pieces, pointing some moral and inculcating a useful lesson; or hymns of praise and appeal for sacred festivals. Clavigero, Pimentel, and other authors extol the aboriginal muse highly, and describe the language used as pure, brilliant, figurative, and interwoven with allusions to the beauties of nature; unmeaning interjections scattered here and there to assist the metre evince a lack of finish, however, and the long compound words, a single one of which often formed a whole verse, certainly did not add to the harmony; yet they observed good metre and cadence.[23]

The art of music was under royal protection, and singers as well as musicians were exempt from taxation. Nezahualcoyotl, the great Tezcucan patron of art, himself composed a number of odes and elegies, and founded an academy of sciences and music, where the allied kings of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan presided, and distributed prizes to the successful competitors. Toltec songs are highly praised for their beauty and variety. The Totonacs and Tepanecs are said to have been as far advanced in music and singing as the Aztecs;[24] but concerning these arts I shall speak more at length in a future chapter.

[23] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 106, states, 'y esto va todo en copla por sus consonantes,' but it is not likely that they were anything else than blank verse, for such a thing as rhyme is not mentioned by any other writer.

[24] Concerning music and singing, see *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 174–9; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 229, tom.

Digitized by Google

The acrobatic feats performed by the Nahuas excited the surprise and admiration of the conquerors, and the court of Spain, before which some of these athletes were introduced, was no less astounded at the grace, daring, and strength displayed by them.

Some of these gymnastic performances have only of late become known to us; thus, the so-called Chinese foot-balancing trick, in which a man lying on his back spins a heavy pole on the soles of his raised feet, throws it up, catches it, and twirls it in every direction, was a common feat with the Nahua acrobat, who, indeed, excelled the circus-man of to-day, in that he twirled the pole while a man sat at each end of it. Another feat was performed by three. One having braced himself firmly, another mounted on his shoulders, while the third climbed up and stood upon the head of the second. In this position the human column moved slowly about, the man on the top performing a kind of dance at the same time. Again, a man would dance on the top of a beam, the lower end of which was forked and rested upon the shoulders of two other dancers. Some raised a stick from the ground while a man balanced at the end of it; others leaped upon a stick set upright in the ground, or danced upon the tight-rope. Another game involving an equal display of grace and daring was the *netotoliztli*, or 'bird dance,' known to the Spaniards as the 'flying-game,' and performed especially during the laymen's feast. In the centre of an open place, generally a public square, a lofty pole was erected. On the top of this pole was placed a wooden, movable cap, resembling an inverted mortar; to this were fastened

ii., pp. 551–2; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 447; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 140–1; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 106; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indyena*, pp. 57–9; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 282, tom. iii., pp. 279, 669, 672–74; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 641–2; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1064–5; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 61; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 145–50; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 545; *Ranking's Hist. Researches*, p. 344; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 170–5, 194; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, p. 64; *Dupaix, Rel., 2de Expéd.*, pl. 62–3, in *Antiq. Mex.*, tom. iii.; *Fuenleal*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 218–19; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 85–99.

Digitized by Google

four stout ropes which supported a wooden frame about twelve feet square. Four other longer ropes were carefully wound thirteen times about the pole just below the cap, and were thence passed through holes made one in each of the four sides of the frame. The ends of these ropes, while wound about the pole, hung several feet below the frame. Four gymnasts, who had practised some time previously, and were disguised as birds of different form, ascended by means of loops of cord tied about the pole, and each having fastened one of the ropes round his waist, they started on their circular flight with spread wings. The impulse of the start and the weight of the men set the frame in motion, and the rope unwound quicker and quicker, enabling the flyers to describe larger and larger circles. A number of other men, all richly dressed, sat perched upon the frame, whence they ascended in turn to the top of the revolving cap, and there danced and beat a drum, or waved a flag, each man endeavoring to surpass his predecessor in daring and skill.[25] As the flyers neared the ground, and the ropes were almost untwisted, the men on the frame glided down the ropes so as to gain the ground at the same time, sometimes passing from one rope to the other in their descent and performing other tricks. The thirteen turns of the rope, with the four flyers, represented the cycle with its four divisions of thirteen years.

Running was practised, not only for exercise, but as a profession, as the government employed a large number of couriers to run with messages, who were trained for the purpose from early childhood. To these I shall have occasion to refer again. Races were held at the chief temple in Mexico under the auspices of the priests,[26] at which prizes were awarded

[25] Espinosa seems to think that one man did all the dancing on the summit, and Brasseur says that each of the flyers performed on the top of the mast before taking their flight.

[26] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 387–8.

Digitized by Google

to the four competitors who succeeded in first gaining the topmost of the one hundred and twenty steps. The Nahuas must have been able swimmers, too, for it is said that travellers usually took to the water when crossing rivers, leaving the bridges to those who carried burdens. There were also sham fights and public reviews, both for the exercise of the army and the delectation of the masses. At these times, the soldiers competed for prizes in shooting with the arrow or throwing the dart.[27] On grand occasions, such as the coronation of a king, soldiers fought with wild beasts, or wrestled with one another, and animals were pitted against each other in fenced enclosures.[28]

The national game of the Nahuas was the *tlachtli*, which strongly resembled in many points our game of football, and was quite as lively and full of scuffle. It was common among all the nations whose cult was similar to the Toltec, and was under special divine protection, though what original religious significance it had is not clear. Indeed, for that matter, nearly every game enjoyed divine patronage, and *Ometochtli*, 'two rabbits,' the god of games, according to Duran, was generally invoked by athletes as well as gamblers, in conjunction with some special god. Instruments of play and natural objects were also conjured to grant good luck to the applicant. As an instance of the popularity of the game of tlachtli,[29] it may be mentioned that a certain number of towns contributed annually sixteen thousand balls in taxes, that each town of any size had a special play-ground devoted to the game, and that kings kept professionals to play before them, occasionally challenging each other to a game besides. The ground in which it was played, called the *tlachco*,[30] was an alley whose shape is shown

[27] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 292.

[28] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 53, 87; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 238.

[29] Sahagun calls it *tlaxtli*, or *tlachtl;* and Tezozomoc, *tlachco*, but this is shown by others to be the name of the play-ground.

[30] Gomara says *tlachtli*, or *tlachco;* Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. viii., *tlachtli.*

Digitized by Google

H in the cut; one hundred feet long[31] and half as wide, except at each end, where there were rectangular nooks, which doubtless served as resting-places for the players. The whole was enclosed by smooth whitewashed walls, from nine to twelve feet high on the sides, and somewhat lower at the ends, with battlements and turrets, and decreasing in thickness toward the top.[32] At midnight, previous to the day fixed for the game, which was always fixed favorably by the augurs, the priests with much ceremony placed two idols—one representing the god of play, the other the god of the tlachtli[33]—upon the side walls, blessed the edifice, and consecrated the game by throwing the ball four times round the ground, muttering the while a formula. The owner of the tlachco, usually the lord of the place, also performed certain ceremonies and presented offerings, before opening the game. The balls, called *ullamaloni*, were of solid India-rubber, three to four inches in diameter. The players were simply attired in the maxtli, or breechclout, and sometimes wore a skin to protect the parts coming in contact with the ball, and gloves; they played in parties, usually two or three on each side. The rule was to hit the ball only with knee, elbow, shoulder, or buttock, as agreed upon, the latter being however the favorite way, and to touch the wall of the opposite side with the ball, or to send it over, either of which counted a point. He who struck the ball with his hand or foot, or with any part of his body not previously agreed upon, lost a point; to settle such matters without dispute a priest acted as referee. On each side wall, equidistant from the ends,

[31] Duran makes it one hundred to two hundred feet, Espinosa fifty varas, Brasseur, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, vol. iii., p. 667, sixty to eighty feet.

[32] Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 647, says that the side walls are lowest, 'de ménos altura los laterales que los dos de los extremos;' but this agrees neither with other statements nor with the requirements of the play. Sahagun's description of the tlachco gives two walls, forty to fifty feet long, twenty to thirty feet apart, and about nine feet high.

[33] Carbajal Espinosa thinks that one of them was *Omeacatl*, 'the god of joy.'

Digitized by Google

was a large stone, carved with images of idols, pierced through the centre with a hole large enough to just admit the passage of the ball;[34] the player who by chance or skill drove the ball through one of these openings not only won the game for his side, but was entitled to the cloaks of all present, and the haste with which the spectators scrambled off in order to save their garments is said to have been the most amusing part of the entertainment. A feat so difficult was, of course, rarely accomplished, save by chance, and the successful player was made as much of as a prize-winner at the Olympic games, nor did he omit to present thank-offerings to the god of the game for the good fortune vouchsafed him.

The possession of much property depended upon the issue of the game; the rich staked their gold and jewels, the poor their dresses, their food, or even their liberty.[35]

Gambling, the lowest yet most infatuating of amusements, was a passion with the Nahuas, and property of all kinds, from ears of corn or cacao-beans, to costly jewelry and personal liberty, were betted upon the issue of the various games. Professional gamesters

[34] Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 647, states that the stones were in the centre of the ground, 'en el espacio que mediaba entre los jugadores,' but no other author confirms this. It is not unlikely that these stones are the idols placed upon the walls by the priests, for they are described as being decorated with figures of idols. For description and cuts of the ruins of what seem to have been similar structures in Yucatan, see vol. iv., pp. 172, 230–1, of this work.

[35] Veytia, *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 107, says that the ball had to be kept up in the air a long time, and he who let it drop lost, which is unlikely, since the point was to drive it against the opponent's wall; it is possible, however, that this trial of skill formed a part of the play at times. He also states that in the centre of the play-ground was a hole filled with water, and the player who sent the ball into it lost his clothes and had opprobious epithets hurled at him, among which 'great adulterer' was the most frequent; moreover, it was believed that he would die by the hand of an injured husband. A hole filled with water does not, however, seem appropriate to a nice play-ground; besides, the ball would be very likely to roll into the pool, for the opponents would not prevent it. Camargr, *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 196, and Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 123, say that nobles only were allowed to play the game, which can only refer to certain play-grounds or occasions, for the number of the balls paid in taxes proves the game too general to have been reserved for nobles.

Digitized by Google

went from house to house with dice and play-mats, seeking fresh victims. All gambling tools were formally charmed, and this charm was renewed and strengthened at intervals by presenting the instruments in the temple, with prayers that the blessing of the idol might descend upon them.

Patoliztli, which somewhat resembled our backgammon, appears to have been the most popular game of chance. *Patolli*, or large beans marked with dots, like dice, were shaken in the hand and thrown upon a mat, upon which was traced a square marked with certain transverse and diagonal lines. The thrower of the beans marked his points on these lines according to the number of spots which fell upward. He who first gained a certain score won the game. The players were usually surrounded by a crowd of interested spectators, who betted heavily on the result, and called loudly for the favor of Macuilxochitl, the patron deity of the game. Golden and jewelled dice were often used instead of beans by the rich.[36] They had another game in which reeds took the place of dice. Two players, each with ten pebbles by his side, shot split reeds in turn toward small holes made in the ground, by bending them between the fingers; if a reed fell over a hole a marker was placed on a square; this continued until the markers were all exhausted by the winner.[37] Montezuma's favorite game

[36] Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 105, is the authority for the names of the game and beans. Torquemada affirms, however, 'y dicenle Juego Patolli, porque estos dados, se llaman asi.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 554. Clavigero, on the other hand, says: 'Patolli è un nome generico significante ogni sorta di giuoco.' Carbajal Espinosa translates him. Referring to the dice, Sahagun says that they were 'cuatro frisoles grandes, y cada uno tiene un ahugero;' afterward he contradicts this by saying that they consisted of three large beans with 'ciertos puntos en ellos.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 292, 317. Brasseur de Bourbourg describes the playing process as follows: 'Ils jetaient les dés en l'air avec les deux mains, marquant les cases avec de petits signaux de diverses couleurs, et celui qui retournait le premier dans les cases gagnait la partie,' which agrees with Torquemada's account. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 671.

[37] 'Hacian encima de un encalado unos hoyos pequeñitos....y con unas cañuelas hendidas por medio daban en el suelo y saltaban en alto, y tantas cuantas en las cañuelas caian lo hueco por arriba tantas casas adelantaba sus piedras.' *Duran, Hist Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. xxii.

Digitized by Google

was called *totoloque*, and consisted in throwing small golden balls at pieces of the same metal set up as targets at a certain distance. Five points won the stakes. Peter Martyr jumps at the conclusion that chess must have been known to the Nahuas, because they possessed checkered mats.[38]

[38] For Nahua games and amusements, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 53, 87, tom. ii., pp. 305–6, 552–4; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 182–6; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 291–3, 316–17; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 104–6; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. 22–3; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. vii.–viii.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x.; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1065, 1127–8; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 123, 129, tom. iii., pp. 665–9; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 645–9; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 54–6; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 387–8; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 407; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 64; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pt i., pp. 100–1; *Cortés, Aven. y Conq.*, p. 306; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., pp. 107–8; *Dilworth's Conq. Mex.*, p. 80; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 47–8, quoting *Picart, Cérémonies Relig.*, tom. ii., p. 81.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER IX.

PUBLIC FESTIVALS.

FREQUENT OCCURRENCE OF RELIGIOUS FEASTS—HUMAN SACRIFICES—FEASTS OF THE FOURTH YEAR—MONTHLY FESTIVALS—SACRIFICE OF CHILDREN—FEAST OF XIPE—MANNER OF SACRIFICE—FEASTS OF CAMAXTLI, OF THE FLOWER-DEALERS, OF CENTEOTL, OF TEZCATLIPOCA, AND OF HUITZILOPOCHTLI—FESTIVAL OF THE SALT-MAKERS—THE SACRIFICE BY FIRE—FEAST OF THE DEAD—THE COMING OF THE GODS—THE FOOTPRINTS ON THE MAT—HUNTING FEAST—THE MONTH OF LOVE—HARD TIMES—NAHUA LUPERCALIA—FEASTS OF THE SUN, OF THE WINTER SOLSTICE—HARVEST AND EIGHT-YEAR FESTIVALS—THE BINDING OF THE SHEAF.

THE amusements described in the preceding chapter were chiefly indulged in during the great religious festivals, when the people flocked together from all quarters to propitiate or offer up thanks to some particular god.

These festivals were of very frequent occurrence. The Nahuas were close observers of nature; but like other nations in a similar or even more advanced stage of culture—the Greeks and Northmen, for example—they entirely misunderstood the laws which govern the phenomena of nature, and looked upon every natural occurrence as the direct act of some particular divinity. The coming of the rains was held to be the coming of the rain gods, with their heralds, the thunder and lightning; the varying condition of the crops was ascribed to their Ceres; drought, storms,

Digitized by Google

eclipses, all were considered the acts of special deities. The religious machinery required to propitiate the anger, humor the whims, and beseech the favor of such a vast number of capricious divinities, was as intricate as it was ponderous. Besides the daily services held in the various temples, prayers were offered several times during each day in that of the sun, special rites attended every undertaking, from the departure of a private traveller to the setting forth of an army for war, and fixed as well as movable feasts were held, the number of which was continually increased as opportunity offered. The priests observed fasts among themselves, attended with penance, scarifications, and mutilations sometimes so severe as to result fatally. Thus, at the festival in honor of Camaxtli, the priests fasted one hundred and sixty days, and passed several hundred sticks, varying in thickness from half an inch to an inch and a half, through a hole freshly made in the tongue.[1] The people imitated these penances in a less degree, and sacrificed the members of their bodies that had been the means of committing a sin. Blood was drawn from the ears for inattention, or for conveying evil utterances to the mind; from the tongue for giving expression to bad words; the eyes, the arms, the legs, all suffered for any reprehensible act or neglect. The people of each province, says Las Casas, had a manner of drawing blood peculiar to themselves.[2]

At the public festivals each private person brought such offering to the god as his means allowed. The poor had often nothing to give but a flower, a cake,

[1] See the Totonac daily temple service, in *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxv. 'Luego aquel viejo mas principal metia y sacaba por su lengua en aquel dia cuatro cientos y cincuenta palos de aquellos....otros no tan viejos sacaban trescientos....Estos palos que metian y sacaban por las lenguas eran tan gordos como el dedo pulgar de la mano....y otros tanto gruezos como las dos dedos de la mano pulgar y él con que señalamos podian abrazar.' *Id.*, cap. clxxii.

[2] 'En cada provincia tenian diferente costumbre porque unos de los brazos y otros de los pechos y otros de los muslos, &c. Y en esto se cognoscian tambien de que Provincia eran.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxx.

Digitized by Google

or personal service, but the wealthy gave rich robes, jewels, gold, and slaves. But no great feast seems to have been complete without human sacrifice. This was always the great event of the day, to which the people looked eagerly forward, and for which victims were carefully preserved. Most of these miserable beings were captives taken in war, and it was rarely that the supply failed to be sufficient to the occasion, especially among the Mexicans, since, as I have before said, there was nearly always trouble in some part of the empire, if not, a lack of victims for sacrifice was held good cause for picking a quarrel with a neighboring nation; besides, if the number of war prisoners was not sufficient, there were never wanting refractory slaves to swell the number. We have it upon good authority that upon almost every monthly feast, and upon numerous other grand celebrations, several hundred human hearts were torn hot from living breasts as an acceptable offering to the Nahua gods and a pleasant sight to the people.[3]

The grandest festivals were celebrated during the fourth year, called Teoxihuitl, or 'divine year,' and at the commencement of every thirteenth year. On these occasions a greater number of victims bled and the penances were more severe than at other times. The Nahuas also observed a grand festival every month in the year; but as these feasts were closely connected with their religion, and therefore will be necessarily described at length in the next volume, I will confine myself here to such an outline description of them as will suffice to give the reader an idea of what they were.[4]

[3] 'En esta Fiesta, y en todas las demàs, donde no se hiciere mencion de particulares Sacrificios de Hombres, los avia, por ser cosa general hacerlos en todas las Festividades, y no era la que carecia de ello.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 255.

[4] 'Le feste, che annualmente si celebravano, erano più solenni nel *Teoxihuitl*, o Anno divino, quali erano tutti gli anni, che aveano per carattere il Coniglio.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 84; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 549. 'En cada principio del mesa en el dia que nombramos cabeza de sierpe celebraban una fiesta solemnisima

Digitized by Google

The Aztec feast that is mentioned first by the old writers, namely, that of the month Atlcahualco, 'the diminishing of the waters,' or, as it was called in some parts, Quahuitlehua, 'burning of the trees or mountains,' was celebrated in honor of the Tlalocs, gods of rains and waters. At this feast a great number of sucking infants were sacrificed, some upon certain high mountains, others in a whirlpool in the lake of Mexico. The little ones were mostly bought from their mothers, though sometimes they were voluntarily presented by parents who wished to gain the particular favor of the god. Those only who had two curls on the head, and who had been born under a lucky sign, were thought acceptable to the gods. The sacrifices were not all made in one place, but upon six several mountains and in the lake. These were visited one after another by a great procession of priests attended by the music of flutes and trumpets, and followed by a vast multitude of people thirsting for the sight of blood; nay, more; literally hungering for the flesh of the babes, if we may credit the assertion of some authors, that the bodies were actually brought back and the flesh eaten as a choice delicacy by the priests and chief men. But of cannibalism more anon.

The little ones were carried to their death upon gorgeous litters adorned with plumes and jewels, and were themselves dressed in a splendid manner in embroidered and jewelled mantles and sandals, and colored paper wings. Their faces were stained with oil of India-rubber, and upon each cheek was painted a round white spot. No wonder that, as the old chroniclers say, the people wept as the doomed babes passed by; surely there was good cause for weeping in such a sight. Gladiatorial combats and sacrifice of prisoners of war at the temple completed this feast.[5]

....la cual era tan guardada y festejada que ni aun barrer la casa ni hacer de comer no se permitia.' *Duran, Hist. Indias,* MS., tom. iii., cap. ii.

[5] Sahagun in his short résumé of the festival states that some hold this celebration to have been in honor of Chalchihuitlicue, the water-goddess, and others in honor of Quetzalcoatl; but thinks that it might have

Digitized by Google

The next feast, that in the month of Tlacaxipehualiztli, 'the flaying of men,' was held in honor of Xipe, who was especially the patron deity of the goldsmiths.[6] This god was thought to inflict sore eyes, itch, and other diseases upon those who offended him, and they were therefore careful to observe his feast with all due regularity and honor. On this occasion thieves convicted for the second time of stealing gold or jewels[7] were sacrificed, besides the usual number of prisoners of war. The vigil of the feast, on the last day of the preceding month, began with solemn dances. At midnight the victims were taken from the chapel, where they had been compelled to watch, and brought before the sacred fire. Here the hair was shaven from the top of their heads, the captors at the same time drawing blood from their own ears in honor of the idol; the severed topknot of each war prisoner was afterward hung up at the house of his captor as a token and memorial of the father's bravery. Toward daybreak some of the prisoners were taken up to the great temple to be sacrificed. But before we proceed farther it will be necessary to see how these human offerings were made.

Sacrifices varied in number, place, and manner, according to the circumstances of the festival. In general, the victims suffered death by having the breast opened and the heart torn out; but others were drowned, others were shut up in caves and starved to death, others fell in the gladiatorial sacrifice, which will be described elsewhere. The cus-

been in honor of all these deities, namely, the Tlalocs, Chalchihuitlicue, and Quetzalcoatl. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 49–50, 83–7. See also *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 250–2, 295.

[6] Although Sahagun states that Huitzilopochtli also received honors this month, yet no direct ceremonies were observed before his image. The large number of captives sacrificed, however, the universality and length of the festivities, the royal dance, etc., would certainly point to a celebration in honor of a greater deity than Xipe. He also says: 'En esta fiesta mataban todos los cautivos, hombres, mugeres, y niños;' which is not very probable. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 88.

[7] Thieves convicted the second time of stealing gold articles were sacrificed. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 503.

Digitized by Google

tomary place was the temple, on the topmost platform of which stood the altar used for ordinary sacrifices. The altar of the great temple at Mexico, says Clavigero, was a green stone, probably jasper, convex above, and about three feet high and as many broad, and more than five feet long. The usual ministers of the sacrifice were six priests, the chief of whom was the Topiltzin, whose dignity was preëminent and hereditary; but at every sacrifice he assumed the name of that god to whom it was made. When sacrificing he was clothed in a red habit, similar in shape to a modern scapulary, fringed with cotton; on his head he wore a crown of green and yellow feathers, from his ears hung golden ear-ornaments and green jewels, and from his under lip a pendant of turquoise. His five assistants were dressed in white habits of the same make, but embroidered with black; their hair was plaited and bound with leather thongs, upon their foreheads were little patches of various-colored paper; their entire bodies were dyed black. The victim was carried naked up to the temple, where the assisting priests seized him and threw him prostrate on his back upon the altar, two holding his legs, two his feet, and the fifth his head; the high-priest then approached, and with a heavy knife of obsidian cut open the miserable man's breast; then, with a dexterity acquired by long practice, the sacrificer tore forth the yet palpitating heart, which he first offered to the sun, and then threw at the foot of the idol; taking it up, he again offered it to the god, and afterward burned it, preserving the ashes with great care and veneration. Sometimes the heart was placed in the mouth of the idol with a golden spoon. It was customary also to anoint the lips of the image and the cornices of the door with the victim's blood. If he was a prisoner of war, as soon as he was sacrificed they cut off his head to preserve the skull, and threw the body down the temple steps, whence it was carried to the house of the warrior by whom the victim had been

Digitized by Google

taken captive, and cooked and eaten at a feast given by him to his friends; the body of a slave purchased for sacrifice was carried off by the former proprietor for the same purpose. This is Clavigero's account. The same writer asserts that the Otomís, having killed the victim, tore the body in pieces, which they sold at market. The Zapotecs sacrificed men to their gods, women to their goddesses, and children to some other diminutive deities. At the festival of Teteionan the woman who represented this goddess was beheaded on the shoulders of another woman. At the feast celebrating the arrival of the gods the victims were burned to death. We have seen that they drowned children at one feast in honor of Tlaloc; at another feast of the same god several little boys were shut up in a cavern and left to die of fear and hunger.[8]

Let us now proceed with the feast of Xipe. We left a part of the doomed captives on their way to death. Arrived at the summit of the temple, each one is led in turn to the altar of sacrifice, seized by the grim, merciless priests, and thrown upon the stone; the high-priest draws near, the knife is lifted, there is one great cry of agony, a shuffle of feet as the assistants are swayed to and fro by the death struggles of their victim; then all is silent save the

[8] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico,* tom. ii., pp. 45–9. The same author says, with regard to the number of sacrifices made annually in the Mexican empire, that he can affirm nothing, as the reports vary greatly. 'Zumarraga, the first bishop of Mexico, says, in a letter of the 12th of June, 1531, addressed to the general chapter of his order, that in that capital alone twenty thousand human victims were annually sacrificed. Some authors, quoted by Gomara, affirm that the number of the sacrificed amounted to fifty thousand. Acosta writes that there was a certain day of the year on which five thousand were sacrificed in different places of the empire; and another day on which they sacrificed twenty thousand. Some authors believe that on the mountain Tepeyacac alone twenty thousand were sacrificed to the goddess Tonantzin. Torquemada, in quoting, though unfaithfully, the letter of Zumarraga, says that there were twenty thousand infants annually sacrificed. But, on the contrary, Las Casas, in his refutation of the bloody book, wrote by Dr Sepulveda, reduces the sacrifices to so small a number that we are left to believe they amounted not to fifty, or at most not to a hundred. We are strongly of opinion that all these authors have erred in the number, Las Casas by diminution, the rest by exaggeration of the truth.' *Id.*, Translation, Lond. 1807, vol. i., p. 281.

Digitized by Google

muttering of the high-priest as high in air he holds the smoking heart, while from far down beneath comes a low hum of admiration from the thousands of upturned faces.

The still quivering bodies were cast down the temple steps, as at other times, but on this occasion they were not taken away until they had been flayed, for which reason these victims were called *xipeme*, 'flayed,' or *tototeeti*, 'one who dies in honor of Totec.' The remains were then delivered over to the captor by certain priests, at the chapel where he had made his vow of offering, a vow which involved a fast of twenty days previous to the festival. A thigh was sent to the king's table, and the remainder was cooked with maize and served up at the banquet given by the captors, to which their friends were invited. This dish was called *tlacatlaolli;* the giver of the feast, says Sahagun, did not taste the flesh of his own captive, who was held, in a manner, to be his son, but ate of others.

The next day another batch of prisoners, called *oavanti*, whose top hair had also been shaved, were brought out for sacrifice. In the mean time a number of young men, also termed *tototeeti*, began a gladiatorial game, a burlesque on the real combat to follow; dressing themselves in the skins of the flayed victims, they were teased to fight by a number of their comrades; these they pursued and put to flight, and thereupon turned against one another, dragging the vanquished to the guard-house, whence they were not discharged until a fine had been paid. A number of priests, each representing a god, now descended from the summit of the temple, and directed their steps to the stone of sacrifice, which stood below, and must not be confounded with the altar, and seated themselves upon stools round about it, the high-priest taking the place of honor. After them came four braves, two disguised as eagles, and two as tigers, who performed fencing tactics as they advanced, and were

Digitized by Google

destined to fight the captives. A band of singers and musicians, who were seated behind the priests, and bore streamers of white feathers mounted on long poles which were strapped to their shoulders, now began to sound flutes, shells, and trumpets, to whistle and to sing, while others approached, each dragging his own captive along by the hair. A cup of pulque was given to each of these poor wretches, which he presented toward the four quarters of the earth, and then sucked up the fluid by means of a tube. A priest thereupon took a quail, cut off its head before the captive, and taking the shield which he carried from him, he raised it upwards, at the same time throwing the quail behind him—a symbol, perhaps, of his fate. Another priest, arrayed in a bear-skin, who stood as godfather to the doomed men, now proceeded to tie one of the captives to a ring fixed in the elevated flat stone upon which the combat took place; he then handed him a sword edged with feathers instead of flint, and four pine sticks wherewith to defend himself against the four braves who were appointed to fight with him, one by one. These advanced against him with shield and sword raised toward the sky, and executing all manner of capers; if the captive proved too strong for them, a fifth man, who fought both with the right and left hand, was called in.[9] Those who were too faint-hearted to attempt this hopeless combat had their hearts torn out at once, whilst the others were sacrificed only after having been subdued by the braves. The bleeding and quivering heart was held up to the sun, and then thrown into a bowl prepared for its reception. An assistant priest sucked the blood from the gash in the chest through a hollow cane, the end of which he elevated toward the sun, and then discharged its contents into a plume-bordered cup held by the captor of the prisoner just slain. This cup was carried round to all the idols in the temples and

[9] This farce differed from the regular gladiatorial combat, which will be described elsewhere.

Digitized by Google

chapels, before whom another blood-filled tube was held up as if to give them a taste of the contents; this ceremony performed, the cup was left at the palace. The corpse was taken to the chapel where the captive had watched, and there flayed, the flesh being consumed at a banquet as before.[10] The skin was given to certain priests, or college youths, who went from house to house dressed in the ghastly garb, with the arms swinging, singing, dancing, and asking for contributions; those who refused to give anything received a stroke in the face from the dangling arm. The money collected was at the disposal of the captor, who gave it to the performers, and no doubt it eventually found its way to the temple or school treasury.[11] After the sacrifice, the priests, chiefs, and owners of the captives commenced to dance the *motzontecomaitotia*, circling round the stone of combat, weeping and lamenting as if going to their death, the captors holding the heads of the dead men by the hair in their right hands, and the priests swinging the cords which had held them toward the four quarters of the compass, amid many ceremonies. The next morning solemn dances were held everywhere, beginning at the royal palaces, at which everybody appeared in his best finery, holding tamales or cakes in his hands in lieu of flowers, and wearing dry maize instead of garlands as appropriate to the season. They also carried imitations of amaranths made of feathers and maize stalks with the ears. At noon the priests retired from the dance, whereupon the lord and no-

[10] 'Quedauan las cabeças coraçones para los sacerdotes.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 327.

[11] 'Guardaban alguno que fuese principal señor para este dia; el cual dessolaban para que se vestiese Montezuma gran Rey de la tierra y con él baylaba con sus reales contenencias.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxx. 'Embutian los cueros de algodon o paja, y, o los colgauan en el templo, o en palacio,' in the case of a prisoner of rank. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 327. It is not stated that the persons who wore the skins and made the collection were connected with the temple, but this was no doubt the case, especially as many authors mention that priests had to dress themselves in the ghastly garb for a certain time. For representation of priest dressed in a flayed skin, see *Nebel, Viaje*, pl. xxxiv.

Digitized by Google

bles arranged themselves in front of the palace by threes, with the king at their head holding the lord of Tezcuco by the right hand and the lord of Tlacopan by the left, and danced solemnly till sunset. Other dances by warriors, and women, chiefly prostitutes, followed at the temple and lasted till midnight, the motions consisting of swinging of arms and interwinding. The festivities were varied by military reviews, sports, and concerts, and extended over the whole month. It was held incumbent upon every one at this time to eat a kind of uncooked cake called *huilocpalli*. The Tlascaltecs called this month Cohuailhuitl, 'feast of the snake,' a name which truly indicates rejoicings, such as carnivals, sports, and banquets, participated in by all classes. Celebrations in honor of Camaxtli were also held at this time here as well as in Huexotzinco and many other places, for which the priests prepared themselves by a severe fast. The ceremonies when they took place in the fourth year, called 'God's year,' were especially imposing. When the time came for the long fast, which preceded the feast, to begin, those of the priests who had sufficient courage to undergo the severe penance then exacted from the devout were called upon to assemble at the temple. Here the eldest arose and exhorted them to be faithful to their vows, giving notice to those who were faint-hearted to leave the company of penance-doers within five days, for, if they failed, after that time by the rules of the fast they would be disgraced and deprived of their estates. On the fifth day they again met to the number of two or three hundred, although many had already deserted, fearing the severity of the rules, and repaired to Mount Matlalcueje, stopping half-way up to pray, while the high-priest ascended alone to the top, where stood a temple devoted to the divinity of this name. Here he offered chalchiuite-stones and quetzal-feathers, paper and incense, praying to Matlalcueje and Camaxtli to give his servants strength and courage to

Digitized by Google

keep the fast. Other priests belonging to various temples in the mean time gathered loads of sticks, two feet long and as thick as the wrist, which they piled up in the chief temple of Camaxtli. These were fashioned to the required form and size and polished by carpenters who had undergone a five days' fast, and were, in return for their services, fed outside the temple. Flint-cutters, who had also undergone a fast to insure the success of their work, were now summoned to prepare knives, which were placed upon clean cloths exposed to the sun and perfumed; a broken blade was held as a sign of bad fasting, and the one who broke it was reprimanded. At sunset, on the day of the great penance, the *achcauhtli*, 'eldest brothers,' began chanting in a solemn tone and playing upon their drums.[12] On the termination of the last hymn, which was of a very lugubrious character and delivered without accompaniment, the self-torture commenced. Certain penance-doers seized each a knife and cut a hole in the tongue of each man, through which the prepared sticks were inserted, the smaller first and then the stouter, the number varying according to the piety and endurance of the penitent. The chief set the example by passing four hundred and fifty through his tongue,[13] singing a hymn at the same time in spite of all. This was repeated every twenty days during the fast, the sticks decreasing in size and number as the time for the feast drew near. The sticks which had been used were thrown as an offering to the idol within a circle formed in the court-yard of the temple with a number of poles, six fathoms in height, and were afterwards burned. After the lapse of eighty days, a branch was placed in the temple-yard, as a sign that all the people had to join in the fast for the remaining eighty

[12] 'Cuatro de ellos cantaban á las navajas.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 57.

[13] 'Estos palos que metian y sacaban por las lenguas eran tan gordos como el dedo pulgar de la mano, y otros como el dedo pulgar del pie: y otros tanto gruezos como los dos dedos de la mano pulgar y él con que señalamos podian abrazar.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxii.

Digitized by Google

days, during which nothing but maize cakes, without chile—a severe infliction, indeed, for this people—were to be eaten, no baths taken, and no communion with women indulged in.[14] Fires were to be kept alight the whole time, and so strict was this rule that the life of the slaves in great houses depended upon the proper attention paid to it. The chief achcauhtli went once more to the Matlalcueje mountain,[15] escorted by four others, where, alone and at night, he offered copal, paper, and quails; he also made a tour round the province, carrying a green branch in his hand, and exhorting all to observe the fast. The devout seized this opportunity to make him presents of clothes and other valuables. Shortly before the end of the fast, all the temples were repaired and adorned, and three days previous to the festival the achcauhtlis painted themselves with figures of animals in various colors, and danced solemnly the whole day in the temple-yard. Afterward they adorned the image of Camaxtli, which stood about seventeen feet high, and dressed the small idol by his side in the raiments of the god Quetzalcoatl, who was held to be the son of Camaxtli. This idol was said to have been brought to the country by the first settlers. The raiment was borrowed from the Cholultecs, who asked the same favor when they celebrated Camaxtli's feast. Camaxtli was adorned with a mask of turquoise mosaic,[16] green and red plumes waved upon his head, a shield of gold and rich feathers was fastened to his left arm, and in his right hand he held a dart of fine workmanship pointed with flint. He was dressed in several

[14] Motolinia conveys the idea that the people also performed the infliction on the tongue: 'Aquella devota gente.... sacaban por sus lenguas otros palillos de á jeme y del gordor de un cañon de pato.' *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 58.

[15] 'Cada dia de estos iba el viejo de noche á la sierra ya dicha y ofrecia al demonio mucho papel, y copalli, y cordonices.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 58.

[16] 'La cual decian que habia venido con el ídolo pequeño, de un pueblo que se dice Tollan, y de otro que se dice Poyauhtlan, de donde se afirma que fué natural el mismo ídolo.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 58–9.

Digitized by Google

robes and a *tecuexicolli*, like a priest's vestment, open in front and finely bordered with cotton and rabbit-hair, which was spun and dyed like silk. Numbers of birds, reptiles, and insects were killed before him, and flowers offered. At midnight, a priest dressed in the vestments of the idol lighted a new fire, which was consecrated with the blood of the principal captive, called the Son of the Sun. All the other temples were supplied from this flame. Great numbers of captives were thereupon sacrificed to Camaxtli as well as to other gods, and the bodies consumed at the banquets that followed. The number killed in the various towns of the province amounted to over one thousand, a number greatly increased by the numerous sacrifices offered at the same time in other places where Camaxtli was worshipped.[17]

The next feast, which was that of the month called Tozoztontli, or 'short vigil,' was characterized by a constant night-watch, observed by the priests in the various temples, where they kept fires burning and sounded the gongs to prevent napping. More of the children bought in the first month were now sacrificed, and offerings of fruits and flowers were made to induce the Tlalocs to send rain.[18] The chief event, however, of this month, was a fast given in honor of Cohuatlicue, or Coatlantona, by the *xochimanques*, or flower-dealers, of Mexico. The celebration took place in the temple of Yopico, which was under the special care and protection of the people of Xochimilco and Quauhnahuac, whose lands were renowned for the beauty and abundance of their flowers. Here were offered the first flowers of the season, of which hitherto none might inhale the perfume, and here the people sat down and chanted hymns of praise to the goddess. Cakes made of wild

[17] See also *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 288–90, 252–3, 296.

[18] 'Echaban por el pueblo cierto pecho ó derrama recogiendo tanto haber que pudiesen comprar cuatro niños esclavos de cinco á seis años. Estos comprados ponianlos en una cueva y cerrabanla hasta otro año que hacian otro tanto.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxx.

Digitized by Google

amaranth or savory, called *tzatzapaltamale*, were also offered. In this temple of Yopico was a grotto in which the skins of the victims sacrificed at the feast of the preceding month were now deposited by the priests, who had worn them continuously until this time. These marched in solemn procession to the grotto, accompanied by a number of people whom the angered Xipe had smitten with itch or eye diseases; this act of devotion would, it was thought, induce the god to relent and remove the curse. The owners of the captives to whom the skins had belonged, and their families, of whom none was permitted to wash his head during the month, in token of sorrow for the slain, followed the procession. The priests doffed their strange and filthy attire and deposited it in the grotto; they were then washed in water mixed with flour, their bodies at the same time being belabored and slapped with the moist hands of their assistants, to bring out the unhealthy matter left by the rotting skins. This was followed by a lustration in pure water. The diseased underwent the same washing and slapping. On returning home feasting and amusements broke out anew. Among other sports the owners of the late prisoners gave the paper ornaments which had been worn by them to certain young men, who, having put them on, took each a shield in one hand and a bludgeon in the other; thus armed they ran about threatening to maltreat those whom they met. Everybody fled before them, calling out, "Here comes the *tetzonpac*." Those who were caught forfeited their mantles, which were taken to the house of the warrior, to be redeemed, perhaps, after the conclusion of the game. The paper ornaments were afterward wrapped in a mat and placed upon a tripod in front of the wearer's house. By the side of the tripod a wooden pillar was erected, to which the thigh-bone of a victim, adorned with gaudy papers, was attached amid many ceremonies, and in the presence of the captor's friends. Both these trophies commemorated

Digitized by Google

the bravery of the owner. This lasted six days. About this time, says Duran, certain old diviners went about, provided with talismans, generally small idols, which they hung round the necks of boys by means of colored thread, as a security against evil, and for this service received presents from the parents.[19]

The following month, which was called Huey-Tozoztli, 'great vigil,'[20] a feast was celebrated in honor of Centeotl, the god of cereals, and Chicomecoatl, goddess of provisions. At this time both people and priests fasted four days. Offerings of various kinds were made to the gods of the feast, and afterwards a procession of virgins, strangely and gaudily attired, carried ears of corn, to be used as seed, to the temple to be blessed.[21]

The first half of the succeeding month, called Toxcatl, was, among the Mexicans, taken up with a continuous series of festivals in honor of Tezcatlipoca; the latter half of the month was devoted to the worship of his brother god Huitzilopochtli. Ten days before the feast began, a priest, arrayed in the vestments of Tezcatlipoca, and holding a nosegay in one hand and a clay flute in the other, came out from the temple, and turning first to the east and then to the other three quarters, blew a shrill note on his instrument; then stooping, he gathered some dust on

[19] Duran adds that all male children under twelve years of age were punctured in the ears, tongue, and leg, and kept on short allowance on the day of festival; but this is not very probable, for other authors name the fifth month for the scarification of infants. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii. For particulars of the feast, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 52–4, 95–7; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 253–5, 296; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 51–2.

[20] Boturini, *Idea*, p. 52, translates this name as 'the great bleeding,' referring to the scarifications in expiation of sins.

[21] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 255–6; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 97–100. According to Duran, *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii., the Tlalocs were worshipped this month also, and this involved bloody rites. *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vii., pp. 43–4. Motolinia states that food was offered to the stalks: 'Delante de aquellas cañas ofrecian comida y atolli.' *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 46. For a more detailed description of this feast, see vol. iii. of this work, pp. 360–2.

Digitized by Google

his finger and swallowed it, in token of humility and submission. On hearing the whistle, all the people knelt, ate dust, and implored the clemency and favor of the god. On the eve of the festival, the nobles brought to the temple a present of a new set of robes, in which the priests clothed the idol, adorning it besides with its proper ornaments of gold and feathers; the old dress was deposited in the temple coffers as a relic. The sanctuary was then thrown open to the multitude. In the evening certain fancifully attired priests carried the idol on a litter round the court-yard of the temple, which was strewn with flowers for the occasion. Here the young men and maidens devoted to the service of the temple formed a circle round the procession, bearing between them a long string of withered maize as a symbol of drought. Some decked the idol with garlands, others stewed the ground with maguey-thorns, that the devout might step upon them and draw blood in honor of the god. The girls wore rich dresses, and their arms and cheeks were dyed; the boys were clothed in a kind of net-work, and all were adorned with strings of withered maize. Two priests marched beside the idol, swinging their lighted censers now toward the image, now toward the sun, and praying that their appeals might rise to heaven, even as the smoke of the burning copal; and as the people heard and saw, they knelt and beat their backs with knotted cords.

As soon as the idol was replaced, offerings poured in of gold, jewels, flowers, and feathers, as well as toasted quails, corn, and other articles of food prepared by women who had solicited and obtained the privilege. This food was afterward divided among the priests, who, in fact, seem to have really reaped the benefit on most religious occasions. It was carried to them by a procession of virgins who served in the temple. At the head of the procession marched a priest strangely attired in a white-bordered surplice, reaching to the knee, and a sleeveless jacket of red

Digitized by Google

skin, with a pair of wings attached, to which hung a number of ribbons, suspending a gourd filled with charms. The food was set down at the temple stairway, whence it was carried to the priests by attendant boys. After a fast of five days, these divine viands were doubtless doubly welcome.

Among the captives brought out for sacrifice at the same festival a year before, the one who possessed the finest form, the most agreeable disposition, and the highest culture, had been selected to be the mortal representative of the god till this day. It was absolutely necessary, however, that he should be of spotless physique, and, to render him still more worthy of the divine one whom he personated, the calpixques, under whose care he was placed, taught him all the accomplishments that distinguished the higher class. He was regaled upon the fat of the land, but was obliged to take doses of salted water to counteract any tendency toward obesity; he was allowed to go out into the town day and night, escorted by eight pages of rank dressed in the royal livery, and received the adoration of the people as he passed along. His dress corresponded with his high position; a rich and curiously bordered mantle, like a fine net, and a maxtli with wide embroidered margin covered his body; white cock-feathers, fastened with gum, and a garland of *izquixuchitl* flowers, encircled the helmet of seashells which covered his head; strings of flowers crossed his breast; gold rings hung from his ears, and from a necklace of precious stones about his neck dangled a valuable stone; upon his shoulders were pouch-like ornaments of white linen with fringes and tassels; golden bracelets encircled the upper part of his arms, while the lower part was almost covered with others of precious stones, called *macuextli;* upon his ankles golden bells jingled as he walked, and prettily painted slippers covered his feet.

Twenty days before the feast he was bathed, and his dress changed; the hair being cut in the style used by

Digitized by Google

captains, and tied with a curious fringe which formed a tassel falling from the top of the head, from which two other tassels, made of feathers, gold, and *tochomitl*, and called *aztaxelli*, were suspended. He was then married to four accomplished damsels, to whom the names of four goddesses, Xochiquetzal, Xilonen, Atlatonan, and Huixtocioatl, were given, and these remained with him until his death, endeavoring to render him as happy as possible. The last five days the divine honors paid to him became still more imposing, and celebrations were held in his honor, the first day in the Tecanman district, the second in the ward where the image of Tezcatlipoca stood, the third in the woods of the ward of Tepetzinco, and the fourth in the woods of Tepepulco; the lords and nobles gave, besides, solemn banquets followed by recreations of all kinds. At the end of the fourth feast, the victim was placed with his wives in one of the finest awning-covered canoes belonging to the king, and sent from Tepepulco to Tlapitzaoayan, where he was left alone with the eight pages who attended him during the year. These conducted him to the Tlacochcalco, a small and plain temple standing near the road, about a league from Mexico,[22] which he ascended, breaking a flute against every step of the staircase. At the summit he was received by the sacrificing ministers, who served him after their manner, and held up his heart exultingly to the sun; the body was carried down to the court-yard on the arms of priests, and the head having been cut off was spitted at the Tzompantli, or 'place of skulls;' the legs and arms were set apart as sacred food for the lords and people of the temple. This

[22] 'Le Tlacochcalco, ou maison d'armes, était un arsenal, consacré à Huitzilopochtli, dans l'enceinte du grand temple. Il se trouvait à côté un teocalli où l'on offrait des sacrifices spéciaux à ce dieu et à Tetzcatlipoca.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 510. This sanctuary outside the town was also dependent on the great temple, and, as the fate of the youth was to illustrate the miserable end to which riches and pleasures may come, it is, perhaps, more likely that this poor and lonely edifice was the place of sacrifice. Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 70 says 'conducevanlo....al tempio di Tezcatlipoca.'

Digitized by Google

end, so terrible, signified that riches and pleasure may turn into poverty and sorrow—a pretty moral, truly, to adorn so gentle a tale.

After the sacrifice, the college youths, nobles, and priests commenced a grand ball, for which the older priests supplied the music; and at sunset the virgins brought another offering of bread made with honey. This was placed upon clay plates, covered with skulls and dead men's bones, carried in procession to the altar of Tezcatlipoca, and destined for the winners in the race up the temple steps, who were dressed in robes of honor, and, after undergoing a lustration, were invited to a banquet by the temple dignitaries. The feast was closed by giving an opportunity to boys and girls in the college, of a suitable age, to marry. Their remaining comrades took advantage of this to joke and make sport of them, pelting them with soft balls, and reproving them for leaving the service of the god for the pleasures of matrimony.[23] Tezcatlipoca's representative was the only victim sacrificed at this festival, but every leap-year the blood flowed in torrents.

After this celebration commenced the festival in honor of the younger brother of Tezcatlipoca, Huitzilopochtli, the Mexican god of war. The priests of the god prepared a life-size statue like his original image, the bones of which were composed of mezquite-wood, the flesh of *tzoalli*, a dough made from amaranth and other seeds. This they dressed in the raiments of the idol; viz., a coat decorated with human bones, and a net-like mantle of cotton and nequen, covered by another mantle, the *tlaquaquallo*, adorned with feather-work, and bearing a gold plate upon its front; its wide folds were painted with the bones and members of a human being, and fell over a number of men's bones made of dough, which

[23] Brasseur de Bourbourg indicates that the race in the temple and the liberation of the marriageable took place in leap-years only, but he evidently misunderstands his authority. Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 75-7, gives an account of this festival.

Digitized by Google

represented his power over death. A paper crown, very wide at the top and set with plumes, covered this head, and attached to its feather-covered summit was a bloody flint knife, signifying his fury in battle. The image was placed upon a stage of logs, formed to resemble four snakes whose heads and tails protruded at the four corners, and borne by four of the principal warriors[24] to the temple of Huitznahuac, attended by a vast number of people, who sang and danced along the road. A sheet of maguey-paper, twenty fathoms in length, one in breadth, and one finger in thickness, upon which were depicted the glorious deeds of the god, was carried before the procession on the points of darts ornamented with feathers, the bearers singing the praises of the deity to the sound of music.[25] At sunset the stage was raised to the summit of the temple by means of ropes attached to the four corners, and placed in position. The paper painting was then rolled up in front of it, and the darts made into a bundle. After a presentation of offerings consisting of tamales and other food, the idol was left in charge of its priests. At dawn the next morning similar offerings, accompanied with incense, were made to the family image of the god at every house. That day the king himself appeared in the sacerdotal character. Taking four quails, he wrenched their heads off one after another, and threw the quivering bodies before the idol; the priests did the same, and then the people. Some of the birds were prepared and eaten by the king, priest, and principal men at the feast, the rest were preserved for another occasion. Each minister then placed coals and *chapopotli* incense[26] in his

[24] Contrary to the statement of others, Brasseur de Bourbourg says that the stage was borne by temple officers; surely, warriors were the fit persons to attend the god of war.

[25] 'Llevábanle entablado con unas saetas que ellos llamaban *teumitl*, las cuales tenían plumas en tres partes junto el casquillo, y en el medio, y el cabo, iban estas saetas una debajo, y otra encima del papel; tomábanlas dos, uno de una parte, y otro de otra, llevándolas asidas ambas juntas con las manos, y con ellas apretaban el papelon una por encima, y otra por debajo.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 105–6.

[26] 'El Incienso no era del ordinario, que llaman Copal blanco, ni de el

Digitized by Google

tlemaitl,[27] and wafted the disagreeable odor toward the idol. The ashes were then emptied from the censers into an immense brazier, called the *tlexictli*, or 'fire-navel.' This ceremony gave the name to the festival, which was known as the 'incensing of Huitzilopochtli.' The girls devoted to the service of the temple now appeared, having their arms and legs decorated with red feathers, their faces painted, and garlands of toasted maize on their heads; in their hands they held split canes, upon which were flags of paper or cloth painted with vertical black bars. Linking hands they joined the priests in the grand dance called *toxcachocholoa*. Upon the large brazier, round which the dancers whirled, stood two shield-bearers with blackened faces, who directed the motions. These men had cages of candlewood tied to their backs after the manner of women. The priests who joined in the dance wore paper rosettes upon their foreheads, yellow and white plumes on their heads, and had their lips and their blackened faces smeared with honey. They also wore undergarments of paper, called *amasmaxtli*, and each held a palm wand in his hand, the upper part of which was adorned with flowers, while the lower end was tipped with a ball, both balls and flowers being made of black feathers; the part of the wand grasped in the hand was rolled in strips of black-striped paper. When dancing, they touched the ground with their wands as if to support themselves. The musicians were hidden from view in the temple. The courtiers and warriors danced in another part of the court-yard, apart from the priests, with girls attired somewhat like those already described.

At the same time that the representative of Tez-

Incienso comun....sino de vna Goma, ò Betun negro, à manera de Pez, el qual licor se engendra en la Mar, y sus Aguas, y olas, lo hechan en algunas partes à sus riberas, y orillas, y le llaman Chapopotli, el qual hecha de sí mal olor, para quien no le acostumbra à oler, y es intenso, y fuerte.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 266.

[27] A kind of perforated and ornamented censer, shaped like a large spoon.

Digitized by Google

catlipoca was chosen, the year before, another youth was appointed to represent Huitzilopochtli, to whom was given the name of Ixteocale, that is, 'eyes of the lord of the divine house.'[28] He always associated with the other doomed one of Tezcatlipoca, and shared his enjoyments; but, as the representative of a less esteemed god, he was paid no divine honors His dress was characteristic of the deity for whom he was fated to die. Papers painted with black circles covered his body, a mitre of eagle-feathers, with waving plumes and a flint knife in the centre, adorned his head, and a fine piece of cloth, a hand square, with a bag called *patoxin* above it, was tied to his breast; on one of his arms he had an ornament made of the hair of wild beasts, like a maniple, called *imatacax*, and golden bells jingled about his ankles. Thus arrayed, he led the dance of the plebeians,[29] like the god conducting his warriors to battle. This youth had the privilege of choosing the hour of his death, but any delay involved the loss to him of a proportionate amount of glory and happiness in the other world. When he delivered himself up to the sacrificers, they raised him on their arms, tore out his heart, beheaded him, and spitted the head at the place of skulls. After him several other captives were immolated, and then the priests started another dance, the *atepocaxixilihua*, which lasted the remainder of the day, certain intervals being devoted to incensing the idol. On this day the male and female children born during the year were taken to the temple and scarified on the chest, stomach, and arms, to mark them as followers of the god.

The feast in honor of Quetzalcoatl, as it was celebrated during this month in Cholula, and the feast of the following month, called Etzalqualiztli, dedicated

[28] Clavigero writes: '*Ixteocale*, che vale, Savio Signor del Cielo.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 72. Several other names are also applied to him.

[29] 'Mischiavasi nel ballo de'Cortigiani.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom ii., p. 72.

Digitized by Google

to the Tlalocs, or rain gods, the reader will find fully described in the next volume.[30]

The next month was one of general rejoicing among the Nahuas, and was for this reason called Tecuilhuitzintli, or Tecuilhuitontli, 'small feast of the lords.' The nobles and warriors exercised with arms to prepare for coming wars; hunting parties, open-air sports, and theatricals divided the time with banquets and indoor parties; and there was much interchanging of roses out of compliment. Yet the amusements this month were mostly confined to the lower classes, the more imposing celebrations of the nobility taking place in the following month. The religious celebrations were in honor of Huixtocihuatl, the goddess of salt, said to have been a sister to the rain gods, who quarrelled with her, and drove her into the salt water, where she invented the art of making salt. Her chief devotees were, of course, the salt-makers, mostly females, who held a ten-days' festival in her temple, singing and dancing every evening from dusk till midnight in company with the doomed captives. They were all adorned with garlands of a sweet-smelling herb called *iztauhiatl*, and danced in a ring formed by cords of flowers, led by some of their own sex; the music was furnished by two old men. The female who represented the goddess and was to die in her honor danced with them, generally in the centre of the circle, and accompanied by an old man holding a beautiful plume, called *huixtopetlacotl;* if very nervous she was supported by old women.[31] She was dressed in the yellow robes of the goddess, and wore on her head a mitre surmounted by a number of green plumes; her huipil and skirt with net covering were worked in wavy outlines, and bordered with chalchiuites; ear-rings of gold in imitation of flowers hung from her ears; golden bells and white shells held by

[30] Pages 286–7, 334–43.

[31] 'Se juntauan todos los caualleros y principales personas de cada prouincia.... vestian vna muger de la ropa y insignias de la diosa de la sal, y baylauan con ella todos.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 327.

Digitized by Google

straps of tiger-skin, jingled and clattered about her ankles; her sandals were fastened with buttons and cords of cotton. On her arm she bore a shield painted with broad leaves, from which hung bits of parrot-feathers, tipped with flowers formed of eagle-plumage; it was also fringed with bright quetzal-feathers. In her hand she held a round bludgeon, one or two hands broad at the end, adorned with rubber-stained paper, and three flowers, at equal distances apart, filled with incense and set with quetzal-feathers; this shield she flourished as she danced. The priests who performed the sacrifice were dressed in an appropriate costume; on the great day, the priests performed another and solemn dance, devoting intervals to the sacrifice of captives, who were called Huixtoti, in honor of the diety. Finally toward evening, the female victim was thrown upon the stone by five young men, who held her while the priests cut open her breast, pressing a stick or a swordfish-bone against her throat to prevent her from screaming. The heart was held up to the sun and then thrown into a bowl. The music struck up and the people went home to feast.[32]

The feast of the following month, Hueytecuilhuitl, or 'great feast of the lords,' occurred at the time of the year when food was most scarce, the grain from the preceding harvest being nearly exhausted and the new crop not yet ripe for cutting. The nobles at this time gave great and solemn banquets among themselves, and provided at their personal expense feasts for the poor and needy. On the eleventh day a religious celebration took place in honor of Centeotl, under the name of Xilonen, derived from *xilotl*, which means a tender maize-ear, for this goddess changed her name according to the state of the grain. On this occasion, a woman who represented the goddess,

[32] 'Era esta fiesta de muy poca solemnidad y sin ceremonias, ni comidas, y sin muertes de hombres; en fin no era mas de una preparacion para la fiesta venidera del mes que viene.' *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii.; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 124–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 74–5.

Digitized by Google

and was dressed in a similar manner, was sacrificed. The day before her death a number of women took her with them to offer incense in four places, which were sacred to the four characters of the divisions of the cycle, the reed, the flint, the house, and the rabbit. The night was spent in singing, dancing, and praying before the temple of the goddess.[33] On the day of sacrifice certain priestesses and lay women whirled in a ring about the victim, and a number of priests and principal men danced before her. The priests blew their shells and horns, shook their rattles and scattered incense as they danced, the nobles held stalks of maize in their hands which they extended toward the woman. The priest who acted as executioner wore a bunch of feathers on his shoulders, held by the claws of an eagle inserted in an artificial leg. Toward the close of the dance this priest stopped at the foot of the temple, shook the rattle-board before the victim, scattered more incense, and turned to lead the way to the summit. This reached, another priest seized the woman, twisted her shoulders against his, and stooped over, so that her breast lay exposed. On this living altar she was beheaded and her heart torn out. After the sacrifice there was more dancing, in which the women, old and young, took part by themselves, their arms and legs decorated with red macaw-feathers, and their faces painted yellow and dusted with marcasite. The whole pleasantly finished with a feast. Offerings were also presented to the household gods. This festival inaugurated the eating of corn.[34]

During the next month, which was called Tlaxo-

[33] Duran says that the women took the victim to mount Chapultecpec, to the very summit, and said, 'My daughter, let us hasten back to the place whence we came,' whereupon all started back to the temple, chasing the doomed woman before them. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii.

[34] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 128–39; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 269–71, 297–8; Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 518, says: 'Les rois eux-mêmes prenaient alors part à la danse, qui avait lieu dans les endroits où ils pouvait s'assembler le plus de spectateurs.'

Digitized by Google

chimaco, or 'the distribution of flowers,'[35] gifts of flowers were presented to the gods and mutually interchanged among friends. At noon on the day of the great feast, the signal sounded and a pompous dance was begun in the court-yard of the temple of Huitzilopochtli, to whom the honors of the day were paid, in which the performers consisted of various orders of warriors led by the bravest among them. Public women joined these dances, one woman going hand in hand with two men, and the contrary, or with their hands resting on each other's shoulders, or thrown round the waist.[36] The musicians were stationed at a round altar, called *momuztli*. The motions consisted of a mere interwinding walk, to the time of a slow song. At sunset, after the usual sacrifices, the people went home to perform the same dance before their household idol; the old indulging in liquor as usual. The festival in honor of Iyacacoliuhqui, the god of commerce, was, however, the event of the month, owing to the number and solemnity of the sacrifices of slaves, brought from all quarters by the wealthy merchants for the purpose, and the splendor of the attendant banquets. The Tlascaltecs called this month Miccailhuitzintli, 'the small festival of the dead,' and gathered in the temples to sing sorrowful odes to the dead, the priests, dressed in black mantles, making offerings of food to the spirit of the departed. This seems to have been a commemoration of the ordinary class only, for the departed heroes and great men were honored in the following month. Duran and others assert, however, that the festival was devoted to the memory of the little ones who had died, and adds that the mothers performed thousands of superstitious ceremonies with their children, placing talismans upon them, and the like, to prevent their death.[37]

[35] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 271.

[36] 'Salian los Hombres Nobles, y muchas Mugeres Principales, y asianse de las manos los vnos, de los otros, mezclados Hombres, y Mugeres mui por orden, y luego se hechaban los braços al cuello, y asi abraçados, començaban à moverse mui paso à paso.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 271.

[37] *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii.; *Veytia*,

Digitized by Google

The feast of the next month, called Xocotlhuetzin, 'fall or maturity of fruit,' was dedicated to Xiuhtecutli, the god of fire. At the beginning of the month, certain priests went out into the mountains and selected the tallest and straightest tree they could find. This was cut down and trimmed of all except its top branches.[38] It was then moved carefully into the town upon rollers, and set up firmly in the court-yard of the temple, where it stood for twenty days. On the eve of the feast-day the tree was gently lowered to the ground; early the next morning carpenters dressed it perfectly smooth, and fastened a cross-yard five fathoms long near the top, where the branches had been left. The priests now adorned the pole with colored papers, and placed upon the summit a statue of the god of fire, made of dough of amaranth-seeds, and curiously dressed in a maxtli, sashes, and strips of paper. Three rods were stuck into its head, upon each of which was spitted a tamale or native pie. The pole was then again hoisted into an erect position.

Those who had captives to offer now appeared dancing side by side with the victims, and most grotesquely dressed and painted. At sunset the dance ceased, and the doomed men were shut up in the temple, while their captors kept guard outside, and sang hymns to the god. About midnight every owner brought out his captive and shaved off his top hair, which he carefully kept as a token of his valor. At dawn the human offerings were taken to the Tzompantli, where the skulls of the sacrificed were spitted, and there stripped by the priests of their dress and ornaments. At a certain signal each owner seized his captive by the hair and dragged or led him to the

Hist. Ant. Mej., tom. i., p. 65; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 271–3, 298; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 61–2, 139–41.

[38] 'Cortaban un gran árbol en el monte, de veinte y cinco brazas de largo.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 141. 'L'emportaient [the tree] processionnellement au temple de Huitzilopochtli, sans rien lui enlever de ses rameaux ni de son feuillage.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 521.

Digitized by Google

foot of the temple steps. Thereupon those priests who were appointed to execute the fearful sacrifice descended from the temple, each bearing in his hand a bag filled with certain stupefying powder extracted from the *yiauhtli* plant, which they threw into the faces of the victims to deaden somewhat the agony before them. Each naked and bound captive was then borne upon the shoulders of a priest up to the summit of the temple, where smouldered a great heap of glowing coal. Into this the bearers cast their living burdens, and when the cloud of dust was blown off, the dull red mass could be seen to heave, human forms could be seen writhing and twisting in agony, the crackling of flesh could be distinctly heard.[39] But the victims were not to die by fire; in a few moments, and before life was extinct, the blackened and blistered wretches were raked out by the watching priests, cast one after another upon the stone of sacrifice, and in a few moments all that remained upon the summit of the temple was a heap of human hearts smoking at the feet of the god of fire.

These bloody rites over, the people came together and danced and sang in the court-yard of the temple. Presently all adjourned to the place where the pole before mentioned stood. At a given signal the youths made a grand scramble for the pole, and he who first reached the summit and scattered the image and its accoutrements among the applauding crowd below was reckoned the hero of the day. With this the festival ended, and the pole was dragged down by the multitude amid much rejoicing.

The Tepanecs, according to Duran, had a very similar ceremony. A hughe tree was carried to the entrance of the town, and to it offerings and incense were presented every day during the month preceding the festival. Then it was raised with many ceremonies, and a bird of dough placed at the top. Food

[39] Clavigero says that the captors sprinkled the victims and threw them into the fire. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 77.

Digitized by Google

and wine were offered, and then the warriors and women, dressed in the finest garments, and holding small dough idols in their hands, danced round the pole, while the youths struggled wildly to reach and knock down the bird image. Lastly, the pole was overthrown.[40]

The Tlascaltecs called the same month Hueymiccailhuitl, 'the great festival of the dead,' and commemorated the event with much solemnity, painting their bodies black, and making much lamentation. Both here and in other parts of Mexico the priests and nobles passed several days in the temple, weeping for their ancestors and singing their heroic deeds. The families of lately deceased persons assembled upon the terraces of their houses, and prayed with their faces turned toward the north, where the dead were supposed to sojourn. Heroes who had fallen in battle or died in captivity, defunct princes, and other persons of merit were in a manner canonized, and their statues placed among the images of the gods, whom, it was believed, they had joined to live in eternal bliss.[41]

The festival of the next month, called Ochpaniztli, was held in honor of Centeotl, the mother-goddess. Fifteen days before the festival began, those who were to take part in it commenced a dance, which they repeated every afternoon for eight days. At the expiration of this time the medical women and midwives brought forth the woman who was to die on this occasion, and dividing themselves into two parties, fought a sham battle by pelting each other with leaves. The doomed woman, who was called 'the image of the mother of the gods,' placed herself at the head of one party of the combatants, supported

[40] *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., appendix, tom. iii., cap. iii.

[41] 'C'était l'époque où la noblesse célébrait la commémoration des princes et des guerriers qui les avaient précédés.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 522; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 298, 273–5; *Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 130–1.

Digitized by Google

by three old women who guarded and attended upon her continually. This was repeated during four successive days. On the fifth day the unfortunate creature was conducted by her guardians and the medical women through the market-place. As she walked she scattered maize, and at the end of her journey she was received by the priests, who delivered her again to the women, that they might console her (for it was necessary that she should be in a good humor, say the old chroniclers), and adorn her with the ornaments of the mother-goddess. At midnight she was carried to the summit of the temple, caught up upon the shoulders of a priest, and in this position beheaded. The body while yet warm was flayed, and the skin used in certain religious ceremonies which will be described at length elsewhere.[42] In this month the temples and idols underwent a thorough cleansing and repairing, a sacred work in which every one was eager to share according to his means and ability, believing that divine blessings would ensue. To this commendable custom is no doubt to be attributed the good condition in which the religious edifices were found by the conquerors. Roads, public buildings, and private houses also shared in this renovation, and special prayers were offered up to the gods for the preservation of health and property.

The festival of the succeeding month, called Teotleco, 'coming of the gods,' was sacred to all the deities, though the principal honors were paid to Tezcatlipoca as the supreme head. Fifteen days of the month being passed, the college boys prepared for the great event by decorating the altars in the temples, oratories, and public buildings, with green branches tied in bunches of three. In the same manner they decked the idols in private houses, receiving from the inmates, as their reward, baskets containing from two to four ears of maize; this gift was called *cacalotl*.

[42] See volume iii. of this work, pp. 354–9, where a detailed description of this festival is given.

Digitized by Google

Tezcatlipoca, being younger and stronger than the other gods, and therefore able to travel faster, was expected to arrive during the night of the eighteenth. A mat, sprinkled with flour, was therefore placed on the threshold of his temple, and a priest set to watch for the footprints which would indicate the august arrival.[43] He did not, however, remain constantly close to the mat; had he done so, he would probably never have seen the longed-for marks, but he approached the spot from time to time, and immediately on perceiving the tracks he shouted: "His majesty has arrived;" whereupon the other priests arose in haste, and soon their shells and trumpets resounded through all the temples, proclaiming the joyful tidings to the expectant people. These now flocked in with their offerings, each person bringing four balls made of roasted and ground amaranth-seed kneaded with water; they then returned to their homes to feast and drink pulque. Others beside the old people appear to have been permitted to indulge in libations on this occasion, which they euphoniously called 'washing the feet of the god,' after his long journey. On the following day other deities arrived, and so they kept coming until the last divine laggard had left his footprints on the mat. Every evening the people danced, feasted, 'washed the feet of the gods,' and made a sacrifice of slaves, who were thrown alive upon a great bed of live coal which glowed on the *tecalco*.[44] At the head of the steps leading up to the place of sacrifice stood two young men, one of whom wore long false hair, and a crown adorned with rich plumes; his face was painted black, with white curved stripes drawn from ear to forehead, and from the inner corner of the eye

[43] Sahagun writes: 'Á la media noche de este mismo dia, molian un poco de harina de maíz, y hacian un montoncillo de ella bien tupida: y lo fabricaban de harina, redondo como un queso, sobre un petate. En el mismo veían cuando habian llegado todos los dioses, porque aparecia una pisada de un pie pequeño sobre la harina.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 157.

[44] These sacrifices by fire appear to have been made upon the summit of a small temple which stood within the court-yard of the larger one.

Digitized by Google

to the cheek; down his back hung a long feather, with a dried rabbit attached to it. The other man was dressed to resemble an immense bat, and held rattles like poppy-heads in his hands. Whenever a victim was cast into the fire, these weird figures danced and leaped, the one whistling with his fingers and mouth, the other shaking his rattles.[45]

After the sacrificing was ended, the priests placed themselves in order, dressed in paper stoles which crossed the chest from shoulder to armpit, and ascended the steps of the small edifice devoted to fire sacrifices; hand in hand they walked round, and then rushed suddenly down the steps, releasing each other in such a manner as to cause many to tumble. This game, which certainly was not very dignified for priests to play at, was called *mamatlavicoa*, and gave rise to much merriment, especially if any of the reverend players should lose his temper, or limp, or make a wry face after a fall. The festival closed with a general dance, which lasted from noon till night. At this season all males, young and old, wore feathers of various colors gummed to the arms and body, as talismans to avert evil.[46]

The festival of the next month, called Tepeilhuitl, was sacred to the Tlalocs, and is fully described elsewhere.[47] The Mexican Bacchus, Centzontotochtin, was also especially honored during this month, according to Torquemada, and slaves were sacrificed to him. A captive was also sacrificed by night to a deity named Nappatecutli.[48]

The festivals of the ensuing month, which was

[45] 'Ballavano attorno ad un gran fuoco molti giovani travestiti in parecchie forme di mostri, e frattanto andavano gettando de'prigionieri nel fuoco.' *Clarvigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 78; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 527.

[46] The burning and dancing took place on the first two days of the following month, according to Sahagun. 'Estos dos dias postreros eran del mes que se sigue.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 159; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 278–9.

[47] See vol. iii., p. 343–6.

[48] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 152–3.

Digitized by Google

called Quecholli,[49] were devoted to various deities, though Mixcoatl, god of the chase, seems to have carried the honors in most parts of Mexico. The first five days of the month were passed in repose, so far as religious celebrations were concerned, but on the sixth day the authorities of the city wards ordered canes to be gathered and carried to the temple of Huitzilopochtli; there young and old assembled during the four days following, to share in the sacred work of making arrows. The arrows, which were all of uniform length, were then formed into bundles of twenty, carried in procession to the temple of Huitzilopochtli, and piled up in front of the idol. The four days were, moreover, devoted to fasting and penance, involving abstinence from strong liquors, and separation of husbands from wives. On the second day of the fast, the boys were summoned to the temple, where, having first blown upon shells and trumpets, their faces were smeared with blood drawn from their ears. This sacrifice, called *momacaico*, was made to the deer which they proposed to hunt. The rest of the people drew blood from their own ears, and if any one omitted this act, he was deprived of his mantle by the overseers.

On the second day following, darts were made to be used in games and exercises, and shooting-matches were held, at which maguey leaves served for targets. The next day was devoted to ceremonies in honor of the dead by rich and poor. The day after, a great quantity of hay was brought from the hills to the temple of Mixcoatl. Upon this certain old priestesses seated themselves, while mothers brought their children before them, accompanied by five sweet tamales. On this day were also ceremonies in honor of the god of wine, to whom sacrifices of male and female slaves were made by the pulque-dealers.

On the tenth day of the month a number of hunters set out for mount Cacatepec, near Tacubaya, to

[49] The name of a bird with red and blue plumage.

Digitized by Google

celebrate the hunting festival of Mixcoatl, god of the chase. On the first day they erected straw huts, in which they passed the night. The next morning, having broken their fast, they formed themselves into a great circle, and all advancing toward a common centre, the game was hemmed in and killed with ease. The spirits of the children sacrificed to the rain gods, whose dwelling was upon the high mountains, were supposed to descend upon the hunters and make them strong and fortunate. Having secured their game, the hunters started for home in grand procession, singing songs of triumph, and hymns to the mighty Mixcoatl. After a solemn sacrifice of a portion of the game to the god, each took his share home and feasted upon it.[50] The Tlascaltecs sacrificed to the god at the place where the hunt took place, which was upon a neighboring hill. The way leading to the spot was strewn with leaves, over which the idol was carried with great pomp and ceremony.[51] Toward the close of the month male and female slaves were sacrificed before Mixcoatl.[52]

In Tlascala and the neighboring republics this was the 'month of love,' and great numbers of young girls were sacrificed to Xochiquetzal, Xochitecatl, and Tlazolteotl, goddesses of sensual delights. Among the victims were many courtesans, who voluntarily offered themselves, some to die in the temple, others on the battle-field, where they rushed in recklessly among the enemy. As no particular disgrace attended a life of prostitution, it seems improbable that remorse or repentance could have prompted this self-sacrifice; it must therefore be attributed to pure religious fervor. As a recompense for their devotion, these women be-

[50] 'Al undécimo dia de este mes, iban á hacer una casa á aquella sierra que estaba encima de *Atlacuoayan*, y esta era fiesta por sí, de manera que en este mes habia dos fiestas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 165. 'No sacrificaban este dia hombres sino caza, y asi la caza servia de victimas á los Dioses.' *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., appendix, tom. iii., cap. iii.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 148–9.

[51] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 327–8; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 221; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xv.

[52] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 167.

Digitized by Google

fore they went to their death had the privilege of insulting with impunity their chaster sisters. It is further said that a certain class of young men addicted to unnatural lusts were allowed at this period to solicit custom on the public streets. At Quauhtitlan, every fourth year, during this month, a festival was celebrated in honor of Mitl, when a slave was bound to a cross and shot to death with arrows.[53]

The feast of the next month, called Panquetzaliztli, was dedicated to Huitzilopochtli, god of war; that of the following month, called Atemoztli, was sacred to the Tlalocs. Both these festivals will be described elsewhere.[54]

The ensuing month was named Tititl, or the month of 'hard times,' owing to the inclement weather. The celebrations of this period were chiefly in honor of an aged goddess, named Ilamatecutli, to whom a female slave was sacrificed. This woman represented the goddess and was dressed in white garments decorated with dangling shells, and sandals of the same color; upon her head was a crown of feathers; the lower part of her face was painted black, the upper, yellow; in one hand she carried a white shield ornamented with feathers of the eagle and the night-heron, in the other she held a knitting-stick. Before going to her death she performed a dance, and was permitted, contrary to usual custom, to express her grief and fear in loud lamentations. In the afternoon she was conducted to the temple of Huitzilopochtli, accompanied by a procession of priests, among whom was one dressed after the manner of the goddess Ilamatecutli. After the heart of the victim had been torn from her breast, her head was cut off and given to this personage, who immediately placed himself at the head of the other priests and led them in a dance round the temple, brandishing the head by the hair the while. As soon as the performers of the *vecula*, as this dance

[53] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 299, 280–1; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 530, tom. ii., pp. 462–3.

[54] See vol. iii. of this work, pp. 297–300, 323–4, 346–8.

Digitized by Google

was named, had left the summit of the temple, a priest curiously attired descended, and, proceeding to a spot where stood a cage made of candlewood adorned with papers, set fire to it. Immediately upon seeing the flames, the other priests, who stood waiting, rushed one and all up again to the temple-top; here lay a flower, which was secured by the first who could put hands upon it, carried back to the fire, and there burned. On the following day a game was played which resembled in some respects the Roman Lupercalia. The players were armed with little bags filled with paper, leaves, or flour, and attached to cords three feet long. With these they struck each other, and any girl or woman who chanced to come in their way was attacked by the boys, who, approaching quietly with their bags hidden, fell suddenly upon her, crying out: "This is the sack of the game." It sometimes happened, however, that the woman had provided herself with a stick, and used it freely, to the great discomfiture and utter rout of the urchins.[55] A captive was sacrificed during this month to Mictlantecutli, the Mexican Pluto, and the traders celebrated a grand feast in honor of Yacatecutli.[56] During the last Aztec month, which was called Itzcalli, imposing rites were observed throughout Mexico in honor of Xiuhtecutli, god of fire;[57] in the surrounding states, such as Tlacopan, Coyuhuacan, Azcapuzalco,[58] Quauhtitlan,[59] and Tlascala,[60] ceremonies more or less similiar

[55] Gomara says men and women danced two nights with the gods and drank until they were all drunk. *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 328. According to Duran, Camaxtli was fêted in this month, and a bread called *yocotamally* was eaten exclusively on the day of the festival. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii., *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 179–82.

[56] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 83; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 153.

[57] See vol. iii. of this work, pp. 390–3.

[58] See *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 286; *Brasseur de Bourbourg. Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 539; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxi.

[59] See *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 329; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 286–7; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxi.; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 43–4.

[60] See *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxi.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 291.

Digitized by Google

were gone through, accompanied by much roasting and flaying of men and women.

Besides these monthly festivals, there were many others devoted to the patron deities of particular trades, to whom the priests and people interested in their worship made offerings, and, in some cases, human sacrifices. There were also many movable feasts, held in honor of the celestial bodies, at harvest time, and on other like occasions. These sometimes happened to fall on the same day as a fixed festival, in which case the less important was either set aside or postponed. It is related of the Culhuas that on one occasion when a movable feast in honor of Tezcatlipoca chanced to fall upon the day fixed for the celebration of Huitzilopochtli, they postponed the former, and thereby so offended the god that he predicted the destruction of the monarchy and the subjugation of the people by a strange nation, who would introduce a monotheistic worship.[61]

One of the most solemn of the movable feasts was that given to the sun, which took place at intervals of two or three hundred days, and was called Netonatiuhqualo, or 'the sun eclipsed.' Another festival took place when the sun appeared in the sign called Nahui Ollin Tonatiuh,[62] a sign much respected by kings and princes, and regarded as concerning them especially.

At the great festival of the winter solstice, which took place either in the month of Atemoztli or in that of Tititl, all the people watched and fasted four days, and a number of captives were sacrificed, two of whom represented the sun and moon.[63] About the same

[61] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 538.

[62] '*Nahui Ollin Tonatiuh*, esto es, el sol en sus cuatro movientos, acompañado de la *Via lactea*.' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., p. 91.

[63] 'Mataban quatro Cautivos de los que se llamaban Chachame, que quiere decir: Tontos; y mataban tambien la imagen del Sol, y de la Luna, que eran dos Hombres.' *Torquemada, Monarq., Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 148. 'On immolait ensuite un grand nombre de captifs, dont les principaux, appelés Chachamé, figuraient le soleil et la lune.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 535.

Digitized by Google

time a series of celebrations were held in honor of Iztacacenteotl, goddess of white maize; the victims sacrificed on this occasion were lepers and others suffering from contagious diseases.[64] Whenever the sign of Ce Miquiztli, or One Death, occurred, Mictlantecutli, god of hades, was fêted, and honors were paid to the dead.[65] Of the heavenly bodies, they esteemed next to the sun a certain star, into which Quetzalcoatl was supposed to have converted himself on leaving the earth. It was visible during about two hundred and sixty days of the year, and on the day of its first appearance above the horizon, the king gave a slave to be sacrificed, and many other ceremonies were performed. The priests, also, offered incense to this star every day, and drew blood from their bodies in its honor, acts which many of the devout imitated.[66]

At harvest-time the first fruits of the season were offered to the sun. The sacrifice on this occasion was called Tetlimonamiquian, 'the meeting of the stones.' The victim, who was the most atrocious criminal to be found in the jails, was placed between two immense stones, balanced opposite each other; these were then allowed to fall together. After the remains had been buried, the principal men took part in a dance; the people also danced and feasted during the day and night.[67]

Every eight years a grand festival took place, called Atamalqualiztli, 'the fast of bread and water,' the principal feature of which was a mask ball, at which

[64] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 150–2; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., p. 91.

[65] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 538.

[66] 'Creen que Topilcin su rey primero se conuertio en aquella estrella.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 331; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxiv.

[67] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 249–50. 'Papahua-tlamacazqui, ou Ministres aux longs cheveux. C'est par leurs mains que passaient les prémices des fruits de la terre qu'on offrait aux astres du jour et de la nuit ....On immolait un grand nombre de captifs et, à leur défaut, les criminels ....Sur leur sépulture on exécutait un ballet.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 274–5. For description of Zapotec harvest-feast, see *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., fol. 332–3; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 40–2.

Digitized by Google

people appeared disguised as various animals whose actions and cries they imitated with great skill.[68]

The most solemn of all the Mexican festivals was that called Xiuhmolpilli, that is to say, 'the binding-up of the years.' Every fifty-two years was called a 'sheaf of years,' and it was universally believed that at the end of some 'sheaf' the world would be destroyed. The renewal of the cycle was therefore hailed with great rejoicing and many ceremonies.[69]

[68] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 195–7.

[69] For description of this feast, see vol. iii. of this work, pp. 393–6. The authorities on Aztec festivals are *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 49–218, lib. i., pp. 1–40; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vii., pp. 1–98; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 147–56, 246–300; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 66–86; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxix.–clxxvii.; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 38–62; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 326–36; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii.; *Leon, Camino del Cielo*, pp. 96–100; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., pp. 130–7; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 99–107; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 327–9, 354–6, 360–4, 382–93; *Boturini, Idea*, pt i., pp. 50–3, 90–3; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 161–6; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xv.–xvii.; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1040–8; *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., pp. 490–1; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 221, 248, 265–7; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pt i., pp. 71–2; *Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 129–34; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 234–5, 274–5, tom. ii., pp. 462–3, tom. iii., pp. 40–2, 498–547; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 104–14; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 515–17, 531–51; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 128–38; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 9–11.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER X.

FOOD OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

ORIGIN OF AGRICULTURE—FLOATING GARDENS—AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS—MANNER OF PREPARING THE SOIL—DESCRIPTION OF AGRICULTURAL IMPLEMENTS—IRRIGATION—GRANARIES—GARDENS—THE HARVEST FEAST—MANNER OF HUNTING—FISHING—METHODS OF PROCURING SALT—NAHUA COOKERY—VARIOUS KINDS OF BREAD—BEANS—PEPPER—FRUIT—TAMALES—MISCELLANEOUS ARTICLES OF FOOD—EATING OF HUMAN FLESH—MANUFACTURE OF PULQUE—PREPARATION OF CHOCOLATL—OTHER BEVERAGES—INTOXICATING DRINKS—DRUNKENNESS—TIME AND MANNER OF TAKING MEALS.

HUNTING, fishing, and agriculture furnished the Nahua nations with means of subsistence, besides which they had, in common with their uncivilized brethren of the sierras and forests, the uncultivated edible products of the soil. Among the coast nations, the dwellers on the banks of large streams, and the inhabitants of the lake regions of Anáhuac and Michoacan, fish constituted an important article of food. But agriculture, here as elsewhere, distinguished savagism from civilization, and of the lands of the so-called civilized nations few fertile tracts were found uncultivated at the coming of the Spaniards. Cultivation of the soil was doubtless the first tangible step in the progressive development of these nations, and this is indicated in their traditionary annals, which point, more or less vaguely, to a remote period when

Digitized by Google

the Quinames, or giants, occupied the land as yet untilled; which means that the inhabitants were savages, whose progress had not yet exhibited any change sufficiently marked to leave its imprint on tradition. At a time still more remote, however, the invention of bows and arrows is traditionally referred to.[1]

The gradual discovery and introduction of agricultural arts according to the laws of development were of course unintelligible to the aboriginal mind; consequently their traditions tell us wondrous tales of divine intervention and instruction. Nevertheless, the introduction of agriculture was doubtless of very ancient date. The Olmecs and Xicalancas, traditionally the oldest civilized peoples in Mexico, were farmers back to the limit of traditional history, as were the lineal ancestors of all the nations which form the subject of this volume. Indeed, as the Nahua nations were living when the Spaniards found them, so had they probably been living for at least ten centuries, and not improbably for a much longer period.

It was, however, according to tradition, during the Toltec period of Nahua culture that husbandry and all the arts pertaining to the production and preparation of food, were brought to the highest degree of perfection. Many traditions even attribute to the Toltecs the invention or first introduction of agriculture.[2]

[1] 'Dicen que en aquellos principios del mundo se mantenian los hombres solamente con frutas y yerbas, hasta que uno á quien llaman Tlaominqui, que quiere decir, *el que mató con flecha* halló la invencion del arco y la flecha, y que desde entónces comenzaron á ejercitarse en la caza y mantenerse de carnes de los animales que mataban en ella.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 10. The giants lived 'mas como brutos que como racionales: su alimento eran las carnes crudas de las aves y fieras que cazavan sin distincion alguna, las frutas y yerbas silvestres porque nada cultivaban;' yet they knew how to make pulque to get drunk with. *Id.*, p. 151.

[2] The Olmecs raised at least maize, chile, and beans before the time of the Toltecs. *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 154. The Toltec 'comida era el misno mantenimiento que ahora se usa del maíz que sembraban y beneficiaban así el blanco como el de mas colores.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 112. To the Toltec agriculture 'debitrici si riconobbero le posteriori Nazioni del frumentone, del cotone, del peverone, e d'altri utilissimi frutti.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 127. The Toltecs 'truxeron mays, algodon, y demas semillas.' *Vetancvrt, Teatro*

Digitized by Google

But even during this Toltec period hunting tribes, both of Nahua and other blood, were pursuing their game in the forests and mountains, especially in the northern region. Despised by their more civilized corn-eating brethren, they were known as barbarians, dogs, Chichimecs, 'suckers of blood,' from the custom attributed to them of drinking blood and eating raw flesh. Many tribes, indeed, although very far from being savages, were known to the aristocratic Toltecs as Chichimecs, by reason of some real or imaginary inferiority. By the revolutions of the tenth century, some of these Chichimec nations, probably of the Nahua blood and tillers of the soil, although at the same time bold hunters and valiant warriors, gained the ascendancy in Anáhuac. Hence the absurd versions of native traditions which represent the Valley of Mexico as occupied during the Chichimec period by a people who, until taught better by the Acolhuas, lived in caverns and subsisted on wild fruits and raw meat, while at the same time they were ruled by emperors, and possessed a most complicated and advanced system of government and laws. Their barbarism probably consisted for the most part in resisting for a time the enervating influences of Toltec luxury, especially in the pleasures of the table.[3]

Mex., pt ii., p. 11. 'Tenian el maiz, algodon, chile, fríjoles y las demas semillas de la tierra que hay.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 327, 393–4.

[3] 'Su comida era toda especie de caza, tanto cuadrúpeda como volátil, sin distincion ni otro condimento que asada, y las frutas....pero nada sembraban, ni cultivaban.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 6. 'No sembraban, ni cocian, ni asaban las Carnes de la caza.' Their kings and nobles kept forests of deer and hare to supply the people with food, until in Nopaltzin's reign they were taught to plant by a descendant of the Toltecs. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 32, 38–9, 67, 279. They were the first inhabitants of the country and 'solo se mantenian de caça.' 'Caçauan venados, liebres, conejos, comadrejas, topos, gatos monteses, paxaros, y aun inmunudicias como culebras, lagartos, ratones, langostas, y gusanos, y desto y de yeruas y rayzes se sustentauan.' *Acosta, Hist de las Ynd.*, pp. 453–5. And to the same effect, *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 132–3; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 203; *Herredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, p. 74; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 140, 151; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 12. They began to till the ground in Hotzin's reign, but before that they roasted their meat and did not, as many claim, eat it raw. *Ixtlilxo-*

Digitized by Google

The Aztecs were traditionally corn-eaters from the first, but while shut up for long years on an island in the lake, they had little opportunity for agricultural pursuits. During this period of their history, the fish, birds, insects, plants, and mud of the lake supplied them with food, until floating gardens were invented and subsequent conquests on the main land afforded them broad fields for tillage. As a rule, no details are preserved concerning the pre-Aztec peoples; where such details are known, they will be introduced in their proper place as illustrative of later Nahua food-customs.

The *chinampas*, or floating gardens, cultivated by the Aztecs on the surface of the lakes in Anáhuac, were a most extraordinary source of food. Driven in the days of their national weakness to the lake islands, too small for the tillage which on the main had supported them, these ingenious people devised the chinampa. They observed small portions of the shore, detached by the high-water and held together by fibrous roots, floating about on the surface of the water. Acting on the suggestion, they constructed rafts of light wood, covered with smaller sticks, rushes, and reeds, bound together with fibrous aquatic plants, and on this foundation they heaped two or three feet of black mud from the bottom of the lake. Thus the broad surface around their island home was dotted with fertile gardens, self-irrigating and independent of rains, easily moved from place to place according to the fancy of the proprietor. They usually took the form of parallelograms and were often over a hundred feet long. All the agricultural products of the country, particularly maize, chile, and beans, were soon produced in abundance on the chinampas, while the larger ones even bore fruit and shade trees of considerable size, and a hut for the convenience of the

chill, Hist. Chich., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 213–14; *Id., Relaciones*, p. 335. Agriculture introduced in Nopaltzin's reign. *Id.*, p. 344. But Sahagun, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 115, says some of the Chichimecs 'hacian tambien alguna sementerilla de maíz.'

Digitized by Google

owner or gardener. The floating gardens have remained in use down to modern times, but since the waters of the lakes receded so much from their former limits, they have been generally attached to the shore, being separated by narrow canals navigated by the canoes which bear their produce to the markets. In later times, however, only flowers and garden vegetables have been raised in this manner.[4]

On the mainland throughout the Nahua territory few fertile spots were left uncultivated. The land was densely populated, and agriculture was an honorable profession, in which all, except the king, the nobility, and soldiers in time of actual war, were more or less engaged.[5]

Agricultural products in the shape of food were not a prominent feature among articles of export and import, excepting, of course, luxuries for the tables of the kings and nobles. Each province, as a rule, raised only sufficient supplies for its own ordinary necessities; consequently, when by reason of drought or

[4] 'Sobre juncia y espadaña se echa tierra en tal forma, que no la deshaga el agua, y alli se siembra, y cultiua, y crece, y madura, y se lleua de vna parte á otra.' The products are maize, chile, wild amaranth, tomatoes, beans, chian, pumpkins, etc. *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 472. 'La lor figura regolare è quadrilunga: la lunghessa, e la larghezza son varie; ma per lo più hanno, secondo che mi pare, otto pertiche in circa di lunghezza, non più di tre di larghezza, e meno d'un piede d'elevazione sulla superficie dell'acqua.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 152–3. Produce not only plants useful for food, dress, and medicine, but flowers and plants that serve only for decoration and luxury. *Id.*, tom. iv., p. 227. Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 620, translates Clavigero's description. 'Fairy islands of flowers, overshadowed occasionally by trees of considerable size.' 'That archipelago of wandering islands.' 200 or 300 feet long, 3 or 4 feet deep. *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 70, 107–8. The black mud of the chinampas is impregnated with muriate of soda, which is gradually washed out as the surface is watered. *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., pp. 200–2. Mention by Gayangos in *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 79; *Herredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, pp. 95–6. 'Camellones, que ellos llaman Chinampas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 483; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., pp. 38–9.

[5] 'Es esta provincia [Tlascala] de muchos valles llanos y hermosos, y todos labrados y sembrados.' In Cholula 'ni un palmo de tierra hay que no esté labrado.' *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 68, 75. 'Tout le monde, plus ou moins, s'adonnait à la culture, et se faisait honneur de travailler à la campagne.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 634; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 481. 'Hasta los montes y sierras fragosas las tenian ocupadas con sembrados y otros aprovechamientos.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 250.

Digitized by Google

other cause, a famine desolated one province, it was with the greatest difficulty that food could be obtained from abroad. The Mexicans were an improvident people, and want was no stranger to them.[6]

The chief products of Nahua tillage were maize, beans, magueyes, cacao, chian, chile, and various native fruits.[7] The maize, or Indian corn, the dried ears of which were called by the Aztecs *centli*, and the dried kernels separated from the cob, *tlaolli*,[8] was the standard and universal Nahua food. Indigenous to America, in the development of whose civilization, traditionally at least, it played an important part, it has since been introduced to the world. It is the subject of the New World traditions respecting the introduction of agriculture among men. Tortillas of maize, accompanied by the inevitable frijoles, or beans, seasoned with chile or pepper, and washed down with drinks prepared from the maguey and cacao, were then, as now, the all-sustaining diet, and we are told that corn grew so strong and high in the fields that

[6] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 75; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 250; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 331.

[7] A full list and description of the many edible Mexican plants which were cultivated by the Nahuas in the sixteenth and earlier centuries, as they have been ever since by their descendants, is given by the botanist Hernandez, in his *Nova Plantarum;* see also *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 45–68; repeated in *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 102–19; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 236 et seq. Maize, maguey, cacao, bananas, and vanilla. *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 134–6. The Totonacs raised fruits, but no cacao or *veinacaztli*. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 131. The people of Michoacan raised 'maíz, frisoles, pepitas y fruta, y las semillas de mantenimientos, llamados *oauhtli, y chian*.' *Id.*, p. 137. The Matlaltzincas also raised the *hoauhtli*. *Id.*, p. 130. Besides corn, the most important products were cotton, cacao, maguey (metl), frijoles, chia, and chile. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., 158; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 624. 'Les Mexicains cultivaient non-seulement toutes les fleurs et toutes les plantes que produit leur pays, mais encore une infinité d'autres qu'ils y avaient transplantées des contrées les plus éloignées.' *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 44; *Id., Crónica*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 18. 'Hay frutas de muchas maneras, en que hay cerezas, y ciruelas que son semejables á las de España.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 104. Fruit was more abundant among the Huastecs than elsewhere. *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 147. 'They haue also many kindes of pot herbes, as lettice, raddish, cresses, garlicke, onyons, and many other herbes besides.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii. Edible fruits. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 300.

[8] *Molina, Diccionario.* 'Centli, o Tlaulli, que otros dizen mayz.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, p. 343.

Digitized by Google

covered the surface of the country in some parts, as to seriously embarrass the conqueror Cortés in his movements against the natives hidden in these natural labyrinths.[9]

Respecting the particular methods of cultivation practised by the Nahuas, except in the raising of corn, early observers have left no definite information.[10] The valleys were of course the favorite localities for cornfields, but the highlands were also cultivated. In the latter case the trees and bushes were cut down, the land burned over, and the seed put in among the ashes. Such lands were allowed to rest several years—Torquemada says five or six—after each crop, until the surface was covered with grass and bushes for a new burning. No other fertilizer than ashes, so far as known, was ever employed. Fields were enclosed by stone walls and hedges of maguey, which were carefully repaired each year in the month of Panquetzaliztli. They had no laboring animals, and their farming implements were exceedingly few and rude. Three of these only are mentioned. The *huictli* was a kind of oaken shovel or spade, in handling which both hands and feet were used. The *coatl*, or *coa* (serpent), so called probably from its shape, was a copper implement with a wooden handle, used somewhat as a hoe is used by modern farmers in breaking the surface of the soil. Another copper instrument, shaped like a sickle, with a wooden handle, was used for pruning fruit-trees. A simple sharp stick, the point of which was hardened in the fire, or more rarely tipped with copper, was the implement in most common use. To plant corn, the farmer dropped a few kernels into a hole made with this stick, and covered them with his foot, taking the

[9] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 64; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 515. In Tlascala 'no tienen otra riqueza ni granjeria, sino centli que es su pan.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 87.

[10] Peter Martyr and the Anonymous Conqueror say, however, that cacao-trees were planted under larger trees, which were cut down when the plant gained sufficient strength. Dec. v., lib. iv. *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 380.

Digitized by Google

greatest pains to make the rows perfectly straight and parallel; the intervals between the hills were always uniform, though the space was regulated according to the nature and fertility of the soil. The field was kept carefully weeded, and at a certain age the stalks were supported by heaping up the soil round them. At maturity the stalks were often broken two thirds up, that the husks might protect the hanging ear from rain. During the growth and ripening of the maize, a watchman or boy was kept constantly on guard in a sheltered station commanding the field, whose duty it was to drive away, with stones and shouts, the flocks of feathered robbers which abounded in the country. Women and children aided the men in the lighter farm labors, such as dropping the seeds, weeding the plants, and husking and cleaning the grain. To irrigate the fields the water of rivers and of mountain streams was utilized by means of canals, dams, and ditches. The network of canals by which the cacoa plantations of the tierra caliente in Tabasco were watered, offered to Cortés' army even more serious obstructions than the dense growth of the maizales, or cornfields.

Granaries for storing maize were built of *oyametl*, or *oxametl*, a tree whose long branches were regular, tough, and flexible. The sticks were laid in log-house fashion, one above another, and close together, so as to form a tight square room, which was covered with a water-tight roof, and had only two openings or windows, one at the top and another at the bottom. Many of these granaries had a capacity of several thousand bushels and in them corn was preserved for several, or, as Brasseur says, for fifteen or twenty, years. Besides the regular and extensive plantations of staple products, gardens were common, tastefully laid out and devoted to the cultivation of fruits, vegetables, medicinal herbs, and particularly flowers, of which the Mexicans were very fond, and which were in demand for temple decorations and bouquets. The

Digitized by Google

gardens connected with the palaces of kings and nobles, particularly those of Tezcuco, Iztapalapan, and Hauxtepec, excited great wonder and admiration in the minds of the first European visitors, but these have been already mentioned in a preceding chapter.[11]

We shall find the planting and growth of maize not without influence in the development of the Nahua calendars, and that it was closely connected with the worship of the gods and with religious ideas and ceremonies. Father Burgoa relates that in Oajaca, the cultivation of this grain, the people's chief support, was attended by some peculiar ceremonies. At harvest-time the priests of the maize-god in Quegolani ceremonially visited the cornfields, followed by a procession of the people, and sought diligently the fairest and best-filled ear. This they bore to the village, placed it on an altar decked for the occasion with flowers and precious chalchiuites, sang and danced before it, and wrapped it with care in a white cotton cloth, in which it was preserved until the next seed-time. Then with renewed processions and solemn rites, the magic ear with its white covering was wrapped in a deer-skin and buried in the midst of the cornfields in a small hole lined with stones. When another harvest came, if it were a fruitful one, the precious offering to the earth was dug up and its decayed remains distributed in small parcels to the happy populace as talismans against all kinds of evil.[12]

The game most abundant was deer, hares, rabbits, wild hogs, wolves, foxes, jaguars, or tigers, Mexican lions, coyotes, pigeons, partridges, quails, and many aquatic birds. The usual weapon was the bow

[11] On the culture of maize, and other points mentioned above, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 481–2, 564, tom. i., p. 166; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 153–6; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 633–7, tom. iv., p. 61; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 621–4; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 75; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, p. 128; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 196; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii.; *Gagern*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., pp. 815–16.

[12] *Buryoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., pp. 332–3; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 40–2.

Digitized by Google

and arrow, to the invention of which tradition ascribes the origin of the chase; but spears, snares, and nets were also employed, and the sarbacan, a tube through which pellets or darts were blown, was an effective bird-killer. Game in the royal forests was protected by law, and many hunters were employed in taking animals and birds alive for the king's collections. Among the peculiar devices employed for taking water birds was that already mentioned in connection with the Wild Tribes; the hunter floating in the water, with only his head, covered with a gourd, above the surface, and thus approaching his prey unsuspected. Young monkeys were caught by putting in a concealed fire a peculiar black stone which exploded when heated. Corn was scattered about as a bait, and when the old monkeys brought their young to feed they were frightened by the explosion and ran away leaving the young ones an easy prey. The native hunters are represented as particularly skilful in following an indistinct trail. According to Sahagun, a superstition prevailed that only four arrows might be shot at a tiger, but to secure success a leaf was attached to one of the arrows, which, making a peculiar whizzing sound, fell short and attracted the beast's attention while the hunter took deliberate aim. Crocodiles were taken with a noose round the neck, and also, by the boldest hunters, by inserting a stick sharpened and barbed at both ends in the animal's open mouth It is probable that, while a small portion of the common people in certain parts of the country sought game for food alone, the chase among the Nahuas was for the most part a diversion of the nobles and soldiers. There were also certain hunts established by law or custom at certain periods of the year, the products of which were devoted to sacrificial purposes, although most likely eaten eventually.

In the month Quecholli, a day's hunt was celebrated by the warriors in honor of Mixcoatl. A large forest—that of Zacatepec, near Mexico, being a favor-

Digitized by Google

ite resort—was surrounded by a line of hunters many miles in extent. In the centre of the forest various snares and traps were set When all was ready, the living circle began to contract, and the hunters with shouts pressed forward toward the centre. To aid in the work, the grass was sometimes fired. The various animals were driven from their retreats into the snares prepared for them, or fell victims to the huntsmen's arrows. Immense quantities of game were thus secured, and borne to the city and to the neighboring towns, the inhabitants of which had assisted in the hunt, as an offering to the god. Each hunter carried to his own home the heads of such animals as he had killed, and a prize was awarded to the most successful. In the month Tecuilhuitontli also, while the warriors practised in sham fights for actual war, the common people gave their attention to the chase. Large numbers of birds were taken in nets spread on poles like spear-shafts. In earlier times, when the chase was more depended on for food, the first game taken was offered to the gods; or, by the Chichimecs and Xochimilcas, to the sun, as Ixtlilxochitl informs us.[13]

Fish was much more universally used for food than game. Torquemada tells us that the Aztecs first invented the art of fishing, prompted, by the mother of invention when forced by their enemies to live on the lake islands; and it was the smell of roasted fish, wafted to the shore, that revealed their presence. This tradition is somewhat absurd, and it is difficult to believe that the art was entirely unknown during the preceding Toltec and Olmec periods of Nahua civilization. Besides the supply in lake and river,

[13] On hunting, see *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 48; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 165, tom. iii., lib. xi., pp. 149–229, including a full list and description of Mexican animals; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 298, tom. ii., pp. 281, 297; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii.; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 22; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 196; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 335, 346, 458; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 160–2. List of Mexican animals, in *Id.*, tom. i., pp. 68–99; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 626–7, 120–44, with same list; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 235.

Digitized by Google

artificial ponds in the royal gardens were also stocked with fish, and we have seen that fresh fish from the ocean were brought to Mexico for the king's table. Respecting the particular methods employed by the Nahua fishermen, save that they used both nets and hooks, the authorities say nothing. The Tarascos had such an abundance of food in their lakes that their country was named Michoacan, 'land of fish;' and the rivers of Huastecapan are also mentioned as richly stocked with finny food.[14]

The Nahuas had, as I have said, no herds or flocks, but besides the royal collections of animals, which included nearly every known variety of quadrupeds, birds, and reptiles, the common people kept and bred *techichi* (a native animal resembling a dog), turkeys, quails, geese, ducks, and many other birds. The nobles also kept deer, hares, and rabbits.[15]

Next to chile, salt or *iztatl*, was the condiment most used, and most of the supply came from the Valley of Mexico. The best was made by boiling the water from the salt lake in large pots, and was preserved in white cakes or balls. It was oftener, however, led by trenches into shallow pools and evaporated

[14] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 99–105, tom. ii., p. 162, with list and description of Mexican fishes, of which over 100 varieties fit for food are mentioned; repeated in *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 145–50, 628; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii., iii.; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom., i., pp. 60, 147; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 93; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 132; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 460. List of fishes, in *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. xi., pp. 199–207.

[15] 'Crian muchas gallinas....que son tan grandes como pavos.' 'Conejos, liebres, venados y perros pequeños, que crian para comer castrados.' *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 23, 94, 104, 222. 'Young whelpes flesh is vsuall there....which they geld and fatte for foode.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii. The same author, dec. v., lib. iii., gives some queer information respecting the turkeys. 'The femalles sometimes lay 20. or 30. egges, so that it is a multiplying company. The males are always in loue, and therefore they say they are very light meate of digestion.' A certain priest reports that 'the male is troubled with certayne impedimentes in the legges, that he can scarse allure the henne to treade her, vnlesse some knowne person take her in his hand, and hold her....As soon as hee perceiueth the henne which he loueth is held, hee presently commeth vnto her, and performes his businesse in the hand of the holder.' See *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 158–9, tom. iv., p. 228; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 624–6; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 291–2.

Digitized by Google

by the sun. The work would seem to have been done by women, since Sahagun speaks of the women and girls employed in this industry as dancing at the feast in honor of the goddess of salt in the month Tecuilhuitontli. A poor quality of salt, *tequizquitl*, brick-colored and strongly impregnated with saltpetre, was scraped up on the flats around the lakes, and largely used in salting meats. Las Casas mentions salt springs in the bed of fresh-water streams, the water of which was pumped out through hollow canes, and yielded on evaporation a fine white salt; but it is not certain what part of the country he refers to. The Aztec kings practically monopolized the salt market and refused to sell it to any except tributary nations. In consequence of this disposition, republican Tlascala, one of the few nations that maintained its independence, was forced for many years to eat its food unsalted; and so habituated did the people become to this diet, that in later times, if we may credit Camargo, very little salt was consumed.[16]

We now come to the methods adopted by the Nahuas in preparing and cooking food. Maize, when in the milk, was eaten boiled, and called *elotl;* when dry it was often prepared for food by simply parching or roasting, and then named *mumuehitl.* But it usually came to the Aztec table in the shape of *tlaxcalli*, the Spanish tortillas, the standard bread, then as now, in all Spanish America. It would be difficult to name a book in any way treating of Mexico in which tortillas are not fully described. The aborigines boiled the corn in water, to which lime, or sometimes nitre, was added. When sufficiently soft and free from hulls, it was crushed on the *metlatl*, or metate, with a stone roller, and the dough, after being kneaded also

[16] *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 450; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. v.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 284; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 66; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 124–8, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 130; *Albornoz*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 507; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 180; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 100. *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 390–1.

Digitized by Google

on the metate, was formed by the hands of the women into very thin round cakes, which were quickly baked on earthen pans, or *comalli*, and piled up one on another that they might retain their warmth, for when cold they lost their savor. Peter Martyr speaks of these tortillas as 'bread made of Maizium.' They were sometimes, but rarely, flavored with different native plants and flowers. There was, however, some variety in their preparation, according to which they bore different names. For example, *totanquitlaxcallitlaquelpacholli* were very white, being folded and covered with napkins; *huietlaxcalli* were large, thin, and soft; *quauhtlaqualli* were thick and rough; *tlaxcalpacholli*, grayish; and *tlacepoallitlaxcalli* presented a blistered surface. They were many other kinds. In addition to the tlaxcalli, thicker corn-bread in the form of long cakes and balls were made. *Atolli* varied in consistency from porridge, or gruel, to mush, and may consequently be classed either as a drink or as food. To make it, the hulled corn was mashed, mixed with water, and boiled down to the required consistency; it was variously sweetened and seasoned, and eaten both hot and cold. According to its condition and seasoning, it received about seventeen names; thus *totonquiatolli* was eaten hot, *nequatolli* was sweetened with honey, *chilnequatolli* was seasoned with chile, and *quauhnexatolli* with saltpetre.

Beans, the *etl* of the Aztecs, the frijoles of the Spaniards, were while yet green boiled in the pod, and were then called *exotl;* when dry they were also generally boiled; but Ixtlilxochitl mentions flour made from beans.

Chilli, chile, or pepper, was eaten both green and dry, whole and ground. A sauce was also made from it into which hot tortillas were dipped, and which formed a part of the seasoning in nearly every Nahua dish. "It is the principal sauce and the only spice of the Indias," as Acosta tells us.

Flesh, fowl, and fish, both fresh and salted, were

Digitized by Google

stewed, boiled, and roasted, with the fat of the techichi, and seasoned with chile, *tomatl* (since called tomatoes), etc. The larger roasted game preserved for eating from the sacrifices in the month of Itzcalli is termed *calpuleque* by Sahagun. *Pipian* was a stew of fowl with chile, tomatoes, and ground pumpkin-seeds. Deer and rabbits were barbecued. Peter Martyr speaks of "rost and sodden meates of foule."

Fruits for the most part were eaten, as with us, raw, but some, as the plantain and banana, were roasted and stewed.

So much for the plain Nahua cookery. Into the labyrynthine mysteries of the mixed dishes I shall not penetrate far. It is easier for the writer, and not less satisfactory to the reader, to dismiss the subject with the remark that all the articles of food that have been mentioned, fish, flesh, and fowl, were mixed and cooked in every conceivable proportion, the product taking a different name with each change in the ingredients. The two principal classes of these mixed dishes were the pot-stews, or cazuelas, of various meats with multitudinous seasonings; and the *tamalli*, or tamales, meat pies, to make which meats were boiled, chopped fine, and seasoned, then mixed with maize dough, coated with the same, wrapped in a corn-husk, and boiled again. These also took different names according to the ingredients and seasoning. The tamale is still a favorite dish, like tortillas and frijoles.

Miscellaneous articles of food, not already spoken of, were *axayacatl*, flies of the Mexican lakes, dried, ground, boiled, and eaten in the form of cakes; *ahuauhtli*, the eggs of the same fly, a kind of native caviar; many kinds of insects, ants, maguey-worms, and even lice; *tecuitlatl*, 'excrement of stone,' a slime that was gathered on the surface of the lakes, and dried till it resembled cheese; eggs of turkeys, iguanas, and turtles, roasted, boiled, and in omelettes; various reptiles, frogs, and frog-spawn; shrimps, sardines, and crabs; corn-silk, wild amaranth-seeds, cherry-

Digitized by Google

stones, tule-roots, and very many other articles inexpressible; yucca flour, potoyucca, tunas; honey from maize, from bees, and from the maguey; and roasted portions of the maguey stalks and leaves.

The women did all the work in preparing and cooking food; in Tlascala, however, the men felt that an apology was due for allowing this work to be done by women, and claimed, as Sahagun says, that the smoke of cooking would impair their eye-sight, and make them less successful in the hunt. All these articles of food, both cooked and uncooked, were offered for sale in the market-places of each large town, of which I shall speak further when I come to treat of commerce. Eating-houses were also generally found near the markets, where all the substantials and delicacies of the Nahua cuisine might be obtained.[17]

One article of Nahua food demands special mention—human flesh. That they ate the arms and legs of the victims sacrificed to their gods, there is no room for doubt. This religious cannibalism—perhaps human sacrifice itself—was probably not practised before the cruel-minded Aztec devotees of Huitzilopochtli came into power, or at least was of rare occurrence; but during the Aztec dominion, the custom of eating the flesh of sacrificed enemies became almost universal. That cannibalism, as a source of food, unconnected with religious

[17] On the preparation of food, and for mention more or less extensive of miscellaneous articles of food, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 129–30, 184–6, tom. ii., lib. vii., p. 258, lib. viii., pp. 297, 302–5, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 118–19, 130, 132; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 237–58; 250–1, 254, 257–8; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68–9; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 23, 68, 103–5; *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 378–9; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii., iii.; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 43, 175; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 93, 353, 373, tom. ii., p. 297; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 39, 318–19; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 158, 217, etc., tom. iv., p. 228; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 394; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 44, 48–9, 60, 88, 133, 141–3; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 191; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 624, 628–30, 674–9; *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 298–9; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Id.*, pp. 359–61; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 234, tom. iii., pp. 631, 641–4; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 142, 151–2.

Digitized by Google

rites, was ever practised, there is little evidence. The Anonymous Conqueror tells us that they esteemed the flesh of men above all other food, and risked their lives in battle solely to obtain it. Bernal Diaz says that they sold it at retail in the markets; and Veytia also states that this was true of the Otomís. Father Gand assures us that there were many priests that ate and drank nothing but the flesh and blood of children. But these ogreish tales are probably exaggerations, since those who knew most of the natives, Sahagun, Motolinia, and Las Casas, regard the cannibalism of the Nahuas rather as an abhorrent feature of their religion than as the result of an unnatural appetite. That by long usage they became fond of this food, may well be believed; but that their prejudice was strong against eating the flesh of any but their sacrificed foes, is proven, as Gomara says, by the fact that multitudes died of starvation during the siege of Mexico by Cortés. Even the victims of sacrifice seem only to have been eaten in banquets, more or less public, accompanied with ceremonial rites. A number of infants sacrificed to the Tlalocs were eaten each year, and the blood of these and of other victims was employed in mixing certain cakes, some of which were at one time sent as a propitiatory offering to Cortés.[18]

[18] 'Oi dezir, que le [for Montezuma] solian guisar carnes de muchachos de poca edad.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68, 35, 37. A slave 'claborately dressed' was a prominent feature of the banquet. *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 155. They ate the arms and legs of the Spaniards captured. *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., p. 527. 'They draw so much blood, as in stead of luke warme water may suffice to temper the lumpe, which by the hellish butchers of that art, without any perturbation of the stomacke being sufficiently kneaded, while it is moyst, and soft euen as a potter of the clay, or a wax chandler of wax, so doth this image maker, admitted and chosen to be maister of this damned and cursed worke.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv., i. 'Cocian aquella carne con maíz, y daban á cada uno un pedazo de ella en una escudilla ó cajete con su caldo, y su maíz cocida, y llamaban aquella comida *tlacatlaolli*.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 89, 14, 84, 93, 97. 'La tenian por cosa, como sagrada, y mas se movian á esto por Religion, que por vicio.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 584–5. See also *Albornoz*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 488; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Id.*, p. 363, 365; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Id.*, pp. 40–1, 59; *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Id.*, p. 398; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 282–3; *Gand*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*,

Digitized by Google

The most popular Nahua beverages were those since known as pulque and chocolate. The former, called by the natives *octli*—pulque, or pulcre, being a South American aboriginal term applied to the liquor in some unaccountable way by the Spaniards—was the fermented juice of the maguey. One plant is said to yield about one hundred pounds in a month. A cavity is cut at the base of the larger leaves, and allowed to fill with juice, which is removed to a vessel of earthenware or of skin, where it ferments rapidly and is ready for use. In a pure state, it is of a light color, wholesome, and somewhat less intoxicating than grape wine; but the aborigines mixed with it various herbs, some to merely change its color or flavor, and others to increase its intoxicating properties. This national drink was honored with a special divinity, Ometochtli, one of the numerous Nahua gods of wine. According to some traditions, the Quinames, or giants, knew how to prepare it, but its invention is oftener attributed to the Toltecs, its first recorded use having been to aid in the seduction of a mighty monarch from his royal duties.[19]

Chocolatl—the foundation of our chocolate—was made by pounding cacao to a powder, adding an equal quantity of a seed called *pochotl*, also powdered, and stirring or beating the mixture briskly in a dish of water. The oily foam which rose to the surface was

série i., tom. x., p. 197; *Bologne*, in *Id.*, p. 215; *Duran, Hist Indios*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. iii.; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 60; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 47; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 502–3, tom. iv., p. 90; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 175–6.

[19] *Texcalcevia, texcalcevilo*, and *matalulitli* are some of the names given to pulque according to its hue and condition. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 175, 179, 186. Pulque from Chilian language. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 221–2. See *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 679–80; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 643–4, tom. i., pp. 340–5; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. xxii.; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 151. 'Antes que á su vino lo cuezan con unas raices que le echan, es claro y dulce como aguamiel. Despues de cocido, hácese algo espeso y tiene mal olor, y los que con él se embeodan, mucho peor.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 22–3; and *Ritos Antiguos*, pp. 16–17, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix. 'No hay perros muertos, ni bomba, que assi hiedan como el haliento del borracho deste vino.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 319.

Digitized by Google

then separated, a small quantity of maize flour was added, and the liquid set before the fire. The oily portion was finally restored and the beverage was drunk lukewarm, sweetened with honey and often seasoned with vanilla. This drink was nutritious, refreshing, and cooling, and was especially a favorite with those called upon to perform fatiguing labor with scant food.[20]

Miscellaneous drinks were water, plantain juice, the various kinds of porridge known as *atolli*, already mentioned, the juice of maize stalks, those prepared from chian and other seeds by boiling, and fermented water in which corn had been boiled—a favorite Tarasco drink. Among the ingredients used to make their drinks more intoxicating, the most powerful was the *teonanacatl*, 'flesh of god,' a kind of mushroom which excited the passions and caused the partaker to see snakes and divers other visions.[21]

The Aztec laws against drunkenness were very severe, yet nearly all the authors represent the people as delighting in all manner of intoxication, and as giving way on every opportunity to the vice when the power of their rulers over them was destroyed by the coming of the Spaniards. Drinking to ex-

[20] 'Esta bebida es el mas sano y mas sustancioso alimento de cuantos se conocen en el mundo, pues el que bebe una taza de ella, aunque haga una jornada, puede pasarse todo el dia sin tomar otra cosa; y siendo frio por su naturaleza, es mejor en tiempo caliente que frio.' *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 381. 'La mejor mas delicada y cara beuida que tienen es de harina de cacao y agua. Algunas vezes le mezclan miel, y harina de otras legumbres. Esto no emborracha, antes refresca mucho.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 319. 'Of certaine almondes.... they make wonderfull drinke.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii., iv. 'Cierta bebida hecha del mismo cacao, que dezian era para tener acceso con mugeres.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68. Red, vermilion, orange, black, and white. *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 301–2. See *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 251; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 219–20; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 642–3.

[21] *Chicha* and *sendechó*, fermented drinks. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 221. Sendechó, an Otomí drink, for a full description, see *Mendoza*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. ii., pp. 25–8. 'Ale, and syder.' *Peter Martyr*, doc. v., lib. iv. 'Panicap que es cierto brebaje que ellos beben.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 76. See, besides, references in note 19; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 23; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 118, 130; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 139; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 676, 678–9.

Digitized by Google

cess seems to have been with them a social vice, confined mostly to public feasts and private banquets. It may have been chiefly against intemperance among the working classes, and officials when on duty, that the stringent laws were directed. Mendieta speaks of the people as very temperate, using pulque only under the direction of the chiefs and judges for medicinal purposes chiefly. The nobles made it a point of honor not to drink to excess, and all feared punishment. But Motolinia and other good authorities take an opposite view of the native character in this respect.[22]

Concerning the manner of serving the king's meals, as well as the banquets and feasts of nobles and the richer classes, enough has been already said. Of the daily meals among the masses little is known. The Nahuas seem to have confined their indulgence in rich and varied viands to the oft-recurring feasts, while at their homes they were content with plain fare. This is a peculiarity that is still observable in the country, both among the descendants of the Nahuas and of their conquerors. The poorer people had in each house a metate for grinding maize, and a few earthen dishes for cooking tortillas and frijoles. They ate three meals a day, morning, noon, and night, using the ground for table, table-cloth, napkins, and chairs, conveying their tlaxcalli and chile to the mouth with the fingers, and washing down their simple food with water or atole. The richer Nahuas were served with a greater variety on palm mats, often richly deco-

[22] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 138–40. 'Comunmente comenzaban á beber despues de vísperas, y dábanse tanta prisa á beber de diez en diez, ó quince en quince, y los escanciadores que no cesaban, y la comida que no era mucha, á prima noche ya van perdiendo el sentido, ya cayendo ya asentando, cantando y dando voces llamando al demonio.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 23, 32. 'Beben con tanto exceso, que no paran hasta caer como muertos de puro ebrios, y tienen á grande honra beber mucho y embriagarse.' *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Id.*, pp. 582, 587. Drinkers and drunkards had several special divinities. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 493. Drank less before the conquest. *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., cap. xxii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 119.

Digitized by Google

rated, around which low seats were placed for their convenience; napkins were also furnished.[23]

[23] 'Comen en el suelo, y suziamente....parten los hueuos en vn cabello que se arrancan'—whatever that operation may be. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 319. 'Es gente que con muy poco mantenimiento vive, y la que menos come de cuantas hay en el mundo. *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 379–80. 'Molto sobrj nel mangiare.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 119. 'It is not lawfull for any that is vnmaried to sit at table with such as are maried, or to eate of the same dish, or drinke of the same cup, and make themselues equall with such as are married.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iv. The nobles gave feasts at certain periods of the year for the relief of the poor. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 270. See also *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 138; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 535; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 644–5, Additional references for the whole subject of Nahua food are *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 74, 80, 247, 251; *Dapper, Neue Welt*, pp. 83, 91, 278–9, 283; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 10–13, 20–6, 102, 104, 180–3, 189, 196; *Wäppaus, Geog. u. Stat.*, pp. 44–9; *Tylor's Anahuac*, pp. 62, 103, 145–6, 173–4; *Fossey, Mexique*, pp. 44, 215, 485–6; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 456; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 37–8, 261; *Delaporte Reisen*, tom. x., pp. 257, 268–9; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, p. 45; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien y Mod.*, pp. 15–27; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 538; *Boyle's Rule*, vol. i., pp. 278–9; *Macgregor's Progress of Amer.*, vol. i., p. 22; *Gibbs*, in *Hist. Mag.*, vol. vii., p. 99; *Hazart, Kirchen-Geschichte*, tom. ii., p. 502; *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., p. 455; *Lafond, Voyages*, tom. i., p. 107; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 208–9; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 164–6, 178, 230; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, p. 39; *Long, Porter, and Tucker's America*, p. 162; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 16–17.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XI.

DRESS OF THE NAHUA NATIONS

PROGRESS IN DRESS—DRESS OF THE PRE-AZTEC NATIONS—GARMENTS OF THE CHICHIMECS AND TOLTECS—INTRODUCTION OF COTTON—THE MAXTLI—THE TILMATLI—DRESS OF THE ACOLHUAS—ORIGIN OF THE TARASCAN COSTUME—DRESS OF THE ZAPOTECS AND TABASCANS—DRESS OF WOMEN—THE HUIPIL AND CUEITL—SANDALS—MANNER OF WEARING THE HAIR—PAINTING AND TATTOOING—ORNAMENTS USED BY THE NAHUAS—GORGEOUS DRESS OF THE NOBLES—DRESS OF THE ROYAL ATTENDANTS—NAMES OF THE VARIOUS MANTLES—THE ROYAL DIADEM—THE ROYAL WARDROBE—COSTLY DECORATIONS.

WITH but few exceptions, the dress of all the civilized nations of Mexico appears to have been the same. The earliest people, the historians inform us, went entirely naked, or covered only the lower portion of the body with the skins of wild animals. Afterwards, as by degrees civilization advanced, this scanty covering grew into a regular costume, though still, at first, made only of skins. From this we can note a further advance to garments manufactured first out of tanned and prepared skins, later of maguey and palm-tree fibres, and lastly of cotton. From the latter no further progress was made, excepting in the various modes of ornamenting and enriching the garments with feather-work, painting, embroidery, gold-work, and jewelry. The common people were obliged to content themselves with plain clothing, but the dress of the richer

Digitized by Google

classes, nobles, princes, and sovereigns was of finer texture and richer ornamentation.[1]

The descriptions of the dresses of the nations which occupied the Valley of Mexico before the Aztecs vary according to different authors. While some describe them as gorgeously decked out in painted and embroidered garments of cotton and nequen, others say that they went either wholly naked, or were only partially covered with skins. Thus Sahagun and Brasseur de Bourbourg describe the Toltecs as dressed in undergarments and mantles on which blue scorpions were painted,[2] while the latter author in another place says that they went entirely naked.[3] Veytia goes even further than Sahagun, affirming that they knew well how to manufacture clothing of cotton, that a great difference existed between the dress of the nobles and that of the plebeians, and that they even varied their clothing with the seasons. He describes them as wearing in summer a kind of breech-cloth, or drawers, and a square mantle tied across the breast and descending to the ankles, while in winter, in addition to the above, they clothed themselves in a kind of sack, which reached down as far as the thighs, without sleeves, but with a hole for the head and two others for the arms.[4]

The Chichimecs, generally mentioned as the successors of the Toltecs, are mostly described as going naked, or only partly dressed in skins.[5] This appears,

[1] 'La gente pobre vestia de nequen, que es la tela que se haze del maguey, y los ricos vestian de algodon, con orlas labradas de pluma, y pelo de conejos.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ii.

[2] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 112; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 283. 'Maxtli enrichi de broderies, et.... tunique d'une grande finesse.' *Id.*, p. 350. 'En tiempo de calor con sus mantas y pañetes de algodon, y en tiempo de frio se ponian unos jaquetones sin mangas que los llevaban hasta las rodillas con sus mantas y pañetes.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 327.

[3] 'Nu suivant la coutume des indigènes qui travaillaient aux champs.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 348.

[4] 'Algodon, que sabian beneficiar y fabricar de él las ropas de que se vestian.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 43, tom. i., p. 253.

[5] 'Su vestuario eran las pieles....que las ablandaban y curaban para el efecto, trayendo en tiempo de frios el pelo adentro, y en tiempo de calo-

Digitized by Google

however, only to relate to the people spoken of as wild Chichimecs; those who inhabited Tezcuco and others in that neighborhood as civilized as the Aztecs, dressed probably in a similar fashion to theirs; at least, as we shall presently see, this was the case with their sovereigns and nobles. All the Nahuas, with the exception of the Tarascos and Huastecs, made use of the breech-cloth, or maxtli.[6] This with the Mexicans in very early times is said to have been a kind of mat, woven of the roots of a plant which grew in the Lake of Mexico, and was called *amoxtli*.[7] Later, the fibre of the palm-tree and the maguey furnished the material for their clothing, and it was only during the reign of King Huitzilihuitl that cotton was introduced.[8]

res....el pelo por la parte afuera.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 214; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 4; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 298; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 133; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 38. 'Por lo frio de su clima vestian todos pieles de animales adobadas y curtidas, sin que perdiesen el pelo, las que acomodaban á manera de un sayo, que por detras les llegaba hasta las corvas, y por delante á medio muslo.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 5, tom. i., p. 25. 'S'habillaient....de peaux de bêtes fauves, le poil en dehors durant l'été, el en dedans en hiver....Chez les classes aisées....ces peaux étaient tannées ou maroquinées avec art; on y usait aussi des toiles de nequen, et quelquefois des cotonnades d'une grande finesse.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 186.

[6] 'Maxtlatl, bragas, o cosa semejante.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* The Tarasco 'n'adoptèrent jamais l'usage des caleçons.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 132. The maxtli is frequently spoken of as drawers or pantaloons.' The Huastecs 'no traen maxtles con que cubrir sus vergüenzas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 134.

[7] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 84.

[8] 'Cominciarono in questo tempo a vestirsi di cotone, del quale erano innanzi affatto privi per la loro miseria, nè d'altro vestivansi, se non delle tele grosse di filo di maguei, o di palma salvatica.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 181. 'Les Mexicains, les Tecpanèques et les autres tribus qui restèrent en arrière, conservèrent l'usage des étoffes de coton, de fil de palmier, de maguey ixchele, de poil de lapin et de lièvre, ainsi pue des peaux d'animaux.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, xcviii., p. 132. 'Non aveano lana, nè seta comune, nè lino nè canapa; ma supplivano alla lana col cotone, alla seta colla piuma, e col pelo del coniglio, e della lepre, ed al lino, ed alla canapa coll' *Icxotl*, o palma montana, col *Quetzalichtli*, col *Pati*, e con altre spezie di Maguei..... Il modo, che avevano di preparar questi materiali, era quello stesso, che hanno gli Europei nel lino, e nella canapa. Maceravano in acqua le foglie, e poi le nettavano, le mettevano al Sole, e le ammaccavano, finattantochè le mettevano in istato di poterle filare.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 207–8. Ycçotl, Palma Montana. 'Non videtur filendum, è folijs huius arboris fila parari, linteis, storisq. intexendis perquam accommoda, politiora, firmioraq. eis quæ ex Metl passim fieri consueuere, ma-

Digitized by Google

The maxtli was about twenty-four feet long and nine inches wide, and was generally more or less ornamented at the ends with colored fringes and tassels, the latter sometimes nine inches long. The manner of wearing it was to pass the middle between the legs and to wind it about the hips, leaving the ends hanging one in front and the other at the back, as is done at this day by the Malays and other East Indian natives. It was at the ends usually that the greatest display of embroidery, fancy fringes, and tassels was made.[9]

As a further covering, the men wore the *tilmatli*, or *ayatl*, a mantle, which was nothing more than a square piece of cloth about four feet long. If worn over both shoulders, the two upper ends were tied in a knot across the breast, but more frequently it was only thrown over one shoulder and knotted under one of the arms. Sometimes two or three of these mantles were worn at one time. This, however, was only done by the better classes. The older Spanish writers generally compare this mantle to the Moorish albornoz. It was usually colored or painted, frequently richly embroidered or ornamented with feathers and furs.

dentibus in primis aqua, mox protritis, ac lotis, iterumq. et iterum maceratis et insolatis, donec apta reddantur, vt neri possint, et in usus accommodari materies est leuis, aclenta.' *Hernandez, Nova Plant.*, p. 76.

[9] '*Maxtles*, c'est ainsi qu'on nomme en langue mexicaine des espèces d'*almaysales* qui sont longues de quatre brasses, larges d'une palme et demie et terminées par des broderies de diverses couleurs, qui ont plus d'une palme et demie de haut.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 132. 'Cuoprono le loro parti vergogno se cosi di dietro come dinanzi, con certi sciugatoi molto galanti, che sono come gran fazzuoli che si legano il capo per viaggio, di diuersi colori, e orlati di varie foggie, e di colori similmente diuersi, con i suoi fiocchi, che nel cingersegli, viene l'un capo dauanti e l'altro di dietro.' *Relatione fatta par vn gentil' huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305. In Meztitlan, 'les uns et les autres couvraient leur nudités d'une longue bande d'étoffe, semblable á un *almaizar*, qui leur faisait plusieurs fois le tour du corps et passait ensuite entre les jambes, les extrémités retombant par-devant jusqu'aux genoux.' *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 316. 'Los vestidos que traen (Totonacs) es como de almaizales muy pintados, y los hombres traen tapadas sus verguenzas.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 23. In Oajaca, 'Maxtles conque se cubrian sus vergüenzas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 136, 123, 131. The Miztecs 'por çaraguelles trahian matzles, que los Castellanos dizen mastiles.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 223.

Digitized by Google

The edges were scalloped or fringed with tufts of cotton and sometimes with gold. Rich people had, besides these, mantles made of rabbit or other skins, or of beautiful feathers, and others of fine cotton into which was woven rabbit-hair, which latter were used in cold weather.[10]

In only one instance garments with sleeves are mentioned. Ixtlilxochitl, in describing the dress of the Acolhuas, says that they wore a kind of long coat reaching to the heels, with long sleeves.[11]

The dress of the Tarascos differed considerably from that of the other Nahua nations. This difference

[10] 'Il Tilmatli era un mantello quadro, lungo quattro piedi in circa; due estremità d'esso annodavano sul petto, o sopra una spalla....Gli Uomini solevano portar due, o tre mantelli.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 223, and plate, p. 224. 'I vestimenti loro son certi manti di bambagia come lenzuola, ma non cosi grande, lauoratori de gentili lauori di diuerse maniere, e con le lor franze e orletti, e di questi ciascun n 'ha duoi ò tre e se gli liga per dauanti al petto.' *Relatione fatta per un gentil 'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 131. 'Todos traen albornoces encima de la otra ropa, aunque son diferenciados de los de Africa, porque tienen maneras; pero en la hechura y tela y los rapacejos son muy semejables.' *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 75, 23. 'Leur vêtement consistait anciennement dans deux ou trois manteaux d'une vare et demi en carré, noués par en haut, le nœud se mettant pour les uns sur la poitrine, pour les autres à l'épaule gauche, et souvent par derrière.' *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 315–16. 'Ningun plebeyo vestia de algodon, con franja, ni guarnicion, ni ropa rozagante, sino senzilla, llana, corta, y sin ribete, y assi era conocido cada vno en el trage.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvii.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 174. 'Otras hacian de pelo de Conejo, entretexido de hilo de Algodon....con que se defendian del frio.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 488; *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 298. The Totonacs; 'algunos con ropas de algodon, ricas a su costumbre. Los otros casi desnudos.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 39, 95; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 131. Huastecs 'andan bien vestidos: y sus ropas y mantas son muy pulidas y curiosas con lindas labores, porque en su tierra hacen las mantas que llaman *centzontilmatli, cenzonquaehtli*, que quiere dezir, mantas *de mil colores:* de allá se traen las mantas que tienen unas cabezas de monstruos pintadas, y las de remolinos de agua engeridas unas con otras, en las cuales y en otras muchas, se esmeraban las tejedoras.' *Id.*, p. 134. 'Una manta cuadrada anudada sobre el pecho, hácia el hombro siniestro, que descendia hasta los tobillos; pero en tiempo de invierno cubrian mas el cuerpo con un sayo cerrado sin mangas, y con una sola abertura en la sumida para entrar la cabeza, y dos á los lados para los brazos, y con él se cubrian hasta los muslos.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Méj.*, tom. i., p. 253; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 360.

[11] 'Vestíanse unas túnicas largas de pellejos curtidos hasta los carcañales, abiertas por delante y atadas con unas á manera de agugetas, y sus manos que llegaban hasta las muñecas, y las manos.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 341.

Digitized by Google

is said to have originated in ancient times, when they, together with other tribes, as the legend relates, immigrated into Mexico. While on their wanderings, being obliged to cross a river, and having no ropes with which to construct rafts, they used for this purpose their maxtlis and mantles. Not being able to procure other clothing immediately, they were under the necessity of putting on the *huipiles*, or chemises. of the women, leaving to the latter only their *naguas*, or petticoats. In commemoration of this event, they later adopted this as their national costume, discarding the maxtli and wearing the huipil and a mantle.[12] The tilmatli, or ayatl, was by the Tarascos called *tlanatzi*. It was worn over one shoulder and was knotted under the other arm. They frequently trimmed it with hare-skins and painted it gaudily. The young wore it considerably shorter than old people. The manufacture of feather garments seems to have been a specialty of the Tarascos.[13]

The Zapotecs chiefly dressed in skins, while others in Oajaca are said to have worn small jackets, and Cortés reports these people to have been better dressed than any he had previously seen.[14] In Tabasco but little covering was used, the greater part of the population going almost naked.[15]

There was no difference in the dress of the women throughout Anáhuac. The huipil and *cueitl* were the chief articles, and were universally used. Besides these, mantles of various shapes and materials were worn. The huipil was a kind of chemise, with

[12] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 132; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 57.

[13] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 130–1; *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 49–50; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix.

[14] 'El trage de ellos era de diversas maneras, unos traían mantas, otros como unas xaquetillas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 136. 'Era mas vestida que estotra que habemos visto.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 93. 'La mayor parte andauan en cueros.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xiv. The Miztecs 'vestian mantas blancas de algodon, texidas, pintadas, y matizadas con flores, rosas, y aves de diferentes colores: no trahian camisas.' *Id.*, cap. xii.

[15] 'Andan casi desnudos.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 36.

Digitized by Google

either no sleeves at all or very short ones; it covered the upper part of the body to a little below the thighs. The lower part of the body was covered by the cueitl, a petticoat reaching to about half-way between the knees and ankles, and often nicely embroidered and ornamented. Skins, *ixcotl*, or palm-fibre, nequen, and cotton were the materials used for these garments. Out of doors they frequently put on another over-dress similar to the huipil, only longer and with more ornamental fringes and tassels. Sometimes they wore two or three of these at the same time, one over the other, but in that case they were of different lengths, the longest one being worn underneath. A mantle similar in size and shape to that used by the men, white and painted in various designs on the outside, was also used by the females. To the upper edge of this, on that portion which was at the back of the neck, a capuchin, like that worn by the Dominican and other monks, was fastened, with which they covered their heads.[16]

To protect their feet they used sandals, by the Aztecs called *cactli*, which were made of deer or other skins, and frequently also of nequen and cotton. The strings or straps used to fasten them were of the same material.[17] I do not find any description of the manner in which they were fastened, but in an old Mexican manuscript on maguey paper, in which some of

[16] 'Traen camisas de medias mangas.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317; *Relatione fatta per un Gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 327; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 23. In Jalisco they had 'vn Huipilillo corto, que llaman Ixquemitl, ó teapxoloton.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 339. 'Una sopravvesta....con maniche più lunghe.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 223; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 6, tom. i., pp. 253–4; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 283. In Michoacan 'no traían vipiles.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 138, 123; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 203–4; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.

[17] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 112, 123; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 336, 341; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvii.; *Id.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix., xii.; *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 50; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 259; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 316; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 223.

Digitized by Google

the natives are painted in various colors, I find that the sandals were fastened in three places; first by a strap running across the foot immediately behind the toes, then another over the instep and running toward the heel, and lastly by a strap from the heel round the ankle.

As a general thing Mexicans wore the hair long, and in many parts of the empire it was considered a disgrace to cut the hair of a free man or woman.[18] Unlike most of the American natives, they wore mustaches, but in other parts of the body they eradicated all hair very carefully.[19] There were public barber-shops and baths in all the principal cities.[20] The Aztecs had various ways of dressing the hair, differing according to rank and office. Generally it was left hanging loose down the back. The women also frequently wore it in this way, but oftener had it done up or trimmed after various fashions; thus some wore it long on the temples and had the rest of the head shaved, others twisted it with dark cotton thread, others again had almost the whole head shaved. Among them it was also fashionable to dye the hair with a species of black clay, or with an herb called *xiuhquilitl*, the latter giving it a violet shade. Unmarried girls wore the hair always loose; they considered it as especially graceful to wear the hair low[21]

[18] 'Aveano a disonore l'esser tosati.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 224.

[19] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 350. 'Ni bien barudos, porque se arrancan y vntan los pelos para que no nazcan.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317. The Mistecs 'las barbas se arrancauan con tenazillas de oro.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.

[20] *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 68, 104; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 300.

[21] 'Hazen lo negro con tierra por gentileza y porque les mate los piojos. Las casadas se lo rodean a la cabeça con vn fiudo a la frente. Las virgines y por casar, lo traen suelto, y echado atras y adelante. Pelan se y vntan se todas para no tener pelo sino en la cabeça y cejas, y assi tienen por hermosura tener chica frente, y llena de cabello, y no tener colodrillo.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 309–10, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 113, 120, lib. xi., p. 309; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 224; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 316. The Chichimecs wore it 'largo hasta las espaldas, y por delante se lo cortan.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 335.

Digitized by Google

on the forehead. The virgins who served in the temples had their hair cut short.[22]

The Otomís shaved the fore part of the heads of children, leaving only a tuft behind, which they called *piochtli*, while the men wore the hair cut short as far as the middle of the back of the head, but left it to grow long behind; and these long locks they called *piocheque*. Girls did not have their hair cut until after marriage, when it was worn in the same style as by the men.[23] The Tarascos, or as they were also called Quaochpanme, derived this last name from an old fashion of having their heads shaved, both men and women.[24] Later they wore the hair long, the common people simply letting it hang down the back, while the rich braided it with cotton threads of various colors.[25] The Miztecs wore the hair braided, and ornamented with many feathers.[26]

The Nahua women used paint freely to beautify their person, and among some nations they also tattooed. Among the Aztecs they painted their faces with a red, yellow, or black color, made, as Sahagun tells us, of burnt incense mixed with dye. They also dyed their feet black with the same mixture. Their teeth they cleaned and painted with cochineal; hands, neck, and breast were also painted.[27] Among the Tlascaltecs the men painted their faces with a dye made of the *xagua* and *bixa*.[28] The Otomís tattooed their breasts and arms by making incisions with a knife and rubbing a blue powder therein. They also covered the body with a spe-

[22] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 224.

[23] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 124.

[24] 'Llámase tambien Quaochpanme, que quiere decir hombres de cabeza rapada ó raida, porque antiguamente estos tales no traían cabellos largos, antes se rapaban la cabeza así los hombres, como las mugeres.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 137; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 57.

[25] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 50.

[26] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xiv.

[27] 'Se raiaban las Caras.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 255; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 310.

[28] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 75.

Digitized by Google

cies of pitch called *teocahuitl*, and over this again they applied some other color. Their teeth they dyed black.[29]

The Nahuas, like all semi-barbarous people, had a passion for loading themselves with ornaments. Those worn by the kings, nobles, and rich persons were of gold or silver, set with precious stones; those of the poorer classes were of copper, stone, or bone, set with imitations in crystal of the rarer jewels. These ornaments took the shape of bracelets, armlets, anklets, and rings for the nose, ears, and fingers. The lower lip was also pierced, and precious stones, or crystals, inserted. The richer classes used principally for this purpose the chalchiuite, which is generally designated as an emerald. There existed very stringent laws regarding the class of ornaments which the different classes of people were allowed to wear, and it was prohibited, on pain of death, for a subject to use the same dress or ornaments as the king. Duran relates that to certain very brave but low-born warriors permission was accorded to wear a cheap garland or crown on the head, but on no account might it be made of gold.[30] Gomara tells us that the claws and beaks of the eagle and also fish-bones were worn as ornaments in the ears, nose, and lips.[31]

The Otomís used ear-ornaments made of burnt clay, nicely browned, and others of cane.[32] The Tarascos chiefly relied on feathers for their personal adornment.[33] Of the natives encountered by Cortés

[29] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 124–6.

[30] *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxvi.

[31] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.; Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 224, describes the ornaments, but in his accompanying plate fails to show any of them. *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 79–80; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1119.

[32] 'De barro cocido bien bruñidas, ó de caña.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 124.

[33] *Id.*, p. 137. The Totonacs 'traian vnos grandes agujeros en los beços de abaxo, y en ellos vnas rodajas de piedras pintadillas de azul, y otros con vnas hojas de oro delgadas, y en las orejas muy grandes agujeros, y en ellos puestas otras rodajas de oro, y piedras. *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 28; *Cortes, Cartas*, p. 23.

Digitized by Google

when he landed at Vera Cruz, Peter Martyr tells us that in the "hole of the lippes, they weare a broad plate within fastened to another on the outside of the lippe, and the iewell they hang thereat is as great as a siluer Caroline doller and as thicke as a mans finger."[34]

In Oajaca more ornaments were worn than in any other part of the country, owing, perhaps, as the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg remarks, to the plentiful supply of precious metals in that state.[35]

The dress of the nobles and members of the royal household differed from that of the lower classes only in fineness of material and profusion of ornaments. The kings appear to have worn garments of the same shape as those of their subjects, but in other respects, a particular style of dress was reserved for royalty, and he who presumed to imitate it was put to death. On occasions, however, when the monarch wished to bestow a special mark of favor upon a brave soldier or distinguished statesman, he would graciously bestow upon him one of his garments, which, even though the recipient were a great noble, was received with joy, and the wearer respected as a man whom the king delighted to honor.[36] In Tlascala differences of rank among the nobles were easily recognized by the style of dress. The common people were strictly forbidden to wear cotton clothes with fringes or other trimmings, unless with special permission, granted in consideration of services rendered.[37]

The court laws of etiquette prescribed the dress to be worn by the royal attendants, who could only appear without sandals, barefooted, and in coarse mantles

[34] *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. vii.

[35] The Miztecs 'traen imán, axorcas muy anchas de oro, y sartales de piedra á las muñecas, y joyeles de éstas y de oro al cuello.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 136; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 30.

[36] 'Ninguna Persona (aunque fuesen sus propios Hijos) podia vestirlo, so pena de la vida.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 542; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxvi.

[37] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 198.

Digitized by Google

before the king, and even the apparel of the soyereign was in like manner fixed by custom, if not by law. The different kinds of tilmatlis, or mantles, had each its appropriate name, and varied in material as well as in ornament and color. The cotton mantles are described as being of exceeding fineness of texture, so much so that it required an expert to determine whether they were cotton or silk.[38] The mantle worn as every-day dress in the palace was white and blue, and called the *xiuhtilmatli*.[39] There were many other kinds of mantles, of which the following are the principal: A yellowish, heavily fringed mantle, on which monstrous heads were painted, was called *coazayacaiotilmatli;* another, blue, ornamented with red shells, with three borders, one light another dark blue, and a third of white feather-work, and fringed with the same kind of shells, was named *tecuciciotilmatli;* another, dark yellow, with alternate black and white circles painted on it, and a border representing eyes, was the *temalcacaiotilmatlitenisio;* a similar one, differing only in the figures and shape of the ornaments, was the *itzcayotilmatli;* a very gaudy one, worked in many colors, was the *umetech-tecomaiotilmatli;* another, with a yellow ground, on which were butterflies made of feathers, and with scalloped edges, was called *papaloiotilmatlitenisio;* the *xaoalquauhiotilmatlitenisio* was embroidered with designs representing the flower called *ecacazcatl*, and further ornamented with white feather-work and feather edges; the *ocelotentlapalliyiticycacocelotl* was an imitation of a tiger-skin, also ornamented with an edge of white feathers; and *ixnextlacuilolli* was worked in many colors, and had a sun painted on it.[40] Other mantles, differing mainly in their style of orna-

[38] 'Tan delgadas y bien texidas que necesitaban del tacto para diferenciarse de la seda.' *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 132; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 507.

[39] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 115–16; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 542.

[40] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 286–8.

Digitized by Google

mentation, were the *coaxacayo* and *tlacalhuaztilmatli*, the latter worn when the king went into his gardens or to the chase. In the same manner there are also various kinds of maxtlis mentioned, such as the *ynyaomaxaliuhqui*, *ytzahuazalmaxtlatl*, and *yacahualiuqui*.[41] In fact, there appears to have been a different dress for every occasion. We are told, for instance, that when going to the temple the king wore a white mantle, another when going to preside at the court of justice, and here he again changed his dress, according as the case before the court was a civil or criminal suit.[42] The sandals of the kings were always richly ornamented with precious stones, and had golden soles.[43]

Whenever the sovereign appeared in public he wore the royal crown, called *copilli*, which was of

[41] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 57.

[42] 'Para salir de Palacio los Reies á visitar los Templos, se vestian de blanco; pero para entrar en los Consejos, y asistir en otros Actos publicos, se vestian de diferentes colores, conforme la ocasion.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 543. 'Les rois s'habillaient tantôt de blanc, tantôt d'étoffes d'un jaune obscur ornées de franges de mille couleurs.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 284, tom. iv., pp. 210–11. 'Mantas de á dos haces, labradas de plumas de papos de aves, tan suaves, que trayendo la mano por encima á pelo y á pospelo, no era mas que una marta cebellina muy bien adobada. hice pesar una dellas, no pesó mas de seis onzas.' *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 360. 'Vestidos de pelo de conejo y de algodon de mucha curiosidad, y estas eran vestiduras de Caciques y de gente muy principal' in Michoacan. *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 49–50; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 336, 240, 265; *Id., Relaciones*, in *Id.*, p. 336; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 298. Description of Montezuma's dress when meeting Cortés, in *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 369; *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iii., p. 77; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 386; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 317. Representations of the dresses of the Mexican kings and nobles are also in the *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i.

[43] 'Traia calçados vnos como cotaras, que assi se dize lo que se calçan, las suelas de oro, y muy preciada pedreria encima en ellas.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 65. 'Portoit une chaussure de peau de chevreuil.' *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1824, tom. xxiv., p. 137. 'Capatos de oro, que ellos llaman zagles, y son a la manera antigua de los Romanos, tenian gran pedreria de mucho valor, las suelas estauan prendidas con correas.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. v. 'Cotaras de cuero de tigres.' *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 79; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 369; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 525; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 210–11; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 85; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 386; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 327; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 73–4, 317.

Digitized by Google

solid gold, and is described by most writers as having been shaped like a bishop's mitre; but in the hieroglyphical paintings, in which the Mexican kings are represented, it is simply a golden band, wider in front than at the back, the front running up to a point; on some occasions it was ornamented with long feathers.[44] The following description of ornaments, worn by the Mexican kings and nobles, I extract from Sahagun:

The *quetzalalpitoai* consisted of two tassels of fine feathers garnished with gold, which they wore bound to the hair on the crown of the head, and hanging down to the temples. The *tlauhquecholtzontli* was a handsome garment of feathers worn on the shoulders. On the arms they placed gold rings; on the wrists a thick black strap made soft with balsam, and upon it a large chalchiuite or other precious stone. They also had a *barbote*, or chin-piece, of chalchiuite or other precious stone, set in gold, inserted in the chin. These chin ornaments were made long, of crystal, with some blue feathers in the centre, which made them look like sapphire. The lip had a hole bored in it, from which precious stones or gold crescents were suspended. The great lords likewise had holes in their noses, and placed therein very fine turquoises or other precious stones, one on each side of the nose. On their necks they wore strings of precious stones, or a medal suspended by a gold chain, with pearl pendants hanging from its edge, and a flat jewel in the centre of it. They used bracelets of mosaic work

[44] 'La corona de Rey, que tiene semejança a la corona de la Señoria de Venecia.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd*, p. 471. 'Unas tiaras de oro y pedrería.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 295. 'En la Cabeça vnos Plumajes ricos, que ataban tantos cabellos de la Corona, quanto toma el espacio de la Corona Clerical: estos Plumajes prendian y ataban con vna correa colorada, y de ella colgaban con sus pinjantes de Oro, que pendian à manera de chias de Mitra de Obispo.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 542–3. 'Era di varie materie giusta il piacere dei Re, or di lame sottili d'oro or tessuta di filo d'oro, e figurata con vaghe penne. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 115, tom. iii., p. 77. 'Before like a Myter, and behinde it was cut, so as it was not round, for the forepart was higher, and did rise like a point.' *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, tom. iv., p. 1062; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 386; *Prescott's Mex.* vol. ii., p. 317; *Brasseur de Bourboury, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 210.

Digitized by Google

made with turquoises. On their legs they wore, from the knee down, greaves of very thin gold. They carried in the right hand a little golden flag with a tuft of guady feathers on the top. Upon their heads they wore a bird made of rich feathers, with its head and beak resting on the forehead, its tail toward the back of the head, its wings falling over the temples.[45]

[45] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. vii., lib. ii., pp. 288–90; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 57, 79; *Ixtlilxochutl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Id.*, p. 327; *Torquemada, Monary. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 525; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 259, tom. iii., p. 392; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 178. Further mention of ornaments in the enumeration of presents given by Montezuma to Cortés, in *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iii., pp. 65, 80; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. v.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 279, 283, 285, 292, 298; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 125, 132–3; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1118–19, 1124; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 69, 85; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 76, 84, 214, 263–4; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 83. Among the modern authors who have written upon the subject of dress may be mentioned *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 326, 680–2, tom. ii., pp. 91, 224–5, with numerous cuts; *Busserre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 145; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 57–8; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, p. 47; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 13–14, 22, 28, 189; *Monglave, Résumé*, p. 36; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, pp. 65, 79; *Baril, Mexique*, p. 209; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 61.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XII.

COMMERCE OF THE NAHUA NATIONS.

THE MAIN FEATURES OF NAHUA COMMERCE—COMMERCE IN PRE-AZTEC TIMES—OUTRAGES COMMITTED BY AZTEC MERCHANTS—PRIVILEGES OF THE MERCHANTS OF TLATELULCO—JEALOUSY BETWEEN MERCHANTS AND NOBLES—ARTICLES USED AS CURRENCY—THE MARKETS OF ANÁHUAC—ARRANGEMENT AND REGULATIONS OF THE MARKET-PLACES—NUMBER OF BUYERS AND SELLERS—TRANSPORTATION OF WARES—TRAVELLING MERCHANTS—COMMERCIAL ROUTES—SETTING OUT ON A JOURNEY—CARAVANS OF TRADERS—THE RETURN—CUSTOMS AND FEASTS OF THE MERCHANTS—NAHUA BOATS AND NAVIGATION.

TRADITIONAL history tells us but little respecting American commerce previous to the formation of the great Aztec alliance, or empire, but the faint light thrown on the subject would indicate little or no change in the system within the limits of Nahua history. The main feature of the commercial system in the fifteenth and sixteenth centuries were: markets in one or more of the public squares of every town, where eatables and other articles of immediate necessity were daily sold—shops proper being unknown; frequently recurring fairs in each of the large towns, where the products of agriculture, manufacture, and art in the surrounding country were displayed before consumers and merchants from home and from abroad; similar fairs but on a grander scale in the great commercial centres, where home products were exchanged

Digitized by Google

for foreign merchandise, or sold for export to merchants from distant nations who attended these fairs in large numbers; itinerant traders continually traversing the country in companies, or caravans; and the existence of a separate class exclusively devoted to commerce.

From the earliest times the two southern Anáhuacs of Ayotlan and Xicalanco, corresponding to what are now the southern coast of Oajaca and the tierra caliente of Tabasco and southern Vera Cruz, were inhabited by commercial peoples, and were noted for their fairs and the rich wares therein exposed for sale. These nations, the Xicalancas, Mijes, Huaves, and Zapotecs, even engaged to some extent in a maritime coasting trade, mostly confined, however, as it would appear, to the coasts of their own territories and those immediately adjacent; and in this branch of commerce little or no advance had been made at the time when the Spaniards came.[1]

The Toltecs are reported to have excelled in commerce as in all other respects, and the markets of Tollan and Cholula are pictured in glowing colors; but all traditions on this subject are exceedingly vague.[2] In the new era of prosperity that followed the Toltec disasters, Cholula seems to have held the first place as a commercial centre, her fairs were the most famous, and her merchants controlled the trade of the southern coasts on either ocean. After the coming of the Teo-Chichimec hordes to the eastern plateau, Tlascala became in her turn the commercial metropolis of the north, a position which she retained until forced to yield it to the merchants of the Mexican valley, who were supported by the warlike hordes of the Aztec confederacy. Before the Aztec supremacy, trade seems to have been conducted with some show of fairness, and commerce and politics were kept to a great

[1] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 181; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 42–3.

[2] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 271–3; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 332.

Digitized by Google

extent separate. But the Aztecs introduced a new order of things. Their merchants, instead of peaceful, industrious, unassuming travellers, became insolent and overbearing, meddling without scruple in the public affairs of the nations through whose territory they had to pass, and trusting to the dread of the armies of Mexico for their own safety; caravans became little less than armed bodies of robbers. The confederate kings were ever ready to extend by war the field of their commerce, and to avenge by the hands of their warriors any insult, real or imaginary, offered to their merchants. The travelling bands of traders were instructed to prepare maps of countries traversed, to observe carefully their condition for defence and their resources. If any province was reported rich and desirable, its people were easily aggravated to commit some act of insolence which served as a pretext to lay waste their lands, and make them tributary to the kings of Anáhuac. Within the provinces that were permanently and submissively tributary to Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, traffic may be supposed to have been as a rule fairly conducted. The merchants had in turn to pay into the royal treasury a large percentage of their gains, but this, under the circumstances, they could well afford.

Tlatelulco while an independent city was noted for her commerce, as was Tenochtitlan for the prowess of her warriors, and when mercantile enterprise was forced to yield to the power of arms, Tlatelulco, as a part of Mexico, retained her former preëminence in trade, and became the commercial centre of Anáhuac. Her merchants, who were a separate class of the population, were highly honored, and, so far as the higher grades were concerned, the merchant princes, the *pochtecas*, dwellers in the aristocratic quarter of Pochtlan, had privileges fully equal to those of the nobles. They had tribunals of their own, to which alone they were responsible, for the regulation of all matters of trade. They formed, indeed, to all intents

Digitized by Google

and purposes, a commercial corporation controlling the whole trade of the country, of which all the leading merchants of other cities were in a sense subordinate members. Jealousy between this honored class of merchants and the nobility proper brought about the many complications during the last years of the Aztec empire to which I have referred in a preceding chapter. Throughout the Nahua dominion, commerce was in the hands of a distinct class, educated for their calling, and everywhere honored both by people and by kings; in many regions the highest nobles thought it no disgrace to engage in commercial pursuits.

Besides the pochtecas, two other classes of merchants are mentioned in Tlatelulco, the *nahualoztomecas*, those who made a specialty of visiting the lands of enemies in disguise, and the *teyaohualohuani*, or traders in slaves.[3] The merchants were exempt from military and other public service, and had the right not only to make laws for the regulation of trade, but to punish even those who were not of their class for offences against such laws. Sahagun gives an account of the gradual development and history of the Tlatelulcan company, stating the names of the leading merchants under the successive kings, with details respecting the various articles dealt in at different periods, all of which is not deemed of sufficient interest to be reproduced in these pages.

Nahua trade was as a rule carried on by means of barter, one article of merchandise being exchanged for another of equivalent value. Still, regular purchase and sale were not uncommon, particularly in the business of retailing the various commodities to consumers. Although no regular coined money was used, yet several more or less convenient substitutes furnished a medium of circulation. Chief among these were nibs, or grains, of the cacao, of a species somewhat different from that employed in making the favorite drink, chocolate. This money, known as *pat-*

[3] 'Teyaoyaualoani, el que cerca a los enemigos.' *Molina, Vocabulario.*

Digitized by Google

lachté, passed current anywhere, and payments of it were made by count up to eight thousand, which constituted a *xiquipilli*. In large transactions, sacks containing three xiquipilli were used to save labor in counting. *Patolquachtli* were small pieces of cotton cloth used as money in the purchase of articles of immediate necessity or of little value. Another circulating medium was gold-dust kept in translucent quills, that the quantity might be readily seen. Copper was also cut into small pieces shaped like a T, which constituted perhaps the nearest approach to coined money. Cortés, in search of materials for the manufacture of artillery, found that in several provinces pieces of tin circulated as money, and that a mine of that metal was worked in Taxco. Sahagun says the Mexican king gave to the merchant soldiers, despatched on one of their politico-commercial expeditions, sixteen hundred *quauhtli*, or eagles, to trade with. Bustamante, Sahagun's editor, supposes these to have been the copper pieces already mentioned, but Brasseur believes, from the small value of the copper and the large amount of rich fabrics purchased with the eagles, that they were of gold. The same authority believes that the golden quoits with which Montezuma paid his losses at gambling also served as money.[4]

The Nahuas bought and sold their merchandise by count, and by measures both of length and capacity, but not by weight; at least, such is the general opin-

[4] The Toltecs 'usaban de una cierta moneda de cobre de largo de dos dedos y de ancho uno á manera de achitas pequeñas, y de grueso, como un real de á ocho. Esta moneda no ha mucho tiempo que la han dejado los de Tutupec del mar del sur.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 332. 'No saben que cosas es moneda batida de metal ninguno.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 87, 342. The cacao nibs 'val ciascuno come vn mezzo marchetto [about three cents] fra noi.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 306. See *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 311; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., p. 342; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 627-9; *Id., Quatre Lettres*, p. 276; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 666. Salt used as money. *Chaves*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom v., p. 328. I omit a long list of references to authors who merely mention cacao and the other articles as used for money.

Digitized by Google

ion of the authorities. Sahagun, however, says of the skilful merchant that he knows "the value of gold and silver, according to the weight and fineness, is diligent and solicitous in his duty, and defrauds not in weighing, but rather gives overweight," and this too in the "time of their infidelity." Native words also appear in several vocabularies for weights and scales. Brasseur de Bourbourg regards this as ample proof that scales were used. Clavigero thinks weights may have been employed, and mention of the fact omitted in the narratives.[5] The market, *tianquiztli*, of Tlatelulco was the grandest in the country, and may be taken as a representative of all. Its grandeur consisted, however, in the abundance and variety of the merchandise offered for sale and in the crowd of buyers and sellers, not in the magnificence of the buildings connected with it; for the market-place was simply an open plaza, surrounded, as all the authorities say, with 'porticos' where merchandise was exhibited What these porticos were, we are left to conjecture. Probably they were nothing more than simple booths arranged in streets and covering the whole plaza, where merchants and their wares were sheltered from the rays of a tropical sun. Whatever may have been the nature and arrangement of these shelters, we know that the space was systematically apportioned among the different industries represented. Fishermen, hunters, farmers, and artists, each had their allotted space for the transaction of business. Hither, as Torquemada tells us, came the potters and jewellers from Cholula, the workers in gold from Azcapuzcalco, the painters from Tezcuco, the shoemakers from Tenayocan, the huntsmen from Xilotepec, the fishermen from Cuitlahuac, the fruit-growers of the tierra caliente, the

[5] 'No tenian peso (que yo sepa) los Mexicanos, falta grandissima para la contratacion. Quien dize que no lo vsauan por escusar los engaños, quien por que no lo auian menester, quien por ignorancia, que es lo cierto. Por donde parece que no auian oido como hizo Dios todos las cosas en cuento, peso, y medida.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 342; *Clavigero Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 166; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 42, 40; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 629–30.

Digitized by Google

mat-makers of Quauhtitlan, the flower-dealers of Xochimilco, and yet so great was the market that to each of these was afforded an opportunity to display his wares.

All kinds of food, animal and vegetable, cooked and uncooked, were arranged in the most attractive manner; eating-houses were also attached to the tianquiztli and much patronized by the poorer classes. Here were to found all the native cloths and fabrics, in the piece and made up into garments coarse and fine, plain and elaborately embroidered, to suit the taste and means of purchasers; precious stones, and ornaments of metal, feathers, or shells; implements and weapons of metal, stone, and wood; building material, lime, stone, wood, and brick; articles of household furniture; matting of various degrees of fineness; medicinal herbs and prepared medicines; wood and coal; incense and censers; cotton and cochineal; tanned skins; numerous beverages; and an infinite variety of pottery; but to enumerate all the articles noticed in the market-place by the conquerors would make a very long list, and would involve, besides, the repetition of many names which have been or will be mentioned elsewhere.

Cortés speaks of this market as being twice as large as that of Salamanca, and all the conquistadores are enthusiastic in their expressions of wonder, not only at the variety of products offered for sale, but at the perfect order and system which prevailed, notwithstanding the crowd of buyers and sellers. The judges of the commercial tribunal, twelve in number according to Torquemada, four according to Zuazo, held their court in connection with the market buildings, where they regulated prices and measures, and settled disputes. Watchmen acting under their authority, constantly patrolled the tianquiztli to prevent disorder. Any attempt at extortionate charges, or at passing off injured or inferior goods, or any infringement on another's rights, was immediately reported and severely pun-

Digitized by Google

ished. The judges had even the right to enforce the death penalty. Other markets in the Nahua regions were on a similar plan, those of Tlascala and Tezcuco coming next to that of Tlatelulco in importance.[6]

Trade was carried on daily in the tianquiztli, chiefly for the convenience of the inhabitants of the city, but every fifth day was set apart as a special market-day, on which a fair was held, crowded not only by local customers, but by buyers and sellers from all the country round, and from foreign lands. In Tlatelulco these special market-days were those that fell under the signs calli, tochtli, acatl, and tecpatl. In other large cities, days with other signs were chosen, in order that the fairs might not occur on the same day in neighboring towns. Las Casas says that each of the two market-places in the city of Mexico would contain 200,000 persons, 100,000 being present each fifth day; and Cortés tells us that more than 60,000 persons assembled daily in the Tlatelulco market. According to the same authority, 30,000 was the number of daily visitors to the market of Tlascala. Perhaps, however, he refers to the fair days, on which occasion at Tlatelulco the Anonymous Conqueror puts the number at 50,000, limiting the daily concourse to about 25,000.[7] Considering the population of the cities and surrounding country, together with the limited facilities for transportation, these accounts of the daily attendance at the markets, as also of the abundance and variety of the merchandise, need not be regarded as exaggerations.

[6] On the Nahua markets and the articles offered for sale, see *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 68, 103–5; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 323–5, lib. ix., p. 357; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxx.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 554–60; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 272, 299–301; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 87–8, 116–18; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xv., xvi.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii., iv.; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 359–61.

[7] *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 103, 68; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309. 'Es tanta la gente que concurre á vender y comprar, que no puede facilmente declararse.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxx.

Digitized by Google

On the lakes about the city of Mexico, merchandise of all kinds was transported to and from the markets by boats, 50,000 of which, as Zuazo tells us, were employed daily in bringing provisions to the city.[8] The heavier or more bulky articles of trade, such as building material, were often offered for sale in the boats to save the labor of repeated handling. Boats were also used for transportation on the southern coasts, to some extent on navigable rivers, and also by travelling merchants in crossing such streams as could not conveniently be bridged. The only other means of transportation known in the country was that afforded by the carriers. Large numbers of these carriers, or porters, were in attendance at the markets to move goods to and from the boats, or to carry parcels to the houses of consumers For transportation from town to town, or to distant lands, merchandise was packed in bales, wrapped in skins and mats, or in bamboo cases covered with skin, known as *petlacalli*. Cases, or cages, for the transportation of the more fragile wares were called *cacaxtli*. The *tlamama*, or regular carriers, were trained to their work of carrying burdens from childhood, seventy or eighty pounds was the usual burden carried, placed on the back and supported by the *mecapalli*, a strap passing round the forehead; twelve or fifteen miles was the ordinary day's journey. The tlamama, clad in a maxtli, carried on long trips, besides his bale of merchandise, a sort of palm-leaf umbrella, a bag of provisions, and a blanket.

Expeditions to distant provinces were undertaken by the company of Tlatelulco for purposes of commercial gain; or by order of the king, when political gains were the object in view, and the traders in reality armed soldiers; or more rarely by individual merchants on their own private account. For protection large numbers usually travelled in company,

[8] *Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 359. 'Sobre cincuenta mill canoas y cient mill segun se cree.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxx. 'The lake day and night is plyed with boates going and returning.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii

Digitized by Google

choosing some one of the company to act as leader. Previous to departure, they gave a banquet to the old merchants of the town, who by reason of their age had ceased to travel; at this feast they made known their plans, and spoke of the places they intended to visit and roads by which they would travel. The old merchants applauded the spirit and enterprise of those who were going on the expedition, and if they were young and inexperienced, encouraged them, and spoke of the fame they would gain for having left their homes to undertake a dangerous journey and suffer privations and hardships. They reminded them of the wealth and honored name acquired by their fathers in similar expeditions, and gave them advice as to the best manner of conducting themselves on the road.[9]

On the route the carriers marched in single file, and at every camping-place the strictest watch was kept against enemies, and especially against robbers, who then as now infested the dangerous passes to lie in wait for the richly laden caravans. Rulers of the different friendly provinces, mindful of the benefits resulting from such expeditions, constructed roads and kept them in repair; furnished bridges or boats for crossing unfordable streams; and at certain points, remote from towns, placed houses for the travellers' accommodation. Expeditions in hostile provinces were undertaken by the nahualoztomecas, who disguised themselves in the dress of the province visited, and endeavored to imitate the manners and to speak the language of its people, with which it was a qualification of their profession to make themselves acquainted. Extraordinary care was taken to guard against robbers on the return to Mexico, and it is also said to have been customary for the merchants on nearing the city to dress in rags, affecting poverty

[9] For specimens of the exhortations of old merchants to young men, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 310–14; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 585–6.

Digitized by Google

and an unsuccessful trip. The motive for this latter proceeding is not very apparent, nor for the invariable introduction of goods into the city by night; they had not even the hope of evading the payment of taxes which in later times prompts men to similar conduct, since merchandise could only be sold in the public market, where it could not be offered without paying the royal percentage of duties.

The usual route of commercial expeditions was south-eastward to Tochtepec near the banks of the Rio Alvarado, whence the caravans took separate roads, according as their destination was the coast region of Goazacoalco, the Miztec and Zapotec towns on the Pacific, or the still more distant regions across the isthmus of Tehuantepec. The southern limit reached by the traders of the Aztec empire, it is impossible accurately to determine. The merchants of Xicalanco furnished Cortés, when about to undertake the conquest of Honduras, tolerably correct maps of the whole region as far south as the isthmus of Panamá;[10] the raiders from Anáhuac are known to have penetrated to Chiapa, Soconusco, and Guatemala; it is by no means improbable that her merchants reached on more than one occasion the isthmus.[11]

The preceding pages contain all that has been preserved concerning Nahua trade and traders, except what may be termed the mythology of commerce, a branch of the subject not without importance, embracing the ceremonies, sacrifices, and superstitions connected with the setting-out, journey, and return of the Tlatelulcan caravans. Commerce, like every other

[10] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. vi., cap. xii.; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 197.

[11] A very full account of the Nahua commerce is given in Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 163–70, and the same is translated with slight changes, in *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 628–35, in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 612–32; and in *Id.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1858, tom. clix., pp. 45–58. See also *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., pp. 329–31; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 100–12; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 541; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 25–8; *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 247–8; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 166–71; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 43–6. See also note 12.

Digitized by Google

feature of Nahua civilization, was under the care of a special deity, and no merchant dared to set out on an expedition in quest of gain without fully complying with all the requirements of the god as interpreted by the priesthood. The particular divinity of the traders was Iyacatecutli, or Iyacacoliuhqui, 'lord with the aquiline nose'—that nasal type being, as the Abbé Brasseur thinks, symbolic of mercantile cunning and skill. Services in his honor were held regularly in the month of Tlaxochimaco; but the ceremonies performed by travelling merchants seem to have been mostly devoted to the god of fire and the god of the roads.

First a day was selected for the start whose sign was deemed favorable—Ce Cohuatl, 'one serpent,' was a favorite The day before they departed the hair was cropped close, and the head soaped; during all their absence, even should it last for years, these operations must not be repeated, nor might they wash more than the neck, face, and hands, bathing the body being strictly prohibited. At midnight they cut flag-shaped papers for Xiuhtecutli, the god of fire, fastened them to sticks painted with vermilion, and marked on them the face of the god with drops of melted *ulli*, or India-rubber. Other papers, also marked with ulli, were cut in honor of Tlaltecutli, to be worn on the breast. Others, for the god of the merchants, were used to cover a bamboo stick, which they worshipped and carried with them. The gods of the roads, Zacatzontli and Tlacotzontli, also had their papers ornamented with ulli-drops and painted butterflies; while the papers for Cecoatlutlimelaoatl, one of the signs of the divining art, were decorated with snake-like figures. When all the papers were ready, those of the fire-god were placed before the fire in the house, the others being arranged in systematic order in the court-yard. Then the merchants, standing before the fire, offered to it some quails which they first beheaded, and forthwith, drawing blood from their own ears and tongue, they repeated some mystic word and sprinkled

Digitized by Google

the blood four times on the fire. Blood was then sprinkled in turn on the papers in the house, towards the heavens and cardinal points, and finally on the papers in the court-yard. The fire-god's papers, after a few appropriate words to the deity, were burned in a brazier with pure white copal. If they burned with a clear flame, it was a good omen; otherwise, ill fortune and disaster were betokened. The papers left outside were burned together—save those of the merchants' god—in a fire which was kindled in the court, and the ashes were carefully buried there.

All this at midnight. At early dawn the principal merchants of the city or of the neighborhood, or simply friends and relatives of the party about to set out on the journey, according to the wealth of the party, with youths and old women, were invited to assemble, and after a washing of mouths and hands, to partake of food. After the repast, concluded by another washing and by smoking of pipes and drinking of chocolate, the host spoke a few words of welcome to the guests, and explained his plans. To this some one of the chief merchants briefly responded with wishes for the success of the expedition, advice respecting the route to be followed and behavior while abroad, applause for the spirit and enterprise shown, and words of encouragement to those about to undertake their first commercial journey, picturing to them in vivid colors both the hardships and the honors that were before them. Then the merchandise and provisions for the trip were made ready in bales and placed in the canoes, if the start was to be made by water, under the direction of the leader, who, after attending to this matter, made a farewell address of thanks for advice and good wishes, recommending their wives and children to the care of those that remained behind. The friends again replied briefly and all was ready for the departure. A fire was built in the court-yard and a vase of copal was placed near it. As a final parting ceremony, each of the departing

Digitized by Google

merchants took a portion of the copal and threw it on the fire, stepping at once toward his canoe. Not another word of farewell must be spoken, nor a parting glance be directed backward to friends behind. To look back or speak would be a most unpropitious augury.

Thus they set out, generally at night, as Sahagun implies. On the journey each merchant carried continually in his hand a smooth black stick representing his god Iyacatecutli—probably the same sticks that have been mentioned as being covered with papers in honor of this god the night before the departure from home. When they halted for the night, the sticks of the company were bound together in a bundle, forming a kind of combination divinity to whose protecting care the encampment was piously intrusted. To this god, offerings of ulli and paper were made by the leaders, and to the gods of the roads as well. Blood must also be drawn and mingled with the offering, else it were of no avail; and, a most inconvenient rule for poor weak humanity, the sacrificial offering had to be repeated twice again each night, so that one or another of the chiefs must be continually on the watch. The caravans, when their destination was a friendly province, usually bore some presents from the sovereigns of Mexico as tokens of their good-will, and they were received by the authorities of such provinces with some public ceremonies not definitely described.

When the merchants returned home, after consultation with a *tonalpouhqui*, they awaited a favorable sign, such as Ce Calli or Chicome Calli, 'one or seven house,' and then entered the city under shade of night. They repaired immediately to the house of the leading merchant of the corporation, or to that of the merchant under whose direction their trip had been made, formally announcing their safe arrival, and also their intention to invite all the merchants on the following day to partake of "a little chocolate in their

Digitized by Google

poor house," that is, to be present at a most sumptuous banquet. Papers were then cut, and at midnight offered with ulli, much after the manner already described, to the gods, as a thank-offering for their protection. The feast that took place next day, when all the guests were assembled, was accompanied by additional offerings to the gods of fire and trade, and of course by speeches of the returned travellers and their guests, but presented no particularly noticeable contrasts with the many feasts that have been described.

Not only was the traveller obliged, according to the Nahua superstition, to abstain from baths during his absence, but even his family during the same period, while allowed to bathe the body, must not wash the head or face oftener than once in eighty days; thus were the gods propitiated to watch kindly over their absent relative wandering in distant lands. If a merchant died while on a journey, his body, at least if he belonged to the highest rank, was neither buried nor burned, but, clad in fine apparel, and decorated with certain mystical papers and painted devices, it was put in a wooden cage, or cacaxtli, and secured to a tree on the top of a high mountain. Advice of the death was forwarded to the old merchants, who in turn informed the family of the deceased, and regular funeral ceremonies were performed either immediately or on the return of the caravan. If the deceased met his death at the hands of an enemy, a wooden image was prepared, dressed in the clothing of the dead merchant, and made the subject of the usual funeral rites.

Besides the regular feasts attending the departure and return of caravans, many others took place under the auspices of the mercantile class. We have noticed the fondness of the Nahua people for entertainments of this kind, and it is natural that the merchants, as the richest class in the community, should have been foremost in contributing to this popular taste. Each merchant, when he had acquired great wealth by

Digitized by Google

good fortune in his trading ventures, deemed it, as Sahagun tells us, a most disgraceful thing "to die without having made some splendid expenditure" by entertaining his friends and fellow-merchants in a banquet, which should be remembered as *the* event of his career. A long time was devoted to making ready for the feast, to the purchase of provisions and decorations, and to engaging dancers and singers, that no item might be neglected, nor any oversight be allowed to mar the perfect enjoyment of the invited guests. All being ready, a propitious sign was selected and invitations issued. The object of the display of hospitality being not only the entertainment of friends, but a thanksgiving to the gods for favors shown to the host, the first ceremonies were naturally in honor of the deities. These began in the night preceding the feast-day, with offerings of flowers in the shrine of Huitzilopochtli, in the chapels of other gods, and finally in the court-yard of the host, where were placed drums and two plates, on which perfumed canes were burning. Those officiating whistled in a peculiar manner, and all, stooping, put some earth in their mouth, crying, "Our lord has sounded." Then all burned perfumed copal, and a priest beheaded a quail before the drum, throwing it on the ground and watching in what direction it might flutter. If northward, it was a bad omen, foretelling sickness, or perhaps death. But the west and south were fortunate directions, indicating a peaceful and friendly disposition on the part of the gods. Incense was burned toward the cardinal points, the burning coals were thrown from the censer into the fire, and then the performers engaged for the *areito*, including, it would seem, soldiers of several classes, led by the *tlacatecatl*, began to dance and sing. Neither the host nor merchant guests joined in the dance, but remained in the house to receive the company, and present them with bouquets of flowers. At midnight ulli-marked paper was offered to the gods, and its ashes buried to pro-

Digitized by Google

mote the prosperity of future generations. Before the light of day, chocolate was drunk and the *nanacatl*, or intoxicating mushroom, was eaten, which caused some to dance, others to sing, and yet others to sit pensive in their rooms dreaming dreams and seeing visions of horrid import, whose narration at a later hour, when the effects of the drug had passed away, formed a prominent feature of the entertainment. At the appearance of the morning star, all the ashes of the sacrifices, the flowers, the burning canes, and all the implements used in the foregoing ceremonies, were buried, that they might not be seen by any visitor polluted by any kind of vice or uncleanness. The rising sun was greeted with songs, dancing, and beating of the teponaztli. The day was passed in feasting and music, and at the close of the day's banquet, food was distributed to the common people. The banquet was often continued more than one day; and if after the first day's feast the provision of food was exhausted, it was regarded by the guests as a bad sign—a very sensible superstition truly.

There was another merchant's feast in the month of Panquetzaliztli, in which a number of slaves were killed and eaten. The victims were purchased some time beforehand at the slave-mart in Azcapuzalco, kept clean, —being therefore called *tlaaltilzin*, 'washed'—and fattened for the occasion. The male slaves meantime had no work but to dance daily on the house-top, but the women had to spin. The articles collected for this feast embraced large numbers of rich mantles, maxtlis, and huipiles, which were to be presented to guests. Not only the residents of Mexico were invited, but members of the Tlatelulcan company who lived in other towns. The giver of the feast went personally to many towns, especially to Tochtepec, to issue invitations and distribute gifts. On his arrival he went first to the shrine of Iyacatecutli, before whose image he performed certain ceremonies and left some offerings. Then he went to the house of the Tlate-

Digitized by Google

lulcan company, prepared a feast and summoned the rich traders, who came at midnight. Washing of the hands and mouth preceded and followed the eating, presents were made, chocolate drunk, pipes smoked, quails offered in the court-yard, and incense burned. One of the best speakers then announced the purpose of their visitor to kill a few slaves in honor of Huitzilopochtli, and in his name invited the company to be present at the pleasing spectacle, and partake of the human flesh and other choice viands. Another speaker responded in a speech of acceptance, and the feast-giver directed his steps homeward to Mexico. After resting a while, the merchant ceremonially invited those of his own city to be present at the feast, and the latter, after many precautions, including an inspection by the older merchants to satisfy themselves that food enough had been provided and that the affair could not be a failure, deigned to accept, although they warned the would-be host of the fearful responsibility he would incur should the feast be in any respect improperly managed, through his unwillingness to spend money enough. Ce Calli, Ome Xochitl, and Ome Ozomatli were good signs for this feast.

On the first day, the male slaves, richly attired and decorated, were made to dance and perform the areito, carrying garlands of flowers and also pipes from which they were continually puffing smoke. The females, in equally rich attire, were stationed with plenty of food in one of the rooms where all could readily see them. The eating, drinking, and distribution of gifts were kept up all night. The following day's feast was a repetition of the first, and was called *tlaixnexia;* that of the third day was called *tetevaltia*, and on this day they made many changes in the dress of the slaves, putting on wigs of many-colored feathers, painted ear-flaps, stone nose-ornaments like butterflies, jackets with fringed borders and death's-heads for decoration, hawks' wings, *tlomaitl*, on the shoulders, rings, *mata-*

Digitized by Google

caxtli, on the arms, stained sandals, and girdles called *xiuhtlalpilli*. From this time forward strict guard was kept over them day and night until their death.

On yet a fourth occasion, apparently some days or perhaps weeks later, the merchant assembled his guests, and then just before sunset the victims were made drunk with *teuvetli*, and carried to Huitzilopochtli's temple, where they were made to dance and sing, and kept awake all night. At midnight they were placed on a mat before the fire, and the master of the banquet, dressed much like the slaves themselves, put out the fire, and in the darkness gave to each four mouthfuls of a dough moistened with honey, called *tzoalli*. Then a man dancing before them played upon an instrument called *chichtli*, hairs were pulled out of the top of each slave's head and put in a plate, *quacaxitl*, held by the dancer, and the master threw incense toward the east, west, north, and south. The slaves were offered food, but could not be induced to eat, expecting each moment the messenger of death. They were first taken to the ward of Coatlan, and in the court-yard of the temple of Huitzcalco were forced to fight against certain persons, the most valiant of whom were called *tlaamaviques*. If by force of arms these persons captured any of the slaves, they were entitled to receive their full value from the owner, or in default of such payment, to take the bodies after the sacrifice and eat the same. After the contest, the victims were sacrificed on the shrine of Huitzilopochtli, the complicated details of the ceremonies which followed differing only very slightly from those of similar sacrifices already several times described. The bodies were thrown down the steps as usual, carried home by the owner, cooked with maize, seasoned with salt without chile, and were finally eaten by the guests. With this horrible repast, the great feast of the month of Panquetzaliztli ended; but he who had given it carefully preserved the clothing, and other relics of the slaughtered slaves,

Digitized by Google

guarding them in a basket as most precious and pleasant souvenirs all the days of his life; and after his death the basket and its contents were burned at his obsequies.

Acosta tells us that in Cholula the merchants, especially those that dealt in slaves, furnished each year a slave of fine physique to represent their god Quetzalcoatl, in whose honor he was sacrificed, with appropriate and complicated ceremonies, his flesh being afterwards eaten in a banquet.[12]

The little to be said of Nahua watercraft may be as appropriately inserted here as elsewhere. I have already referred to the important use made of canoes in the transportation of merchandise upon the lakes of Anáhuac. In the art of navigation, however, no progress was made by the Nahuas at all in proportion to their advancement in other respects. As navigators, they were altogether inferior to their savage brethren of the Columbian and Hyperborean groups on the north-west coasts, whose skill in the manufacture and management of boats has been described in a preceding volume of this work. The reason is obvious: their progress in agriculture enabled them to obtain a food-supply without risking their lives habitually on the sea; their sunny clime obviated the necessity of whale-blubber and seal-skins. In the earlier stages of civilization, men make progress only when impelled by some actual necessity; consequently, among the Nahuas, when means were supplied of crossing streams, and of transporting goods on the lakes and for short distances along the coast at the mouth of large rivers, progress in this direction ceased.

Clavigero's investigations led him to believe that the use of sails was unknown, and although Brasseur

[12] On merchants' feasts, ceremonies, and superstitions, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., pp. 335–86, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 310–15; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 388–92; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 585–7. See also account of a feast of flower-dealers in this volume, p. 315, and account of the Cholultec feast in honor of Quetzalcoatl, in vol. iii., pp. 286–7, of this work.

Digitized by Google

de Bourbourg in one place speaks of such aids to navigation, yet he gives no authority for his statement.[13]

Rafts and 'dug-out' canoes were the vessels employed; the former were used for the most part in crossing streams, and were of various material and construction. Those of the ruder kind were simply a number of poles tied together with strings.[14] Those called by the Spaniards *balsas* were of superior construction, made of *otlatl* reeds, or *tules*, and rushes of different kinds in bundles. The best balsas were about five feet square, made of bamboos and supported by hollow gourds closed by a water and air tight covering. The rafts were propelled by swimmers, one in front and another behind.[15]

The canoes—*acalli*, 'water-houses' among the Aztecs, called also *tahucup* in Tabasco—were hollowed out from the trunk of a single tree, were generally flat-bottomed and without keel, somewhat narrower at the bow than at the stern, as Las Casas says, and would carry from two to sixty persons. As to the instruments employed in hollowing out and finishing the acalli we have no information, neither do we know whether fire was one of the agents made use of.[16]

[13] Clavigero's description of Nahua boats and navigation is in his *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 168–9. 'Leurs barques, dont les plus grandes mesuraient jusqu'à soixante pieds de longueur, couvertes et abritées contre le mauvais temps, marchaient à la voile et à la rame,' probably referring to a boat met by Columbus some distance out at sea. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 632.

[14] Invented, according to tradition, by the Tarascos of Michoacan during their early migrations. *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 131–2.

[15] 'Mettevansi a sedere in questa macchina quattro, o sei passaggieri alla volta. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 168. 'Ces radeaux sont fort légers et très-solides; ils sont encore en usage dans l'Amérique, et nous avons passé ainsi plus d'une rivière. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 295.

[16] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxx. 'En cada vna cabian sesenta Hombres.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 460, and *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. viii., cap. iv. 'The Canowes are litle barkes, made of one tree.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iii. Called *Acates. Id.*, dec. v., lib. ii. 'Estas acallis ó barcas cada una es de una sola pieza, de un arbol tan grande y tan grueso como lo demanda la longitud, y conforme al ancho que le pueden dar, que es de lo grueso del árbol de que se hacen, y para esto hay sus maestros como en Vizcaya los hay de navíos.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 200.

Digitized by Google

The use of boats was not altogether confined to traffic, but extended to war and the transportation of troops. Fierce conflicts on the waters of the lakes are recorded in the ancient annals of Anáhuac; canoe fleets of armed natives came out to meet the Spaniards at various points along the coast; and we read of the vain efforts to defend the approaches to the Aztec capital, by thousands of boats which could offer little resistance to the advance of Cortés' brigantines.[17]

These fleets, so inefficient against Spanish vessels and arms, must have been of great service to the Aztecs in maintaining their domination over the many towns on the lake-shores. To increase the efficiency of boats and boatmen, races and sham fights were established, which, besides affording useful training to paddlers and warriors, furnished an additional means of entertainment to the people, who gathered in crowds to watch the struggles of the competitors, applaud the ducking of each vanquished boat's crew, and to reward the victors with honors and prizes.[18]

[17] 'The sides of the Indian boats were fortified with bulwarks.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. iii., p. 100; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 140; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 211.

[18] 'Spesso s'esercitavano in questo genere di combattimenti.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 151; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 251. 200,000 canoes on the lake about Mexico. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 115. See also note 8 of this chapter. Additional notes on Nahua boats. 'Habia en México muchas acallis ó barcas para servicio de las casas, y otras muchas de tratantes que venian con bastimentos á la ciudad, y todos los pueblos de la redonda, que están llenos de barcas que nunca cesan de entrar y salir á la ciudad, las cuales eran innumerables.' 'Con estas salen á la mar, y con las grandes de estas acallis navegan de una isla á otra, y se atreven á atravesar algun golfo pequeño.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 187, 200. 'Lo mas del trato, y camino de los Indios, en aquella Tierra, es por Agua, en Acales, ò Canoas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 613; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. viii., cap. iv.; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 247; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 633, tom. ii., p. 591; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 75–6.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIII.

WAR CUSTOMS OF THE NAHUAS.

IMPORTANCE OF THE MILITARY PROFESSION—INDICATIONS OF RANK—EDUCATION OF WARRIORS—REWARDS FOR VALOR—MILITARY ORDERS AND THEIR DRESS—GORGEOUS WAR DRESSES OF MONTEZUMA AND THE AZTEC NOBILITY—DRESS OF THE COMMON SOLDIERS—ARMOR AND DEFENSIVE WEAPONS—OFFENSIVE WEAPONS—STANDARDS—AMBASSADORS AND COURIERS—FORTIFICATIONS—THE MILITARY COUNCIL—ARTICLES OF WAR—DECLARATION OF WAR—SPIES—ORDER OF MARCH AND BATTLE—WAR CUSTOMS OF THE TLASCALTECS AND TARASCOS—RETURN OF THE CONQUERING ARMY—CELEBRATION OF FEATS OF ARMS.

As might be expected from a people so warlike and ambitious as the Nahuas, the profession of arms ranked high above all other callings, save that of the priests. This was especially the case in the later days, under the Aztec kings, whose unscrupulous ambition and passion for conquest could only be gratified by their warriors. Huitzilopochtli, god of war, protector of the empire, was glorified and honored above all other gods; his altars must be red with blood, for blood alone could extort his favor, and wars were frequently waged solely for his propitiation; valor was the loftiest virtue, the highest honors were paid to those who distinguished themselves in battle; no dignities, positions, or decorations, under the government, were given to any but approved soldiers. Children were taught by parent and priest the chivalrous

Digitized by Google

deeds of their ancestors, whom they were urged to emulate in daring; titles, rewards, and posts of honor were offered to stimulate the ambition of the young men. The king might not receive his crown until with his own hand he had taken captives to be sacrificed at the feast of his coronation. The priests were the foremost inciters to war and carnage. All wars were religious crusades. The highest earthly rewards were in store for the victor, while the soul of him that fell in battle took immediate flight to heaven. Only defeat and cowardice were to be dreaded.

The Nahua warrior's services were rewarded only by promotion, since no paid troops were employed. But promotion was sure to follow brilliant exploits performed by even the humblest soldier, while without such daring deeds, the sons of the highest nobles could hope for no advancement. Dress and ornaments were the indications of rank, and were changed in some detail for every new achievement. To escape from the coarse nequen garments of the common soldier, and to put on successively the decorative mantles of the higher grades, was deemed a sufficient reward and incentive. The costume of each warrior indicated the exact number of prisoners captured by the wearer.

Especial care was taken, however, with the sons of lords intended for the profession of arms. At an early age their heads were shaved, except a tuft on the back of the head called *mocuexpaltia*, a designation changed to *cuexpatchicuepul* when the boy was fifteen years old. At this age he was sent to war in charge of veteran warriors, and if with their aid he took a prisoner, the tuft was cut off and another given to be worn over the ear with feather plumes; on his return he was addressed after the following manner by his grandparents or uncles: "My child, the Sun and the Earth have washed and renewed thy face, because thou didst dare to attempt the capture of an enemy in company with others. Lo, now it were better to

Digitized by Google

abandon thee to the mercies of the enemy than that thou shouldst again take a prisoner with the aid of others, because, should it so happen, they will place another tuft over thine other ear and thou wilt appear like a girl; truly, it were better thou shouldst die than that this should happen to thee." If after a fair trial the youth failed to take a captive, he was disgraced, and ceased to be a warrior in the eyes of his comrades; but if, unaided, he was successful, he was called a warlike youth, *telpuchtlitaquitlamani*, and was presented to the king, whose stewards dyed his face red, his temples and body yellow, and bestowed upon him mantles and maxtlis of the colors and designs which his achievements gave him the right to wear. If he took two captives, the honors were of course greater; three entitled him to a command over others; four made him a captain who might wear long lip-ornaments, leathern ear-rings, and gaudy tassels. With five prisoners the young man became a *quauhiacatl*, 'eagle that guides,' with corresponding insignia, a head-plume with silver threads, the mantle called *cuechintli*, another called *chicoapalnacazminqui* of two colors, and still another decorated with straps. The prisoners must, however, be from nations of acknowledged prowess, such as those of Atlixco, the Huexotzincas, or Tlascaltecs; double or triple the number of Cuextecas or Tenimes must be captured, and no number of these could entitle a youth to the highest honors.[1]

In the Mexican picture-writings are delineated the successive grades by which a graduate from the temple school advanced, with the costumes and defensive armor he was permitted to wear. First we see him leaving for the war, carrying the *impedimenta* of the chief priest, who goes into the field to embolden the troops, enforce orders, and perform other duties. The pictures that follow portray the devices on the shields, manner of painting, armor, head-dresses, and orna-

[1] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 329–32.

Digitized by Google

ments they were allowed to assume, according to the number of captives each had taken. The warrior-priests were rewarded, in like manner, with accoutrements and insignia of peculiar designs, and with important commands in the army.[2]

Three military orders were established by the Aztec monarchs, the members of which were granted certain privileges, and entitled to wear badges of distinction; they also had apartments allotted to them in the royal palace and formed the royal guard. Promotion to the order was open to all, but could only be won by some notable feat of arms. The members of the first of these three orders were called Achcauhtin, or Princes; of the second, Quauhtin, or Eagles; of the third, Ocelome, or Tigers. The distinctive mark of the Princes was their manner of dressing the hair, which was tied on the crown of the head with a red thong, and worked into as many braids, each terminating in a cotton tassel, as were the deeds of valor performed by the wearer; the Eagles wore a kind of casque, in the form of an eagle's head; the Tigers wore a particular armor, spotted like the skin of the animal whose name they bore. These insignia were only used in war; at court all military officers wore the *tlachquauhyo*, a dress of many colors. The members of these three military orders had the privilege of wearing garments of much finer texture than the common people, as well as such feathers and jewels as they could afford to buy. An inferior order of knighthood appears also to have existed, the members of which had their hair cropped close about their ears, and wore skull-caps and split collars; these were only armed for defence from the girdle upward, whereas their superiors fought in com-

[2] *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., pl. lxiv.–lxvi. In explanation of plate lxv., no. 19, it is stated that the warrior was called Quachic by reason of having taken five prisoners in war. 'Haber cautivado en la guerra cinco, demas de que en otras guerras a cautivado otros muchos de sus enemigos.' Explanation of *Id.*, vol. v., p. 104; while Purchas says such a one was 'called Quagchil....shewing that hee had taken fiue at the Wars of Guexo, besides that in other Wars he tooke many of his enemies.' *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1110–11.

Digitized by Google

plete armor. All these privileged warriors were permitted to use painted and gilt vessels, but the common soldiers might use none but plain earthen ones.[3]

Montezuma, who was a member of the order of Princes, when he went in person against the enemy, wore upon his legs greaves of gold, and upon his arms thin plates of the same metal, as well as bracelets; about his neck were a collar and chains of gold and precious stones; from his ears and lower lip hung ornaments of gold set with precious chalchiuites; and from the back of his head to his waist was suspended the glittering decoration of royalty, only worn by kings, the *quachictli*. This was an ornament of exquisite workmanship, wrought with great labor of costly feathers and jewels, and shaped somewhat like a butterfly. In addition to this, he was distinguished from his retinue by a shield upon which was displayed the royal coat of arms in feather-work; and he carried also a small drum, upon which he beat the signal for battle.[4]

On the occasion when the sovereigns and nobility of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan came out to receive Cortés, there was little, so far as dress was concerned, by which king might be distinguished from subject; the only difference was that the monarchs wore crowns

[3] Torquemada and Brasseur speak of a yet higher rank among the princes. 'Vna de las maiores grandeças, à que llegaba, era atarse el cabello, que era demonstracion de Gran Capitan, y estos se llamaban Quachictin, que era el mas honroso nombre, que à los Capitanes se los daba, y pocos lo alcançaban.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 543. 'Dont les membres se nommaient "Quachictin," c'est-à-dire, Couronnés. Leurs insignes consistaient dans la courroie écarlate dont nous avons parlé plus haut, mais dont le bout, avec sa houppe de plumes, pendait alors jusqu'à la ceinture.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 590–1. Herrera and Acosta both mention a fourth order: 'Auia otros como caualleros Pardos, que no eran de tanta cuenta, como estos, los quales tenian vnas coletas cortadas por encima de la orcja en redondo.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 443–4; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xix.; *West und Ost Indischer Lustgart*, pt i., p. 99; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 267–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 140.

[4] The greaves were called *cozehuatl*, the brachials *matemecatl*, the bracelets *matzopetztli*, the lip-ornament *tentetl*, the ear-rings *nacochtli*, and the collar or necklace *cozcapetlatl*. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 543; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 595; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 141.

Digitized by Google

of gold and precious stones, bejewelled sandals with golden soles, and tassels at the end of the ribbon with which their hair was bound.[5] A prince of the blood-royal, on his début upon the battle-field, was clad in plain white; his behavior was closely watched, and after the action such insignia and colors as he had merited by his conduct were bestowed upon him.

Sahagun gives an extended description of the gorgeous war costumes of the noble Aztec warriors, with the native name for each fraction of the equipments. Here are described head-dresses composed of rich feathers, prominent among which were the quetzal; corselets of red and green feathers, worked with gold thread; head-dresses of green feathers set in gold bands, or of tiger-skin; helmets of silver; a garment called *tocivitl* reaching to the knees, made of yellow macaw-feathers, embroidered with gold, and worn with a golden casque plumed with quetzal-feathers; and other equally gorgeous attire. As a means of directing their men, some officers bore small drums, painted and ornamented with feathers so as to correspond with their dress, in a net at their backs; others carried little flags made of feathers held together with bands of gold or silver. Many noble warriors had their armorial bearings, devils, monsters, and what not, painted or embroidered upon their backs. Truly such *spolia opima* were worthy of a hero's toil.[6]

The rank and file of the Aztec army wore no clothing but the maxtli in battle, but by painting their faces and bodies in grotesque patterns with brilliant colors, and covering their heads with raw cotton, they presented a sufficiently fierce and gaudy appearance.[7]

The Tlascaltec leaders wore a quilted cotton tunic two fingers in thickness, that fitted closely to the body,

[5] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 295–6.

[6] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 293–7.

[7] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvi.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 593; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messco*, tom. ii., p. 143; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 543.

Digitized by Google

and also protected the shoulders and thighs; the wealthier class wore over the tunic a cuirass of thin gold or silver plates, and over all they threw a rich mantle of feather-work elegantly embroidered; to protect their legs they put on leathern boots or wooden greaves ornamented with gold. On their heads they wore a morion made of hide or wood representing the head of some animal, bird, or serpent. From the crown waved a magnificent tuft of richly variegated plumes, a conspicuous mark that served to denote the warrior's rank.

The armor and defensive weapons of the Nahua knights, though of little service against the fire-arms and swordmanship of the Spaniards, yet were admirably suited for protection from the weapons in use among themselves. The *chimalli*, or Mexican shield, was made of various materials and in divers forms; sometimes it was round, sometimes oval, sometimes rounded only on the lower side; it was commonly constructed of flexible bamboo canes, bound firmly together, and covered with hide. The face of the shield was ornamented according to the rank and taste of the bearer; that of a noble was generally covered with thin plates of gold, with a heavy boss in the centre. In Tabasco, and along the coast, tortoise-shells, inlaid with gold, silver, or copper, were commonly used as shields. Reed-grass, hides, or nequen-cloth, coated with India-rubber, served to protect an Aztec common soldier. Some shields were of an ordinary size, others were intended to cover the entire body, and were so constructed that when not in use they could be folded up and carried under the arm. The body-armor of the nobles and higher grades of warriors consisted of a breast-piece made of quilted cotton, one or two fingers in thickness, called *ichcahuepilli;* over this was a thick cotton coat, which covered part of the arms and thighs, made in one piece, fastened behind, and decorated with feathers of whatever colors the uniform of the company to which

Digitized by Google

the wearer belonged might be. This cotton armor was completely arrow-proof, and was of great service to the Spanish Conquerors, who lost no time in adopting it in place of their heavy steel armor. Arm and leg guards made of wood covered with leather or gold plates and trimmed with feathers, and morions of the same material shaped and painted to represent the head of a tiger, serpent, or monster, with mouth open and teeth bared, complete the defensive equipment. Over a cuirass of gold and silver plates some lords wore a garment of feathers, which is said to have been proof against arrows and javelins. Nobles and officers also wore lofty plumes so as to present the appearance of increased stature.[8]

The shields used by the Toltecs were made of skins ornamented with feathers of various colors; on their heads they wore helmets of gold, silver, or skins. The body-armor worn by the principal warriors was made of double cloth padded with cotton; it differed from that of the Aztecs, inasmuch as it reached down to the ankles and was worn over a thin white tunic. The private soldiers, like those of the Aztec army, also painted the upper part of the body to represent armor; but from the waist to the thighs they wore short drawers, and over them, fastened round the waist, a kind of kilt that reached to the knees and availed them somewhat for defence. Across the body was a sash made of feathers that passed from the right shoulder to the left side of the waist. They wore sandals on their feet and had feather ornaments upon their heads, more or less rich according to the quality of the warrior. When going to battle they adorned their necks, breasts, arms, and legs with their most valuable trinkets of gold or precious stones.[9] Tezozomoc mentions that the Tarascos wore steel helmets, but, as I have already stated, none of these nations

[8] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 141–3; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305.

[9] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 289–90.

Digitized by Google

were acquainted with the use of iron in any shape.[10] Some of the armor in use among the Tabascans must have been exceedingly rich, judging by that which was presented to Juan de Grijalva by the cacique of that province. It consisted of greaves for the knees and legs, made of wood and covered with sheets of gold, head-pieces covered with gold plates and precious stones, among which was a visor, of which the upper half was of jewels linked together, and the lower half of gold plates; then there were cuirasses of solid gold, besides a quantity of armor-plates sufficient to cover the whole body.[11]

The offensive weapons of the Aztecs consisted of bows and arrows, slings, clubs, spears, light javelins, and swords; and in the use of all of these the soldiers were well skilled. The bows were made of tough, elastic wood, and were about five feet in length; for strings they used the sinews of animals or stags' hair twisted. The arrows were light canes, with about six inches of oak or other hard wood inserted in the end; at the extremity a piece of iztli was fastened with twisted nequen fibre, and further secured by a paste of resin or other adhesive substance. Sometimes instead of iztli they used the bones of animals or fish; the bone of a fish called *libisa* is said to have caused by its venomous properties[12] a wound very difficult to heal. It is well known that none of the Nahua nations used poisoned arrows; such weapons

[10] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 83.

[11] *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., pp. 17–21; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 354; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii. lib. iii., cap. ii.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 37; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 519; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 14. For further reference to defensive weapons and armor, see *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 608–19; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 246; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 257; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 81–3; *Mexique, Etudes Hist.*, p. 8; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt ii., p. 28; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 161; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 133; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 542.

[12] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xi.; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 99–100.

Digitized by Google

would have defeated the object for which they often engaged in war; namely, that of taking their enemies alive for the purpose of immolating them upon the altars of their gods. It is reasonable to believe that many of them attained to great accuracy in shooting with the bow, but there is room to doubt the assertion that some of them were able to shoot with three or four arrows at a time; or to throw an ear of corn into the air and pierce every kernel before it reached the ground; or to throw up a coin of the size of half a dollar, and keep it in the air as long as they pleased with their arrows.[13] The sling was a braid of pita-thread or other fibre, broader in the middle than at the ends, with which stones were thrown with much force and accuracy; the missiles were carried in a pouch filled with stones and suspended from the waist in front. The *maza* was a club similar to the Roman *clava*, tapering from the handle toward the end, and terminating in a knotty head filled with points of iztli, or tempered copper.[14] The *macana*, or *macuahuitl*, called by the Spaniards *espada*, a sword, was made of tough wood, about three and a half feet long, with a flat blade four fingers in width armed upon both sides with sharp pieces of iztli about three fingers long by three wide, which were inserted into the grooved edge at intervals, and cemented with some adhesive compound.[15] This weapon, when not

[13] 'I Tehuacanesi erano singolarmente rinomati per la lor destrezza nel tirar tre, o quatro frecce insieme....La destrezza di quei Popoli nel tirar le frecce non sarebbe credibile, se non fosse accertata per la deposizione di centinaja di testimonj oculati. Radunatisi parecchj frecciatori gettano in sù una pannocchia di frumentone, e si mettono a saettarla con una tal prontezza, e con una tal desterità, che non la lasciano venite a terra, finattantochè non le hanno levati tutti i grani. Gettano similmente una moneta d'argento non più grande d'un giulio, e saettandola la trattengono in aria, quanto voglioni.' *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 143.

[14] Ixtlilxochitl mentions clubs studded with iron, but it is well known that the Aztec nations had no knowledge of that mineral, although it is said they possessed the art of being able to temper copper to the hardness of steel, 'porras claveteadas de hierro, cobre y oro.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 332.

[15] According to Gomara it was made of 'cierta rayz que llaman çacotl, y de teuxalli, que es vna arena rezia, y como de vena de diamantes, que mezclan y amassan con sangre de morcielagos, y no se que otras aues.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 110.

Digitized by Google

in immediate use, was carried slung to the arm with a cord. Many of these swords were two-handed and very heavy, and it is asserted that with them the Aztec warrior could at one blow cut a man in two or sever a horse's head. The one with which the famous Tlascaltec commander Tlahuicol fought was so weighty that a man of ordinary strength could hardly raise it from the ground.[16] The Mexican spears were very strong, and were pointed with iztli or copper. Spears were the principal weapon used by the Zapotecs and other tribes of Oajaca. The *tlacochtli*, or Mexican javelin, was like a long arrow made of otlatl or bamboo; the point was usually hardened in the fire or armed with iztli, copper, or bone; many had three points, thus inflicting a very severe wound; they were hurled with great force, and had a cord attached, so that when thrown they could be recovered for another cast. Some writers mention a ballista as being used with which to launch the javelin, but I do not find any description of its form or of the manner of using it;[17] certainly the javelin was projected with great ve-

[16] In reference to the macana, which all assert to have been a most formidable weapon, I quote only a few authorities. 'Sus espadas de palo largas, de un palo muy fuerte, engeridas de pedernales agudísimos, que de una cuchillada cortaban á cercen el pescuezo de un caballo.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 188. Bernal Diaz describing a battle with the Tlascaltecs where Pedro de Moron was wounded and had his horse killed, says 'dieron vna cuchillada á la yegua, que le cortaron el pescueço redondo, y alli quedó muerta.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 44. 'Taglia come vn rasoio di Tolosa. Io viddi che combattendosi vn di, diede vn Indiano vna cortellata a vn cauallo sopra il qual era vn caualliero con chi combatteua, nel petto, che glielo aperse fin alle interiora, et cadde incontanente morto, & il medesimo giorno viddi che vn'altro cortellata a vn'altro cauallo su il collo che se lo gettò morto a i piedi.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil' huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305. The Anonymous Conqueror does not say the head was cut off, but that one horse was killed with a cut on the breast that opened it to the entrails, and the other from a cut on the neck was laid dead at his feet. 'Lo que podrán efectuar con aquella espada en el pescuezo del caballo sera de la herida cuanto entraren los filos en la carne, que no pasarán de un canto de real de plata, porque todo lo otro es grueso, por tener el lomo que arriba referimos las navajas.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvi.; *Hernandez, Nova Plant.*, p. 340; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1129.

[17] It may be that this ballesta was a somewhat similar implement to that used by the Aleuts and Isthmians. See vol. i., pp. 90, 761. 'Dardi che essi tirano con vn manga no fatto di vn'altro bastone.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 594–5.

Digitized by Google

locity, if it be true, as asserted, that they would pass through a man's body; they were much dreaded by the Spanish Conquerors.

When the Chichimecs first settled in the valley of Anáhuac, the only weapons were the bow and arrow and blow-pipe, in the use of which they were very expert. The blow-pipe was a long hollow tube, through which clay pellets were projected, and it is affirmed that with them the Chichimecs could kill a man or wild beast at a moderate distance; afterward this weapon came to be generally used by other nations, but was only employed for shooting small birds. Among other things, Cortés was presented by Montezuma with a dozen blow-pipes beautifully ornamented and painted with figures of birds and animals; the mouth-piece of each was made of gold, five or six inches long; they were also ornamented in the centre with gold, and accompanying them were gold network pouches to carry the pellets.[18] The Matlaltzincas and Tabascans used weapons similar to those of the nations of the Anáhuac valley; the former were especially dexterous in their practice with the sling, which, when not in actual use, was carried wound about the head.[19] The fighting men among the Jaliscans were similarly armed, but the lords and captains carried only long staves with which to urge their men to fight, and punish any who were disorderly or showed symptoms of cowardice.[20]

Each nation had its own particular standard on which were painted or embroidered the armorial bearings of the state. That of the Mexican empire, as we have seen, bore an eagle in the act of seizing a tiger, or jaguar. That of the republic of Tlascala, a bird with its wings spread as in the act of flying, which some authors call an eagle, others a white bird or crane. Each of the four lordships of the re-

[18] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 101; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 5; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 299; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 460.
[19] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 128–9.
[20] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 339.

Digitized by Google

public had also its appropriate ensign; Tizatlan had a crane upon a rock, Tepeticpac a wolf with a bunch of arrows in his paws, Ocotelulco a green bird upon a rock, and Quiahuiztlan a parasol made of green feathers.[21] Each company or command had also a distinct standard, the colors of which corresponded to that of the armor and plumes of the chief. The great standard of the Tlascaltec army was carried by the general commanding, and the smaller banners of the companies by their respective captains; they were carried on the back and were so firmly tied there that they could not be detached without great difficulty.[22] When upon a march and not in presence of the enemy, the standard of the Tlascaltecs was carried in the van, but in action it was always placed in the rear. The Mexican standard was borne in the centre of the army. Instruments of music, consisting of drums, horns, and large sea-shells, were sounded while fighting to encourage and animate the men.

The office of ambassador was one of much consequence, and persons of the highest rank, selected for their courteous manners and oratorical powers, were appointed to the position. Their persons were held sacred, and they were usually received by those to

[21] In regard to the armorial ensign of the Tlascaltecs, authors differ. It is admitted that the general-in-chief carried the standard of the republic, and important authorities say that the one borne by Xicotencatl in his battle with Cortés had emblazoned upon it a white bird resembling an ostrich or heron, but Clavigero and Prescott incline to the opinion that the emblem was an eagle. In regard to this we have the following accounts: Bernal Diaz, an actor in the battle, says the Tlascaltec army was ranged under the banner of Xicotencatl, 'qua era vn aue blanca tendidas las alas, como que queria bolar, que parece como auestruz.' *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 45. 'Lleuaua el estandarte de la ciudad, que es vna grua de oro con las alas tendidas.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 75. 'Esta bandera de Tascaltecle es una grua que trae por diviza ó armas al natural, de oro é tendidas las alas.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 499. 'Xicotencatl....llevaba el Estandarte de la Republica, que era vn Aguila de Oro, con las Alas estendidas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 423; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 145; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 439, *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 234.

[22] 'Ha ogni compagnia il suo Alfiere con la sua insegna inhastata, & in tal modo ligata sopra le spalle, che non gli da alcun disturbo di poter combattere ne far ciò che vuole, & la porta cosi ligata bene al corpo, che se non fanno del suo corpo pezzi, non se gli puo sligare, ne torgliela mai.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305.

Digitized by Google

whom they were sent with honor and respect, perfumed with incense, presented with flowers, and well lodged and entertained; in case any insult or indignity was offered them, it constituted a sufficient cause of war. Such an instance occurred when the Tepanecs, during the reign of their king Maxtlaton, invited the Mexican monarch Itzcoatl and his chiefs to visit their province and partake of their hospitality. Itzcoatl declined at the advice of his chiefs, but the latter went, carrying presents. They were accepted by the Tepanecs, and the chiefs sent back in women's apparel, which they were compelled to wear; the indignity brought about a war between the two nations. The proper courtesy and protection due to their position was, however, only accorded them when on the high road that led to their destination; if they deviated from it they lost their rights and privileges as ambassadors. When on duty they wore a special garb that denoted their office; it consisted of a green habit resembling a scapulary, or small cloak; handsome feathers were twisted in the hair with tufts of divers colors; in the right hand they carried an arrow with the point toward the ground, and in the left a shield; a small net containing provisions hung from the left arm.

A complete courier-system was established throughout the empire; these couriers were employed to carry messages in peace and war, and fresh provisions for the king's table; as we have seen in a former chapter, it is asserted that Montezuma had fresh fish brought to his palace daily from the gulf coast. They were exceedingly swift runners, being exercised from childhood and encouraged by rewards to excel in speed. Stations were fixed at distances of about six miles apart, where small towers were built, in which dwelt one or more couriers ready at all times to set out with despatches. As soon as a courier arrived at one of these towers, one of those waiting received from him the message he bore, usually expressed in paintings, and at once

Digitized by Google

started for the next stage, and thus the tidings were conveyed to the capital in an incredibly short time. When the despatches were of an important nature, the courier wore some badge or was dressed in a manner indicative of the intelligence intrusted to him. For instance, if it related to a defeat in battle, he travelled with hair dishevelled, preserving a strict silence until the message was delivered to the person to whom it was directed; on the other hand, if he brought news of a victory, his hair was neatly tied with a colored string, about his body was wrapped a white cotton cloth, on his left arm he carried a shield and in his right hand a sword which he brandished as if in combat, singing at the same time the glorious deeds of the victors.[23]

The Mexicans and other Nahua nations, favored by the general features of the country, adopted a system of fortifications and intrenchments admirably adapted to secure them from the attacks of internal enemies, though insufficient as a defence against the superior tactics and indomitable perseverance of Cortés. The position of the city of Tenochtitlan, or Mexico, gave it all the advantages of a fortified town. There was no avenue of approach to it but the causeways, which were defended by towers and ditches spanned by draw-bridges; it was the untimely raising of one of these draw-bridges that caused such destruction to the Spaniards and their allies on the 'noche triste.' Besides this, the inhabitants prepared themselves to defend their city by means of boats, and were frequently exercised in sham naval engagements. The temples of Mexico served all the purposes of citadels, especially the great temple built by the Emperor Tizoc. It occupied the centre of the city, and was

[23] 'Respetaban à los Embaxadores de sus mortales enemigos, como à Dioses, teniendo por mejor violar qualquier rito de su Religion, que pecar contra la fee dada à los Embaxadores.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 535–6. 'Los Correos, ò Mensageros, que se despachaban de las Guerras, tambien pasaban seguros, por todas partes.' *Ib., Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 118–20.

Digitized by Google

surrounded by a stone wall eight feet high and very thick, having turrets and stone figures upon it; the wall was pierced by four principal entrances, over each of which were fortified apartments, well stocked with weapons, offensive and defensive, ready for immediate service; here, in case of a revolt or sudden alarm, the garrison went and armed themselves.[24] One of the royal palaces also contained a large armory where great quantities of arms were kept and armorers employed in their manufacture. The peculiar architecture of the temple rendered the ascent to its top very slow and difficult; during the battles of the Mexicans with Cortés' troops after Montezuma's death, five hundred Mexican nobles took possession of this summit, whence they hurled darts, arrows, and stones against the Spaniards, many of whom lost their lives during the assault before the position was taken by Cortés in person. In his despatch to the Emperor Charles the Fifth, he says: "So arduous was the attempt to take this tower that if God had not broken their spirits, twenty of them would have been sufficient to resist the ascent of a thousand men, although they fought with the greatest valor even unto death."[25]

Besides the arsenal and general rendezvous there were many turreted towers and strong buildings throughout the city, from the top of which men could shoot their arrows and hurl darts and stones with great effect. The lofty teocalli served as watch-towers, whence the movements of the enemy could be observed. Naturally impregnable localities, such as the vicinity of impassable rivers or ravines, were selected as sites for cities, which they further strength-

[24] 'A cada parte y puerta de las cuatro del patio del templo grande ya dicho habia una gran sala con muy buenos aposentos altos y bajos en rededor. En estos tenian muchas armas, porque como los Templos tengan por fortalezas de los pueblos tienen en ellos toda su municion.' *Las Casas, Hist Apologética*, MS., cap. li.

[25] 'Si Dios no les quebrara las alas.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 132. See also *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 151–2; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 319.

Digitized by Google

ened with forts or surrounded with stone walls. The city of Guacachula, taken by Cortés shortly after his retreat from Mexico on the 'noche triste,' is thus described by him in his letter to Charles the Fifth: "This city of Guacachula is situated upon a plain bounded upon one side by some very lofty and craggy hills; encircling the plain, on the other sides, about two cross-bow shots apart, are two rivers that run through large and deep ravines. There are but few means of entrance to the city, and those extremely difficult both in the ascent and descent, so that they can hardly be passed on horse-back. The whole city is surrounded by a very strong wall of stone and lime about twenty-two feet high on the outside, and almost level with the ground upon the inside. Around the whole wall runs a battlement, half the height of a man, as a protection when fighting; it has four entrances of sufficient width to admit a man on horse-back, and in each entrance are three or four curves in the wall that lap one over the other and in the course of the curves, on the top of the wall, are parapets for fighting. In the whole circuit of the wall is a large quantity of stones, large and small and of different shapes, for use in action." Four leagues distant from Guacachula was another city called Izucan, also strongly fortified with breast-works, towers, and a deep river that encircled a great part of the city.[26]

One of the most celebrated structures built for defence was the stone wall erected by the Tlascaltecs to secure themselves from the incursions of the Mexicans. This wall was six miles long, extending across a valley from one mountain to another; it was nearly nine feet high and twenty feet thick, surmounted along its whole length by a breastwork that enabled its defenders to fight in comparative security from the top. There was only one entrance, about ten paces wide, where one part of the wall overlapped the other in

[26] *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 150, 152.

Digitized by Google

curvilinear form in the manner of a ravelin for a distance of forty paces. Bernal Diaz and Cortés differ as to the materials of which the wall was built. The former affirms that it was built of stones cemented together with lime aud a bitumen so strongly that it was necessary to use pick-axes to separate them, while the latter says it was built of dry stone.

Cortés, describing the residence of the cacique of Iztacmaxtitlan, a garrison of the Mexicans, says it was situated on a lofty eminence, with a better fortress than there was in half Spain, defended by a wall, barbican, and moats.[27] In many other parts of the country were stone fortifications, wooden stockades and intrenchments. A short distance from the village of Molcaxac stood a strong fortress built on the top of a mountain; it was surrounded by four walls, erected at certain intervals between the base of the mountain and the top. Twenty-five miles from Córdova was the fortress of Quauhtochco, now Guatusco, encircled by high stone walls in which were no entrance gates; the interior could only be gained by means of steep narrow steps, a method commonly adopted in the country.[28] The nations of Michoacan and Jalisco employed heavy tree-trunks in fortifying their positions against the Spanish invaders, or cut deep intrenchments in which they fixed sharpened stakes. Previous to an attack led by Pedro Alvarado against the inhabitants of Jalisco, the latter took up a strong position on a hill which they fortified by placing large stones in such a manner that upon cutting the cords that held them they would be precipitated upon the assailants; in the assault, many Spaniards were killed and Alvarado was thrown from

[27] 'Una gran cerca de piedra seca.' *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 59–60. 'Una fuerça bien fuerte hecha de cal y canto, y de otro betun tan rezio, que con picos de hierro era forçoso deshazerla.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 43; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 418–19; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 229, 232; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 134–5; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 70; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. i.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 150; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 241.

[28] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 150.

Digitized by Google

his horse with such violence that he died two days afterwards.[29]

Under the tripartite treaty made by the kingdoms of Mexico, Tuzcuco, and Tlacopan, a military council was established consisting of a president and twenty-one members. During the reign of the emperor Nezahualcoyotl their deliberations were held in a hall of his palace in Tezcuco. The president belonged to the highest rank of the nobility and commanders of the army, the other members were composed of six of the principal men of Tezcuco, three nobles and three commoners, and fifteen selected from the other chief provinces. All were veteran officers of recognized courage and good conduct. To this court were referred all matters relating to war. The council assembled when required, to discuss and decide all affairs of the service, whether for the punishment of offences subversive of military discipline, or to transact the business relative to a declaration of war against other powers. In the latter case the consultation always took place in presence of the sovereign, or of the three heads of the empire. All ambassadors and soldiers were subject to this tribunal, which meted out reward as well as punishment. The following were the articles of war:

First: any general or other military officer who, accompanying the king on a campaign, should forsake him or leave him in the power of the enemy, thereby failing in his duty, which was to bring back his sovereign dead or alive, suffered death by decapitation.

Second: any officer who formed the prince's guard and deserted his trust suffered death by decapitation.

Third: any soldier who disobeyed his superior officer, or abandoned his post, or turned his back upon the enemy, or showed them favor, suffered death by decapitation.

[29] *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, p. 107; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 567; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 133.

Digitized by Google

Fourth: any officer or soldier who usurped the captive or spoil of another, or who ceded to another the prisoner he himself had taken, suffered death by hanging.

Fifth: any soldier who in war caused injury to the enemy without permission of his officer, or who attacked before the signal was given, or who abandoned the standard or headquarters, or broke or violated any order issued by his captain, suffered death by decapitation.

Sixth: the traitor who revealed to the enemy the secrets of the army, or orders communicated for the success thereof, suffered death by being torn to pieces; his property was forfeited to the crown, and all his children and relations were made slaves in perpetuity.

Seventh: any person who protected or concealed an enemy in time of war, whether noble or plebeian, suffered death by being torn to pieces in the middle of the public square, and his limbs were given to the populace to be treated as objects of derision and contempt.

Eighth: any noble or person of distinction who, in action, or at any dance or festival, exhibited the insignia or badges of the kings of Mexico, Tezcuco, or Tlacopan, suffered death and forfeiture of property.

Ninth: any nobleman who, being captured by the enemy, fled from prison and returned to his country suffered death by decapitation; but if he fought and vanquished seven soldiers in gladiatorial combat previous to return, he was free and was rewarded as a brave man. The private soldier who fled from an enemy's prison and returned to his country was well received.

Tenth: any ambassador who failed to discharge his trust in accordance with the orders and instructions given to him, or who returned without an answer, suffered death by decapitation.[30]

[30] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 203–4, 422–3; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 384–5, 540; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS.,

Digitized by Google

As I have already stated, the primary object of most wars was to procure victims for sacrifices to Huitzilopochtli and other gods, and the Mexicans were never at a loss for an excuse to pick a quarrel. The refusal of a neighboring power to receive in its temple one of the Mexican gods, neglect to pay tribute demanded, insults offered to ambassadors or travelling merchants, or systems of rebellion in a city or a province, furnished sufficient pretext to take up arms. The rulers of Mexico, however, always endeavored to justify their conduct before they made war, and never commenced hostilities without sending due notice of their intention to the adversary. Before an actual challenge was sent or war declared against any nation, the council met in presence of the three heads of the empire, and gravely discussed the equity of the case. If the difficulty lay with a province subject to the empire, secret emissaries were sent to inquire whether the fault originated solely with the governor, or if he was sustained by his subjects. If it appeared that the whole blame rested with the governor, a force was sent to arrest him, and he was publicly punished, together with all others implicated; but if the rising was with the consent of the people, they were summoned to submit and place themselves in obedience to the king whose vassals they were, and a fine, proportionate to the magnitude of the case, was imposed. It was customary for the rulers of Mexico or Tezcuco to send messengers to distant provinces with a demand that they should receive one or more of their gods and worship them in their temples. If the messenger was killed or the proposed god rejected, a war ensued.

As I have said, it was a breach of international etiquette to proceed to war without giving due notice to the enemy, and military law prescribed that three embassies should be despatched before commencing

cap. ccxv.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 243, 246; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles*, p. 132.

Digitized by Google

hostilities. The number of ambassadors varied according to the circumstances and rank of the princes against whom war was to be made, for the higher his rank the fewer in number were the envoys. If he was a great king, only one was sent, and he was generally of the blood-royal or a famous general. Sometimes the ambassadors were instructed to deliver their message directly to the hostile prince, at other times to the people of the province. In the first case, upon entering into the prince's presence, they paid their respects with reverence, and having seated themselves in the centre of the audience-hall, waited till permission was given them to speak. The signal made, the principal among them delivered his message in a low tone of voice and with a studied address, the audience preserving a decorous silence, and listening attentively. As a general thing, in all embassies an interchange of presents was made, and if the message was from one friendly power to another, a refusal of such gifts was a serious affront. If, however, it was to an enemy, the ambassador could not receive a present without express orders from his master. When the three powers of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan acted in unison, in the event of a difficulty with another nation, the first ambassadors sent were of the Mexican nation and were called *quaquauhnochtzin*. Upon arriving at the capital of the kingdom or province, they proceeded at once to the public square and summoned before them the ministers and aged men, to whom they made known the several circumstances of the case, warning them that, in case their lord refused to accede to their propositions, upon them and their families would fall the evils and hardships produced by war, and exhorting them to counsel and persuade their lord to maintain the good-will and protection of the empire; for this purpose they granted twenty days, within which time they would expect an answer, and in order that there might be no complaint of being surprised and taken unprepared, they

Digitized by Google

left a supply of weapons, and then retired outside the town to await the answer. If within the twenty days it was decided to accept the terms of the ambassadors, the ministers went to the place where they were in waiting and conducted them into the city, where they were received with every mark of respect, and in a short time were sent back to their own country, accompanied by other ambassadors, bearing costly presents in token of friendship and esteem. If, however, twenty days passed without a satisfactory adjustment of the difficulty, a second set of ambassadors, held in readiness for the occasion, who had to be of the kingdom of Tezcuco and were called *achcacauhtzin*, were sent into the city. These carried with them a quantity of arms, some feathers of a bird called *tecpilotl*, and a small earthenware jar containing a certain balsamic and aromatic ointment, compounded of various herbs and gums. They went directly to the palace of the prince, and in presence of the gentlemen of his court delivered their message. They then represented to him the miseries of war, and warned him that if within the space of twenty days he did not agree to their terms, in the event of his being taken captive during the war which would ensue he would be put to death under the penalty of the law, which sentenced him to have his head smashed with a club, and that his vassals would be chastised in proportion to the offence each had committed. If the refractory prince or noble refused immediate compliance, the ambassadors anointed his right arm and his head with the ointment brought with them, telling him to be strong and of good courage and to fight bravely against the troops of the empire, whose valor in war they greatly extolled. They then tied the tecpilotl-plumes at the back of his head with red strings, handed him the weapons they had brought with them, and retired to the place where the first ambassadors were, to await the expiration of the twenty days. If he surrendered

Digitized by Google

within the time, he was required to pay a stipulated annual tribute of small amount, but if he refused to surrender, there came a third set of ambassadors, who were of the kingdom of Tlacopan; they appeared before the lord in the presence of his ministers and court, and delivered their message with stronger threats and warnings, to the effect that he did not surrender at the expiration of a further twenty days, the army of the empire would march against his territory and punish the inhabitants regardless of age or sex, and that although they might implore its clemency, they would not be heard; they then gave them a larger supply of arms than on the preceding occasions, telling them to avail themselves of them, and not to say at a future time that they had been assailed unprepared If the lord of the province surrendered within the last twenty days, he was punished according to the pleasure of the three powers, but not with death, nor with the confiscation of his rank or property; he was usually condemned to pay an extraordinary tribute out of his own revenues; should he continue rebellious, war broke out, and the army of the empire, already prepared on the frontiers, commenced its operations.[31]

It was usual to send a formal challenge or declaration of war, accompanied by some presents, either of arms, clothing, or food, as it was held to be a discreditable act to attack any unarmed or defenceless people. A notable instance of this spirit was shown by the Tlascaltecs when they confronted the army of Cortés;

[31] Las Casa says that very old women were admitted to war councils. 'Nunca movian guerra sin dar parte al pueblo, y sin mucho consejo de los mas ancianos y caballeros ejercitados en la guerra, al cual consejo se admitian las mujeres muy viejas como personas que habian visto y oido muchas cosas y asi esperimentadas de lo pasado.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvi. According to the Chevalier Boturini, the first ambassadors were accredited to the king or lord of the province, the second were despatched to the nobility requiring them to persuade their lord, and the third convoked the people and advised them of the motives their monarch had for waging war against them. *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 102–3. See also *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 424–7; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 246–7; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Id.*, pp. 40, 73; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 382–3, 534–5.

Digitized by Google

their general is reported to have exclaimed: "Who are these presumptuous men, so few in number that they attempt to enter our country in spite of us? Lest they think we want to take them by hunger rather than by force of arms, let us send them food, that we may find them savory after the sacrifice, for they come starved and worn out." Before the battle they sent three hundred turkeys and two hundred baskets of centli or tamales, each basket weighing about twenty-five pounds, a gift most acceptable to the Castilians.[32]

When war against another nation was decided upon, the first care of the Mexicans was to investigate the character and resources of the region they were about to invade. Certain spies called *quimichtin*, who were selected for their knowledge of the language and customs of the enemy's country, were sent thither, dressed after the manner of the inhabitants. These spies were directed to prepare maps of the districts they passed through, showing the plains, rivers, mountains, and dangerous passes as well as the most practicable routes, and were to take notice of all means of defence possessed by the enemy. The sketches and information thus obtained were given to the chiefs of the army to guide them in their march and enable them to make the best disposition of their forces. Such spies as brought valuable news were rewarded with the grant of a piece of land, and if one came over from the enemy's side and gave advice of their preparations and force, he was well paid and given presents of mantles.[33] When a war was to be conducted jointly by the three allied powers, proclamation was made by heralds in the public thoroughfares of the capital cities. Commissariat officers called *calpixques* collected the necessary stores and provisions for the campaign, and distributed weapons

[32] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 423; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 75; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. vi.

[33] 'A estas Espias, que embiaban delante, llamaban Ratones, que andan de noche, ò escondidos, y à hurtadillas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 538.

Digitized by Google

and coarse mantles of nequen to the army. The troops then went to the temple and performed the ceremony of scarifying their bodies, while the customary sacrifices were offered by the priests to Huitzilopochtli.

If the expedition was an important one and the army large, it was composed of several divisions, called *xiquipilli*, each consisting of eight thousand men under their respective commanders. When all was in readiness, the order of march was thus formed: the priests with their idols started one day's march in advance; next came the captains and flower of the army, followed by the soldiers of Mexico; after them the Tezcucans, and then those of Tlacopan, the rear being closed by the troops of other provinces; one day's march separated each division. Perfect order was maintained on the route, and when near the enemy's country the chiefs traced out the camping-ground each division should occupy, and directed all to intrench and fortify their positions.[34]

The battle was sometimes fought on a piece of neutral ground lying between the confines of two territories. Such a place was known by the name *yauhtlalli*, and was especially reserved for the purpose, and always left uncultivated.[35] Before the action commenced, each soldier received from the royal magazine a handful of pinole and a kind of cake called *tlaxcaltotopochtli;* afterwards the high-priest or chief addressed the troops, reminding them of the glory to be gained by victory, and the eternal bliss in store for those who fell, and concluded by counselling them to place their trust in Huitzilopochtli and fight valiantly. If the king was present on the field, the signal for

[34] Camargo says: 'L'armée était divisée par bataillons de cent hommes.' *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 134. 'Quando l'esercito era numeroso, si contava per *Xiquipilli:* ed ogni *Xiquipilli* si componeva d'otto mila uomini.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 147.

[35] Also spelled *quiahtlale, jaotlalli*, meaning a place for war. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 147–8; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 322; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom ii., p. 538.

Digitized by Google

attack was given by him. The Mexican monarch issued his orders to commence the action by sounding on a large shell, making a noise like a trumpet; the lords of Tezcuco beat upon a small drum, and lords of other provinces struck two bones together The signals for retreat were given upon similar instruments. When the battle commenced, the shrieking of musical instruments, the clashing of swords against bucklers, and shouting of the combatants made a noise so great as to strike terror into those unused to it. While fighting the warriors shouted the names of their respective towns or districts to enable them to recognize each other and prevent confusion.[36]

In fighting there appears to have been no special tactics; the commanders of divisions and the captains used every effort to keep their men together, and were very careful to protect the standard, as, if that was taken, the battle was considered lost, and all fled. They observed the wise policy of keeping a number of men in reserve to replace any who were wearied or had exhausted their weapons. The archers, slingers, and javelin men commenced the action at a distance and gradually drew nearer, until they came to close quarters, when they took to their swords and spears. All movements, both in advance and retreat, were rapidly executed; sometimes a retreat was feigned in order to draw the enemy into an ambuscade which had been prepared beforehand. The chief object was to take prisoners, and not to slay; when an enemy refused to surrender, they endeavored to wound them in the foot or leg so as to prevent escape, but they never accepted a ransom for a prisoner. Certain men were attached to the army whose duty it was to remove the killed and wounded during the action, so that the enemy might not know the losses and take fresh heart.[37]

[36] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 31, 41, 50, 147.

[37] For further account of their manner of conducting a war, see *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 147–9; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom.

Digitized by Google

The Tlascaltecs formed their army into battalions, each having its appointed chief, the whole being under the command of a general-in-chief, who was elected from among those of the four seigniories into which the republic was divided. Their mode of fighting differed little from that of the Mexicans, with the exception of a certain practice which they observed upon first coming in contact with the enemy. This consisted in carrying with them two darts which they believed would presage victory or defeat according to the result of their delivery into the hostile ranks. According to Motolinia, the tradition among them in regard to this belief was, that their ancestors came from the north-west, and that in order to reach the land they navigated eight or ten days; from the oldest among them they then received two darts, which they guarded as precious relics, and regarded as an infallible augury by which to know whether they would gain a victory or ought to retreat in time.[88] When a victory was won, the great standard was brought to the front and placed upon a rising ground or in some conspicuous position, and all were obliged to assemble around it; he who neglected to do so was punished.

The Tarascos fought with great courage to the sound of numerous horns and sea-shells, and carried to battle banners made of feathers of many colors. Their skill and valor is best proven by the fact that the Mexicans were never able to subdue them. They showed especial strategy in luring the foe into ambush. Like the Mexicans, their chief object in battle was to take prisoners to sacrifice to their gods.[89]

ii., lib. viii., pp. 311–12; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvii., *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 129–31; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 322–3; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 598–601; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 537–40; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., pp. 313–14; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 86–8.

[88] *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 11; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvii.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 87; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 34; *Gage's New Survey*, p. 77; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 230.

[89] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 51, 60–1.

Digitized by Google

Among the Mexicans, when the battle was over, the first prisoners taken were given to the priests to be sacrificed before the idols they carried with them. An account was taken of the losses sustained, and of the number of prisoners and other booty gained. Rewards were distributed to all who had distinguished themselves, and punishment inflicted on any one who misbehaved. All disputes relative to the capture of prisoners were inquired into and adjusted. If a case arose where neither of the disputants could prove their title, the prisoner was taken from them and given to the priests to be sacrificed. Those inhabitants of the conquered province who could prove that they had taken no active part in the war were punished at the discretion of their conqueror; usually they were condemned to pay a certain annual tribute, or to construct public works; meantime the vanquished province was supplied with a governor and officers, appointed from among the conquerors.[40]

When the king or a feudatory lord captured a prisoner for the first time, his success was made the occasion of much rejoicing. The captive, dressed in showy apparel and mounted on a litter, was borne to the town in great triumph, accompanied by a host of warriors shouting and singing; at the outskirts of the city the procession was met by the inhabitants, some playing on musical instruments, other dancing and singing songs composed for the occasion. The prisoner was saluted with mimic honors, and his captor greatly extolled and congratulated. Numbers of people arrived from the adjoining towns and villages to assist in the general hilarity, bringing with them presents of gold, jewels, and rich dresses. Upon the day appointed for the sacrifice, a grand festival was held, previous to and after which the lord fasted and performed certain prescribed ceremonies. The victim was usually dressed for the occasion in the robes of

[40] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., p. 313; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvii.

Digitized by Google

the god of the sun, and sacrificed in the usual manner. With some of the blood that flowed, the priest sprinkled the four sides of the temple; the remainder was collected in a vessel and sent to the noble captor, who with it sprinkled all the gods in the court-yard of the temple as a thank-offering for the victory he had gained. After the heart was taken out the body was rolled down the steps and received below; the head was then cut off and placed upon a high pole, afterwards the body was flayed, and the skin stuffed with cotton and hung up in the captor's house as a memento of his prowess.[41]

When a renowned captain or noble was made prisoner, the right of fighting for his liberty was granted him—an honor not permitted to warriors of an inferior rank. Near the temple was an open space capable of containing a large multitude; in the middle was a circular mound built of stone and mortar, about eight feet high, with steps leading to the top, where was fixed a large round stone, three feet high, smooth, and adorned with figures. This stone was called the *temalacatl;* upon it the prisoner was placed, tied at the ankle with a cord, which passed through a hole in the centre of the stone. His weapons consisted of a shield and macana.[42] He who had taken him prisoner then mounted the stone, better armed, to combat with him. Both the combatants were animated with the strongest motives to fight desperately. The prisoner fought for his life and liberty, and his adversary to sustain his reputation. If the former was con-

[41] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 131–4; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 541–2; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 149.

[42] Camargo says the prisoner was given his choice of every kind of offensive and defensive weapons. *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 188–9, but all other authors state that he was only given a short sword and shield. Boturini says a servant who was under the stone drew the cord and so controlled the prisoner that he could not move. *Idea*, p. 164. Duran says: 'El modo que en celebrarlo tenian; que era atar á los Presos con una soga al pie por un ahugero que aquella piedra tenia por medio, y desnudo en cueros le daban una rodela y una espada de solo palo emplumado en las manos, y unas pelotas de palo con que se defendian de los que salian á combatir con él, que eran cuatro muy bien armados.' *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. 36.

Digitized by Google

quered, a priest, called *chalchiuhtepehua*, immediately seized him, hurried him dead or alive to the sacrificial stone, and tore out his heart. The victor was then publicly congratulated and rewarded with military honors. If, however, the prisoner vanquished his first opponent and six others, by whom, in succession, he was attacked, he was granted his freedom, all spoil taken from him in battle was restored to him, and he returned to his country covered with glory. A notable violation of this law is recorded of the Huexotzincas. In a battle between them and the Cholultecs, the leader of the latter nation became separated from his own people during the heat of battle, and was, after a gallant resistance, made prisoner and conducted to the capital. Being placed on the gladiatorial stone, he conquered the seven adversaries that were brought against him, but the Huexotzincas, dreading to liberate so famous a warrior, contrary to their universal law, put him to death, and thereby covered themselves with ignominy.[43]

If the prisoner was a person of very high rank, he was taken before the king, who ordered that he should be sumptuously fed and lodged for forty days. At the end of that time he was accorded the right of combat, and if conquered, after the usual sacrificial ceremonies the body was cut into small pieces; these were sent to the relations and friends of the deceased, who received them as relics of great value, and acknowledged the favor by returning gold, jewels, and rich plumes.[44] If we are to believe Gomara and others, the number of victims, chiefly prisoners of war, sacrificed at some of the festivals, was enormous. The historians relate that in front of the principal gate of the temple there was a mound built of stone and lime with innumerable skulls of prisoners inserted between the stones. At the

[43] *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 305; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 47–8.

[44] *Torquemana, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 533.

Digitized by Google

head and foot of the mound were two towers built entirely of skulls and lime; on the top of the mound were seventy or more upright poles, each with many other sticks fastened crossways to it, at intervals, from top to bottom; on the points of each cross-stick were five skulls. They go on to say that two soldiers of Cortés counted these skulls and found them to amount to one hundred and thirty-six thousand. Those that composed the towers they could not count.[45]

The nations contiguous to the Mexicans imitated to a great extent their manner of disposing of prisoners of war, and kept them to be sacrificed at their festivals. The first prisoner taken in battle by the Tlascaltecs was flayed alive, and he who captured him dressed himself in the horrid trophy, and so covered served the god of battles during a certain number of days. He paraded from one temple to another, followed by a crowd that shrieked for joy; but had, however, to run from his pursuers, for if they caught him they beat him till he was nearly dead. This ceremony was called *exquinan*, and was sometimes observed by two or three at the same time.[46] At one of their festivals they bound their prisoners to high crosses and shot them to death with arrows; at other times they killed them with the bastinado. They had also solemn banquets, at which they ate the flesh of their prisoners. At the taking of Mexico, the Tlascaltec soldiery feasted upon the bodies of the slain Mexicans, and Cortés, although shocked at the revolting practice, was unable to prevent it.[47]

The Mexicans, Tlascaltecs, and neighboring nations

[45] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 121-2; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 333–5; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xviii.; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 242.

[46] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 134.

[47] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 51; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 423. For further reference to treatment of prisoners, see *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 250–1; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Id.*, p. 164; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 102–3; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 634; *Fossey, Mexique*, pp. 215–16; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. viii.

Digitized by Google

always made the return of a successful army the occasion of great festivity and rejoicing; the loud sound of drums and musical instruments greeted the entry of the victorious troops into the capital; triumphal arches were erected in the streets and the houses decorated with flowers; an abundance of copal was burned and sumptuous banquets were prepared; all were dressed in their gayest attire, and the warriors put on all the insignia of their rank; gifts were distributed to those who had performed any deed of gallantry, and minstrels sung or recited poems in their praise. Many went to the temples to observe especial acts of devotion to the gods, and numbers of the prisoners were then sacrificed. All these ceremonies tended to inspire the youths with courage and make them ambitious to gain distinction in war.[48]

[48] Instances of how the Mexicans received their victorious armies are given in *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 39, 61, 177–8; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 321–2. See, further, *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 136; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvii.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 574; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 489–90.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIV.

NAHUA LAWS AND LAW COURTS.

GENERAL REMARKS—THE CIHUACOATL, OR SUPREME JUDGE—THE COURT OF THE TLACATECATL—JURISDICTION OF THE TECUHTLIS—THE CENTECTLAPIXQUES AND TOPILLIS—LAW COURTS AND JUDGES OF TEZCUCO—EIGHTY-DAY COUNCIL—TRIBUNAL OF THE KING—COURT PROCEEDINGS—LAWYERS—WITNESSES—REMUNERATION OF JUDGES—JUSTICE OF KING NEZAHUALPILLI—HE ORDERS HIS SON'S EXECUTION—MONTEZUMA AND THE FARMER—JAILS—LAWS AGAINST THEFT, MURDER, TREASON, KIDNAPPING, DRUNKENNESS, WITCHCRAFT, ADULTERY, INCEST, SODOMY, FORNICATION, AND OTHER CRIMES—STORY OF NEZAHUALCOYOTL AND THE BOY.

IT has already been stated that among the Nahuas the supreme legislative power belonged to the king; the lawful share that he took in the administration of justice we shall see as we examine the system of jurisprudence adopted by them.

When treating of the Nahua judiciary, the majority of historians have preferred to discuss almost exclusively the system in vogue at Tezcuco, partly, perhaps, because it presents a nicer gradation of legal tribunals, and consequently a closer resemblance to European institutions, than did the more simple routine of the Mexicans, but mainly because the materials of information were more accessible and abundant. Many writers, however, have not followed this rule, but throwing all the information they could obtain into a general fund, they have applied the whole in-

Digitized by Google

discriminately to the 'Mexicans,' by which term they mean all the inhabitants of the regions conquered by Cortés. Las Casas, speaking of the allied kingdoms of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, says that "their government and laws scarcely differed, so that whatever may be said of those parts concerning which the most information can be obtained may be understood, and perhaps it is best to say it, as applying to all."[1] Although the number and jurisdiction of the law courts of Mexico and Tezcuco differed, there is reason to believe that the laws themselves and the penalties inflicted were the same, or nearly so.

In Mexico, and in each of the principal cities of the empire, there was a supreme judge, called *cihuacoatl*,[2] who was considered second only to the king in rank and authority. He heard appeals in criminal cases from the court immediately below him, and from his decision no appeal was allowed, not even to the king.[3]

[1] 'El govierno y las leyes quasi no diferian, por manera que por lo que de unas partes dijeremos, y adonde tuvimos mayor noticia, se podra entender, y quiza sera mejor, decirlo en comun y generalmente.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii. It is also stated that many Mexican cases, presenting more than ordinary difficulty, were tried in the Tezcucan law courts: See *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 95; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 354. Speaking of Mexico, Tezcuco, and Tlacopan, Zurita says: 'Les lois et la procédure étaient les mêmes dans ces trois états, de sorte qu'en exposant les usages établis dans l'un d'eux, on fera connaître ce qui se passait dans les autres.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 93–4.

[2] The title cihuacoatl, meaning 'serpent-woman,' appears incomprehensible as applied to a judge, but M. l'Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 579–80, sees reason to believe that the Mexicans, when they succeeded to the rights of the Toltec kings of Culhuacan, adopted also the titles of the court, and that the name cihuacoatl had been given to the prime minister in memory of Cihuacoatl, the sister of Camaxtli, who cared for the infancy of Quetzalcoatl. The learned Abbé translates cihuacoatl, *serpent femelle*, which is literally a serpent of the female sex. Molina, however, in his *Vocabulario*, gives 'ciua' as a substantive, meaning 'women' (mugeres), and 'coatl' as another substantive, meaning 'serpent' (culebra), the two as compound he does not give. I translate the word 'serpent-woman,' because the sister of Camaxtli would more probably be thus distinguished among women, than among serpents as the 'woman-serpent.'

[3] Although all other historians agree that the judgment of the cihuacoatl was final, the interpreter of Mendoza's collection states that an appeal lay from the judges (he does not state which) to the king. *Explicacion de la Coleccion de Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 109. Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 29, attributes this to the changes made during

Digitized by Google

Whether or not the cihuacoatl pronounced judgment in civil cases is uncertain. According to Clavigero he did;[4] Prescott,[5] Brasseur de Bourbourg,[6] and Carbajal Espinosa[7] agree with Clavigero, and Leon Carbajal[8] cites Torquemada as an authority for this statement; but the fact is, Torquemada distinctly affirms the contrary,[9] as does Las Casas,[10] from whom Torquemada takes his information. It appears, however, reasonable to suppose that in some exceptional cases, as, for instance, where the title to large possessions was involved, or where the litigants were powerful nobles, the supreme judge may have taken cognizance of civil affairs. Whether the jurisdiction of the cihuacoatl was ever original as well as final, as Prescott[11] asserts it to have been, I do not find stated by the earlier authorities, although this may have happened exceptionally; but in that case there could have been but one hearing, for the king, who was the only superior of the supreme judge, had no authority to reverse the decisions of the latter. The cihuacoatl was appointed by the king, and he in turn appointed

Montezuma's reign, the period which the Mendoza paintings represent; and Leon Carbajal, *Discurso*, p. 98, totally denies the truth of the statement.

[4] 'Dalle sentenze da lui pronunziate o nel civile, o nel criminale, non si poteva appellare ad un altro tribunale,' etc. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 127.

[5] *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 29.

[6] *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 580.

[7] *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 593.

[8] *Discurso*, p. 97.

[9] 'Ola de causas, que se debolvian, y remitian à èl, por apelacion; *y estas eran solas las criminales, porque de las civiles no se apelaba de sus Justicias ordinarias.*' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 352. It is possible that Señor Carbajal may have read only a subsequent passage in the same chapter, where Torquemada, speaking of the tribunal of the tlacatecatl, says: 'De este se apelaba, para el Tribunal, y Audiencia del Cihuacohuatl, que era Juez Supremo, despues del Rei.' From what has gone before, it is, however, evident that the author here refers only to the criminal cases that were appealed from the court of the tlacatecatl.

[10] *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.

[11] *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 29. Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 127–8, also affirms, indirectly, that cases were sometimes laid in the first instance before the supreme judge, inasmuch as he first says that the cihuacoatl took cognizance of both civil and criminal cases, and afterwards, when speaking of the court of the tlacatecatl, he writes: 'Se la causa era puramente civile, non v'era appellazione. The same applies to Brasseur de Bourbourg. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 580.

Digitized by Google

the inferior judges. He held his office for life, and in addition to his regular judicial duties had charge of the most important affairs of government, and of the royal revenues. He was without a colleague, and must administer justice in person. Such was the respect paid to this exalted personage, that whoever had the audacity to usurp his power or insignia suffered death, his property was confiscated, and his family enslaved.[12]

The next court was supreme in civil matters, and could only be appealed from to the cihuacoatl in cases of a criminal nature. It was presided over by three judges, the chief of whom was styled *tlacatecatl*, and from him the court took its name; his colleagues were called *quauhnochtli* and *tlanotlac*.[13] Each of these had his deputies and assistants. Affairs of importance were laid in the first instance before this tribunal, but appeals from the inferior courts were also heard. Sentence was pronounced by a crier entitled *tecpoyotl* in the name of the tlacatecatl, and was carried into execution by the quauhnochtli with his own hands. The office of tecpoyotl was considered

[12] Herein lies the only difference between Las Casas and Torquemada on the subject of the Cihuacoatl. The former writes: 'Qualquiera que este oficio para si usurpara, ó lo concediera á otro, avia de morir por ello, *y sus padres y deudos eran desnaturados del pueblo donde acaeciese hasta lo quarta generacion*.. Allende que todos los bienes avian de ser confiscados, y aplicados para la republica.' *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii. Torquemada says: 'Era tan autoriçado este oficio, que el que lo vsurpara para si, ò lo comunicàra à otro en alguna parte del Reino, muriera por ello, *y sus Hijos, y Muger fueran vendidos, por perpetuos esclavos*, y confiscados sus bienes, por Lei, que para esto havia.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 352. Notwithstanding all other historians distinctly affirm that the cihuacoatl was, in the exercise of his functions, perfectly independent of the king, Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 580, makes the following extraordinary statement: 'Il jugeait en dernier ressort et donnait des ordres *en lieu et place du souverain chaque fois que celui-ci ne le faisait pas directement et par lui-même*.' This must be from one of the original manuscripts in the possession of M. l'Abbé.

[13] Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii., spells these names tacatecatl, acoahunotl, and tlaylotlat; Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 352, tlacateccatl, quauhnuchtli, and tlaylotlac; and Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 127, tlacatecatl, quauhnochtli, and tlanótlac or tlaiíotlac, a defect in the impression makes it difficult to tell which. Scarcely two of the old writers follow the same system of orthography, and in future I shall follow the style which appears simplest, endeavoring only to be consistent with myself.

Digitized by Google

one of high honor, because he declared the will of the king as represented by his judges.

In each ward of the city there was a magistrate called *tecuhtli*, who was annually elected by the inhabitants of his district; he judged minor cases in the first instance only, and probably the office somewhat resembled that of our police judge. Appeal lay from him to the tlacatecatl.[14] It was the duty of the tecuhtlis to give a daily report of affairs that had been submitted to them, and of the judgments they had rendered thereon, to the tlacatecatl, who reviewed their proceedings. Whether the tlacatecatl could reverse the decision of a tecuhtli when no appeal had been made is uncertain, but it appears improbable, inasmuch as a failure to exercise the right of appeal would imply recognition of justice in the judgment passed by the lower tribunal. In each ward, and elected in the same manner as the tecuhtlis, were officers whose title was *centectlapixque*, whose province it was to watch over the behavior and welfare of a certain number of families committed to their charge, and to acquaint the magistrates with everything that passed. Although the centectlapixques could not exercise judicial authority, yet it is probable that petty disputes were often submitted to them for arbitration, and that their arbitrament was abided by. In case the parties could not be brought to any friendly settlement, however, the centectlapixque immediately reported the matter to the tecuhtli of his district, and a regular trial ensued.

The tecuhtlis had their bailiffs, who carried their messages and served summonses. In addition to these, there were constables styled *topilli*, who arrested prisoners and enforced order.[15]

[14] Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 128, writes: 'Egiornalmente si portava al Cihuacoatl, od al Tlacatecatl per avvertirlo di tutto ciò, che occorreva, e ricever gli ordini da lui;' but it would probably be only in cases of great importance that the reports of the tecuhtli would be carried to the cihuacoatl.

[15] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.; *Torquemada, Monarq.*

Digitized by Google

In Tezcuco, although the kingdom was divided into many provinces,[16] the higher courts of justice were placed in six of the principal cities only.[17] Each of these tribunals was presided over by two judges, who were very high magnates and usually relatives of the king, and from these an appeal lay to two supreme judges who resided at the capital.[18] These twelve judges were assisted by twelve sheriffs,[19] whose duty it was to arrest prisoners of exalted rank in their own district, or to go in search of offenders in other provinces. The peculiar badge of these officers was a certain ornamented mantle; wherever they went they were held in great awe and respect, as representatives of the king, and seldom encountered resistance in the exercise of their functions. There were also constables in attendance on the courts, who acted with great diligence in carrying messages or making arrests. Every ten or twelve days all the judges met in council with the king,[20]

Ind., tom. ii., p. 355; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 127–8.

[16] Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 354, says that there were fifteen provinces subject to the king of Tezcuco.

[17] The English edition of Clavigero reads: 'The judicial power was divided amongst *seven* principal cities,' p. 354; but the original agrees with the other authorities: 'Nel Regno d'Acolhuacan era la giurisdizione compartita tra *sei* Città principali.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 128.

[18] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii. Torquemada, however, asserts that there were 'en la Ciudad de Tetzcuco (que era la Corte) dentro de la Casa Real dos Salas de Consejo....y en cada Sala dos Jueces. Havia diferencia entre los dichos Jueces; porque los de la vna Sala eran de mas autoridad, que los de la otra; estos se llamaban Jueces maiores, y esotros menores; los maiores olan de causas graves, y que pertenecian à la determinacion del Rei; los segundos, de otras, no tan graves, sino mas leves, y livianas.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 354. The lower of these two probably either formed one of the six superior courts above mentioned, or corresponded with them in jurisdiction. According to Zurita, 'chacune des nombreuses provinces soumises à ces souverains entretenait à Mexico, à Tezcuco et à Tlacopan, qui étaient les trois capitales, deux juges, personnes de sens choisies à cet effet, et qui quelquefois étaient parents des souverains;' and adds: 'Les appels étaient portés devant *douze autres juges supérieurs* qui prononçaient d'après l'avis du souverain.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 95, 100.

[19] Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 355, writes: 'Tenia cada Sala de estas dichas otro Ministro, que hacia oficio de Alguacil Maior,' etc., while other writers assign one to each judge, of whom there were two in each court.

[20] Clavigero differs on this point from other writers, in making this meeting occur every Mexican month of twenty days. Zurita, *Rapport*, in

Digitized by Google

when cases of importance were discussed, and either finally settled, or laid over for decision at a grand council which convened every four Mexican months, making in all eighty days. On these occasions all the judges, without exception, met together, the king presiding in person. All being seated according to their order of precedence, an orator opened the proceedings with a speech, in which he praised virtue and severely reprimanded vice; he reviewed all the events of the past eighty days, and commented very severely even upon the acts of the king himself. In this council all suits were terminated, the sentences being carried out on the spot,[21] and affairs of state and policy were discussed and transacted; it generally sat during eight or ten days.[22] In addition to these judges, there were magistrates of a lower order in all the provinces, who took cognizance of cases of minor importance, and who also heard and considered those of greater consequence preparatory to laying them before the Eighty-day Council.[23] The historian Ix-

Ternaux-Compans, Voy., série ii., tom. i., p. 101, writes: 'Tous les douze jours il y avait une assemblée générale des juges présidée par le prince;' to this the editor attaches the following note: 'Il est évident, comme on le verra page 106, qu'il y a ici une erreur, et que ces assemblées, dont les sessions duraient douze jours, ne se tenaient que tous les quatre-vingts jours.' It is, however, the learned editor who is mistaken, because, as we have seen above, there were two distinct meetings of the judges; a lesser one every ten or twelve days, and a greater every eighty days, and it is of the latter that Zurita speaks on p. 106.

[21] 'Al que él sentenciava le arrojava una flecha de aquellas.' *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 57. 'A capital sentence was indicated by a line traced with an arrow across the portrait of the accused.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 33.

[22] It is probable that as matters of government, as well as legal affairs, were discussed at their Eighty-day Council, it was not exclusively composed of judges, but that nobles and statesmen were admitted to membership. Torquemada is, however, the only writer who distinctly states this: 'Tenian Audiencia General, que la llamaban Napualtlatolli, como decir, Palabra ochentena, que era Dia, en el qual se juntaban todos los de la Ciudad, y los Asistentes de todas las Provincias, con todo el Pueblo, asi nobles, como Comunes, y Plebeios,' etc. *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 168; Ixtlilxochitl, *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 244–5, says that the king was accompanied by all his sons and relatives, with their tutors and suites.

[23] Concerning this judicial system of Tezcuco, see *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.; *Torquemada, Monarq, Ind.*, tom. i., p. 168, tom. ii., pp. 354–5; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 96 et seq.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 128–9;

Digitized by Google

tlilxochitl gives a somewhat different account of the Tezcucan tribunals, which, as it contains the only description given by the ancient writers of the halls in which the judges sat, I translate in full.

In the palace were two principal court-yards, the larger of which served as the market-place. The second court-yard was smaller than the first, and was situated more in the interior of the palace; in the centre of it a fire was kept continually burning. Here were the two most important tribunals in the kingdom. To the right of this court-yard, writes Ixtlilxochitl, was the supreme tribunal, which was called *teohicpalpan*, meaning Tribunal of God. Here was a throne of gold, set with turquoises and other precious stones; before the throne stood a stool, upon which were a shield, a macana, and a bow with its quiver of arrows; upon these was placed a skull, surmounted by an emerald of a pyramidal shape, in the apex of which was fixed a plume of feathers and precious stones; at the sides, serving as carpets, were the skins of tigers and lions (tigres y leones), and mats (mantas) made of the feathers of the royal eagle, where a quantity of bracelets and anklets (grevas) of gold were likewise placed in regular order.[24] The walls were tapestried with cloth of all colors, made of rabbits' hair, adorned with figures of divers birds, animals, and flowers.[25] Attached to the throne was

Mendieta, Hist. Eccles., pp. 134–6; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 392–5; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 28–9; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 595.

[24] This sentence reads as follows in the original: 'A los lados serbian de alfombras unas pieles de tigres y leones, y mantas hechas de plumas de águila real, en donde asimismo estaban por su orden cantidad de braceletes, y grevas de oro.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 243. It is difficult to imagine why 'braceletes, y grevas de oro' should be placed upon the floor, but certainly the historian gives us to understand as much. Prescott, who affects to give Ixtlilxochitl's description 'in his own words,' and who, furthermore, encloses the extract in quotation-marks, gets over this difficulty by omitting the above-quoted sentence entirely. *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 34; and Veytia, *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 205, adopts the same convenient but somewhat unsatisfactory course. This latter author's version of the whole matter is, however, like much other of his work, inextricably confused, when compared with the original.

[25] 'Las paredes estaban entapizadas y adornadas de unos paños hechos de pelo de conejo, de todos colores, con figuras de diversas aves, animales y

Digitized by Google

a canopy of rich plumage, in the centre of which was a glittering ornament of gold and precious stones.

The other tribunal was called that of the king; it also had a throne, which was lower than that of the Tribunal of God, and a canopy adorned with the royal coat of arms. Here the kings transacted ordinary business and gave public audience; but when they rendered decisions upon grave and important cases, or pronounced sentence of death, they removed to the Tribunal of God, placing the right hand upon the skull, and holding in the left the golden arrow which served as a sceptre, and on these occasions they put on the tiara (tiara) which they used, which resembled a half mitre. There were on the same stool three of these tiaras; one was of precious stones set in gold, another of feathers, and the third woven of cotton and rabbit-hair, of a blue color. This tribunal was composed of fourteen grandees of the kingdom, who sat in three divisions of the hall, according to their rank and seniority. In the first division was the king; in the second division were seated six grandees; the first of these six, on the right hand, was the lord of Teotihuacan, the second the lord of Acolman, the third the lord of Tepetlaoztoc; on the left side sat, first, the lord of Huexotla, second, the lord of Coatlichan, third, he of Chimalhuacan. In the third division of the hall, which was the exterior one, sat eight other lords, according to their rank and seniority; on the right side the first was the lord of Otompan, the second was the lord of Tollantzinco, the third the lord of Quauhchinanco, the fourth the lord of Xicotepec; and on the left side were, first, the lord of Tepechpan, second, the lord of Chiauhtla, third, the lord of Chiuhnauhtla, and fourth, he of Teiotocan.

flores.' This is rendered by Prescott: 'The walls were hung with tapestry, made of the hair of different wild animals, of rich and various colors, *festooned by gold rings*, and embroidered with figures of birds and flowers.' A few lines above, 'la silla y espaldar era de oro,' is construed into 'a throne of pure gold.' It seems scarcely fair to style the ancient Chichimec's description one 'of rather a poetical cast,' at the same time making such additions as these.

Digitized by Google

There followed, also, another hall, which adjoined this on the eastern side, and was divided into two parts; in the inner and principal division were eight judges, who were nobles and gentlemen, and four others who were of the citizen class;[26] these were followed by fifteen provincial judges, natives of all the cities and chief towns of Tezcuco; the latter took cognizance of all suits, civil or criminal, which were embraced in the eighty laws that Nezahualcoyotl established; the duration of the most important of these cases was never more than eighty days. In the other, or exterior, division of the hall was a tribunal composed of four supreme judges, who were presidents of the councils; and there was a wicket, through which they entered and went out to communicate with the king.[27]

Besides these various tribunals for the general administration of justice, there were others that had jurisdiction in cases of a peculiar nature only. There was a court of divorce, and another which dealt only with military matters; by it military men were tried and punished, and it had also the power to confer rewards and honors upon the deserving; the especial jurisdiction of another tribunal extended over matters pertaining to art and science, while a fourth court had charge of the royal exchequer, of taxes and tributes, and of those employed in collecting them. Of some of these institutions I have already had occasion to speak. The mode of procedure, or daily routine, in the law courts of Mexico and Tezcuco, was strict and formal. At sunrise, or as some say,

[26] Ixtilxochitl, *ubi supra*, writes: 'En los primeros puestos ocho jueces que eran nobles y caballeros, y los otros cuatro eran de los ciudadanos.' Veytia says: 'Los cuatro primeros eran caballeros de la nobleza de primer órden, los cuatro siguientes ciudadanos de Tezcuco.' *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 199.

[27] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 242–3. The whole of the above description is very difficult to translate literally, owing to the confused style in which it is written; and if in places it is somewhat unintelligible, the reader will recollect that I translate merely what Ixtlilxochitl says, and not what he may, or may not, have *meant* to say.

Digitized by Google

at daybreak, the judges took their places in court, squatting upon mats spread for the purpose, usually upon an elevated platform. Here they administered justice until noon, when they partook of a meal supplied from the royal kitchen. When this was over and they had rested for a short space, business was resumed, and carried on during the greater part of the afternoon. Punctuality on the part of the judges was strictly enforced, and he who absented himself from court without good cause, such as illness or royal permission, was severely punished. This order was observed every day, except when the presence of the judges was required at the public sacrifices or solemn festivities, at which time the courts of justice remained closed.[28]

Minor cases were conducted verbally, the parties producing their witnesses, who testified under oath for the complaint or the defence. The testimony, under oath, of the principals was also admitted as evidence; and one writer even asserts that the defendant could clear himself by his oath;[29] but it is plain that if such were the case conviction would be very rare. In cases of greater importance, especially in civil suits where the possession of real estate was involved, paintings, in which the property in dispute was represented, were produced as authentic documents, and the whole of the proceedings, such as the object of the claim, the evidence, the names of the parties and their respective witnesses, as well as the decision or sentence, were recorded in court by notaries, or clerks, appointed for that purpose.[30] A

[28] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 354; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 199; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 128; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 100; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 134.

[29] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 129.

[30] Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., p. 33, says: 'The paintings were executed with so much accuracy, that, in all suits respecting real property, they were allowed to be produced as good authority in the Spanish tribunals, very long after the Conquest; and a chair for their study and interpretation was established at Mexico in 1553, which has long since shared the fate of most other provisions for learning in that unfortunate country.' Boturini thus

Digitized by Google

witness in an Aztec court of law occupied a serious position. In the first place, the judges are by all writers said to have been particularly skilful in cross-examination. They seem to have made it an especial study to harass witnesses with pertinent questions and minute details; in the next place, the punishment for perjury was death, and perjury among these people consisted in making a false statement when under oath, without the possibility of being saved by a legal quibble; in addition to this, superstition attached great weight to the oath which every witness was obliged to take, and which consisted in touching the forefinger to the earth and then to the tongue, as if to say, as Las Casas expresses it: "By the goddess Earth, who supports and affords me sustenance, I swear to speak truth." This oath was considered to be very sacred and binding, and is said to have been rarely violated. Whether counsel or advocates were employed is a disputed point, some writers asserting distinctly that they were, and others that they were not.[31] Veytia states that the complainant and de-

describes the paper used by the Aztecs: 'El Papel Indiano se componia de las pencas del *Magùey*, que en lengua Nacional se llama *Mètl*, y en Castellano *Pita*. Las echaban à podrir, y lavaban el hilo de ellas, el que havi endose ablandado estendian, para componer su papel gruesso, ó delgado, que despues bruñian para pintar en èl. Tambien hacian papel de las hojas de Palma, y Yo tengo algunos de estos delgados, y blandos tanto como la seda.' *Catálogo*, in *Id.*, *Idea*, pp. 95–6.

[31] Veytia writes very positively on this point: 'Habia tambien abogados y procuradores; á los primeros llamaban tepantlatoani, que quiere decir *el que habla por otro*, y á los segundos *tlanemiliani*, que en lo sustancial ejercian sus ministerios casi del mismo modo que en nuestros tribunales.... Daban términos á las partes para que sus abogados hablasen por ellas, y estos lo hacian del mismo modo que en nuestros tribunales.' *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 207–8. Sahugan relates the qualities which were supposed by the Aztecs to constitute a good or bad *procurador* or *solicitador*, and describes their duties: 'El procurador favorece à una banda de los pleyteantes, por quien en su negocio vuelve mucho y apela, teniendo poder, y llevando salario por ello. El buen procurador es vivo y solícito, osado, diligente, constante, y perseverante en los negocios, en los cuales no se deja vencer; sino que alega de su derecho, apela, tacha los testigos, ni se cansa hasta vencer á la parte contraria y triunfar de ella. El mal procurador es interesable, gran pedigüeño, y de malicia suele dilatar los negocios: hace alharacas, es muy negligente y descuidado en el pleito, y fraudulento de tal modo, que de entrambas partes lleva salario. El solicitador nunca para, anda siempre solícito y listo. El buen solicitador es muy cuidadoso, determinado, y solícito en todo, y por hacer bien su oficio, muchas

Digitized by Google

fendant were sometimes confronted with each other, and compelled to argue the case before the court, no other person being allowed to speak the while. The judges heard and passed sentence by a majority of votes,[32] each giving his decision aloud. If the trial took place in an inferior court, a disagreement sent the matter on appeal to a higher court; if it took place in the first instance before a superior tribunal, it was appealed to the great council of the emperor. The same writer also says that where a serious public offence had been committed, the witnesses were examined, and sentence was immediately passed without giving the accused time to defend himself.[33] We have already seen that the duration of suits was limited to eighty days, and generally they terminated much sooner than this, all possible expedition being always used. The better to avoid bribery and corruption, it was expressly forbidden for a judge to receive presents, no matter how trifling, and he who violated this rule was deposed from office, and otherwise punished with exceeding rigor.

The way in which the judges were paid for their services was peculiar. A certain portion of land was set apart for their exclusive benefit, which was cultivated and harvested by tenants, who doubtless were allowed to retain a part of the produce in return for their labor. These lands were not inherited by the son on the death of the father, but passed to the judge

veces deja de comer y de dormir, y anda de casa en casa solicitando los negocios, los cuales trata de buena tinta, y con temor ó recelo, de que por su descuido no tengan mal suceso los negocios. El mal solicitador es flojo y descuidado, lerdo, y encandilador para sacar dineros, y facilmente se deja cohechar, porque no hable mal el negocio ó que mienta, y así suele echar á perder los pleitos.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 23–4. Clavigero takes the opposite side of the question: 'Nei giudizj dei Messicani facevano la parti da per se stesse le loro allegazioni: almeno non sappiamo, che vi fossero Avvocati.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 129. 'No counsel was employed; the parties stated their own case, and supported it by their witnesses.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 32. 'L'office d'avocat était inconnu; les parties établissaient elles-mêmes leur cause, en se faisant accompagner de leurs témoins.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 581.

[32] The reader will have remarked in a previous note that Veytia assigns more judges to each court than any other writer.

[33] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 208.

Digitized by Google

appointed in the place of the latter.[34] Veytia does not mention these lands; he says that the judges had no fixed salary, but were paid according to the king's pleasure, more or less, in proportion to the size of their families, besides which the king made valuable presents when the Eighty-day Council met, to those who had performed their duty to his satisfaction.[35] The allowance was in all cases made amply sufficient, that there might be no excuse on the ground of poverty for a judge receiving presents or bribes. They held their office for life, and were selected from the higher classes, especially the superior judges, who were generally relatives of the king, or even members of the royal family. None were eligible for the office who were not sober, upright men, brought up in the temples, and who were well acquainted with court life and manners. A judge who became drunk, or received a bribe, was three times severely reprimanded by his fellow-judges; if the offence was repeated, his head was shaved publicly, a great disgrace among the Aztecs, and he was deprived of his office with ignominy. A judge making a false report to the king, or convicted of receiving a large bribe, or of rendering a manifestly unjust decision, was punished with death.[36] All this machinery of the law was dispensed with in Tlascala, where all disputes and difficulties were promptly settled by certain old men appointed for that purpose.[37]

A love of impartial justice seems to have characterized all the Aztec monarchs, and, as we have seen, the laws they enacted to insure this to their subjects

[34] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 355–6; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 135; *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 128–9.

[35] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 200.

[36] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv., ccxii.; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. viii., pp. 304, 313; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 135; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 101–2. Torquemada says the unjust judge was warned twice, and shaved at the third offence. *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 356. See also *Id.*, p. 385.

[37] *Camarjo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 133.

Digitized by Google

were severe in the extreme. No favoritism was allowed; all, from the highest to the lowest, were held amenable to the law. A story illustrating this is repeated by nearly all the old writers. In the reign of Nezahualpilli, the son of Nezahualcoyotl, who were accounted the two wisest kings of Tezcuco, a suit sprang up between a rich and powerful noble and a poor man of the people. The judge decided against the poor man, who thereby lost what little he had, and was in danger of having to sell himself as a slave to procure subsistence for his family. But suspicion of foul play having been aroused, the king ordered the matter to be thoroughly investigated, when it transpired that the judge had been guilty of collusion with the rich man; so the king commanded that the unjust judge should be hanged at once, and that the poor man's property should be restored to him.

Neither were the rulers themselves, nor their families, exempt from observance of the law, and instances are not wanting where fathers have, Brutus-like, condemned their children to death, rather than allow the law to be violated, and the offender to go unpunished. Nezahualcoyotl caused four of his own sons to be publicly executed because they had sinned with their step-mothers, the wives of their father.[38] A very touching incident is narrated by Torquemada, showing to what an extent this love of impartial justice was carried by a Tezcucan sovereign.

Nezahualpilli, king of Tezcuco, had married two sisters, whom he dearly loved, and especially did he dote upon the younger, whose name was Xocotzincatzin. By her he had several children, the eldest being a son, named Huexotzincatzin, who was beloved by all who knew him, on account of his amiable disposition and noble qualities, and who was besides a very valiant young man and a great warrior. No wonder that he was the king's pride, and beloved even more

[38] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 165.

Digitized by Google

than his brothers and sisters, for his own and his mother's sake. So much had Huexotzincatzin distinguished himself, that, although he was but a young man, his father determined to bestow upon him the office and title of tlacatecatl, which was a post of the highest honor and importance.[39] For this purpose, the king one day ordered that the prince be sent for and brought into his presence. With a light heart, and much elated, Huexotzincatzin, accompanied by his suite, and the nobles who were his tutors, set out for the royal palace. As he was about to enter, the prince met one of his father's concubines, attended by her ladies. This concubine was a very beautiful and proud woman, yet withal of a free and easy carriage, that encouraged Huexotzincatzin, who perhaps did not know who she was, to address her in a familiar and disrespectful manner. The woman, who, the historian remarks, could not have been possessed of much sense, either because she felt offended at his conduct toward her, or because she dreaded the consequence if the king should discover what had happened, turned from the prince without a word, and entered the palace. The king's concubines, as we have seen in a former chapter, were always accompanied by certain elderly women, whose duty it was to instruct them in discreet behavior and to watch continually over their actions. One of these women, who had been with the concubine at the time of her meeting with Huexotzincatzin, and had overheard the prince's remarks, went straightway to the king, and informed him of all that had happened. The king immediately sent for his concubine, and inquired of her if the prince had spoken lewdly to her publicly and in the presence of the ladies and courtiers, or if he had intended his

[39] Torquemada translates tlacatecatl, Captain General (Capitan General). We have already seen that it was the title of the presiding judge of the second Mexican court of justice, but it was probably in this case a military title, both because military promotion would be more likely to be conferred upon a renowned warrior than a judgeship, and because the prince is spoken of as a young man, while only men of mature years and great experience were intrusted with the higher judicial offices.

Digitized by Google

words to reach her ear alone; for Nezahualpilli would fain have discovered some excuse for his son, the punishment for speaking lewdly in public to the king's concubines being, according to law, death; but the frightened woman replied that Huexotzincatzin had spoken openly to her, before all that were present. Then the king dismissed the concubine, and retired, mourning, into certain apartments which were called the 'rooms of sorrow.'

When these things came to the ears of the friends and tutors of the prince, they were much troubled on his account, because the severity of the king, and his strict adherence to the law were as a proverb among the people, and their apprehensions increased when, upon arriving at the royal apartments, the prince was denied admission, although his attendants were ordered to appear at once before the king. There they were closely questioned by him, and although they would willingly have saved the prince from the consequences of his folly, yet they dared not speak anything but truth, for he who was convicted of wilfully deceiving the king suffered death. All they could do was to make excuses for the prince, and ask pardon for his crime, and this they did with many prayers and entreaties, advancing, as extenuating circumstances, his youth, his previous good conduct, and his possible ignorance of the fact that the lady was his father's concubine. The king listened patiently to the end, answering nothing, and then he commanded that Huexotzincatzin be forthwith arrested and placed in confinement. Later in that same day he pronounced sentence of death against his son. When it became known that Huexotzincatzin was to die, all the powerful nobles who were at court went in a body to the king and earnestly conjured him not to insist upon carrying out his sentence, telling him that it was barbarous and unnatural, and that future generations would hold in horror and hatred the memory of the man who had condemned his own son to death. Their

Digitized by Google

prayers and arguments seemed, however, to render the old king only the more implacable, and he dismissed them, saying that if the law forbade such things, and if that law was inviolably observed throughout the kingdom, how could he justify his conduct to his subjects, were he to allow the same to be infringed upon in his own palace, and the offender to remain unpunished merely because he was his son; that it should never be said of him that he made laws for his subjects which did not apply to his own family.

When Xocotzincatzin, the prince's mother, heard that he was condemned to death, she gathered the rest of her sons about her, and coming suddenly before her husband, she fell on her knees and besought him with many tears to spare the life of her darling son, the first pledge of love that she, his favorite wife, had given him. Finding all her entreaties fruitless, she then implored him, for the sake of the love he had once borne her, to slay her and her other sons with Huexotzincatzin, since life without her first-born was unbearable. But the stern old king still sat to all appearance unmoved and immovable, and coldly directed the attendant ladies to convey the wretched mother to her apartments.

The execution of the prince was delayed in every possible manner by those who had charge of it, in the hope that the king might even yet relent; but Nezahualpilli having been informed of this, immediately ordered that the sentence should be carried out without further delay. So Huexotzincatzin died. As soon as the news of his son's death was carried to the king, he shut himself up in certain apartments called the 'rooms of sorrow,' and there remained forty days, mourning for his first-born and seeing no one. The house of the late prince was then walled up, and none were allowed to enter it, and so all tokens of the unhappy young man were destroyed.[40]

[40] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 189–90.

Digitized by Google

Another anecdote, which is written in execrable Spanish by the native historian, Tezozomoc, may not be out of place here. It is told of the emperor Montezuma of Mexico, and the reader will at once recognize a resemblance between this and many other anecdotes with which he is familiar, where a bold and merited rebuke from a subject to his sovereign is received with respect and even favor.

It happened one summer that the king, being wearied with the cares of government, went for rest and recreation to his country palace at Tacubaya. One day, when out shooting birds, he came to an orchard, and having told his attendants to remain outside, he entered alone. He succeeded in killing a bird, and as he was returning, bearing his game in his hand, he turned aside into a field where a remarkably fine crop of corn was growing. Having plucked a few ears, he went toward the house of the owner of the field, which stood hard by, for the purpose of showing him the ears that he had plucked, and of praising his crop, but as by law it was death to look upon the king's face, the occupants of the house had fled, and there was no one therein. Now, the owner of the field had seen the king pluck the corn from afar off, and, notwithstanding it was against the law, he ventured to approach the monarch in such a way as to make the meeting appear accidental. Making a deep obesiance, he thus addressed the king: "How is it, most high and mighty prince, that thou has thus stolen my corn? Didst thou not thyself establish a law that he who should steal one ear of corn, or its value, should suffer death?" And Montezuma answered: "Truly I did make such a law." Then said the farmer: "How is it, then, that thou breakest thine own law?" And the king replied: "Here is thy corn, take back that which I have stolen from thee." But the owner of the field began to be alarmed at his own boldness, and tried to excuse himself, saying that he had spoken merely in jest, for, said he: "Are not my

Digitized by Google

fields, and myself, and my wife, and my children, all thine, to do with as thou wilt;" and he refused to take back the ears of corn. Then the king took off his mantle of network and precious stones, which was called *xiuhayatl* and was worth a whole city, and offered it to the farmer, who at first was afraid to accept so precious a gift, but Montezuma insisted, so he took the mantle, promising to preserve it with great care as a remembrance of the king. When Montezuma returned to his attendants, the precious mantle was at once missed, and they began to inquire what had become of it; which the king perceiving, he told them that he had been set upon by robbers, when alone, who had robbed him of his mantle, at the same time he ordered them, upon pain of death, to say nothing more about the matter. The next day, having arrived at his royal palace in Mexico, when all his great nobles were about him, he ordered one of his captains to repair to Tacubaya, and inquire for a certain Xochitlacotzin, whom they should at once bring to his presence, but under penalty of death they should not injure or abuse him in any way. When the king's messengers told Xochitlacotzin their errand, he was greatly alarmed, and tried to escape, but they caught him, and telling him to fear nothing, for that the king was kindly disposed toward him, they brought him before Montezuma. The king, having bidden him welcome, asked him what had become of his mantle. At this the nobles who were present became much excited, but Montezuma quieted them, saying: "This poor man has more courage and boldness than any of you who are here, for he dared to speak the truth and tell me that I had broken my laws. Of such men have I greater need than of those who speak only with honeyed words to me." Then having inquired what principal offices were vacant, he ordered his attendant lords to shelter and take care of Xochitlacotzin, who was henceforth his relative and one of the chief men of the realm. Afterward he who had so

Digitized by Google

lately been a poor farmer was given a principal house of Olac for his own, and it was long the boast of his descendants that they were relatives of Montezuma.[41]

The Aztecs adopted numerous ways of punishing offenders against the law, as we shall see presently, but I do not think that imprisonment was largely resorted to. They had prisons, it is true, and very cruel ones, according to all accounts, but it appears that they were more for the purpose of confining prisoners previous to their trial, or between their condemnation and execution, than permanently for punishment. These jails were of two classes, one called *teilpiloyan* for those imprisoned on a civil charge, another called *quauhcalco*,[42] for prisoners condemned to death. The cells were made like cages, and the prison was so constructed as to admit very little light or air;[43] the food was scanty and of a bad quality, so that, as Las Casas expresses it, the prisoners soon became thin and yellow, and commenced at the prison to suffer the death that was afterward adjudged them. Clavigero, however, asserts that those condemned to the sacrificial stone were well fed in order that they might appear in good flesh at the sacrifice.[44] A very close watch was kept upon the captives, so much so, indeed, that if through the negligence of the guard a prisoner of war escaped from the cage, the community of the district, whose duty it was to supply the prisoners with guards, was obliged to pay to the owner of the fugitive a female slave, a load of cotton garments, and a shield.[45] Mendieta says that these prisons were only used for persons awaiting trial on very grave

[41] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 146.

[42] These names are spelled *tlelpiloia* and *quahucalco* by Las Casas, and *teilpiloyan* and *quauhcalli*, by Brasseur de Bourbourg.

[43] Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii., says that the jails, called quahucalco, resembled the stocks; the other writers do not notice this difference.

[44] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 138.

[45] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 138–9; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 353; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxii.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 138.

Digitized by Google

charges; for he writes, in the case of one held to answer on an ordinary charge: "It was sufficient for the minister of justice to place the prisoner in a corner with a few light sticks before him; indeed, I believe that to have merely drawn a line and told him not to pass it would have sufficed, even though he might have reason to believe that there was a heavy punishment in store for him, because to flee from justice, and escape, was an impossibility. At all events, I with my own eyes have seen a prisoner standing entirely unguarded save for the before-mentioned sticks."[46]

Like most semi-barbarous nations, the Aztecs were more prone to punish crime than to recompense virtue, and even when merit was rewarded, it was of the coarser and more material kind, such as valor in war or successful statesmanship. The greater part of their code might, like Dracon's, have been written in blood—so severe were the penalties inflicted for crimes that were comparatively slight, and so brutal and bloody were the ways of carrying those punishments into execution. In the strongest sense of the phrase, the Aztecs were ruled with a rod of iron; but that such severity was necessary I have no doubt, inasmuch as whatever form of government exists, be it good or bad, that form of government is the necessary one, or it could have no existence. All young states must adopt harsh laws to secure the peace and well-being of the community, while as yet the laws of habit and usage are unestablished; and as that community progresses and improves, it will of itself mould its system of government to fit itself. The code of Dracon was superseded by that of Solon when the improved state of the Athenian community warranted a mitigation of the severity of the former, and in like manner the laws of Montezuma and Nezahualcoyotl would have given place to others less harsh had Aztec civilization been allowed to progress.

[46] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 138.

Digitized by Google

The laws of the several Aztec kingdoms were essentially the same; some slight differences existed, however, and in these instances the code of Tezcuco proves the most rigid and severe, while more of lenience is exhibited in that of Mexico. I have before remarked that the majority of writers treat of the legislation of Tezcuco, but, as in other matters, many authorities who should be reliable surmount the difficulty of distinguishing that which belongs to one system of jurisprudence from that which belongs to another by speaking generally of the code that existed in Nueva España, or among 'these people.' Most of the subjected provinces adopted the laws of the state to which they became subject. But this was by no means obligatory, because as conquered nations were not compelled to speak the language of their conquerors, neither were they forced to make use of their laws.[47] Let us now see what these laws were.

Theft was punished in various ways, and, it appears, not at all in proportion to the magnitude of the crime. Thus he who stole a certain number of ears of corn[48] suffered death, while he who broke into the temples and stole therefrom was enslaved for the first offence and hanged for the second; and it is distinctly stated[49] that in order to merit either of these punishments, the theft must be an exten-

[47] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 137.

[48] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166, tom. ii., p. 331; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 225; *Boturini, Idea*, p. 27. The number of ears of corn varies according to the different writers from three or four to seven, except Las Casas, who makes the number twenty-one or over, stating, however, that this and some other laws that he gives are possibly not authentic. *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv. The Anonymous Conqueror writes: 'Quando altri entrauano nelle possessioni altrui per rubbare frutti, ò il grano che essi hanno, che per entrar in vn campo, e rubbare tre ò quattro mazzocche ò spighe de quel loro grano, lo faceuano schiauo del patrone di quel campo rubbato.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 306. Clavigero agrees with the Anonymous Conqueror, that the thief of corn became the slave of the owner of the field from which he had stolen, and adds in a foot-note: 'Torquemada aggiunge, che avea pena di morte; ma ciò fu nel Regno d'Acolhuacan, non già in quello di Messico.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 133.

[49] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 138.

Digitized by Google

sive one. In cases not specially provided for, it appears that a petty thief became the slave of the person from whom he had stolen; according to Ortega, however, the injured party had the privilege of refusing to accept the thief as a slave, in which case the latter was sold by the judges, and with the proceeds of the sale the complainant was reimbursed. The same writer states that in some cases a compromise could be effected by the offended party agreeing to be indemnified, by the thief, in which case the latter paid into the treasury a sum equal to the amount stolen. This statement is somewhat obscure, inasmuch as it would be but poor satisfaction to the party robbed to see the equivalent of that robbery paid into the public treasury; but I understand the writer to mean that the loser had his loss made good, and that for the satisfaction of justice an equal amount was imposed as a fine upon the prisoner.[50] Theft of a large amount was almost invariably punished with death, which was inflicted in various ways. Usually the culprit was dragged ignominiously through the streets and then hanged;[51] sometimes he was stoned to death.[52] He who robbed on the highway was killed by having his head smashed with a club;[53] he who was caught in the act of pilfering in the market-place, no matter how trivial the theft, was beaten to death with sticks on the spot by the assembled multitude, for this was considered a most heinous sin; but notwithstanding the fearful risk incurred, it is asserted that many were so light-fingered that it was only necessary for a marketwoman to turn her head away, and her stall would be robbed in a trice. There was

[50] Ortega's statement reads: 'Casi siempre se castigaba con pena de muerte, á ménos de que la parte ofendida conviniese en ser indemnizada por el ladron, en cuyo caso pagaba este al fisco una cantidad igual á la robada.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 225.

[51] *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166.

[52] *Explicacion de la Colleccion de Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 112.

[53] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 246.

Digitized by Google

a regular judicial tribunal established for the settling of disputes in the general government of the market-place, of which I have had occasion to speak before; but this tribunal does not appear to have troubled itself much with persons who were caught in the act of stealing, as it seems to have been tacitly allowed to the people assembled in the market-place to exercise lynch law upon the culprit.[54]

Besides these general laws for the prevention of theft, there were others which prescribed special penalties for those who stole certain particular articles. For instance, Ortega tells us that the thief of silver or gold was skinned alive and sacrificed to Xipe, the tutelary divinity of the workers in precious metals, such a theft being considered a direct insult to the god.[55] In some of these cases fines were imposed. Among a collection of laws given by Las Casas, for the authenticity of which he does not vouch, "because," he says, "they were taken out of a little Indian book of no authority," we find the following relating to theft: If any one stole the plants, called maguey, from which they manufactured more than twenty articles, and which were used for making sirup, he was compelled to pay as a fine as many cotton cloths as the judges might decree, and if he was unable to pay the fine imposed, or if he had stolen more than twenty plants, he was enslaved. Whoever stole a fishing-net or a canoe was punished in the same manner. Whoever stole corn to the amount of twenty ears or upward died for it, and if he took a less quantity, he paid that which he was sentenced to pay. He that plucked the corn before it had formed seed

[54] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 138; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 225; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii. p., 381. Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii., says that he who stole in the market-place was hanged there and then, by order of the judges of the place, and in cap. ccxv., he writes: 'El que en el mercado algo hurtava, era ley que luego publicamente alli en el mismo mercado lo matasen á palos.' Again in the same chapter he gives a law, for the authenticity of which he does not vouch, however, which reads as follows: 'El que en el mercado hurtava algo, los mismos del mercado tenian licencia para lo matar á pedradas.'

[55] *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 225.

Digitized by Google

suffered death. Whoever stole a tecomatl, "which is a little gourd tied at the top with strips of red hide, and having feather tassels at the end, used by the lords for carrying a green powder, from which they take in smoke through the mouth, the powder being called in the island of Española 'tabacos'—whoever stole one of these died for it." He that stole precious stones, and more especially the stone called chalchiuite, no matter from whence he took it, was stoned to death in the market-place, because no man of the lower orders was allowed to possess this stone.[56]

In Mexico, a distinction seems to have been made between the thief who reaped the benefit of his crime and him who did not; in other words, if the stolen property was recovered intact from the thief he was only enslaved, but if he had already disposed of his plunder he suffered death.[57] Whether the ultimate recovery of the property after it had passed from the thief's hands would answer the same end, we are not told, but if not, then it would appear that according to Aztec jurisprudence the culprit was punished, not so much in proportion to the actual injury he inflicted upon others as in accordance with the actual extent of the crime he committed. In Michoacan, the first theft was not severely punished, but for the second offence the thief was thrown down a precipice and his carcass left to the birds of prey.[58]

The murderer suffered death even though he should be a noble and his victim but a slave.[59] In Michoa-

[56] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.

[57] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 381; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.

[58] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib iii., cap. x.; *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 51.

[59] 'L'omicida pagava colla propria vita il suo delitto, quantunque l'uccisso fosse uno schiavo.' *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 130. The manner of putting the murderer to death is differently stated: 'El homicidio, bien fuese ejecutado por noble ó plebeyo, bien por hombre ó muger, se castigaba con pena de muerte, depedazando al homicida.' *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 226. 'Al que mataba à otro, hacian degollar.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom., i., p., 166. 'Al matador lo degollaban.' *Vetancort, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33. Other writers merely say that the murderer suffered death, without stating the manner of execution.

Digitized by Google

can, we are told by Herrera,[60] that there was no punishment for murder, since, through fear, the crime was never committed. Beaumont allows that for a time there were no murders, but says that afterward they became frequent, and then the criminal was dragged along the ground until he died.[61] He who administered poison to another, thereby causing death, died for it, and the same punishment was awarded to him who furnished the poison.[62]

Traitors, conspirators, and those who stirred up sedition among the people or created ill feeling between nations, were broken to pieces at the joints, their houses razed to the ground, their property confiscated, and their children and relations made slaves, to the fourth generation. The lord of vassals who rebelled, unless taken captive in battle, was killed by having his head smashed with a club; the common rebel was tied to an oaken spit and roasted alive.[63]

In Tezcuco, he who kidnapped a child and sold it into slavery was hanged; in Mexico, the kidnapper was himself sold as a slave, and of the price he bought one half was given to the stolen child, or its parents,

See *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's, Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.;* p. 136. Diego Duran, in his inedited 'History of New Spain,' asserts that the murderer did not suffer death, but became the slave for life of the wife or relatives of the deceased. *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 240–1.

[60] *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. x.

[61] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 51–2.

[62] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 136; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 226; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii. In cap. ccxv., among his unauthenticated laws, we read that if the victim of poison was a slave, the person who caused his death was made a slave, in the place of suffering the extreme penalty, but the opposite to this is expressly stated by Clavigero and implied by Ortega.

[63] *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Nauigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 138; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 421. Ixtlilxochitl writes that the children and relations of the traitor were enslaved till the *fifth* generation, and that salt was scattered upon his lands. *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 245. 'Il traditore del Re, o dello Stato, era sbranato, ed i suoi parenti, che consapevoli del tradimento non lo aveano per tempo scoperto, erano privati della libertà.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 130.

Digitized by Google

and the other half became the property of the purchaser; if several persons were implicated in the crime, they were all sold as slaves.[64]

Drunkenness was punished with excessive rigor; indeed, intoxicating liquor was not allowed to be drunk, except by express permission from the judges, and this license was only granted to invalids and persons over fifty years of age, who, it was considered, needed strong drink in order to warm their blood; and even they were only permitted to partake of a limited quantity, at each meal,[65] though, according to the explanation of Mendoza's collection, old men of seventy years were allowed to drink as much as they pleased.[66] Moderate conviviality at weddings and public feasts was not forbidden, and upon these occasions the young people were allowed to partake of the wine-cup sparingly;[67] the same license was granted to those whose daily occupation necessitated great bodily exertion, such as masons, carpenters, and the like.[68] Women in childbed were allowed to use strong drink as a

[64] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 382; Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv., among the collection of unauthenticated laws so frequently mentioned heretofore, gives the following: 'Si algunos vendieron algun niño por esclavo, y despues se sabe, todos los que entendieron en ello eran esclavos, y dellos davan uno al que lo compró, y los otros repartian entre la madre del niño y entre él que lo descubrió.' In the same chapter, among another list of laws, which, says Las Casas, 'son tenidas todas por autenticas y verdaderas,' we read: 'Era ley, y con rigor guardada, que si alguno vendia por esclavo algun niño perdido, que se hiciese esclavo al que lo vendia, y su hacienda se partiese en dos partes, la una era para el niño, y la otra al que lo havia comprado, y si quizas lo avian vendido y eran muchos, á todos hacien esclavos.

[65] Zurita writes: 'Ils n'avaient droit d'en prendre que trois petites tasses à chaque repas.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 110; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xvi.

[66] *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., pl. 72; *Esplicacion*, in *Id.*, vol. v., pp. 112–13; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xvi.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 134.

[67] 'Dans les noces publiques et les fêtes, les hommes âgés de plus de trente ans étaient ordinairement autorisés à en boire deux tasses.' *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 110; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 134; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xvi.

[68] Ortega says that the privilege was also extended to private soldiers. *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 227. Zurita, however, writes: 'Les guerriers regardaient comme un déshonneur d'en boire.' *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., p. 111.

Digitized by Google

stimulant, but only during the first days of their confinement. With these exceptions, the law against drinking was strictly enforced. The young man who became drunk was conveyed to the jail, and there beaten to death with clubs; the young woman was stoned to death. In some parts, if the drunkard was a plebeian, he was sold for a slave for the first offence, and suffered death for the second; at other times the offender's hair was cut off in the public market-place, he was then lashed through the principal streets, and finally his house was razed to the ground, because, they said, one who would give up his reason to the influence of strong drink was unworthy to possess a house, and be numbered among respectable citizens. Cutting off the hair was, as we shall see, a mode of punishment frequently resorted to by these people, and so deep was the degradation supposed to be attached to it that it was dreaded almost equally with death itself. Should a military man, who had gained distinction in the wars, become drunk, he was deprived of his rank and honors, and considered thenceforth as infamous. Conviction of this crime rendered the culprit ineligible for all future emoluments, and especially was he debarred from holding any public office. A noble was invariably hanged for the first offence, his body being afterward dragged without the limits of the town and cast into a stream used for that purpose only. But a mightier influence than mere fear of the penal law restrained the Aztec nobility and gentry from drinking to excess; this influence was social law. It was considered degrading for a person of quality to touch wine at all, even in seasons of festivity, when, as I have said, it was customary and lawful for the lower classes to indulge to a certain extent. Wine-bibbing was looked upon as a coarse pleasure, peculiar exclusively to the common people, and a member of the higher orders who was suspected of practising the habit would have forfeited his social position, even though the law had suffered him to remain un-

Digitized by Google

punished.[69] These heathens, however, seem to have recognized the natural incongruity existing between precept and practice, fully as much as the most advanced Christian.[70]

He who employed witchcraft, charms, or incantations for the purpose of doing injury to the community or to individuals was sacrificed to the gods, by having his breast opened and his heart torn out.[71]

Whoever made use of the royal insignia or ensigns suffered death, and his property was confiscated.[72] The reader will recollect that the same penalty was inflicted upon him who should usurp the insignia or office of the Mexican cihuacoatl, or supreme judge. Whoever maltreated an ambassador, minister, or courier belonging to the king suffered death; but ambassadors and couriers were on their part forbidden to leave the high road, under pain of losing their privileges.[73] He who by force took possession of land not belonging to him suffered death.[74] He who sold the land of another, or that which he held in trust, without judicial authority, or permission from such as had power to grant it to him, was enslaved.[75] If a piece of land was fraudulently sold twice over, the first purchaser held it, and the vendor was punished.[76] He who squandered his patrimony suffered death.[77] The

[69] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii., ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166, tom. ii., p. 386; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33; *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., pl. 72; *Esplicacion*, in *Id.*, vol. v., pp. 112–13; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Id.*, vol. ix., p. 246; *Id., Relaciones*, p. 387; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 226–7; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 134; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 110–11; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. xvi.

[70] See this vol., pp. 360–1.

[71] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 386; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 226.

[72] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 246; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 130.

[73] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 130.

[74] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 226.

[75] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.

[76] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 388.

[77] Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv., gives two laws on this

Digitized by Google

son that raised his hand against his father or mother suffered death, and his children were prevented from inheriting the property of their grandparents. In the same manner a father could disinherit a son who was cowardly or cruel.[78] He who removed boundary-marks died for it.[79] Those who disturbed the peace by engaging in petty fights and squabbles, without using weapons, were confined in jail for a few days, and obliged to make good whatever damage they had done; for, says Las Casas, they generally revenged themselves by breaking something. If any one was wounded in a brawl, he who made the assault had to defray all the expenses of curing the injured party. But those who fought in the market-place, were dealt with far more severely.[80] Slanderers were treated with great severity. In Mexico, he who wilfully calumniated another, thereby seriousiy injuring his reputation, was condemned to have his lips cut off, and sometimes his ears also. In Tezcuco, the slanderer suffered death. The false witness had the same penalty adjudged to him that would have been awarded to the accused if convicted. So great a lover of truth was king Nezahualcoyotl, that he is said to have made a law prescribing the death penalty to historians who should record fictitious events.[81] Whoever obtained

point. To the first, which is among the collection of unauthenticated laws, he adds: 'Y si era plebeyo ó de baja suerte hacian lo esclavo.' Ixtlilxochitl also gives two laws: 'A los hijos de los señores si malbarataban sus riquezas, ó bien muebles que sus padres tenian, les daban garrote.' *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 246. 'Si algun principal mayorazgo fuese desbaratado, ó travieso, ó si entre dos de estos tales hubiese alguna diferencia sobre tierras ú otras cosas, el que no quisiese estarse quedo con la averiguacion que entre ellos se hiciese por ser soberbio y mal mirado, le fuesen quitados sus bienes y mayorazgo, y fuese puesto en depósito en alguna persona que diese cuenta de ello para el tiempo que le fuese pedido, de cual mayorazgo estubiese desposeido todo el tiempo que la voluntad del señor fuese.' *Relaciones*, in *Id.*, p. 387; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 385; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 134.

[78] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423.

[79] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 386; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387.

[80] *La Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.

[81] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 604; *Clavijero, Storia Ant.*

Digitized by Google

goods on credit and did not pay for them was enslaved, and the delinquent tax-payer met with the same punishment.[82]

Concerning the way in which adulterers were treated scarcely two of the ancient writers agree,[83] and it is probable that the law on this point differed more or less in various parts of the Aztec kingdoms; indeed, we have Clavigero's testimony that in some parts of the Mexican empire the crime of adultery was punished with greater severity than in others, and Las Casas and Mendieta both speak of several penalties attaching to the offence in different localities. According to what can be gathered on this point, it appears that adulterers taken in flagrante delicto, or under circumstances which made their guilt a moral certainty, were stoned to death. A species of trial was granted to the culprits, but if, as some writers assert, confession of guilt was extorted by torture,[84] this trial must have been as much a mockery of justice as were the proceedings of most European courts of law at that period. The amount of evidence necessary to convict is uncertain. Veytia says that accusation by the husband was in itself sufficient proof.[85] Las Casas and Torquemada, however, who are both far older authorities, tells us that no man or woman was punished for adultery upon

del Mexico, tom. ii., p. 134; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 227–9; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 313; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 165.

[82] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 502; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.

[83] Concerning adultery see: *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii., ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166, tom. ii., pp. 378, 380; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 246; *Relaciones*, in *Id.*, p. 387; *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., pl. 72; *Esplicacion*, in *Id.*, vol. v., p. 112; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 136–7; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 130–1; *Bologne*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 211; *Zurita, Rapport*, in *Id.*, série ii., tom. i., pp. 107–10; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 224; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33; *Duran*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. viii., pp. 242–3; *Valades, Rhetorica Christiana*, in *Id.*, p. 129, note.

[84] *Las Casas* and *Mendieta*, as in preceding note.

[85] 'Para la justificacion fuese bastante la denuncia del marido.' *Ibid.*

Digitized by Google

the unsupported testimony of the husband but that other witnesses, and the confession of the defendants, were necessary to procure their conviction.[86] Usually, if the condemned adulterers were of the lower orders, they were taken out into a public place and there stoned to death by the assembled multitude; and few of the old writers omit to remark that this manner of death was almost painless, since no sooner was the first stone thrown than the poor wretch was immediately covered with a pile of missiles, so great was the number of his executioners, and so eager was each to take a hand in the killing. Another common mode of execution consisted in placing the head of the condemned upon a stone, and smashing his skull by letting another stone fall upon it.[87] The noble convicted of the same crime was not killed in this public manner, but was strangled in jail; and as a mark of respect to his rank, his head, after death, was adorned with plumes of green feathers, and the body was then burned. Adulterers who were found guilty merely upon circumstantial evidence also suffered death by strangulation. It was strictly forbidden for a husband to take the law into his own hands, and he who should seek to avenge his honor by slaying his wife or her paramour, even though he took them in the act of adultery, suffered death; in the same manner, should the criminal endeavor to save himself by killing the injured husband, his fate was to be roasted alive before a slow fire, his body being basted with salt and water, that death might not come to his relief too soon.[88] An adulterer could not escape the law on the plea of drunkenness;[89] and indeed, had such an excuse been

[86] Las Casas writes: 'A ninguna muger ni hombre castigavan por adulterio, si solo el marido della los acusaba, sino que havia de haver testigos y confesion dellos.' *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv. Torquemada uses almost the same words.

[87] Father Francisco de Bologne says that this mode of punishment was only resorted to in the case of the man, and that the female adulterer was impaled. *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 211.

[88] This statement is made by Ixtlilxochitl and Veytia, *ubi sup.*

[89] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Mendieta, ubi sup.*

Digitized by Google

held admissible, little would have been gained by exchanging the fate of the adulterer for that of the drunkard. The trespass of a married man with a free unmarried woman was not considered to constitute adultery, nor punished as such, so that the husband was not bound to so much fidelity as was exacted from the wife. I have before remarked that although the crime of adultery was punished in all parts of the Aztec empire, yet the penalty inflicted differed in point of severity and in manner of execution. Thus, in the province of Ixcatlan, if we may believe Clavigero, a woman accused of this crime was summoned before the judges, and if the proofs of her guilt were satisfactory, she was there and then torn to pieces, and her limbs were divided among the witnesses, while in Itztepec the guilty woman's husband cut off her ears and nose, thus branding her as infamous for life.[90] In some parts of the empire the husband who cohabited with his wife after it had been proved that she had violated her fidelity was severely punished.[91]

Carnal connection with mother, sister, step-mother or step-sister was punished by hanging; Torquemada says the same penalty was incurred by him who had connection with his mother-in-law, because they considered it a sin for a man to have access to both mother and daughter. Intercourse between brother-in-law and sister-in-law was, however, not criminal, and indeed, it was customary for a man to raise up seed to his deceased brother by marrying his widow.[92] He who attempted to ravish a maiden, whether in the field or in her father's house, suffered death.[93] In Michoacan, the ravisher's mouth was split from ear

[90] *Ibidem.* Among the Miztecs, when extenuating circumstances could be proved, the punishment of death was commuted to mutilation of ears, nose, and lips. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xii.

[91] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Clavigero, ubi sup.*

[92] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii., ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 377–8, 380; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 224.

[93] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 136.

Digitized by Google

to ear with a flint knife, and he was afterwards impaled.[94] In Mexico, those who committed sodomy were hanged; in Tezcuco, the punishment for unnatural crime was characteristically brutal. The active agent was bound to a stake, completely covered with ashes, and so left to die; the entrails of the passive agent were drawn out through his anus, he also was then covered with ashes, and wood being added, the pile was ignited.[95] In Tlascala, the sodomite was not punished by law, but was scouted by society, and treated with scorn and contempt by all who knew him.[96] From the extreme severity of the laws enacted by the later sovereigns for the suppression of this revolting vice, and from the fact that persons were especially appointed by the judicial authorities to search the provinces for offenders of this class, it is evident that unnatural love had attained a frightful popularity among the Aztecs. Father Pierre de Gand, or, as he is sometimes known, de Mara, bears terrible testimony to this; he writes: "Un certain nombre de prêtres n'avaient point de femmes, *sed eorum loco pueros quibus abutebantur.* Ce péché était si commun dans ce pays, que, jeunes ou vieux, tous en étaient infectés; ils y étaient si adonnés, que mêmes des enfants de six ans s'y livraient."[97]

Las Casas relates that in several of the more remote provinces of Mexico unnatural vice was tolerated, if not actually permitted,[98] and it is not improbable that

[94] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. x.; *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 51.

[95] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 166, tom. ii., p. 380; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423; *Ortega*, in *Id.*, p. 224; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 33; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 137; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 245. Carbajal Espinosa differs from these in saying: 'Al pasivo le arrancaban las entrañas, se llenaba su vientre de ceniza y el cadáver ora quemado.' *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 603.

[96] *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 198. Carli is therefore mistaken in saying this crime was punished with death. *Cartas*, p. 122.

[97] *Lettre*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 197.

[98] *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii. Clavigero writes: 'Appresso tutte le Nazioni di Anahuac, fuorchè appresso i Panuchesi, era in abbominazione sì fatto delitto, e da tutte si puniva con rigore.' This writer is very bitter

Digitized by Google

in earlier times this was the case in the entire empire. Inexpressibly revolting as the sin must appear to a modern mind, yet we know that pederasty has obtained among peoples possessed of a more advanced civilization than the Aztecs. In ancient Greece this unnatural passion prevailed to such an extent that it was regarded as heroic to resist it. Plutarch, in his *Life of Agesilaus*, cannot praise too highly the self-control manifested by that great man in refraining from gratifying a passion he had conceived for a boy named Megabates, which Maximus Tyrius says deserves greater praise than the heroism of Leonidas; Diogenes Laertius, in his *Life of Zeno*, the founder of stoicism, the most austere of all ancient sects, praises that philosopher for being but little addicted to this vice; Sophocles, the Tragic Homer, and the Attic Bee, is said by Athenæus to have been especially addicted to it. Moralists were known to praise it as the bond of friendship, and it was spoken of as inspiring the enthusiasm of the heroic legion of Epaminondas. The defeat of the Romans by Hannibal at Cannæ was said to be caused by the jealousy of Juno, because a beautiful boy had been introduced into the temple of Jupiter. Las Casas tells us that pederasty was tolerated because they believed that their gods practised it.[99] In precisely the same man-

against M. de Pauw for stating that this pederasty was common among the Mexicans, and adds: 'Ma della falsità di tal calunnia, che con troppa, ed assai biasimevole facilità addottarono parecchj Autori Europei, ci consta per la testimonianza di moltri altri Autori imparziarli, e meglio informati.' Clavigero does not, however, state who these 'more impartial and better informed writers' are. That the crime of sodomy was prevalent in Tabasco, we have the testimony of Oviedo, who writes that among the idols that the Christians saw there 'dixeron que avian hallado entre aquellos çemís ó yoles, dos personas hechas de copey (que es un árbol assi llamado), el uno caballero ó cabalgando sobre el otro, en figura de aquel abominable y nefando pecado de sodomia, é otro de barro que tenia la natura asida con ambas manos, la qual tenia como çircunçiso....y no es este pecado entre aquellas mal aventuradas gentes despresçiado, ni sumariamente averiguado: antes es mucha verdad quanto dellos se puede decir é culpar en tal caso.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 533. Zuazo, speaking of the Mexicans, says: 'Estas gentes tienen la *tria peccatela* que decia el Italiano: no creen en Dios; *son casi todos sodomitas:* comen carne humana.' *Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 365.

[99] *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.

Digitized by Google

ner did the ancient Greeks make the popular religion bend to the new vice and by substituting Ganymede for Hebe as heavenly cup-bearer, make the head of all Olympus set an example of unnatural love.

The priest who violated his vow of chasity was banished; his house was demolished and his property confiscated.[100] Pimps were publicly disgraced in the market-place, by having their hair burned off so close to the head that the drops of resin falling from the burning pitch-pine chips fell upon and seared the scalp; if the persons for whom the panderage was committed were of high rank, a greater penalty was inflicted upon the pander.[101] This was the law in Mexico; in Tezcuco, according to the historian of the Chichimecs, the pimp suffered death in all cases.[102]

Simple fornication was not punished, unless it was committed by a noble lady, or with a maiden consecrated to the service of the gods, in which cases it was death. Fornication with the concubine of another also went unpunished, unless they had been living a long time together, and were in consequence, according to custom, considered man and wife. If any one had connection with a slave, and the woman died during her pregnancy, or in giving birth to the child, then the offender became a slave; but if she was safely delivered, the child was free and was taken care of by the father.[103] The woman who took any drug to procure an abortion, and she who furnished

[100] Las Casas, among his unauthentic laws, has one which prescribes death in this case, but in another list, which he says is composed of authentic laws, banishment and confiscation of property is given as the penalty. *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423.

[101] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 137. Ortega adds that their heads were rubbed with ashes; 'se les untaba con ceniza caliente.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 225.

[102] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 246; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, p. 224.

[103] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 387; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 423; *Duran*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 243–4; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxv.; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 224–5.

Digitized by Google

the drug, both suffered death.[104] If one woman sinned carnally with another, both died for it.[105] The man who went about the streets dressed as a woman, or the woman who dressed as a man, was slain.[106]

In this account are comprised nearly all the special laws of the Aztecs which have been preserved, with the exception of those relating to military matters, marriage, divorce, and slavery, all of which I have already had occasion to consider.

That the Aztec code was a severe and brutal one there can be no denial, but that it was more severe and brutal than was necessary is, as I have before remarked, doubtful. We have already seen that a horrible death was the inevitable fate of those detected stealing in the market-place, yet we are told that did the owner of a stall but turn away his head for a moment, his wares would be pilfered. A people accustomed almost daily to see human blood poured out like water in sacrifice to their gods must of necessity have been hardened to the sight of suffering, and upon such none but an execution of the most revolting discription could create an impression of awe or fear. It appears remarkable that punishments involving only disgrace should have been adopted by such a people, yet it is doubtful whether slavery was not considered a lighter punishment than having the hair burned off in the public market. Some of the Aztec monarchs evinced a desire to be as lenient as the stubborn nature of their subjects would allow, but the yoke upon the people, if it were in any degree to control them, must at best be a heavy one; in short, despotism of the harshest was necessary and indispensable to them in their stage of civilization.

[104] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxiii., ccxv.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 136.

[105] *Las Casas, Ibid.; Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380–1.

[106] *Las Casas, Ibid.; Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 380; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 137–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 133.

Digitized by Google

Nezahualcoyotl, king of Tezcuco, was especially merciful and considerate toward his subjects. For instance, he ordered that corn should be planted, at the expense of government, by the roadside, in order that none who were guilty of stealing from the fields might excuse themselves on the ground of hunger.[106] It is related that this monarch went frequently among his people in disguise, for the purpose of discovering their grievances and general condition, and some of the adventures he met with on these occasions are as entertaining as any told by Sheherezade of the Good Caliph. I select one, not because it is the best, but because it points more particularly to Nezahualcoyotl's benevolence and love of justice. During the reign of this monarch, owing to the immense consumption of wood, the use of oil and tallow being then unknown, the forests began to grow thin, and the king, foreseeing that unless some precautions were taken there would soon be a scarity of wood in the kingdom, ordered that within certain limits no wood should be touched. Now, it happened one day, when the king was abroad in disguise, and accompanied only by his brother Quauhtlehuanitzin, that they passed by the skirts of a forest wherein it was prohibited to cut or gather wood. Here they found a boy who was engaged in picking up the light chips and twigs that had been carried by the wind outside of the enclosure, because in this locality the inhabitants were very numerous, and had exhausted all the timber that was not reserved by law. Nezahualcoyotl, seeing that under the trees of the forest there lay a great quantity of fallen wood, asked the boy why he contented himself with dry leaves and scattered twigs when so great an abundance of fuel lay close at hand. The boy answered that the king had forbidden the people to gather wood in the forest, and

[106] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 381; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 225–6; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 133.

Digitized by Google

therefore he was obliged to take whatever he could get. The king told him to go, nevertheless, into the forest and help himself to fuel, and none would be the wiser, for that he and his companion would say nothing of the matter. But the boy rebuked them, saying that they must be traitors to the king who would persuade him to do this thing, or that they sought to avenge themselves upon his parents by bringing misfortune upon their son, and he refused to enter the forbidden ground. Then was the king much pleased with the boy's loyalty, and seeing the distress to which the people were reduced by the severity of the forest laws, he afterward had them altered.[107]

[107] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 165. In the following works more or less mention is made of the system of jurisprudence that existed among the Nahua peoples: *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 31–5; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 593–605; *Amer. Ethno. Soc. Transact.*, vol. i., p. 153; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 35–6, 53–4, 69–75, 96–7, 105, 205; *Cortés, Aven. y Conq.*, pref., p. 13; *Delaporte, Rei sen*, tom. x., pp. 264–7; *Incidents and Sketches*, pp. 60–1; *Simon's Ten Tribes*, pp. 263–70; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 150–8; *Chambers' Jour.*, 1835, vol. iv., p. 253; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 205–7; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 29–31; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., p. 14.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XV.

NAHUA ARTS AND MANUFACTURES.

METALS USED AND MANNER OF OBTAINING THEM—WORKING OF GOLD AND SILVER—WONDERFUL SKILL IN IMITATING—GILDING AND PLATING—WORKING IN STONE—LAPIDARY WORK—WOOD-CARVING—MANUFACTURE OF POTTERY—VARIOUS KINDS OF CLOTH—MANUFACTURE OF PAPER AND LEATHER—PREPARATION OF DYES AND PAINTS—THE ART OF PAINTING—FEATHER MOSAIC WORK—LEAF MATS—MANNER OF KINDLING FIRE—TORCHES—SOAP—COUNCIL OF ARTS IN TEZCUCO—ORATORY AND POETRY—NEZAHUALCOYOTL'S ODES ON THE MUTABILITY OF LIFE AND THE TYRANT TEZOZOMOC—AZTEC ARITHMETICAL SYSTEM.

GOLD, silver, copper, tin, and lead were the metals known to and used by the Nahuas. The latter, however, is merely mentioned, and nothing is known about where it was obtained or for what purposes it was employed We have only very slight information respecting the processes by which any of the metals were obtained. Gold came to the cities of Anáhuac chiefly from the southern Nahua provinces, through the agency of traders and tax-gatherers; silver and tin were taken from the mines of Taxco and Tzompanco; copper was obtained from the mountains of Zacatollan, the province of the Cohuixcas, and from Michoacan. Nuggets of gold and masses of native copper were found on the surface of the ground in certain regions; gold was chiefly obtained, however, from the sand in the bed of rivers by divers. It was kept, in

Digitized by Google

the form of dust, in small tubes or quills, or was melted in small pots, by the aid of hollow bamboo blow-pipes used instead of bellows, and cast in small bars. Prescott tells us that these metals were also mined from veins in the solid rock, extensive galleries being opened for the purpose. Quicksilver, sulphur, alum, ochre, and other minerals were collected to a certain extent and employed by the natives in the preparation of colors and for other purposes.[1] The use of iron, though that metal was abundant in the country, was unknown. Such metals as they had they were most skilful in working, chiefly by melting and casting, and by carving, but also to some extent by the use of the hammer. We have no details of the means employed to melt the harder metals, besides the rude blow-pipe and furnace mentioned in connection with gold.

For cutting implements copper was the only metal used, but it was hardened with an alloy of tin until it sufficed to cut the hardest substances nearly as well as steel.[2] The pure and softer metal was used to make kettles and other vessels. Copper tools were, however, rare compared with those of stone, and seem to have been used chiefly in working wood where a sharp and enduring edge was required. Such tools usually took the form of axes and chisels.

[1] 'Tambien las minas de plata y oro, cobre, plomo, oropel natural, estaño y otros metales, que todos los sacaron, labraron, y dejaron señales y memoria.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 110–11. To obtain gold 'se metian al fondo del agua y sacaban las manos llenas de arena, para buscar luego en ella los granos, los que se guardaban en la boca.' *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 299. In Michoacan 'trabajaban minas de cobre.' *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 48. 'The traces of their labors furnished the best indications for the early Spanish miners.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 138–9; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 99–100; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 198 et seq.

[2] 'Whether a man desire the rude mettall, or to haue it molten, or beaten out, and cunningly made into any kinde of Iewell, hee shall find them ready wrought.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv. Gomara and Gama state that they mixed gold and silver, as well as tin, with copper, for the manufacture of gimlets, axes, and chisels. *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318; *Dos Piedras*, pt ii., p. 26. Clavigero states that in Zacatollan two kinds of copper were found, hard and soft, so that there was no need of any hardening process. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iv., pp. 210–11.

Digitized by Google

Sticks for working the ground, the nearest Nahua approach to the plough, were also often tipped with copper, as we have seen. Metal was not much used in making weapons, not being found in swords or arrow-heads, but employed with obsidian in spear-heads and on the *maza*, or club. Both copper and tin dishes and plates are mentioned, but were not in common use. In the manufacture of implements of copper and tin, these metals were wrought by means of stone hammers, and not cast.[3]

No branch of Nahua art was carried to a higher degree of perfection than the ornamental working of gold and silver. The conquerors were struck with admiration on beholding the work of the native goldsmiths; they even in some cases frankly acknowledge that they admired the work more than the material, and saved the most beautiful specimens from the melting furnance, the greatest compliment these gold-greedy adventurers could pay to native art. Many of the finer articles were sent as presents and curiosities to European princes, who added their testimony to that of the conquerors, pronouncing the jewelry in many instances superior to the work of Old World artists. Azcapuzalco was the headquarters of the workers in gold and silver.[4] The imitation of natural objects,

[3] 'Porras claveteadas de hierro, cobre y oro.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 332. 'Nous avons eu entre les mains de beaux outils de cuivre rosette.' *Viollet-le-Duc*, in *Charnay, Ruines Amér.*, pp. 86–7. 'Hazen muchas cosas, como los mejores caldereros del mundo.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix. Some had plates and other vessels of tin. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 465. 'Contuttociò si sa, che lavoravano bene il rame, e che piacquero assai agli Spagnuoli lo loro scuri, e le loro picche.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 196. Peter Martyr speaks of large copper stands or candlesticks which supported pine torches to light the courts of the better houses. Dec. v., lib. x. 'Il existait de si grands vases d'argent qu'un homme pouvait à peine les entourer de ses bras.' *Baril, Mexique*, p. 209; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, p. 94; *Edinburgh Review*, July 1867.

[4] 'Todo variadizo, que en nuestra España los grandes Plateros tienen que mirar en ello.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 69. 'Los Plateros de Madrid, viendo algunas Piezas, Brazaletes de oro, con que se armaban en guerra los Reyes, y Capitanes Indianos, confessaron que eran inimitables en Europa.' *Boturini, Idea*, p. 78. 'Non sarebbero verisimili le maraviglie di cotal arte, se oltre alla testimonianza di quanti le videro, non fossero state mandate in Europa in gran copia sì fatte rarità.' 'Finalmente erano tali sì fatte opere, che anche que' Soldati spagnuoli, che si sentivano travagliati

Digitized by Google

particularly animals, birds, and fishes, was a favorite field for the display of this branch of Nahua talent. The conqueror Cortés tells us that Montezuma had in his collection a counterfeit in gold, silver, stones, or feathers, of every object under heaven in his dominions, so skilfully made, so far as the work in metal was concerned, that no smith in the world could excel them. This statement is repeated by every writer on the subject. Dr Hernandez, the naturalist, in preparing a treatise on Mexican zoölogy for Philip II., is said to have supplied his want of real specimens of certain rare species by a resort to these imitations.[5] The native artists are said to have fashioned animals and birds with movable heads, legs, wings, and tongues, an ape with a spindle in its hands in the act of spinning, and in certain comic attitudes; and what particularly interested and surprised the Spaniards was the art—spoken of by them as a lost art—of casting the parts of an object in different metals, each distinct from the rest, but all forming a complete whole, and this, as the authorities say, without soldering. Thus a fish was moulded with alternate scales of gold and silver, plates were cast in sections of the same metal, and loose handles were attached to different vessels.[6]

dalla sacra fame dell' oro, pregiavano in esse più l'arte, che la materia.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 195–6.

[5] *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 109, 100–1. In the collection of Nezahualcoyotzin 'no faltava alli ave, pez ni animal de toda esta tierra, que no estuviese vivo, ó hecho figura y talle, en piedras de oro y pedrería.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 244. 'There is no fourefooted beast, no foule, no fyshe, which their Artificers have once seene, but they are able to drawe, and cutte in mettall the likenesse and proportion thereof, euen to the lyfe.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x., iv. Eight gold shrimps of much perfection. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 285; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 56.

[6] 'Sacan un ave, como un papagayo que se le anda la lengua como si vivo la menease y tambien la cabeza y las alas. Un rostro de aguila lo mismo, una rana, y un pescado, señalada muchas escamas una de plata y otra de oro, todo de vaciado, que espanta à todos nuestros oficiales.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxiii. 'Funden vna mona, que juegue pies y cabeça, y tenga en las manos vn huso, que parezca que hila, o vna mançana, que come. Esto tuuieron a mucho nuestros Españoles, y los plateros de aca no alcançan el primor.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 117. 'Y lo que mas es, que sacaban de la fundicion vna pieça, la mitad de Oro, y la mitad de Plata.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 487; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 59; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 403–7. 'Sacauan al mercado los oficiales deste arte, platos, ochauados de vn quarto de oro, y otro de plata, no solda-

Digitized by Google

After the Spaniards came, the native artisans had a new and wide field for the display of their skill, in imitating the numerous products of European art. A slight examination, often obtained by stealthily looking into the shop-windows, enabled them to reproduce and not unfrequently to improve upon the finest articles of jewelry and plate.[7]

Clavigero says that vessels of copper or other inferior metal were gilded, by employing an unknown process in which certain herbs were used, and which would have made the fortune of a goldsmith in Spain and Italy. Oviedo also tells us that various ornamental articles were covered with thin gold plate.[8] To enumerate the articles manufactured by the Nahua gold and silver smiths, and included in the long lists of presents made by Montezuma and other chieftains to their conquerors, is impracticable; they included finely modelled goblets, pitchers, and other vessels for the tables of the kings and nobility; frames for stone mirrors and rich settings for various precious stones; personal ornaments for the wealthy, and especially for warriors, including rings, bracelets, eardrops, beads, helmets, and various other portions of armor; small figures in human form worn as charms or venerated as idols; and finally, the most gorgeous and complicated decorations for the larger idols, and their temples and altars.[9]

dos, sino fundidos, y en la fundicion pegado, cosa dificultosa de entender. Sacauan vna caldereta de plata, con excelentes labores, y su assa de vna fundicion, y lo que era de marauillar que la asa estaua suelta.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xv.

[7] 'Acaeciales á los principios estar un indio envuelto en una manta que no se le parecian si no los ojos, como ellos se ponen no muy cerca de una tienda de algun platero de los nuestros disimuladamente, como no pretendia mirar nada y el platero estar labrando de oro y de plata alguna joya ó pieza de mucho artificio y muy delicada, y de solo verle hacer alguna parte della irse á su casa y hacello tanto y mas perfecto y traello desde á poco en la mano para lo vender.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxiii. Zuazo, however, pronounces some of the native work inferior to the European. 'Yo vi algunas piezas y no me parecieron tan primamente labradas como las nuestras.' *Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 362.

[8] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iv., p. 211; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 520.

[9] 'Vna rueda de hechura de Sol, tan grande como de vna carreta, con muchas labores, todo de oro muy fino, gran obra de mirar;....otra mayor

Little is known of the methods or implements by which the workers in gold accomplished such marvellous results. The authors tell us that they excelled particularly in working the precious metals by means of fire; and the furnaces already mentioned are pictured in several of the Aztecs picture-writings as simple vessels, perhaps of earthenware, various in form, heaped with lumps of metal, and possibly with wood and coal, from which the tongues of flame protrude, as the workman sits by his furnace with his bamboo blow-pipe. How they cast or moulded the molten gold into numerous graceful and ornamental forms is absolutely unknown. The process by which these patient workers carved or engraved ornamental figures on gold and silver vessels by means of their implements of stone and hardened copper, although not explained, may in a general way be easily imagined. They worked also to some extent with the hammer, but as gold-beaters they were regarded as inferior workmen, using only stone implements. The art of working in the precious metals was derived traditionally from the Toltecs, and the gold and silver smiths formed in Mexico a kind of corporation under the divine guidance of the god Xipe.[10]

rueda de plata, figurada la Luna, con muchos resplandores, y otras figuras en ella.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 26–7. 'Espejos hechos de Margajita, que es vn metal hermosissimo, como plata muy resplandeciente y estos grandes como vn puño redondos como vna bola, engastados en oro.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. v. 'Doze zebratanas de fusta y plata, con que solia el tirar. Las unas pintadas y matizadas de aves, animales, rosas, flores, yarboles....Las otras eran variadas, y sinzeladas con mas primor y sotileza que la pintura.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 135–6, 42; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 259; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxii.

[10] 'Vnas fundidas, otras labradas de Piedra.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 557; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xv. 'Y lo que mas las hace admirables, es que las obran y labran con solo fuego y con una piedra ó pedernal.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxiii. Hammered work inferior to that of European artisans. *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 196. 'Los oficiales que labran oro son de dos maneras, unos de ellos se llaman martilladores ó amajadores, porque estos labran oro de martillo majándolo con piedras ó con martillos, para hacerlo delgado como papel: otros se llaman *tlatlaliani*, que quiere decir, que asientan el oro ó alguna cosa en él, ó en la plata, estos son verdaderos oficiales ó por otro nombre se llaman *tulteca;* pero están divididos en dos partes, porque labran el oro cada uno de su manera.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom.

Digitized by Google

Stone was the material of most Nahua implements. For this purpose all the harder kinds found in the country were worked, flint, porphyry, basalt, but especially obsidian, the native *iztli*. Of this hard material, extensively quarried some distance north of Mexico, nearly all the sharp-edged tools were made. These tools, such as knives, razors, lancets, spear and arrow heads, were simply flakes from an obsidian block. The knives were double-edged, and the best of them slightly curved at the point. The maker held a round block of iztli between his bare feet, pressed with his chest and hands on a long wooden instrument, one end of which was applied near the edge of the block, and thus split off knife after knife with great rapidity, which required only to be fitted to a wooden handle to be ready for use. The edge thus produced was at first as sharp as one of steel, but became blunted by slight use, when the instrument must be thrown away. Thus Las Casas tells us that ten or fifteen obsidian razors were required to shave one man's beard. Stone knives seem rarely if ever to have been sharpened by grinding.[11] Of obsidian were made the knives used in the sacrifice of human victims, and the lancets used in bleeding for medicinal purposes and in drawing blood in the service of the gods. For bleeding, simi-

ii., lib. ix., pp. 387 et seq. For pictures of furnaces and of some manufactured articles from the hieroglyphic MSS., see *Ewbank*, in *Schoolcraft's Arch.*, vol. iv., pp. 448 et seq. 'They cast, also, vessels of gold and silver, carving them with their metallic chisels in a very delicate manner.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 139–40.

[11] 'Siéntanse en el suelo y toman un pedazo de aquella piedra negra.... Aquel pedazo que toman es de un palmo ó poco mas largo, y de grueso como la pierna ó poco menos, y rollizo. Tienen un palo del grueso de una lanza y largo como tres codos ó poco mas, y al principio de este palo ponen pegado y bien atado un trozo de palo de un palmo, grueso como el molledo del brazo, y algo mas, y este tiene su frente llana y tajada, y sirve este trozo para que pese mas aquella parte. Juntan ambos piés descalzos, y con ellos aprietan la piedra con el pecho, y con ambas las manos toman el palo que dije era como vara de lanza (que tambien es llano y tajado) y pónenlo á besar con el canto de la frente de la piedra (que tambien es llana y tajada), y entonces aprietan hácia el pecho, y luego salta de la piedra una navaja con su punta y sus filos de ambas partes.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 406; repeated in nearly the same words in *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 489–90; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxii., lxvi; *Vetancort, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 60.

Digitized by Google

lar knives are said to be still used in Mexico.[12] The use of stone in the manufacture of weapons has been mentioned in another chapter. Masks and even rings and cups were sometimes worked from obsidian and other kinds of stone. Axes were of flint, jade, or basalt, and were bound with cords to a handle of hard wood, the end of which was split to receive it.[13] Torquemada says that agricultural implements were made of stone.[14] Mirrors were of obsidian, or of *margajita*—spoken of by some as a metal, by others as a stone—often double-faced, and richly set in gold.[15]

The quarrying of stone for building and sculpture was done by means of wooden and stone implements, by methods unknown but adequate to the working of the hardest material. Stone implements alone seem to have been used for the sculpture of idols, statues, and architectural decorations. A better idea of the excellence of the Nahuas in the art of stone-carving may be formed from the consideration of antiquarian relics in another volume than from the remarks of the early chroniclers. Most of the sculptured designs were executed in soft material, in working which flint instruments would be almost as effective as those of steel; but some of the preserved specimens are carved in the hardest stone, and must have taxed the sculptor's patience to the utmost even with hard copper chisels. The idols and hieroglyphics on which the native art was chiefly exercised present purposely dis-

[12] *Tylor's Researches*, p. 194. 'Tienen lancetas de azabache negro, y vnas nauajas de axeme, hechas como puñal, mas gordas en medio que á los filos, con que se jassan y sangran de la lengua, braços, y piernas.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 324–5; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 491.

[13] *Lenoir, Paralèlle*, pp. 64–5. 'In the beginning of this so rare inuention, I gotte one of them, which Christophorus Colonus, Admirall of the Sea, gaue mee. This stone was of a greene darkishe colour, fastened in most firme and harde woode, which was the handle or helue thereof. I stroke with all my force vpon Iron barres and dented the Iron with my strokes without spoyling or hurting of the stone in any part thereof. With these stones therefore they make their instruments, for hewing of stone, or cutting of timber, or any workemanship in gold or siluer.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv.

[14] *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 231.

[15] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxii. See note 9 of this chapter.

Digitized by Google

torted figures, and are a poor test of the artists' skill; according to traditional history, portrait-statues of the kings were made, and although none of these are known to have survived, yet a few specimens in the various collections indicate that the human face and form in true proportions were not beyond the scope of American art; and the native sculptors were, moreover, extremely successful in the modelling of animals in stone.[16]

The Nahuas were no less skilful in working precious stones than gold and silver. Their Toltec ancestors possessed the same skill, and used to search for the stones at sunrise, being directed to the hidden treasure by the vapor which rose from the place that concealed it. All the stones found in the country were used for ornamental purposes, but emeralds, amethysts, and turquoises were most abundant. The jewels were cut with copper tools with the aid of a silicious sand. Single stones were carved in various forms, often those of animals, and set in gold, or sometimes formed into small cups or boxes. Pearls, mother-of-pearl, and bright colored shells were used with the precious stones in the formation of necklaces, bracelets, ear-rings, and other decorations for the nobles or for the idols. Various articles of dress or armor were completely studded with gems tastefully

[16] 'Sculptured images were so numerous that the foundations of the cathedral in the *plaza mayor*, the great square of Mexico, are said to be entirely composed of them.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 140–1. Two statues in likeness of Montezuma and his brother cut in the cliff at Chapultepec. *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. iii. The idols destroyed by Cortés, 'eran de manera de dragones espantables, tan grandes como becerros, y otras figuras de manera de medio hombre, y de perros grandes, y de malas semejanças.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 35. 'Sapevano esprimere nelle loro statue tutti gli atteggiamenti, e positure, di cui è capace il corpo, osservavano esattamente le proporzioni, e facevano, dove si richiedeva, i più minuti, e dilicati intaglj.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 195. 'Habia entre ellos grandes escultores de cantería, que labraban cuanto querian en piedra, con guijarros ó pedernales, tan prima y curiosamente como en nuestra Castilla los muy buenos oficiales con escodas y picos de acero.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 403; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 486–8. Portrait statues of the Tezcucan kings. *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 264; *Id., Relaciones*, p. 440. Statues of Montezuma and brother. *Bustamante*, in *Cavo, Tres Siglos*, tom. iii., p. 49.

Digitized by Google

arranged, and a kind of mosaic, with which wooden masks for the idols were often covered, attracted much attention among the Spaniards. Mirrors of rock crystal, obsidian, and other stones, brightly polished, and incased in rich frames, were said to reflect the human face as clearly as the best of European manufacture.[17]

Trees were felled with copper hatchets, hewn with the same instruments into beams, and dragged by slaves over rollers to the place where they were needed for building. Some of the chief idols, as, for instance, that of Huitzilopochtli, according to Acosta, were of wood, but wood-carving was not apparently carried to a high degree of perfection. Some boxes, furnished with lids and hinges, also tables and chairs, were made of wood, which was the chief material of weapons and agricultural implements. The authorities devote but few words to the workers in wood, who, however, after the conquest seem to have become quite skilful under Spanish instruction, and with the aid of European tools. Fire-wood was sold

[17] 'Gli smeraldi erano tanto comuni, che non v'era Signore, che non ne avesse.' *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 206–7. 'Esmaltan assi mesmo, engastan y labran esmeraldas, turquesas, y otras piedras, y agujeran perlas pero no tambien como por aca.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 117. 'Ambar, cristal, y las piedras, llamadas *amatista* perlas, y todo género de ellas, y demas que traían por joyas que ahora se usan.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 109–11, 117–18. 'Un encalado muy pulido, que era de ver, y piedras de que estaban hechas, tambien labradas y pegadas, que parecia ser cosa de musaico.' *Id.*, p. 107. Shields adorned with 'perlas menudas como aljofar, y no se puede dezir su artificio, lindeza, y hermosura.' Sandals having 'por suelas vna piedra blanca y azul, cosa preciosa y muy delgada.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. v. Guariques of blue stones set in gold; a stone face surrounded with gold; a string of stone beads. 'Dos mascaras de piedras menudas, como turquesas, sentadas sobre madera de otra musáyca.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 526–8, tom. iii., pp. 285, 305. Idol covered with mosaic work of mother-of-pearl, turquoises, emeralds, and chalcedonies. *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxii. 'Excellent glasses may bee made thereof by smoothing and polishing them, so that we all confessed that none of ours did better shewe the naturall and liuely face of a manne.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x. 'Ils avaient des masques garnis de pierres précieuses, représentant des lions, des tigres, des ours, etc.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 133. Emerald altar to the Miztec god. *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 156. 'Y lo de las piedras, que no basta juicio á comprehender con qué instrumentos se hiciese tan perfecto.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 109.

Digitized by Google

in the markets; and Las Casas also tells us that charcoal was burned.[18]

At Cholula the best pottery was made, but throughout the whole country nearly all the dishes used were of clay. Pots, kettles, vases, plates for domestic use, as well as censers and other utensils for the temple service, also idols, beads, and various ornaments were modelled from the material. The early Spaniards were enthusiastic in praising the native potters' skill, but beyond the statement that vessels of earthenware were glazed and often tastefully decorated, they give no definite information respecting this branch of manufactures. Many small earthen trumpets, or flageolets, capable of producing various sounds, and of imitating the cries of different birds, have been found in different parts of the Mexican republic. Fortunately, relics of pottery in every form are of frequent occurrence in the museums, and from the description of such relics in another volume the excellence of Aztec pottery may be estimated. Besides the earthen dishes and vessels of metal and carved wood, some baskets were made, and drinking-cups or bowls of different sizes and shapes were

[18] Huitzilopochtli's idol 'era vna estatua de madera entretallada en semejança de vn hombre sentado en vn escaño azul.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 324. Large chests 'hechas de madera con sus tapaderas que se abren y cierran con unos colgadizos. *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 361-2. 'I Falegnami lavoravano bene parecchie spezie di legni co'loro strumenti di rame, d'quali se ne vedono alcuni anche oggidì.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 207, 194-5. 'Los carpinteros y entalladores labraban la madera con instrumentos de cobre, pero no se daban á labrar cosas curiosas como los canteros.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 403. 'Labravan lazos, y animales tan curiosos que causaron admiracion à los primeros Españoles.' *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 59. 'With their Copper Hatchets, and Axes, cunnyngly tempered, they fell those trees, and hewe them smooth, taking away the chypes, that they may more easily be drawne. They haue also certayne hearbes, with the which, in steed of broome, and hempe, they make ropes, cordes, and cables: and boaring a hole in one of the edges of the beame, they fasten the rope, then sette their slaues vnto it, like yoakes of oxen, and lastly insteede of wheels, putting round blocks vnder the timber, whether it be to be drawn steepe vp, or directly downe the hill, the matter is performed by the neckes of the slaues, the carpenters onely directing the carriage.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x. 'Hazen caxas, escritorios, mesas, escriuanias, y otras cosas de mucho primor.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix. 'They made cups and vases of a lacquered or painted wood, impervious to wet and gaudily colored.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 143

Digitized by Google

formed from the hollow shells of gourds. These were known as *xicalli*, later *jicaras*, and *tecomatl*.[19] Sea-shells were also used as dishes to some extent.[20]

The finer kinds of cloth were made of cotton, of rabbit-hair, of the two mixed, or of cotton mixed with feathers. The rabbit-hair fabrics were pronounced equal in finish and texture to silk, and cotton cloths were also fine and white. Fabrics of this better class were used for articles of dress by the rich, nobles, and priests; they were both woven and dyed in variegated colors. The cloths in the manufacture of which feathers were employed often served for carpets, tapestry, and bed-coverings. Maguey fibre, and that of the palm-leaves, *icxotl* and *izhuatl*, were woven into coarse cloths, the maguey-cloth being known as *nequen*. This nequen and the coarser kinds of cotton were the materials with which the poorer classes clothed themselves. The palm and maguey fibres were prepared for use in the same manner as flax in other countries, being soaked in water, pounded, and dried. The same material served also for cords, ropes, and mats. A coarser kind of matting was, however, made of different varieties of reeds. All the work of spinning and weaving was performed by the women,

[19] Molina, *Diccionario*, says, however, that the tecomatl was an earthen vase. See also p. 458 of this volume.

[20] 'Siete sartas de quentas menudas de barro, redondas y doradas muy bien.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 526, 533. 'I Pentolai facevano d'argilla non solo gli stoviglj necessarj per l'uso delle case, ma eziandio altri lavori di mera curiosità.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 207, tom. iv., pp. 211–12. 'La loza tan hermosa, y delicada como la de Faenza en Italia.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ii., vii. 'Los incensarios con que incensaban eran de barro, à manera de cuchara, cuio remate era hueco, y dentro tenian metidas pelotillas del mismo barro, que sonaban como cascaveles, à los golpes del Incienso, como suenan las cadenas de nuestros incensarios.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 264. The jicara was of gold, silver, gourd-shells, or fish-shells. 'Aunque estèn cien Años en el Agua, nunca la pintura se les borra.' *Id.*, p. 458. 'Para coger la sangre tienen escudillas de calabaça.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 324–5. 'Many sorts also of earthen vessels are sold there, as water pots, greate iuggs, chargers, gobblets, dishes, colenders, basens, frying-pans, porringers, pitchers.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iv. 'Vasos que llaman xicalli, y tecomatl, que son de vnos arboles, que se dan en tierras calientes.' 'A estas les dan vn barniz con flores, y animales de diversos colores, hermoseadas, que no se quita, ni se despinta aunque estè en el agua muchos dias.' *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 60.

Digitized by Google

forming indeed their chief employment. The spindle used in spinning, shown in many of the Aztec manuscripts, was like a top, which was set whirling in a shallow dish, the fibre being applied to its pointed upper extremity until the impetus was exhausted. All we know of the native process of weaving is derived from the native paintings, a sample of which from the Mendoza Collection, showing a woman engaged in weaving, may be seen in Chapter XVII. of this volume.[21]

Paper, in Aztec *amatl*, used chiefly as a material on which to paint the hieroplyphic records to be described in a future chapter, was made for the most part of maguey fibre, although the other fibres used in the manufacture of cloth were occasionally mixed with those of this plant. The material must have been pressed together when wet, and the product was generally very thick, more like a soft paste-board than our paper. The surface was smooth and well adapted to the painting which it was to bear. Certain gums are said to have been used for the more perfect coherence of the fibre, and the amatl was made in long narrow sheets suitable for rolling or folding. Humboldt describes certain bags of oval form, the work of a species of caterpillars, on the trees in Michoacan. They are white and may be separated into thin layers, which, as the author states, were used by the ancient

[21] 'Non aveano lana, ne seta comune, nè lino, nè canapa; ma supplivano alla lana col cotone, alla seta colla piuma, e col pelo del coniglio, e della lepre, e l al lino, ed alla canapa coll' *Ixotl*, o palma montana, col *Quetzalichtli*, col *Pati*, e con altre spezie di Maguei.' *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 207–8, 210. 'En todo el mundo no se podia hacer ni tejer otra tal, ni de tantas ni tan diversas y naturales colores ni labores.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 131. 'Una Vestidura del Gran Sacerdote *Achcauhquitlinamacàni* se embiò à Roma en tiempo de la Conquista, que dexò pasmada aquella Corte.' *Boturini, Idea*, p. 77. The Olmecs used the hair of dogs and other animals. *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 154, 252–3. 'Incredible matters of Cotton, housholde-stuffe, tapestry or arras hangings, garments, and couerlets.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. iii. Humboldt states that silk made by a species of indigenous worms was an article of commerce among the Miztecs in the time of Montezuma. *Essai Pol.*, tom. ii., p. 454. 'Hilan teniendo el copo en vna mano, y el huso en otra. Tuercen al reues que aca, estando el huso en vna escudilla. No tiene hueca el huso, mas hilan a prissa y no mal.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318.

Digitized by Google

inhabitants in the manufacture of a superior kind of paper.[22]

The skins of animals killed by the Nahua hunters were tanned both with and without the hair, by a process of which the authorities say nothing, although universally praising its results. The leather was used in some cases as a sort of parchment for hieroglyphic writings, but oftener for articles of dress, ornament, or armor.[23]

In the preparation of dyes and paints, both mineral, animal, and vegetable colors were employed, the latter extracted from woods, barks, leaves, flowers, and fruits. In the art of dyeing they probably excelled the Europeans, and many of their dyes have, since the Conquest, been introduced throughout the world. Chief among these was the cochineal, *nochiztli*, an insect fed by the Nahuas on the leaves of the nopal, from which they obtained beautiful and permanent red and purple colors for their cotton fabrics. The flower of the *matlalxihuitl* supplied blue shades; indigo was the sediment of water in which branches of the *xiuhquilipitzahuac* had been soaked; seeds of the *achiotl* boiled in water yielded a red, the French

[22] *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. ii., pp. 454–5. Maguey paper 'resembling somewhat the Egyptian *papyrus*.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 99–100. Some paper of palm-leaf, as thin and soft as silk.' *Boturini, Catálogo*, in *Id., Idea*, pp. 95–6. Native paper called *cauhamatl*. *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 65. They made paper of a certain species of aloe, steeped together like hemp, and afterwards washed, stretched, and smoothed; also of the palm *xcxotl*, and thin barks united and prepared with a certain gum. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 189, tom. iv., p. 239. Torquemada speaks of a sheet 20 fathoms long, one wide, and as thick as the finger. *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 263.

[23] 'Habia oficiales de curtir cueros y muchos de adovarlos maravillosamente.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxii. 'Cueros de Venado, Tigres, y leones....con pelo, y sin pelo, de todos colores.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 488. 'Tan suaves que de ellos se vestian, y sacaban correas.' *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 60; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 118. Cortés found the skins of some of his horses slain in battle 'tan bien adobados como en todo el mundo lo pudieran hacer.' *Cartas*, p. 183. Red skins resembling parchment. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 526. 'No se puede bien dezir su hermosura, y hechura.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. v. 'Los tarascos curtian perfectamente las pieles de los animales.' *Payno, Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., p. 721. 'Des tapis de cuir maroquinés avec la dernière perfection.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 271.

Digitized by Google

roucou; ochre, or *tecozahuitl*, furnished yellow, as did also the plant *xochipalli*, the latter being changed to orange by the use of nitre; other shades were produced by the use of alum; the stones *chimaltizatl* and *tizatlalli* being calcined, produced something like Spanish white; black was obtained from a stinking mineral, *tlaliac*, or from the soot of a pine called *ocotl*. In mixing paints they used chian-oil, or sometimes the glutinous juice of the *tzauhtli*. The numerous dye-woods of the tierra caliente, now the chief exports from that region, were all employed by the native dyers. It is probable that many of the secrets of this branch of Nahua art were never learned by the Spaniards.[24]

The Nahua paintings showed no great artistic merit, being chiefly noticeable for the excellence of the colors. Very few specimens have been preserved for modern examination, except the hieroglyphic paintings in which most of the figures are hideously, and as it is supposed purposely, distorted, and consequently no criterion of the artist's skill. It is not known that the Nahuas ever attempted to paint natural scenery, except that they prepared maps of sections of their territory on which they rudely represented the mountains, rivers, and forests, indicating the lands of different owners or lords by the use of different colors. They sometimes made portraits of the kings and nobles, but the Spanish chroniclers admit that they exhibited much less skill in picturing the human form and face than in drawing animals, birds, trees, and flowers. Some modern critics of lively imagination have, however, detected indications of great artistic genius in the awkward figures of the

[24] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 189–90; *Cabajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 652–3. Method of raising cochineal. *Id.*, pp. 625–6. 'En parcourant le palais de Montézuma les Castillans furent très-étonnés d'y voir des sacs de punaises dont on se servait à teindre et même à badigeonner les murs.' *Rosny*, in *Comité d'Arch. Amér.*, 1866–7, pp. 15–16. See p. 235 of this volume. They possessed the art of dyeing a fabric without impairing its strength, an art unknown to Europeans of the 18th century. *Carli, Cartas*, pt ii., pp. 95–7.

Digitized by Google

picture-writings. Native painters, when Cortés arrived on the coast, painted his ships, men, horses, cannon, in fact everything new and strange in the white men's equipment, and hurried with the canvas to Montezuma at the capital Very little is known of ornamental painting on the walls of private dwellings, but that on the temples naturally partook to a great extent of a hieroglyphic character. The durability of the paintings on cloth and paper, especially when rubbed occasionally with oil, was remarked by many observers, as was also the skill displayed by the natives later under Spanish instruction.[25]

The mixture of feathers with cotton and other fibres in the manufacture of clothing, tapestry, carpets, and bed-coverings has already been mentioned. For such fabrics plain colors from ducks and other aquatic birds were generally employed, brighter hues being occasionally introduced for ornamental purposes. Feathers also played an important part in the decoration of warriors' armor, the tail-feathers of the bright-hued quetzal being the favorites. These were formed into brilliant plumes, often tipped with gold and set in precious stones. Beautiful fans were made of the same material. But the art which of all those practised by the Nahuas most delighted and astonished the Europeans was the use of feathers in the making of what has been called feather-mosaic. The myriads

[25] 'Y pintores ha habido entre ellos tan señalados, que sobre muchos de los señalados donde quiera que se hallasen se podian señalar.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxii. The same author speaks of their skill in reducing or enlarging drawings. 'Havia Pintores buenos, que retrataban al natural, en especial Aves, Animales, Arboles, Flores, y Verduras, y otras semejantes, que vsaban pintar, en los aposentos de los Reies, y Señores; pero formas humanas, asi como rostros, y cuerpos de Hombres, y Mugeres, no los pintaban al natural.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 487, tom. i., p. 388; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 404. 'Dans leur grotesque et leur raccourci, on trouve encore cependant une délicatesse de pinceau, fort remarquable, une pureté et une finesse dans les esquisses, qu'on ne saurait s'empêcher d'admirer; on voit, d'ailleurs, un grand nombre de portraits de rois et de princes, qui sont évidemment faits d'après nature.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 653–4. 'Wee sawe a Mappe of those countreyes 30. foote long, and little lesse in breadth, made of white cotton, wouen: wherein the whole playne was at large described.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x., iii., v.

Digitized by Google

of tropical birds in which the forests of the tierra caliente abounded, chief among which were the quetzal, many varieties of the parrot kind, and the *huitzilin*, or humming-bird, supplied feathers, fine and coarse, of every desired color and shade. It was for this use chiefly that the royal and other collections of birds, already described, were so carefully kept. These captive birds were plucked each year at the proper season, and their plumage sorted according to color and quality. Some shades only to be obtained from the rarest birds were for ordinary feather-work artificially produced by dyeing the white plumage of more common birds.

To prepare for work, the *amanteca*, or artist, arranged his colors in small earthen dishes within easy reach of his hand, stretched a piece of cloth on a board before him, and provided himself with a pot of glue —called by Clavigero tzauhtli—and a pair of very delicate pincers. The design he wished to execute was first sketched roughly on the cloth, and then with the aid of the pincers feather after feather was taken from its dish and glued to the canvas. The Spanish writers marvel at the care with which this work was done; sometimes, they say, a whole day was consumed in properly choosing and adjusting one delicate feather, the artist patiently experimenting until the hue and position of the feather, viewed from different points and under different lights, became satisfactory to his eye. When a large piece was to be done, many workmen assembled, a part of the work was given to each, and so skilfully was the task performed that the parts rarely failed at the end to blend into an harmonious whole; but if the effect of any part was unsatisfactory it must be commenced anew. By this method a great variety of graceful patterns were wrought, either fanciful, or taken from natural objects, flowers, animals, and even the human face, which latter the native artists are said to have successfully portrayed. Las Casas tells us they made these feather-fabrics so

Digitized by Google

skilfully that they appeared of different colors according to the direction from which they were viewed. The Spaniards declare that the feather-pictures were fully equal to the best works of European painters, and are at a loss for words to express their admiration of this wonderful Nahua invention; specimens of great beauty have also been preserved and are to be seen in the museums. Besides mantles and other garments, tapestry, bed-coverings, and other ornamental fabrics for the use of the noble and wealthy classes, to which this art was applied, the feather-mosaic was a favorite covering for the shields and armor of noted warriors. By the same process masks were made representing in a manner true to nature the faces of fierce animals; and even the whole bodies of such animals were sometimes counterfeited, as Zuazo says, so faithfully as to deceive the ignorant observer. The Tarascos of Michoacan were reputed to be the most skilful in feather-work.[26]

The feather-workers were called amantecas, from Amantla, the name of the ward of Mexico in which

[26] 'La Natura ad essi somministrava quanti colori fa adoperar l'Arte, e alcuni ancora, que éssa non è capace d'imitare.' The specimens made after the Conquest were very inferior. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 197–9. 'Hazense las mejores ymagines de pluma en la prouincia de Mechoacan en el pueblo de Pascaro.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 285. 'Vi ciertos follajes, pájaros, ,mariposas, abejones sobre unas varas temblantes, negras é tan delgadas, que apenas se veian, é de tal manera que realmente se hacian vivas á los que las miraban un poquito de lejos: todo lo demas que estaba cerca de las dichas mariposas, pájaros é abejones correspondia naturalmente á boscajes de yerbas, ramos é flores de diversas colores é formas.' *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 360. 'Figuras, y imagenes de Principes, y de sus idolos, tan vistosas, y tan acertadas, que hazian ventaja a las pinturas Castellanas.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xv. 'Muchas cosas de Pluma, como Aves, Animales, Hombres, y otras cosas mui delicadas, Caras, y Mantas para cubrirse, y vestiduras para los Sacerdotes de sus Templos, Coronas, Mitras, Rodelas, y Mosqueadores.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 488–9; *Vetancurt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 59; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 405–6; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxii. 'Acontee les no comer en todo vn dia, poniendo, quitando y assentando la pluma, y mirando à una parte, y à otra, al sol, a la sombra,' etc. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 116–17. Mention of the birds which furnished bright colored feathers. *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68–9. 'Ils en faisaient des rondaches et d'autres insignes, compris sous le nom d' "Apanecayotl," dont rien n'approchait pour la richesse et le fini.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 285; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 109. Mention of some specimens preserved in Europe. *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 30.

Digitized by Google

they chiefly lived. This ward adjoined that of Pochtlan, where lived the chief merchants, called pochtecas, and the shrine of the amantecas' god, Ciotlinahuatl, was also joined to that of the merchants' god, Iyacatecutli. The feather-workers and merchants were closely united, there was great similarity in all their idolatrous rites, and they often sat together at the same banquet.[27]

Another art, similar in its nature to that of the feather-mosaics, was that of pasting leaves and flowers upon mats so as to form attractive designs for temporary use on the occasion of special festivals. The natives made great use of these flower-pictures after the Conquest in the decoration of the churches for Catholic holidays.[28]

The Nahuas kindled a fire like their more savage brethren by friction between two pieces of wood, achiotl being the kind of wood preferred for this purpose. Boturini, followed by later writers, states that the use of the flint was also known. Once kindled, the flames were fanned by the use of a blow-pipe. For lights, torches of resinous wood were employed, especially the *ocotl*, which emitted a pleasing odor, The use of wicks with oil or wax was apparently unknown until after the coming of Europeans. Substitutes for soap were found in the fruit of the *copalxocotl* and root of the *amolli*.

All the branches of art among the Nahuas were placed under the control of a council or academy which was instituted to favor the development of poetry, oratory, history, painting, and also to some extent of sculpture, and work in gold, precious stones, and feathers. Tezcuco was the centre of all high art and refinement during the palmy days of the Chichimec empire, and retained its preëminence to a great extent down to the coming of the Spaniards; consequently

[27] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., pp. 392–6.

[28] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 489; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 59; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 405; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.

Digitized by Google

its school of arts is better known than others that probably existed in other cities. It was called the Council of Music, although taking cognizance of other arts and sciences, chiefly by controlling the education of the young, since no teacher of arts could exercise his profession without a certificate of his qualifications from the council. Before the same body all pupils must be brought for examination. The greatest care was taken that no defective work of lapidary, goldsmith, or worker in feathers should be exposed for sale in the markets, and that no imperfectly instructed artists should be allowed to vitiate the public taste. But it was above all with literary arts, poetry, oratory, and historical paintings that this tribunal, composed of the best talent and culture of the kingdom, had to do, and every literary work was subject to its revision. The members, nominated by the emperor of Tezcuco, held daily meetings, and seats of honor were reserved for the kings of the three allied kingdoms, although a presiding officer was elected from the nobility with reference to his literary acquirements. At certain sessions of the council, poems and historical essays were read by their authors, and new inventions were exhibited for inspection, rich prizes being awarded for excellence in any branch of learning.[29]

Speech-making is a prominent feature in the life of most aboriginal tribes, and in their fondness for oratory the Nahuas were no exceptions to the rule. Many and long addresses accompanied the installation of kings and all public officers; all diplomatic correspondence between different nations was carried on by orators; prayers to the gods were in aboriginal as in modern times elaborate elocutionary efforts; the departing and returning traveller was dismissed and welcomed with a speech; condolence for misfortune and congratulation for success were expressed in pub-

[29] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 201–3; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 147; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex., Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 244.

Digitized by Google

lic and private by the friends most skilful in the art of speaking; social intercourse in feasts and banquets was but a succession of speeches; and parents even employed long discourses to impart to their children instruction and advice. Consequently, children were instructed at an early age in the art of public speaking; some were even specially educated as orators. They were obliged to commit to memory, and taught to repeat as declamations, the speeches of their most famous ancestors, handed down from father to son for many generations. Specimens of the orations delivered by Nahua speakers on different occasions are so numerous in this and the following volume, that the reader may judge for himself respecting their merit. It is impossible, however, to decide how far these compositions have been modified in passing through Spanish hands, although it is probable, according to the judgment of the best critics, that they retain much of the original spirit of their reputed authors.[30]

Poets, if somewhat less numerous, were no less honored than orators. Their compositions were also recited, or sung, before the Council of Music in Tezcuco, and the most talented bards were honored with prizes. The heroic deeds of warlike ancestors, national annals and traditions, praise of the gods, moral lessons drawn from actual events, allegorical productions with illustrations drawn from the beauties of nature, and even love and the charms of woman were the common themes. The emperor Nezahualcoyotl, the protector and promoter of all the arts and sciences, was himself a poet of great renown. Several

[30] 'Avvegnachè i lor più celebri Aringatori non sieno da paragonarsi cogli Oratori delle Nazioni culte dell'Europa, non può peraltro negarsi, che i loro ragionamenti non fossero gravi, sodi, ed eleganti, come si scorge dagli avanzi che ci restano della loro eloquenza.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 174–5. 'Les raisonnements y sont graves les arguments solides, et pleins d'élégance.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 672; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 172–3. Montezuma's speech to Cortés, in *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 285–6. 'The Spaniards have given us many fine polished Indian orations, but they were certainly fabricated at Madrid.' *Adair, Amer. Ind.*, p. 202.

Digitized by Google

of his compositions, or fragments of such, have been preserved; that is, the poems were written from memory in Aztec with Roman letters after the Conquest, and translated into Spanish by Ixtlilxochitl, a lineal descendant of the royal poet. They have also been translated into other languages by various authors. The following will serve as specimens:[31]

SONG OF NEZAHUALCOYOTL, KING OF TEZCUCO; ON THE MUTABILITY OF LIFE.

Now will I sing for a moment,
Since time and occasion offer,
And I trust to be heard with favor
If my effort proveth deserving;
Wherefore thus I begin my singing,
Or rather my lamentation.

O thou, my friend, and beloved,
Enjoy the sweet flowers I bring thee;
Let us be joyful together
And banish each care and each sorrow;
For although life's pleasures are fleeting,
Life's bitterness also must leave us.

I will strike, to help me in singing,
The instrument deep and sonorous;
Dance thou, while enjoying these flowers,
Before the great Lord who is mighty;
Let us grasp the sweet things of the present,
For the life of a man is soon over.

Fair Acolhuacán thou hast chosen
As thy dwelling-place and thy palace;
Thou hast set up thy royal throne there,
With thine own hand hast thou enriched it;
Wherefore it seems to be certain
That thy kingdom shall prosper and flourish.

[31] Four poems or fragments are given in Spanish in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 110–15. No. 1 has for its subject the tyrant Tezozomoc; No. 2 is an ode on the mutability of life; No. 3 is an ode recited at a feast, comparing the great kings of Anáhuac to precious stones; No. 4 was composed for the dedication of the author's palace, and treats of the unsatisfactory nature of earthly honors. Nos. 2 and 3 are also found in *Doc. Hist. Mex.*, série iii., tom. iv., pp. 286–93. No. 2 is given in *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. iii., pp. 425–30, in Spanish and English verse. A French translation of No. 1 is given by Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 672–4, who also gives an additional specimen from Carochi's grammar, in Aztec and Spanish. Nos. 1, 2, and 4 in French, in *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 411–17. No. 4 is to be found in *Granados y Galvez, Tardes Amer.*, pp. 90–4. Nos. 1 and 4 in German, in *Müller, Reisen*, tom. iii., pp. 138–41, where are also two additional odes. No. 2 is also given in German by Klemm, *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 146–51.

Digitized by Google

And thou, O wise Prince Oyoyotzin,
Mighty monarch, and King without equal,
Rejoice in the beauty of spring-time,
Be happy while spring abides with thee,
For the day creepeth nearer and nearer
When thou shall seek joy and not find it.

A day when dark Fate, the destroyer,
Shall tear from thine hand the proud sceptre,
When the moon of thy glory shall lessen,
Thy pride and thy strength be diminished,
The spoil from thy servants be taken,
Thy kingdom and honor go from thee.

Ah, then in this day of great sorrow,
The lords of thy line will be mournful,
The princes of might will be downcast,
The pride of high birth will avail not;
When thou, their great Head, hast been smitten
The pains of grim Want will assail them.

Then with bitterness will they remember
The glory and fame of thy greatness,
Thy triumphs so worthy of envy,
Until, while comparing the present
With years that are gone now forever,
Their tears shall be more than the ocean.

The vassals that cluster about thee
And are as a crown to thy kingdom,
When thine arm doth no longer uphold them,
Will suffer the fate of the exile;
In strange lands their pride will be humbled,
Their rank and their name be forgotten.

The fame of the race that is mighty,
And worthy a thousand fair kingdoms,
Will not in the future be heeded;
The nations will only remember
The justice with which they were governed
In the years when the kingdom was threefold.

In Mexico, proudest of cities,
Reigned the mighty and brave Montezuma,
Nezahualcoyotl, the just one
Of blest Culhuacán was the monarch,
To strong Totoquíl fell the portion
Of Acatlapán, the third kingdom.

But yet thou shall not be forgotten,
Nor the good thou hast ever accomplished;
For, is not the throne that thou fillest
The gift of the god without equal,
The mighty Creator of all things,
The maker of Kings and of Princes?

Digitized by Google

Nezahualcoyotl, be happy
With the pleasant things that thou knowest,
Rejoice in the beautiful garden,
Wreathe thy front with a garland of flowers,
Give heed to my song and my music,
For I care but to pleasure thy fancy.

The sweet things of life are but shadows;
The triumphs, the honors, what are they
But dreams that are idle and last not
Though clothed in a semblance of being?
And so great is the truth that I utter,
I pray thee to answer this question.

Cihuapán, the valiant, where is he?
And Quauhtzintecomtzin, the mighty,
The great Cohuahuatzin, where are they?
They are dead, and have left us no token,
Save their names, and fame of their valor;
They are gone from this world to another.

I would that those living in friendship,
Whom the thread of strong love doth encircle,
Could see the sharp sword of the Death-god.
For, verily, pleasure is fleeting,
All sweetness must change in the future,
The good things of life are inconstant.

ODE ON THE TYRANT TEZOZOMOC, BY NEZAHUALCOYOTL THE KING.

Give ear unto the lamentation which I, Nezahualcoyotl the King, make within myself for the fate of the Empire, and set forth for an example unto others.

O King, unstable and restless, when thou art dead then shall thy people be overthrown and confounded; thy place shall be no more; the Creator, the All-powerful, shall reign.

Who could have thought, having seen the palaces and the court, the glory and the power of the old King Tezozomoc, that these things could have an end? Yet have they withered and perished. Verily, life giveth naught but disappointment and vexation; all that is weareth out and passeth away.

Who will not be sorrowful at the remembrance of the ancient splendor of this tyrant, this withered old man; who, like a thirsty willow, nourished by the moisture of his ambition and avarice, lorded it over the lowly meadows and flowery fields while spring-time lasted, but at length, dried up and decayed, the storms of winter tore him up by the roots and scattered him in pieces upon the ground.

But now, with this mournful song, I bring to mind the things that flourish for an hour, and present, in the fate of Tezozomoc, an example of the brevity of human greatness. Who that listens to me can refrain from weeping? Verily, the enjoyments and pleasures of life are as a bouquet of flowers, that is passed from hand to hand until it fades, withers, and is dead.

Hearken unto me, ye sons of kings and of princes, take good heed and ponder the theme of my mournful song, the things that flourish for an hour, and the end of the King Tezozomoc. Who is he, I say again, that can hear me and not weep? Verily, the enjoyments and pleasures of life are as a handful of flowers, blooming for a space, but soon withered and dead.

Digitized by Google

Let the joyous birds sing on and rejoice in the beauty of spring, and the butterflies enjoy the honey and perfume of the flowers, for life is as a tender plant that is plucked and withereth away.

Granados tells us that Nezahualcoyotl's poems were all in iambic verse, resembling in style the works of Manilius, Seneca, Pomponius, Euripides, and Lilius. In one of his songs he compared the shortness of life and of its pleasures with the fleeting bloom of a flower, so pathetically as to draw tears from the audience, as Clavigero relates. Ixtlilxochitl narrates that a prisoner condemned to death obtained pardon by reciting a poem before the king. There is not much evidence that verses were ever written in rhyme, but the authors say that due attention was paid to cadence and metre, and that some unmeaning syllables were added to certain lines to accommodate the measure. By their system of combination a single word often sufficed for a line in the longest measure. Many of their poetical compositions were intended for the dramatic representations which have been spoken of elsewhere.[32]

The Nahua system of numeration was very simple and comprehensive, there being no limit to the numbers that could be expressed by it. The following table will give a clear idea of the method as employed by the Aztecs:

One, *ce*, or *cen*.
Two, *ome*.
Three, *yey*, or *ei*.
Four, *nahui*.
Five, *macuilli*—signifying the 'clenched hand,' one finger having been originally doubled, as is supposed, for each unit in counting from one to five.

[32] *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 90–7. The language of their poetry was brilliant, pure, and agreeable, figurative, and embellished with frequent comparisons to the most pleasing objects in nature. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 174–6. Nezahualcoyotl left sixty hymns composed in honor of the Creator of Heaven. *Id.*, tom. i., pp. 232, 245–7; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 57–9; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 108, 171–5; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 639–40. 'Cantauan lamentaciones, y endechas. Tenian pronosticos, especialmente que se auia de acabar el mundo, y los cantauan lastimosamente: y tambien tenian memoria de sus grandezas, en cantares y pinturas.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvi.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 275.

Digitized by Google

Six, *chico a ce.*
Seven, *chic ome.*
Eight, *chico ey.*
Nine, *chico nahui.* These names from six to nine are simply those from one to four with a prefix whose meaning is not altogether clear, but which is said to be composed of *chiro*, 'at one side,' and *ihuan* or *huan*, meaning 'near another,' 'with,' or simply 'and.' These names may consequently be interpreted perhaps, 'one side (or hand) with one,' 'one hand with two,' etc., or one, two, etc., 'with the other side.'
Ten, *matlactli*—that is, the upper part of the body, or all the fingers of the hands.
Eleven, *matlactli, oc ce*, ten and one.
Twelve, *matlactli om ome*, ten and two.
Thirteen, *matlactli om ey*, ten and three.
Fourteen, *matlactli o nahui*, ten and four.
In these names *oc, om, o*, or *on*, as Molina gives it, seems to be used as a connective particle, equivalent to 'and,' but I am not acquainted with its derivation.
Fifteen, *caxtolli*, a word to which the authorities give no derivative meaning.
Sixteen, *caxtolli, oc ce*, fifteen and one, etc.
Twenty, *cem pohualli*, once twenty.
The word *pohualli* means 'a count,' the number twenty being in a sense the foundation of the whole numerical system.
Twenty-one, *cem pohualli oc ce*, once twenty and one, etc.
Thirty, *cem pohualli ihuan* (or *on* as Molina has it) *matlactli*, once twenty and ten.
Thirty-five, *cem pohualli ihuan* (or *on*) *caxtolli*, once twenty and fifteen, etc.
Forty, *ome pohualli*, twice twenty, etc.
One hundred, *macuil pohualli*, five times twenty.
Two hundred, *matlactli pohualli*, ten times twenty.
Four hundred, *cen tzontli*, once four hundred, 'the hair of the head.'
Eight hundred, *ome tzontli*, twice four hundred.
One thousand, *ome tzontli ihuan matlactli pohualli*, twice four hundred and ten times twenty.
Eight thousand, *xiquipilli*, a purse or sack, already mentioned as containing eight thousand cacao nibs.
Sixteen thousand, *ome xiquipilli*, twice eight thousand.

It will be seen from the table that the only numbers having simple names are one, two, three, four, five, ten, fifteen, twenty, four hundred, and eight thousand; all the rest are compounds of these constructed on the principle that, when the smaller number follows the larger, the sum of the two is expressed, but when the smaller precedes the larger, their product is indicated. Molina and Leon y Gama are the chief authorities on the Nahua arithmetical system. All the writers agree perfectly respecting its details, but differ considerably in orthography. Molina writes

Digitized by Google

each compound name together as a single word, while Gama often separates a word into its parts as I have done in every case, following his spelling.

The manner in which the numbers were written was as simple as the system itself. A point or small circle indicated a unit, and these points sufficed for the numbers from one to nineteen. Twenty was indicated by a flag, four hundred by a feather, and eight thousand by a purse. One character placed above another indicated that the product was to be taken; for instance, 160,000 might be expressed either by twenty purses, or by a flag over a purse. To avoid the excessive use of the unit points in writing large and fractional numbers, each flag, feather, and purse was divided into four quarters, and only those quarters which were colored were to be counted. Thus, five might be expressed by five points or by a flag with but one quarter colored; three hundred and fifty-six would be indicated by a feather with three quarters colored, two complete flags, three quarters of another flag, and one point.

We have seen that twenties were used, much as dozens are by us, as the foundation of all numeration, but strangely enough these twenties took different names in counting different classes of articles. The regular name, as given in the table, is *pohualli;* in counting sheets of paper, tortillas, small skins, and other thin objects capable of being packed one above another in small parcels, each twenty was called *pilli;* in counting cloths and other articles usually formed into large rolls, *quimilli* was the name applied to twenty; and in counting persons, lines, walls, and other things ranged in order, the term *tecpantli* was sometimes employed. In reckoning birds, eggs, fruits, seeds, and round or plump objects, generally *tetl,* 'a stone,' was affixed to each one of the numerals in the table; *pantli* was in the same way added for objects arranged in regular order, and also for surface measurements; *tlamantli* likewise was joined to the nu-

Digitized by Google

merals for articles sold in pairs or sets, as shoes, dishes, etc.; while ears of corn, cacao in bunches, and other bulky articles required the termination *olotl*.

Among all the Nahua nations, so far as known, the arithmetical system was practically the same, and was essentially decimal. Nearly all gave great prominence to the number twenty; the Huastec language had simple names for the numbers from one to ten, twenty, and one thousand; the Otomí approached still nearer our modern system by making one hundred also one of its fundamental numbers, with an uncompounded name as well as a compounded one.[33]

Astrology, soothsaying, the interpretation of dreams and of auguries, such as the flight or song of birds, the sudden meeting of wild animals, or the occurrence of other unlooked-for events, were regarded by the Nahuas as of the greatest importance, and the practice of such arts was intrusted to the *tonalpouhqui*, 'those who count by the sun,' a class of men held in high esteem, to whom was attributed a perfect knowledge of future events. We have seen that no undertaking, public or private, of any importance, could be engaged in except under a suitable and propitious sign, and to determine this sign the tonalpouhqui was appealed to. The science of astrology was written down in books kept with great secrecy and mystery, altogether unintelligible to the common crowd, whose good or bad fortune was therein supposed to be painted. The details of the methods employed in the mysterious rites of divination are nowhere recorded, and the continual mention of the seer's services throughout the chapters of this and the following volume render this paragraph on the subject sufficient here.

In addition to the miscellaneous arts described in the preceding pages, separate chapters will be devoted

[33] *Molina, Vocabulario; Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt ii., pp. 128–47; *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iv., Sept. 1872; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 49–57; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 45–7; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 109–10.

Digitized by Google

to the Nahua calendar, hieroglyphics, architecture, and medicine.[34]

[34] My authorities for the matter in this chapter are: *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., pp. 282–337, 387–96, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 107–12. 117–18, 122, 131, 137; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l., lxii.–lxiii., lxv., cxxi., cxxxii., clxxii., ccxi.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 403–7; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 29–34, 94, 100–1, 109, 183, 192; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 198, 285, 324; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., pp. 59–60; *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 48–50; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 77–8, 90–7; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iv., dec. v., lib. i.–v., x., dec. viii., lib. iv.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 39, 42, 60–2, 75, 116–18, 135–6, 318, 324–5, 342–3; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. iii.; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt ii., pp. 26, 128–47; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 232, 245–7, tom. ii., pp. 174–8, 189–99, 205–10, 224–8, tom. iv., pp. 210–11, 232, 239; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 37, 72, 146–7, 168, 228–31, tom. ii., pp. 263, 486–90, 557–8; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 243–4, 264; *Id., Relaciones*, pp. 327, 332, 440–1, 455; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. iv., v., lib. vi., cap. xi., xvi., lib. vii., cap. ii., vii., ix., xv., dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix.; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 133; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 17, 41, 46, 49, 64, 171; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 520–1, 526–8, 533, tom. iii., pp. 259, 272, 285–92, 298–300, 305, 464–5, 499; *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 156, 160–1; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 26–7, 68–9; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 154, 238, 252–3, tom. iii., pp. 201–3, 319; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 360–2; *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Id.*, p. 299; *Relacion de Algunas Cosas*, in *Id.*, pp. 378–9; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Id.*, pp. 204, 211; *Hernandez, Nova Plant.*, p. 339; *Granados y Galvez, Tardes Amer.*, pp. 90–4; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 99–100, 108–10, 138–45, 170–5, vol. iii., pp. 425–30; *Ewbank*, in *Schoolcraft's Arch.*, vol. iv., pp. 44–56; *Müller, Reisen*, tom. iii., pp. 125–8, 134; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 62, 99–102, 378, 431–2, 498, 588–9, 638–40, 652–3, 657–60, 666–7, 682–3, tom. ii., pp. 60, 69–70, 74, 103–4, 198, 230–1; *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., p. 721, tom. iv., Sept. 1872; *Rosny*, in *Comité d'Arch. Amér.*, 1866–7, pp. 15–16; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 49–57; *Tylor's Researches*, pp. 165, 194, 201, 237; *Id., Ahahuac*, pp. 95–101, 107–9; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. ii., pp. 454, 485; *Carli, Cartas*, pt ii., pp. 94–7; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 48, 56, 62, 64–5; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 130, 271–2, 285–6, 288, tom. iii., pp. 648–54, 672–4; *Id.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1858, tom. clix., pp. 77–85; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 44–7, 54–9; *Cavo, Tres Siglos*, tom. iii., p. 49; *Viollet-le-Duc*, in *Charnay, Ruines Amér.*, pp. 86–7; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, p. 94; *Edinburgh Review*, July 1867; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 13–20, 24, 26–32, 144–51, 162–3, 181; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 209–10; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 168–72, 244, 270, 411–17; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 110–15; *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 218, 220, 225–6, 238–9, 246, 250–1, 343; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 19, 28, 36–7; *Mill's Hist. Mex.*, p. 150; *Herredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, pp. 73, 83; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 110–11; *Lafond, Voyages*, tom. i., pp. 161–2; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 142, 146; *Fransham's World in Miniature*, vol. ii., p. 9; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 221–2; *Dapper, Neue Welt*, pp. 248–50; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., pp. 435, 456; *Dupaix, Rel., 2de Expéd.*, pp. 25, 28; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 27–9; *Wappäus, Geog. u. Stat.*, p. 47; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 43, 52, 57; *Dalaporte, Reisen*, tom. x., p. 268; *Gordon, Hist. and Geog. Mem.*, p. 76; *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., pp. 268–9, 450; *Alzate y Ramirez, Mem. sobre Grana.*, MS.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVI.

THE AZTEC CALENDAR.

ASTRONOMICAL KNOWLEDGE OF THE AZTECS—CONTRADICTIONS OF AUTHORS RESPECTING THE CALENDAR—VALUE OF THE RESEARCHES OF VARIOUS WRITERS—THE FIRST REGULAR CALENDAR—THE MEXICAN CYCLE—THE CIVIL YEAR—THE AZTEC MONTHS—NAMES OF THE DAYS AND THEIR SIGNIFICATION—THE COMMENCEMENT OF THE AZTEC YEAR—THE RITUAL CALENDAR—GAMA'S ARRANGEMENT OF THE MONTHS—THE CALENDAR-STONE—THE FOUR DESTRUCTIONS OF THE WORLD—THE CALENDAR OF MICHOACAN—RECKONING OF THE ZAPOTECS.

PERHAPS the strongest proof of the advanced civilization of the Nahuas was their method of computing time, which, for ingenuity and correctness, equalled, if it did not surpass, the systems adopted by contemporaneous European and Asiatic nations.

The Nahuas were well acquainted with the movements of the sun and moon, and even of some of the planets, while celestial phenomena, such as eclipses, although attributed to unnatural causes, were nevertheless carefully observed and recorded. They had, moreover, an accurate system of dividing the day into fixed periods, corresponding somewhat to our hours; indeed, as the learned Sr Leon y Gama has shown, the Aztec calendar-stone which was found in the plaza of the city of Mexico, was used not only as a durable register, but also as a sun-dial.

Digitized by Google

Although the system of the Aztec calendar as a whole is clear and easily understood, yet it is extremely difficult to describe with certainty many of its details, owing to the contradictory statements of nearly all the earlier writers who visited Mexico, and there, in different localities, picked up scraps of what they afterwards described as being the 'calendar of the Mexicans,' not taking into consideration that the many and distinct kingdoms surrounding the Aztec territory, although using essentially the same system, differed on many important points, such as the names of years, months, days, the season of beginning the year, etc. This difficulty increases when we attempt to make Mexican dates agree with our own. Even Boturini, who gathered his information in Mexico, makes many mistakes; and Veytia, although we must accord him the credit of having thoroughly studied the subject, and of having reduced it to a clear system, is at fault in many points. Of the older writers, such as Sahagun, Las Casas, Duran, Motolinia, and others, no one is explicit enough on all points to enable us to follow him; and such details as they unite in giving are mostly contradictory. Torquemada, who draws a great portion of his material from Motolinia, contradicts himself too frequently to be reliable. Leon y Gama, although he spent much labor in trying to clearly expound the system, has also fallen into some errors, attributable, perhaps, to his not having the valuable aid of Sahagun's writings, and to his having placed too much trust in the writings of Torquemada and the manuscript of the Indian Cristóbal del Castillo, as is shown in the review of Gama's work by Sr José Antonio Alzate in the *Gacetas de Literatura*. Baron von Humboldt's description, valuable as it is on account of the extended comparisons which he draws between the Mexican, Asiatic, and Egyptian calendars, is on that account too intricate to be easily understood. From all these descriptions, Gallatin, McCulloh, and Müller,

Digitized by Google

with perhaps a few others, have each given us a very good résumé, but without attempting to reconcile all the contradictions.

The first notice we have of any regular calendar is given by Ixtlilxochitl, who states that in the year 5097 from the creation of the world, an assembly of learned men met at the city of Huehuetlapallan, and determined the reckoning of the years, days, and months, leap-years and intercalary days, in the order in which they were found at the time of the conquest.[1] Previous to this time it is said that the only reckoning kept was regulated by the yearly growth of the fresh grass and herbs from which the name of the Mexican year, *xihuitl*, 'new grass,' is derived. It is also said that a rough computation of time was made by the moon, from its appearance to its disappearance, and that this period, called *metztli*, 'the moon,' was divided into two equal parts, named respectively *mextozolitzli*, the time when the moon was awake or visible, and *mecochiliztli*, the sleep of the moon, or the time when it was invisible.[2] Of the larger divisons of time, accounts are very conflicting. Two, three, four, and five ages are said by various writers to have existed, at the end of each of which the world was said to have been destroyed, and recreated at the beginning of the age next following. The common aboriginal belief was, however, that at the time of the Conquest, the world had passed through three ages, and was then in the fourth. The first age, or 'sun,' as it is also called, was the Sun of Water, *atonatiuh;* the second, the Sun of Earth, *tlalchitonatiuh;* the third, the Sun of Air, *ehecatonatiuh*.[3]

[1] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., p. 322. 'En un año que fué señalado con el geroglifico de un pedernal, que segun las tablas parece haber sido el de 3901 del mundo, se convocó una gran junta de astrólogos....para hacer la correcion de su calendario y reformar sus cómputos, que conocian errados segun el sistema que hasta en tónces habian seguido.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej*, tom. i., p. 32.

[2] *Id.*, pp. 31–2.

[3] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 205; *Id., Relaciones*, in *Id.*, pp. 351–2, 459; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in

Digitized by Google

This is about all we know of any division of time, before the assembly at Huehuetlapallan, which is said to have introduced the regular calendar.

The Mexican calendar contains the following divisions of time: The 'age,' consisting of two periods of fifty-two years each, was called *huehuetiliztli;* the 'cycle,' consisting of four periods of thirteen years each, was named *xiuhmolpilli, xiuhmolpia* or *xiuhtlalpilli,* meaning the 'binding up of the years.' Each period of thirteen years, or, as it was called by the Spanish historians, 'indiccion,' was known as a *tlalpilli,* or 'knot,' and, as stated above, each single year was named *xihuitl,* or 'new grass.' The age was not used in the regular reckoning, and is only rarely mentioned to designate a long space of time. The numeral prefixed to the name of any year in the cycle, or xiuhmolpilli, never exceeded four, and to carry out this plan, four signs, respectively named *tochtli,* 'rabbit,' *calli,* 'house,' *tecpatl,* 'flint,' and *acatl,* 'cane,' were used. Thus the Aztecs commenced to count the first year of their first cycle with the name or hieroplyphic Ce Tochtli, meaning 'one (with the sign of) rabbit;' and the second year was Ome Acatl, 'two, cane;' the third, Yey Tecpatl, 'three, flint;' the fourth, Nahui Calli, 'four, house;' the fifth, Macuilli Tochtli, 'five, rabbit;' the sixth, Chicoace Acatl, 'six, cane;'

Nouvelles Annales des Voy., 1843, tom. xcix., p. 132; *Ternaux-Compans,* in *Id.,* 1840, tom. lxxxvi., pp. 5–6; *Boturini, Idea,* p. 3; *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico,* tom. ii., p. 57; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, S'il existe des Sources de l'Hist. Prim.,* pp. 26–7; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.,* vol. v., pp. 164–7; *Explicacion del Codex Telleriano-Remensis,* in *Id.,* pp. 134–6. 'Cinco Soles que son edades....el primer Sol se perdio por agua....El segundo Sol perecio cayendo el cielo sobre la tierra....El Sol tercero falto y se consumio por fuego....El quarto Sol fenecio con aire....Del quinto Sol, que al presente tienen.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.,* fol. 297. 'Le ciel et la terre s'étaient faits, quatre fois.' *Codex Chimalpopoca,* in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.,* tom. i., p. 53. 'Creyeron que el Sol habia muerto cuatro veces, ó que hubo cuatro soles, que habian acabado en otros tantos tiempos ó edades; y que el quinto sol era el que actualmente les alumbraba.' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras,* pt i., p. 94. 'Hubo cinco soles en los tiempos pasados.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.,* p. 81, repeated literally by *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.,* tom. ii., p. 79; *Humboldt, Vues,* tom. ii., pp. 118–29; *Gallatin,* in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.,* vol. i., p. 325; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen,* pp. 510–12.

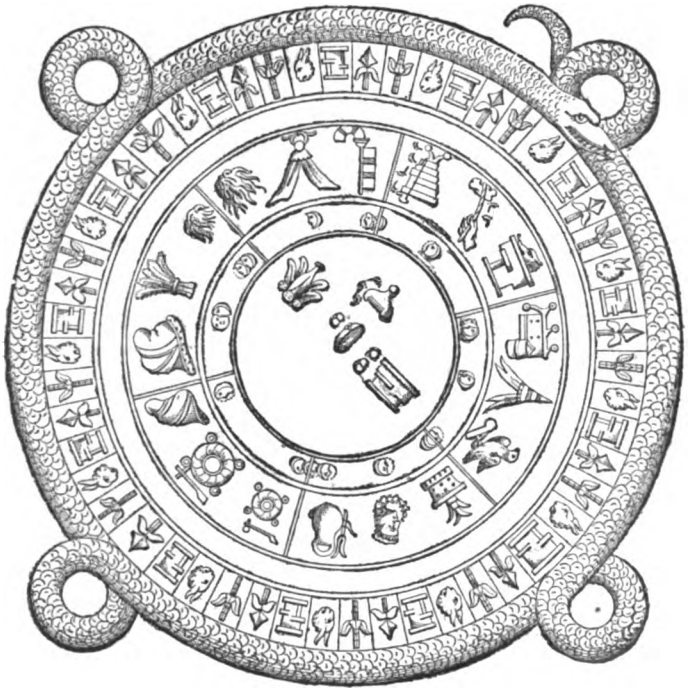
Digitized by Google

the seventh, Chicome Tecpatl, 'seven, flint;' the eighth, Chico ey Calli, 'eight, house;' the ninth, Chico nahui Tochtli, 'nine, rabbit;' the tenth, Matlactli Acatl, 'ten, cane;' the eleventh, Matlactli occe Tecpatl, 'eleven, flint;' the twelfth, Matlactli omome Calli, 'twelve, house;' and the thirteenth, Matlactli omey Tochtli, 'thirteen, rabbit.' This numeration continued in the same manner, the second tlalpilli commencing again with 'one, cane,' the third tlalpilli with 'one, flint,' the fourth with 'one, house,' and so on to the end of the cycle of fifty-two years. It will easily be seen that during the fifty-two years none of these four signs could be accompanied by the same number twice, and therefore no confusion could arise. Instead, therefore, of saying an event happened in the year 1850, as we do in our reckoning, they spoke of it as happening, for instance, in the year of 'three, rabbit,' in the twelfth cycle.[4] Still, some confusion has been caused among different writers by the fact that the different nations of Anáhuac did not all commence their cycles with the same hieroglyphic sign. Thus the Toltecs commenced with the sign tecpatl, 'flint;' and the Mexicans, or Aztecs, with tochtli, 'rabbit;' while some again used acatl, 'cane;' and others calli, 'house'—as their first name.[5] A cycle was represented in their paintings by the figures of tochtli, acatl, tecpatl, and calli, repeated each thirteen times and placed in a circle, round which was painted a snake holding its tail in its mouth, and making at each of the four cardinal points a kink with its own body, as shown in the plate on the opposite page, which served to divide

[4] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 296–7; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 256–7; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 397–8; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. 16 et seq.; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 42 et seq.

[5] 'No todos comenzaban á contar el ciclo por un mismo año: los tultecos lo empezaban desde *Tecpatl;* los de Teotihuacan desde *Calli;* los mexicanos desde *Tochtli;* y los tezcocanos desde *Acatl.*' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., p. 16; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 58. 'So begannen die Aculhuas von Texcoco ihre Umläufe mit dem Zeichen Ce Tecpatl, die Mexicaner dagegen im Ce Tochtli.' *Müller, Reisen*, tom. iii., p. 65; *Boturini, Idea*, p. 125.

Digitized by Google



THE AZTEC CYCLE.

the cycle into four tlalpillis.[6] These four signs, rabbit, cane, flint, and house, were also, according to Boturini, used to designate the four seasons of the year, the four cardinal points, and lastly, the four elements. Thus, for instance, tecpatl also signified south; calli, east; tochtli, north; and acatl, west. In the same

[6] 'Esto circuio redondo se dividia en cuatro partes....La primera parte que pertenecia á Oriente llamabanle los trece años de las cañas, y asi en cada casa de los trece tenian pintada una caña, y el número del año corriente.... La segunda parte aplicaban al septentrion, que era de otras trece casas, á las cuales llamaban las trece casas del pedernal; y asi tenian pintado en cada casa un pedernal....A la tercera....parte Occidental, llamabanle las trece casas, y asi verémos en cada parte de las trece una casilla pintada.... A la cuarta y última parte que era de otros trece años, llamabanla las trece casas del conejo; y así en cada casa de aquellas verémos, pintada una cabeza de conejo.' *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. i.

Digitized by Google

manner tecpatl was used to designate fire; calli, earth; tochtli, air; and acatl, water.[7]

The civil year was again divided into eighteen months and five days. Each month had its particular name, but the five extra days were only designated as *nemontemi*, or 'unlucky days,' and children born at this time, or enterprises undertaken, were considered unlucky. In hieroglyphical paintings these months were also placed in a circle, in the middle of which a face, representing either the sun or moon, was painted. This circle was called a *xiuhtlapohualli*, or 'count of the year.' Concerning the order in which these months followed one another, and the name of the first month, hardly two authors agree; in the same manner we find three or four various names given to many of the months. It would appear reasonable to suppose that the month immediately following the nemontemi, which were always added at the end of the year, would be the first, and the only difficulty here is to know which way the Aztecs wrote—whether from right to left or from left to right. On the circle of the month given by Veytia, and supposed to have been copied from an original, these five days are inserted between the months Panquetzaliztli and Atemoztli, and counting from left to right, this would make Atemoztli the first month, which would agree with Veytia's statement. But Gama and others decidedly dissent from this opinion, and name other months as the first. I reserve further consideration of this subject for another place in this chapter, where in connection with other matters it can be more clearly discussed, and content myself with simply inserting here a table of the names of the months as enumerated by the principal authors, in order to show at a

[7] Gemelli Careri gives these names in a different order, calling tochtli south, acatl east, tecpatl north, and calli west; further, tochtli earth, acatl water, tecpatl air, and calli fire. *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., pp. 487–8; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 54–6. The above are only figurative names, as the words for the cardinal points and also for the elements are entirely different in the Mexican language.

Digitized by Google

THORS.

18.	Commencement of the Mexican year, according to our reckoning.
lli	2d February.
.....	Commencement of March.
.....	26th February.
tlenac, or Cilhuilt.	
li.....	2d February.
l, or Xilomaly, or Queuila.	1st March.
li.....	24th February.
i.....	1st February.
i.....	February.
... .	
alo	First year of century, 10th April.
levac.....	March, or 26th of February.
etzaliztli....	2d February.
etzalliztli...	
.....	First year of century, 26th February.
ztli	9th January.
.....	26th February.
analiztli, or ahualco, or uitlehua, or ailhuitl.	20th March.
.....	
.....	First year of century, 26th February.
.....	24th February.

13.	14.	
Tepeilhuitl.....	Quecholli	Pa
.....	Panquetzaliztli	....
....	....	...
Quecholli	Panqueçaliztli.....	H
Tepeilhuitl.....	Quechulli	P
Veypachtly, or Coailhuitl.	Quecholli	P
Veipachtli.....	Quecholi.....	I
Tepeilhuitl.....	Quecholli	P
Tepeylhuitl	Quecholli	Pa
achtzintli.....	.....	....
ieciogli.....	Panchetzaliztli	At
Quecholli	Panquecaliztli.....	H
Hueymicailhuitl ..	Huepaniztli.....	
Hueymictailhuitl..	Ochpaniztli.....	
Tepeilhuitl.....	Quecholli	I
Ochpaniztli, or Tenahuatiliztli.	Pachtli, or Ezoztli, or Teotleco.	
.....	Tepeilhuitl.....	
Quecholli	Panquetzaliztli ...	
Tepeilhuitl.....	Quecholli	
Tepeilhuitl.	Quecholli	
Veypactli	Quecholi	

† Humboldt and Gallatin repeat Leon y

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

glance the many variations. I also append to it the different dates given for the first day of the year, in which there are as many contradictions as in the names and position of the months.

Each month, as before stated, was represented by its proper hieroglyph, having a certain meaning, and generally referring to some feast or natural event, such as the ripening of fruit, or falling of rain, happening during the month, although in this case also there are many differences between authors regarding the meaning of the names.

Tititl, which according to Gama was the first month, is translated by Boturini as 'our mother,' or 'mother of the gods,' while Cabrera calls it 'fire.'[8] Itzcalli, according to Boturini, means 'regeneration;' the Codex Vaticanus translates it 'skill;' and Veytia, 'the sprouting of the grass.'[9] Atlcahualco means the 'abating of the waters.' The Tlascaltec name of this month, Xilomanaliztli, signifies the 'offering' of green maize.' In other localities this month was also known by the name of Quahuitlehua, the 'burning of the mountains,' or rather of the trees on the mountains, previous to sowing.[10] Tlacaxipehualiztli means the 'flaying of the people;' the other name of this month, Cohuailhuitl, is the 'feast of the snake.' Tozoztontli, Tozcotzintli, and Hueytozoztli are respectively the small and great fast or vigil; while some translate these words by 'pricking of veins,' 'shedding of blood,' or 'great and small penance.'[11] Toxcatl is a 'collar' or 'necklace.'[12] Etzalqualiztli is translated by Boturini 'bean stew,' or 'the eating of beans,' while Veytia calls it 'the eating of maize gruel.' Tecuilhuit-

[8] 'Itetl, Ititl, barriga o vientre.' *Molina, Vocabulario.* 'Vientre, la madre, á excepcion del padre.' *Salva, Nuevo Dicc.* 'Titl... significa fuego. Tititl escrito en dos sílabas y seis letras nada significa en el idioma mexicano.' *Cabrera*, in *Ilustracion Mex.*, tom. iv., p. 468.

[9] 'Izcalia, abiuar, tornar en si, o resuscitar.' *Molina, Vocabulario.*

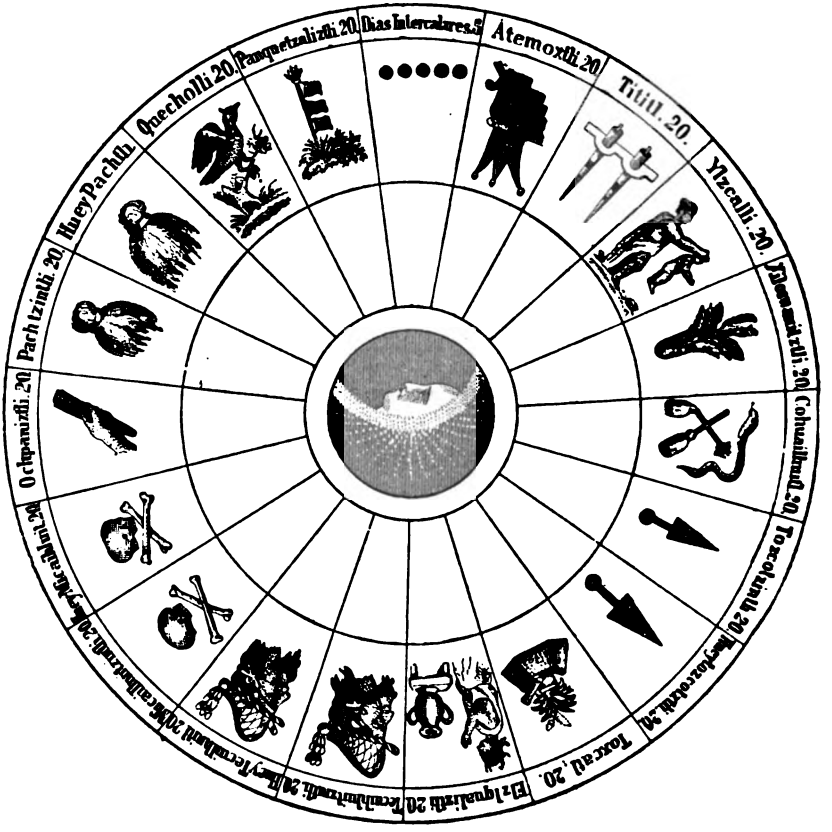
[10] 'Quiahuitl-ehua....significa *la lluvia levanta.*' *Cabrera*, in *Ilustracion Mex.*, tom. iv., p. 464.

[11] 'Toçoliztli vela, el acto de velar o de no dormir.' *Molina, Vocabulario*

[12] 'Garganta totuzcatlan, tuzquitl.' *Ib.*

Digitized by Google

zintli and Hueytecuilhuitl mean respectively the small and great 'feast of the Lord.' Miccailhuitzintli is explained both as 'the feast of dead children,' and 'the small feast of the dead;' another name for this month is Tlaxochimaco, meaning 'distribution of flow-



' THE AZTEC YEAR.

ers.' Hueymiccailhuitl is either 'the feast of dead adults,' or 'the great feast of the dead.' Xocotlhuetzin, another name for this month, means 'the ripening of the fruit. Ochpaniztli is 'the cleaning of streets.' Teotleco, or 'the arrival of the gods,' was the next

Digitized by Google

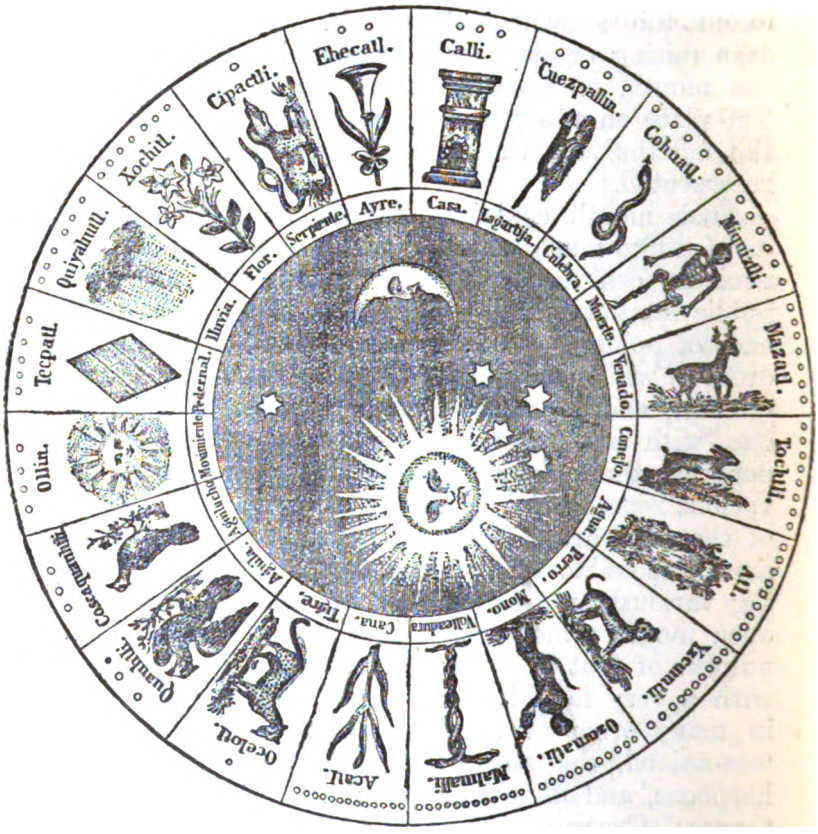
month, and was also named Pachtli, or Pachtontli, the latter being translated by 'humiliation,' and the former by 'moss hanging from trees.' Hueypachtli was 'the great feast of humiliation,' also called Tepeilhuitl, or 'feast of the mountains.' Quecholli means 'peacock,' but the interpreter of the *Codex Telleriano-Remensis* calls it the 'serpent of the clouds. Panquetzaliztli is 'the raising of flags and banners Atemoztli, the last month, means the 'drying up of the waters.'[13] The plate on the preceding page shows the order of the months and the pictures by which they were represented.

Each month contained twenty days, which were divided into four groups or weeks, as we may for convenience call them; and at the end of each group a public market or fair was held. There is no difference of opinion as to the names of the days or the order in which they follow one another, but it is very difficult, and in many cases impossible, to reconcile one with another the different hieroglyhpic signs denoting these days given in the codices or in the various representations of the calendar. The names of the days are: Cipactli, a name of which it is almost impossible to give the correct meaning, it being variously represented as an animal's head with open mouth armed with long tusks, as a fish with a number of flint knives on its back, as a kind of lizard with a very long tail curled up over its back, and in many other monstrous shapes. It is called the 'sea-animal,' the 'sword-fish,' the 'serpent armed with harpoons,' and other names. Ehecatl is 'wind;' Calli, 'house;' Cuetzpalin, 'lizard;' Coatl, 'snake;' Miquiztli, 'death;' Mazatl, 'deer;' Tochtli, 'rabbit;' Atl,

[13] For the various etymologies of the names of months, see *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicana* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 190–7; *Explicacion del Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Id.*, pp. 129–34; *Leon, Camino del Cielo*, fol. 96–100; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 50–2; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 64–5; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 66–83; *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 349–52; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 502–36; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 250–300.

Digitized by Google

'water;' Itzcuintli, 'dog;' Ozomatli, 'monkey;' Malinalli, 'brushwood,' or 'tangled grass;' Acatl, 'cane;' Ocelotl, 'tiger;' Quauhtli, 'eagle;' Cozcaquauhtli, a species of vulture, known in Mexico as 'rey de los zopilotes;' Ollin, 'movement;' Tecpatl, 'flint;' Quia-



THE AZTEC MONTH.

huitl, 'rain;' and Xochitl, 'flower.' It will be seen that the days having the names or signs of the years —namely, Tochtli, Calli, Tecpatl, and Acatl—stand first in each week. The five nemontemi had no particular name. The cut given above shows the

Digitized by Google

method by which the Aztecs represented their month, with the hieroglyphic names of each day.[14]

As three hundred and sixty-five days do not make the year complete, the Mexicans added the missing thirteen days at the end of the cycle of fifty-two years. But Gama asserts that they came still nearer to our more correct calculations, and added only twelve days and a half.[15] It has been frequently attempted

[14] This order is varied by a few authors. Veytia gives the following entirely different system: 'Si el año era del carácter Tecpatl, con este se señalaba el primer dia de cada mes, y seguian anotándose los demas con los geroglificos siguientes en el órden en pue los he puesto; de manera que el vigésimo dia de cada mes se hallaba Ollin....Si el año era del segundo geroglifico Calli, por este se comenzaba á contar, y á todos los dias primeros de cada mes se les daba este nombre.' The same method he contends is followed also in those years of each tlalpilli which commence with Tochtli and Acatl. For *cozcaquauhtli* he uses the name *temeztlatl*, or metate. *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 76–80; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 294–5. Gemelli Careri states that Cipactli was not always the first day of the month. *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, tom. iv., p. 489; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. iii., appendix, cap. ii.; *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 22, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix.; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 36. Boturini adds to Ollin the word Tonatiuh, and translates it 'movement of the sun.' *Idea*, p. 45. Gama places Ollin between Atl and Itzcuintli. *Dos Piedras*, pt i., p. 26; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, tom. i., p. 59; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 463. See also hieroglyphics, in *Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, pl. ix., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., and *Codex Borgian*, in *Id.*, vol. iii., pl. 24; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 304. In Nicaragua, where the Aztec language was spoken by a large portion of the population, the calendar and the names of the days were the same as Aztec, with but some slight differences in spelling. Oviedo gives the names of the days as follows: '*Agat, oçelot, oate, coscayoate, olin, tapecat, quiaüit, sochit, çipat, acat, cali, quespal, coat, misiste, maçat, toste, at, izquindi, ocomate, malinal, acato*....Un año....tiene diez çempuales, é cada çempual es veynte dias.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 52.

[15] Sahagun, and after him several others, do not agree with this, but pretend that one day was added every fourth year, on which occasion a certain feast was celebrated, but Gama has clearly demonstrated that this is a mistake. 'El año visiesto, que era de cuatro en cuatro años.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 75. 'Otra fiesta hacian de cuatro en cuatro años á honra del fuego, en la que ahugeraban las orejas á todos los niños; y la llamaban *Pillabanaliztli*, y en esta fiesta es verosimil, y hay congeturas que hacian su visiesto contando seis dias de *nemontemi*.' *Id.*, lib. iv., pp. 347–8. Boturini expresses the same opinion. 'Determinaron cada quatro años añadir un dia mas, que recogiesse las horas, que se desperdiciaban, lo que supongo executaron contando dos veces uno de los Symbolos de el ultimo mes de el año, á la manera de los Romanos.' *Idea*, p. 137. 'El año de visiesto que era de quatro à quatro años.' *Leon, Camino del Cielo*, fol. 100. 'They order'd the bissextile, or leap-year, after this manner. The first year of the age began on the tenth of *April*, and so did the second and third, but the fourth or leap-year, on the ninth, the eighth on the eighth, the twelfth on the seventh, the sixteenth on the sixth, till the end of the age, which was on the twenty-eighth of *March*, when the thirteen days of the leap-years, till the tenth of *April*, were spent in rejoicing.' *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., p. 490. Veytia,

Digitized by Google

to fix accurately the time when the Mexican year commenced according to our dates, but there is no agreement on this point between the old historians, as will be seen from the table given, and although many elaborate calculations have been made for the purpose

following Boturini, adds one day every fourth year by repeating the last day. *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 110–20. 'La correccion no se hacia hasta el fin del ciclo, en que se intercalaban juntos los 13 dias.' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., p. 24. 'Les Mexicains ont évidemment suivi le système des Perses: ils conservoient l'anné vague jusqu'à ce que les heures excédantes formassent une demilunaison; ils intercaloient, par conséquent, treize jours toutes les *liyatures* ou cycles de cinquante-deux ans....à chaque année du signe *tochtli*, les Mexicains perdoient un jour; et, par l'effet de cette *rétrogradation*, l'année *calli* de la quatriéme indiction commençoit le 27 décembre, et finissoit au solstice d'hiver, le 21 décembre, en ne faisant pas entrer en ligne de compte les cinq jours inutiles ou complémentaires. Il en résulte que....treize jours intercalaires ramènent le commencement de l'année au 9 janvier.' *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. ii., pp. 60–1. 'Non frammettevano un giorno ogni quattro anni, ma tredici giorni....ogni cinquanta due anni.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 62. 'They waited till the expiration of fifty-two vague years, when they interposed thirteen days, or rather twelve and a half, this being the number which had fallen in arrear.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 112; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 469. In this connection I also give the remarkable statement of Pedro de los Rios, in his interpretation of the Codex Vaticanus: '*Item*, si ha da notare, che il loro bisesto andava solo in quattro lettere, anni, o segni che sono Canna, Pietra, Casa, e Coniglio, perchè come hanno bisesto delli giorni a fare di quattro in quattro anni un mese di quelli cinque giorni morti che avanzavano di ciascun anno, cosi avevano bisesto di anni perchè di cinquantadue in cinquantadue anni, che è una loro Età, aggiungevano un anno, il quale sempre veniva in una di queste lettere o segni perchè come ogni lettera o segno di questi vinti habbia tredici del suo genere che le servano, *verbi gratiâ*.' *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 174–5. In the Explicacion del Codex Telleriano-Remensis we read: 'A 19 de Fevrero los cinco dias muertos que no avia sacrificios; estos eran los dias que sobravan de los de veynte en veynte del año: y siempre en cumpliendose los 365 dias, dexavan pasar estos, y luego tornavan a tomar el año en la letra que entrava.' *Id.*, p. 134. To this Lord Kingsborough adds in a note: 'The Mexicans reckoned 365 days to their year; the last five of which had no sign or place appropriated to them in the calendar; since, if they had been admitted, the order of the signs would have been inverted, and the new year would not always have commenced with Ce Cipactli. These days, therefore, although included in the computation of the year, were rejected from the calender, until at the expiration of four years an intercalation of twenty corresponding signs might be effected without producing any confusion in it. It would appear, however, that this intercalation did not actually take place till at the expiration of 52 years; for it is impossible, except on this supposition, to understand the *intercalation of years* mentioned in the Vatican MS. as occurring at the expiration of every period of 52 years, when an entire year was intercalated: but admitting the postponement of an intercalation of a month every four years during a period of 52 years, such an intercalation would then become quite intelligible; since thirteen Mexican months, of 20 days each, exactly constitute a ritual year of the Mexicans which contained 260 days, and was shorter than the civil year by 105 days; and this is the precise number of months of which the intercalation would have been postponed.' *Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vi., pp. 103–4.

Digitized by Google

of verifying the one or the other statement, the result is in no two cases the same. Gama calculated, and Humboldt and Gallatin confirmed his statement, that the first year of a Mexican cycle commenced on the 31st day of December, old style, or on the 9th day of January, new style, with the month Tititl and the day Cipactli.[16]

We come now to another mode of reckoning, known as the ritual calendar, which, as its name implies, was used for adjusting all religious feasts and rites and everything pertaining thereto. The previously described reckoning was solar, while that of the ritual calendar was lunar. The periods into which it was divided were of thirteen days each, thus representing about half the time that the moon was visible. The year contained as many days as the solar calendar, but they were divided into entirely different periods. Thus, in reality, there were no months at all, but only twenty weeks of thirteen days each; and these not constituting a full year, the same kind of reckoning was continued for one hundred and five days more, and at the end of a tlalpilli thirteen days were intercalated to make up for the lost days. The names of the days were the same as in the solar calendar, but they were counted as follows: To the first day, the number one was prefixed, to the second, two, to the third, three, and so on to thirteen; when the fourteenth name was again called one, the fifteenth, two, and so on to thirteen again, after which the same count was continued to the end of the year. But as in this reckoning it naturally happens that one name has the same number twice, accompanying signs were added to the regular names, which were called *quecholli*, 'lords or rulers of the night.' Of these there were nine,

[16] *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. 62–89; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 69–86. Veytia's reason for commencing the year with Atemoztli is, that on the calendar circle which he saw, and of which I insert a copy, this was the month following the five nemontemi. This appears very reasonable, but nevertheless Gama and Gallatin's calculations show it to be an error. See *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 74–5.

Digitized by Google

xiuhtecutli, *tletl*, 'lord of the year, fire;' *tecpatl*, 'flint;' *xochitl*, 'flower;' *centeotl*, 'goddess of maize;' *miquiztli*, 'death;' *atl*, 'water,' represented by the goddess Chalchihuitlicue; *tlazolteotl*, 'goddess of love;' *tepeyollotli*, a deity supposed to inhabit the centre of the mountains; *quiahuitl*, 'rain,' represented by the god Tlaloc.[17] As stated above, one of these signs was understood to accompany the regular name of each day, commencing with the first day of the year; but they were never written or mentioned with the first two hundred and sixty days, but only with the last one hundred and five days, to distinguish them from the former.[18] For the purpose of making this system more comprehensible, I insert a few months of the Mexican calendar, showing the solar and lunar system together, as arranged by Gama.

Months and days of our era.	Months and days of the Mexican civil, or solar, calendar.	Days and weeks of the Mexican ritual, or lunar, calendar.	Accompanying signs, or 'lords of the night.'
January 9	Tititl 1	1. Cipactli	Tletl 1
10	 2	2. Ehecatl	Tecpatl 2
11	 3	3. Calli	Xochitl 3
12	 4	4. Cuetzpalin	Centeotl 4
13	 5	5. Coatl	Miquiztli 5
14	 6	6. Miquiztli	Atl 6
15	 7	7. Mazatl	Tlazolteotl 7
16	 8	8. Tochtli	Tepeyollotli 8
17	 9	9. Atl	Quiahuitl 9
18	 10	10. Itzcuintli	Tletl 1
19	 11	11. Ozomatli	Tecpatl 2
20	 12	12. Malinalli	Xochitl 3
21	 13	13. Acatl	Centeotl 4
22	 14	1. Ocelotl	Miquiztli 5
23	 15	2. Quauhtli	Atl 6
24	 16	3. Cozcaquauhtli	Tlazolteotl 7
25	 17	4. Ollin	Tepeyollotli 8
26	 18	5. Tecpatl	Quiahuitl 9
27	 19	6. Quiahuitl	Tletl 1
28	 20	7. Xochitl	Tecpatl 2
29	Itzcalli 1	8. Cipactli	Xochitl 3
30	 2	9. Ehecatl	Centeotl 4
31	 3	10. Calli	Miquiztli 5

[17] Boturini gives the rulers of the night as follows: Xiuhteucyòhua, Señor de el Año; Ytzteucyòhua, Señor de el Fuego; Piltzinteucyòhua, Señor de los Niños; Cinteucyòhua, Señor de el Maiz; Mictlanteucyòhua, Señor de el Infierno; Chalchihuitlicueyòhua, Señor de el Agua; Tlazolyòhua, Señor de el Amor deshonesto; Tepeyoloyòhua, Señor de los Entrañas de los Montes; Quiauhteucyòhua, Señor de las Lluvias. *Idea*, p. 58.

[18] *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. 29–31, 52–3; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 57–9; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 61.

Digitized by Google

Months and days of our era.	Months and days of the Mexican civil calendar.	Days and weeks of the Mexican ritual calendar.	Accompanying signs, or 'lords of the night.'
February..... 1	 4	11..Cuetzpalin.....	Atl 6
2	 5	12..Coatl.....	Tlazolteotl..... 7
3	 6	13..Miquiztli.....	Tepeyollotli 8
4	 7	1..Mazatl.....	Quiahuitl..... 9
5	 8	2..Tochtli.....	Tletl..... 1
6	 9	3..Atl.....	Tecpatl..... 2
7	10	4..Itzcuintli.....	Xochitl..... 3
8	11	5..Ozomatli.....	Centeotl 4
9	12	6..Malinalli	Miquiztli..... 5
10	13	7..Acatl	Atl 6
11	14	8..Ocelotl	Tlazolteotl..... 7
12	15	9..Quauhtli	Tepeyollotli..... 8
13	16	10..Cozcaquauhtli..	Quiahuitl. 9
14	17	11..Ollin.....	Tletl 1
15	18	12..Tecpatl.....	Tecpatl 2
16	19	13..Quiahuitl.....	Xochitl..... 3
17	20	1..Xochitl.....	Centeotl..... 4
18	Atlcahualco..... 1	2..Cipactli.....	Miquiztli 5
19	 2	3..Ehecatl.....	Atl 6
20	 3	4..Calli	Tlazolteotl..... 7
21	 4	5..Cuetzpalin.....	Tepeyollotli..... 8
22	 5	6..Coatl.....	Quiahuitl..... 9
23	 6	7..Miquiztli.....	Tletl 1
24	 7	8..Mazatl.....	Tecpatl 2
25	 8	9..Tochtli.....	Xochitl. 3
26	 9	10..Atl	Centeotl 4
27	10	11..Itzcuintli.....	Miquiztli..... 5
28	11	12..Ozomatli.....	Atl..... 6
March..... 1	12	13..Malinalli.....	Tlazolteotl 7
2	13	1..Acatl	Tepeyollotli..... 8
3	14	2..Ocelotl.....	Quiahuitl..... 9
4	15	3..Quauhtli.....	Tletl..... 1
5	16	4..Cozcaquauhtli..	Tecpatl..... 2
6	17	5..Ollin.....	Xochitl 3
7	18	6..Tecpatl.....	Centeotl 4
8	 19	7..Quiahuitl.....	Miquiztli..... 5
9	20	8..Xochitl	Atl..... 6
10	Tlacaxipehualiztli 1	9..Cipactli.....	Tlazolteotl..... 7
11	 2	10..Ehecatl	Tepeyollotli..... 8
12	 3	11..Calli.....	Quiahuitl..... 9
13	 4	12..Cuetzpalin.....	Tletl 1
14	 5	13..Coatl.....	Tecpatl 2
15	 6	1..Miquiztli.....	Xochitl 3
16	 7	2..Mazatl	Centeotl 4
17	 8	3..Tochtli.....	Miquiztli..... 5
18	 9	4..Atl.....	Atl 6
19	10	5..Itzcuintli.....	Tlazolteotl..... 7
20	11	6..Ozomatli.....	Tepeyllotli..... 8
21	12	7..Malinalli.....	Quiahuitl. 9
22	13	8..Acatl	Tletl..... 1
23	14	9..Ocelotl.....	Tecpatl 2
24	15	10..Quauhtli	Xochitl 3
25	16	11..Cozcaquauhtli..	Centeotl..... 4
26	17	12..Ollin.....	Miquiztli..... 5
27	18	13..Tecpatl	Atl 6
28	19	1..Quiahuitl.....	Tlazolteotl..... 7
29	 20	2..Xochitl	Tepeyollotli..... 8
30	Tozoztontli..... 1	3..Cipactli.	Quiahuitl..... 9
31	 2	4..Ehecatl.....	Tletl..... 1

Digitized by Google

The five nemontemi were counted in this calendar as other days, that is, they received the names which came in the regular order, but nevertheless, they were believed to be unlucky days and had no accompanying signs.

Besides the preceding cuts of the Mexican calendar systems, as they were represented by Gemelli Careri, Veytia, and others, the calendar-stone is the most reliable source by which the extent of the astronomical science of the Aztecs can be shown. Gama, and after him Gallatin, give very accurate descriptions of this stone; I insert here a résumé from the latter author. On this stone there is engraved in high-relief a circle, in which are represented by certain hieroglyphics the sun and its several motions, the twenty days of the month, some principal fast-days, and other matters. The central figure represents the sun as it is usually painted by the Mexicans. Around it, outside of a small circle, are four parallelograms with the signs of the days, Nahui Ocelotl, Nahui Ehecatl, Nahui Quiahuitl, and Nahui Atl. Between the two upper and lower parallelograms are two figures which Gama explains as being two claws, which are the hieroglyphics representing two eminent astrologers, man and wife. Gama further explains these four signs of the days in this place, as having reference to the four epochs of nature, of which the Aztec traditions speak. The first destruction of the sun is said to have taken place in the year Ce Acatl and on the day Nahui Ocelotl. The second sun was supposed to have died in the year Ce Tecpatl and on the day Nahui Ehecatl; the third destruction occurred also in the year Ce Tecpatl and on the day Nahui Quiahuitl; and lastly, the fourth destruction took place in the year Ce Calli, on the day Nahui Atl. But Mr Gallatin thinks that these four parallelograms had yet some other purpose; for on the twenty-second of May and on the twenty-sixth of July, which days are Nahui Ocelotl and Nahui Quiahuitl, if we accept the thirty-first of December as the

Digitized by Google

first day of the Mexican cycle, the sun passed the meridian of the city of Mexico. But in this case the other two days, Nahui Ehecatl and Nahui Atl cannot be explained in connection with any other astronomical event. Between the lower parallelograms are two small squares, in each of which are five oblong marks, signifying the number ten; and as the central figure is the *ollin tonatiuh*, or sun, the number ten in these two squares is supposed to mean the day Matlactli Ollin. Below this again are the hieroglyphics Ce Quiahuitl and Ome Ozomatli. The day Matlactli Ollin in the first year of the cycle is the twenty-second of September; Ce Quiahuitl in the year Matlactli omey Acatl, which year is inscribed at the head of the stone, is our twenty-second of March; and Ome Ozomatli in the same year would be our twenty-second of June. Here are therefore designated three of the principal phenomena as they happened in the first year of the cycle; viz., two transits of the sun by the zenith and the autumnal equinox. In the year designated on the stone Matlactli omey Acatl, there are given the spring equinox and summer solstice. In a circle surrounding these figures are represented the twenty days of the months. From the central figure of the sun there runs upward, as far as the circle of days, a triangle, the upper and smallest angle of which points between the days Cipactli and Xochitl, thus confirming the idea that Cipactli was always the first day of the month. Gama, Gallatin, Humboldt, Dupaix, and others have given correct pictures of the stone, as is proved by recent photographs; but in my cut the figures are reversed. It is a copy from Charnay, whose photographs were in 1875 the best authority accessible; and I failed to notice that this, unlike Charnay's other plates, was a photo-lithograph reversed in printing. Not only did I fall into this error, but in my earlier editions charged other writers with having made a similar one. The cut does not otherwise mislead, but it must be noted that instead

Digitized by Google

of running from left to right, the days really run from right to left. From the circle of days, four triangles, or rays, project, exactly dividing the stone into four quarters, each of which has ten visible squares, and, as the rays cover twelve more, there would be fifty-two in all. In each square are five oblong marks, which mul-

THE CALENDAR-STONE.

tiplied by fifty-two give two hundred and sixty, or the first period of the Mexican ritual year. Outside of the circle of these squares the four quarters are each again divided by a smaller ray, and, as stated before, at the head of the stone, over the principal triangle is the sign of the year Matlactli omey Acatl. Round the outer edge are a number of other figures and hiero-

Digitized by Google

glyphics, which have not yet been deciphered, or whose interpretations by different writers present so many contradictions that they would have no value here.[19]

The only information we have of the calendar used in Michoacan is furnished by Veytia, and this is only fragmentary. Enough is known, however, to show that their system was the same as that of the Aztecs. Instead of the four principal signs of the Aztecs, tecpatl, calli, tochtli, and acatl, in Michoacan the names *inodon*, *inbani*, *inchon*, and *intihui* were used. Of the eighteen months only fourteen are mentioned by name. These are: Intacaci, Indehuni, Intecamoni, Interunihi, Intamohui, Inizcatolohui, Imatatohui, Itzbachaa, Intoxihui, Intaxihui, Intechaqui, Intechotahui, Inteyabchitzin, Intaxitohui. The five in-

[19] *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 94–103; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. 89–114. Further description, and mention of the astronomical system will be found in *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 332–92, and tom. ii., pp. 1–99, 356–80; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 295–305; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxli.; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 49–76, lib. iv., pp. 282–309, 338–49, tom. ii., lib. vii., pp. 256–60, 264–5; *Explanation of the Codex Vaticanus*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vi., pp. 196, 200; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 42–59, 109–10, 122–4, 137–40, 153–5; *Id., Catálogo*, pp. 57–72; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 35–8; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 30–138; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 517–31; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 457–82; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 294–97; *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, tom. iv., pp. 487–90; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras; Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 57–115; *Laet, Novus Orbis*, pp. 241–2; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 110–27; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 41–3; *Nebel, Viaje*, pl. l.; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xviii.; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 322–4; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 397–9; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 56–65; *Müller, Reisen*, tom. iii., pp. 63–90; *McCulloh's Researches in Amer.*, pp. 201–25; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 128–30; *Tylor's Researches*, pp. 92–4; *Id., Anahuac*, p. 103; *Schoolcraft's Arch.*, vol. i., pp. 44–5; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 266–7; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. viii., pp. 537–8; *Baril, Mexique*, pp. 194–5, 211–15; *Morton's Crania Amer.*, p. 150; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Geog.*, tom. vi., pp. 445, 293; *Macgregor's Progress of Amer.*, vol. i., p. 22; *Chambers' Jour.*, 1835, vol. iv., p. 254; *Lafond, Voyages*, tom. i., p. 118; *Touron, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 21–2, 24–5; *Poinsett's Notes Mex.*, pp. 111, 75–6; *Simon's Ten Tribes*, pp. 149–57; *Kendall's Nar.*, vol. ii., p. 328; *Prichard's Nat. Hist. Man*, vol. ii., p. 507; *Cabrera*, in *Illustracion Mex.*, tom. iv., pp. 461–70; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, pp. 93–4; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 92; *Thompson's Mex.*, p. 213; *Falliés, Etudies, Hist. sur les Civilisations*, Paris, (n. d.) pp. 57–62.

Digitized by Google

tercalary days were named *intasiabire.*[20] The days of the month, divided into four equal parts by the above-mentioned four principal signs, were called Inodon, Inicebi, Inettuni, Inbeari, Inethaati, Inbani, Inxichari, Inchini, Inrini, Inpari, Inchon, Inthahui, Intzini, Intzoniabi, Intzimbi, Inthihui, Inixotzini, Inichini, Iniabi, Intaniri.[21]

The Zapotecs in Oajaca, according to the description of Burgoa, used the same calendar as the Aztecs, with this difference, that the year always commenced on the twelfth day of March, and that the bissextile year was corrected every fourth year, by adding, instead of five, six intercalary days.[22]

[20] 'Los cuatro meses que faltan son los que corresponden á nuestro enero, febrero y marzo, porque al manuscrito le falta la primera hoja, y solo comienza desde el dia 22 de marzo, y concluye, en 31 diciembre, confrontando sus meses con los nuestros.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 138. 'Il est dit que l'année commençait aiu 22 mars avec le premier jour In Thacari.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 467.

[21] *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 137–8; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 463, 467; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 104–5.

[22] 'Dabanle diez y ocho meses de à 20. dias, y otro mas de cinco, y este al cabo de quatro años como nuestro Bisiesto lo variaban à seis dias, pos las seis horas que sobran cada año. *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 136.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVII.

THE AZTEC PICTURE-WRITING.

HIEROGLYPHIC RECORDS—THE NATIVE BOOKS—AUTHORITIES—DESTRUCTION OF THE NATIVE ARCHIVES BY ZUMÁRRAGA AND HIS CONFRERES—PICTURE-WRITINGS USED AFTER THE CONQUEST FOR CONFESSION AND LAWSUITS—VALUE OF THE RECORDS—DOCUMENTS SENT TO SPAIN IN THE SIXTEENTH CENTURY—EUROPEAN COLLECTIONS—LORD KINGSBOROUGH'S WORK—PICTURE-WRITINGS RETAINED IN MEXICO—COLLECTIONS OF IXTLILXOCHITL, SIGÜENZA, GEMELLI CARERI, BOTURINI, VEYTIA, LEON Y GAMA, PICHARDO, AUBIN, AND THE NATIONAL MUSEUM OF MEXICO—PROCESS OF HIEROGLYPHIC DEVELOPMENT—REPRESENTATIVE, SYMBOLIC, AND PHONETIC PICTURE-WRITING—ORIGIN OF MODERN ALPHABETS—THE AZTEC SYSTEM—SPECIMEN FROM THE CODEX MENDOZA—SPECIMEN FROM GEMELLI CARERI—SPECIMEN FROM THE BOTURINI COLLECTION—PROBABLE FUTURE SUCCESS OF INTERPRETERS—THE NEPOHUALTZITZIN.

THE Nahua nations possessed an original hieroglyphic system by which they were able to record all that they deemed worthy of preservation. The art of picture-writing was one of those most highly prized and most zealously cultivated and protected, being intrusted to a class of men educated for the purpose and much honored. The written records included national, historic, and traditional annals, names and genealogical tables of kings and nobles, lists and tribute-rolls of provinces and cities, land-titles, law codes, court records, the calendar and succession of feasts, religious ceremonies of the tem-

Digitized by Google

ple service, names and attributes of the gods, the mysteries of augury and soothsaying, with some description of social customs, mechanical employments, and educational processes. The preparation and guardianship of records of the higher class, such as historical annals and ecclesiastical mysteries, were under the control of the highest ranks of the priesthood, and such records, comparatively few in number, were carefully guarded in the temple archives of a few of the larger cities. These writings were a sealed book to the masses, and even to the educated classes, who looked with superstitious reverence on the priestly writers and their magic scrolls. It is probable that the art as applied to names of persons and places or to ordinary records was understood by all educated persons, although by no means a popular art, and looked upon as a great mystery by the common people. The hieroglyphics were painted in bright colors on long strips of cotton cloth, prepared skins, or maguey-paper—generally the latter—rolled up, or, preferably, folded fan-like into convenient books called *amatl*, and furnished often with thin wooden covers. The same characters were also carved on the stones of public buildings, and probably also in some cases on natural cliffs. The early authorities are unanimous in crediting these people with the possession of a hieroglyphic system sufficiently perfect to meet all their requirements.[1]

[1] 'Todas las cosas que conferimos me las dieron por pinturas, que aquella era la escritura que ellos antiguamente usaban: los gramáticos las declararon en su lengua, escribiendo la declaracion al pie de la pintura. Tengo aun ahora estos originales.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. iv. 'Aunque no tenian escritura como nosotros tenian empero sus figuras y caracteres que todas las cosas qui querian, significaban; y destas sus libros grandes por tan agudo y sutil artificio, que podriamos decir que nuestras letras en aquello no les hicieron mucha ventaja.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxxxv. 'Tenian sus figuras, y Hieroglyficas con que pintauan las cosas en esta forma, que las cosas que tenian figuras, las ponian con sus proprias ymagines, y para las cosas que no auia ymagen propria, tenian otros caracteres significatiouos de aquello, y con este modo figurauan quanto querian.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 408. 'Letras Reales de cosas pintadas, como eran las pinturas, en que leiò Eneas la destruicion de Troya.' 'Y esto que afirmo, es tomado de las mis mas Historias Mexicanas, y Tetzucanas, que

Digitized by Google

Unfortunately the picture-writings, particularly those in the hands of priests—those most highly prized by the native scholar, those which would, if preserved, have been of priceless value to the students of later times—while in common with the products of other arts they excited the admiration of the foreign invaders, at the same time they aroused the pious fears of the European priesthood. The nature of the writings was little understood. Their contents were deemed to be for the most part religious mysteries, painted devices of the devil, the strongest band that held the people to their aboriginal faith, and the most formidable obstacle in the way of their conversion to the true faith. The destruction of the pagan scrolls was deemed essential to the progress of the church, and was consequently ordered and most successfully carried out under the direction of the bishops and their subordinates, the most famous of these fanatical destroyers of a new world's literature being Juan de Zumárraga, who made a public bonfire of the native archives. The fact already noticed, that the national

son las que sigo en este discurso, y las que tengo en mi poder.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 29, 149, also pp. 30–1, 36, 253, tom. ii., pp. 263, 544–6. 'I haue heeretofore sayde, that they haue books whereof they brought many: but this Ribera saith, that they are not made for the vse of readinge....What I should thinke in this variety I knowe not. I suppose them to bee bookes.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x., dec. iii., lib. viii. 'Y entre la barbaridad destas naciones (de Oajaca) se hallaron muchos libros á su modo, en hojas, ó telas de especiales cortesas de arboles....Y destos mesmos instrumentos he tenido en mis manos, y oydolos explicar á algunos viejos con bastante admiracion.' *Burgoa, Palestra Hist.*, pt i., p. 89. 'Pintaban en vnos papeles de la tierra que dan los arboles pegados vnos con otros con engrudos, que llamaban *Texamaltl* sus historias, y batallas.' *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 60. 'Lo dicho lo comprueban claramente las Historias de las Naciones Tulteca y Chichimeca, figuradas con pinturas, y Geroglíficos, especialmente en aquel Libro, que en Tula hicieron de su origen, y le llamaron Teomaxtli, esto es, Libro divino.' *Lorenzana*, in *Cortés, Hist. N. España*, pp. 6, 8–9. 'It is now proven beyond cavil, that both Mexico and Yucatan had for centuries before Columbus a phonetic system of writing, which insured the perpetuation of their histories and legends.' *Brinton's Myths.* See also *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 203–4, 235, 287; *Id., Relaciones*, in *Id.*, p. 325; *Ritos Antiquos*, p. 4, in *Id.*; *Garcia*, in *Id.*, vol. viii., pp. 190–1: *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 299; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 186, 209; *Fuenleal*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 250; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 6–7, 251–2; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 68; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1135.

Digitized by Google

annals were preserved together in a few of the larger cities, made the task of Zumárraga and his confrères comparatively an easy one, and all the more important records, with very few probable exceptions, were blotted from existence. The priests, however, sent some specimens, either originals or copies, home to Europe, where they attracted momentary curiosity, and were then lost and forgotten. Many of the tribute-rolls and other paintings of the more ordinary class, with perhaps a few of the historical writings, were hidden by the natives, and thus saved from destruction. Of these I shall speak hereafter.[2]

After the zeal of the priests had somewhat abated, or rather when the harmless nature of the paintings was better understood, the natives were permitted to use their hieroglyphics again. Among other things they wrote down in this way their sins when the priests were too busy to hear their verbal confessions. The native writing was also extensively employed in the many lawsuits between Aztecs and Spaniards during the sixteenth century, as it had been employed in the courts before the Conquest. Thus the early part of the century produced many hieroglyphic documents, not a few of which have been preserved, and several of which I have in my Library. During the same period some fragments that had survived the general destruction were copied and supplied with ex-

[2] 'Aunque por haverse quemado estos Libros, al principio de la conversion....no ha quedado, para aora, mui averiguado todo lo que ellos hiçieron.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 544, tom. i., prólogo. Some of them burned by order of the monks, in the fear that in the matter of religion these books might prove injurious. *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxxxv. Royal archives of Tezcuco burned *inadvertently* by the first priests. *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 203. 'Principalmente habiendo perecido lo mejor de sus historias entre las llamas, por no tenerse conocimiento de lo que significaban sus pinturas.' *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. 2, 5. 'Por desgracia los misioneros confundieron con los objetos del culto idolátrico todos los geroglíficos cronológicos é históricos, y en una misma hoguera se consumia el ídolo....y el manuscrito.' *Alaman, Disertaciones*, tom. ii., p. 154. See also *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 101; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 139–41; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 188; *Bustamante, Mañanas*, tom. ii., prólogo; *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., p. 226; *Wilson's Conq. Mex.*, p. 24.

Digitized by Google

planations written with European letters in Aztec, or dictated to the priests, who wrote in Spanish. The documents, copies, and explanations of this time are of course strongly tinctured with Catholic ideas wherever any question of religion is involved, but otherwise there is no reason to doubt their authenticity.[3]

To discuss the historical value of such Aztec writings as have been preserved, or even of those that were destroyed by the Spaniards, or the accuracy of the various interpretations that have been given to the former, forms no part of my purpose in this chapter. Here I shall give a brief account of the preserved documents, with plates representing a few of them as specimens, and as clear an idea as possible of the system according to which they were painted. Respecting the theory, supported by a few writers, that the Aztecs had no system of writing except the habit common to all savage tribes of drawing rude pictures on the rocks and trees, that the statements of the conquerors on the subject are unfounded fabrications, the specimens handed down to us mere inventions of the priests, and their interpretations consequently purely imaginary, it is well to remark that all this is a manifest absurdity. On the use of hieroglyphics the authorities, as we have seen, all agree; on their destruction by the bishops they are no less unanimous; even the destroyers themselves mention the act in their correspondence, glorying in it as a most meritorious

[3] It is to this transition-period that we owe many, perhaps most, of the picture-documents still preserved.' *Tylor's Researches*, p. 97. 'There was ....until late in the last century, a professor in the University of Mexico, especially devoted to the study of the national picture-writing. But, as this was with a view to legal proceedings, his information, probably, was limited to deciphering titles.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 106. 'L'usage de ces peintures, servant de pièces de procès, c'est conservé dans les tribunaux espagnols long-temps après la conquête. *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 169–70. 'Escriben toda la doctrina ellos por sus figuras y caracteres muy ingeniosamente, poniendo la figura que correspondia en la voz y sonido á nuestro vocablo. Asi como si dijeremos Amen, ponian pintada una como fuente y luego un maguey que en su lengua corresponde con Amen, porque llamada *Ametl*, y así de todo lo demas.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. ccxxxv. See also *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 53, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix.; *Ramirez, Proceso de Resid.; Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 115; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 122.

Digitized by Google

deed. The burning was, moreover, perfectly consistent with the policy of the church at that time, and its success does not seem extraordinary when we consider the success of the priests in destroying monuments of solid stone. The use of the aboriginal records in the Spanish courts for a long period is undeniable. The priests had neither the motive nor the ability to invent and teach such a system. Respecting the historical value of the destroyed documents, it is safe to believe that they contained all that the Aztecs knew of their past. Having once conceived the idea of recording their annals, and having a system of writing adequate to the purpose, it is inconceivable that they failed to record all they knew. The Aztecs derived their system traditionally from the Toltecs, whose written annals they also inherited; but none of the latter were ever seen by any European, and, according to tradition, they were destroyed by a warlike Aztec king, who wished the glory of his own kingdom to overshadow that of all others, past, present, or future. If the hieroglyphics of the Nahua nations beyond the limits of Anáhuac differed in any respect from those of the Aztecs, such differences have not been recorded.[4]

[4] 'Au Mexique, l'usage des peintures et celui du papier de maguey s'étendoient bien au delà des limites de l'empire de Montezuma, jusqu'aux bords du lac de Nicaragua.' 'On voit que les peuples de l'Amèrique étoient bien éloignés de cette perfection qu'avoient atteinte les Égyptiens.' *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 208, 193–4. 'Clumsy as it was, however, the Aztec picture-writing seems to have been adequate to the demands of the nation. *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 97–8, 108. 'The Mexicans may have advanced, but, we believe, not a great way, beyond the village children, the landlady (with her ale-scores), or the Bosjesmans.' *Quarterly Review*, 1816, vol. xv., pp. 454, 449. 'The *picture-writings* copied into the monster volumes of Lord Kingsborough, we have denounced as Spanish fabrications.' *Wilson's Conq. Mex.*, pp. 21–4. 'Until some evidence, or shadow of evidence, can be found that these quasi records are of Aztec origin, it would be useless to examine the contradictions, absurdities, and nonsense they present....The whole story must be considered as one of Zumárraga's pious frauds.' *Id.*, pp. 91–2. 'Las pinturas, que se quemaron en tiempo del señor de México, que se decia *Itzcóatl*, en cuya época los señores, y los principales que habia entónces, acordaron y mandaron que se quemasen todas, para que no viniesen á manos del vulgo, y fuesen menospreciadas.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 140–1; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 209. See also *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.*, pp. 46–7; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 144; *Orozco y Berra, Geografía*, p. 100; *Mayer's Mex. Aztec*, etc., vol. i., p. 93

Digitized by Google

I have said that many hieroglyphic manuscripts, saved from the fires kindled by Zumárraga's bigotry, or copied by ecclesiastical permission before serving as food for their purifying flames, were sent to Spain by the conquerors. After lying forgotten for a few centuries, attention was again directed to these relics of an extinct civilization, and their importance began to be appreciated; search was made throughout Europe, and such scattered remnants as survived their long neglect were gathered and deposited in public and private libraries. Eight or ten such collections were formed and their contents were for the most part published by Lord Kingsborough.

The *Codex Mendoza* was sent by the viceroy Mendoza to Charles V., and is now in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. It is a copy on European paper, coarsely done with a pen, and rolled instead of folded. Another manuscript in the Escurial Library is thought by Prescott to be the original of this codex, but Humboldt calls it also a copy. An explanation of the codex in Aztec and Spanish accompanies it, added by natives at the order of Mendoza. It has been several times published, and is divided in three parts, the first being historical, the second composed of tribute-rolls, and the third illustrative of domestic life and manners.[5]

The *Codex Vaticanus* (No. 3,738) is preserved at Rome in the Vatican Library, and nothing is known of its origin further than that it was copied by Pedro de los Rios, who was in Mexico in 1566. It is di-

[5] See *Mexican MSS.*, in the list of authorities in vol. i. of this work, for the location of this and other codices in Kingsborough's work. This codex was published also in *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv.; *Thevenot, Col. de Voy.*, 1696, tom. ii.; and by *Lorenzana*, in *Cortés, Hist. N. España*. 'D'après les recherches que j'ai faites, il paroît qu'il n'existe aujourd'hui en Europe que six collections de peintures mexicaines: celles de l'Escurial, de Bologne, de Veletri, de Rome, de Vienne et de Berlin.' *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., p. 215. See also on the Codex Mendoza, *Id.*, tom. ii., pp. 306–22; *Robertson's Hist. Amer.* (Lond., 1777), vol. ii., p. 480; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 40, 103–4; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 22–3, 25; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 116–29; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vi., p. 299.

Digitized by Google

vided into two parts, mythological and historical, and has a partial explanation in Italian. Another manuscript (No. 3,776), preserved in the same library, is written on skin, has been interpreted to some extent by Humboldt, and is supposed to pertain to religious rites. The *Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, formerly in the possession of M. Le Tellier, and now in the Royal Library at Paris, is nearly identical with the Codex Vaticanus (No. 3,738), having only one figure not found in that codex, but itself lacking many. It has, however, an explanation in Aztec and Spanish.[6]

The *Codex Borgian* was deposited in the College of the Propaganda at Rome by Cardinal Borgia, who found it used as a plaything by the children in the Gustiniani family. It is written on skin, and appears to be a ritual and astrologic almanac very similar to the Vatican manuscript (No. 3,776). It is accompanied by an interpretation or commentary by Fabrega. The *Codex Bologna*, preserved in the library of the Scientific Institute, was presented in 1665 to the Marquis de Caspi, by Count Valerio Zani. It is written on badly prepared skin, and appears to treat of astrology. A copy exists in the Museum of Cardinal Borgia at Veletri. Of the *Codex Vienna* nothing is known except that it was given in 1677 to the Emperor Leopold by the Duke of Saxe-Eisenach, and that its resemblance to the manuscripts at Rome and Veletri would indicate a common origin. Four additional manuscripts from the Bodleian Library at Oxford, and one belonging to M. De Fejérvary in Hungary, are published by Kingsborough. Nothing is known of the origin of these, nor has any interpretation been attempted, although the last named seems to be historical or chronological in its nature.[7]

[6] *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 173, 231–47; *Atlas*, pl. 13, 14, 26, 55–6, 60, tom. ii., p. 118; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 23; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 116, 125, 132–43; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vi., pp. 95, 155; *Wilson's Conq. Mex.*, p. 91. 'The fiction of some Spanish monk.' *Quarterly Review*, 1816, vol. xv., p. 448.

[7] *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 216–19, 248–56, with portions of the Bor-

Digitized by Google

I have said that many manuscripts, mostly copies, but probably some originals, were preserved from destruction, and retained in Mexico. Material is not accessible for a complete detailed history of these documents, nor does it seem desirable to attempt here to disentangle the numerous contradictory statements on the subject. The surviving remnants of the Tezcucan archives, with additions from various sources, were inherited by Ixtlilxochitl, the lineal descendant of Tezcuco's last king, who used them extensively if not always judiciously in his voluminous historical writings. The collection of which these documents formed a nucleus may be traced more or less clearly to the successive possession of Sigüenza, the College of San Pedro y San Pablo, Boturini Benaduci, the Viceregal Palace, Veytia, Ortega, Leon y Gama, Pichardo, Sanchez, and at last to the National Museum of the University of Mexico, its present and appropriate resting-place. Frequent interventions of government and private lawsuits interrupted this line of succession, and the collection by no means passed down the line intact. Under the care of several of the owners, large portions of the accumulation were scattered; but on the other hand, several by personal research greatly enlarged their store of aboriginal literature. While in Sigüenza's possession the documents were examined by the Italian traveller Gemelli Careri, through whose published work one of the most important of the pictured records was made known to the world. This latter has been often republished, and will be given as a specimen in this chapter.[8] Clavigero studied the manuscripts in the Jesuit College of San Pedro y San Pablo in 1759.[9]

gian Codex in plates 15, 27, 37. Some pages of the Vienna Codex were published in *Robertson's Hist. Amer.* (Lond., 1777), vol. ii., p. 482.

[8] *Careri, Giro del Mondo* (Naples, 1699–1700), tom. vi.; *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. ii., pp. 168–85, *Atlas*, pl. xxxii.; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. iv.; *Schoolcraft's Arch.*, vol. i., p. 20; *Prescott's Hist. Conq. Mex.* (Mex., 1846), tom. iii.; *García y Cubas, Atlas; Simon's Ten Tribes*, frontispiece; Gallatin, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 127, pronounces it an imitation and not a copy of a Mexican painting, whose authenticity may be doubted.

[9] *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 22–6.

Digitized by Google

Boturini was a most indefatigable collector, his accumulation in eight years amounting to over five hundred specimens, some of them probably antedating the Spanish Conquest. He published a catalogue of his treasures, which were for the most part confiscated by the government and deposited in the palace of the viceroy, where many of the documents are said to have been destroyed or damaged by dampness and want of care. Those retained by the collector were even more unfortunate, since the vessel on which they were sent to Europe was taken by an English pirate, and the papers have never since been heard of. Only a few fragments from the Boturini collection have ever been published, the most important of which, a history of the Aztec migration, has been often reproduced, and will be given in this chapter. The original was seen by Humboldt in the palace of the viceroy, and is now in the Mexican Museum.[10]

The confiscated documents passed by order of the Spanish government into the hands of Veytia, or at least he was permitted to use them in the preparation of his history,[11] and after his death and the completion of his work by Ortega, they passed, not without a lawsuit, into the possession of Leon y Gama, the astronomer.[12] On the death of Gama a part of his manuscripts were sold to Humboldt to form the Berlin collection published by Kingsborough;[13] the rest

[10] *Boturini, Catálogo,* in *Id., Idea; Aubin,* in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.,* tom. i., pp. xxxiii.; *Prescott's Mex.,* vol. i., pp. 159–60; *Humboldt, Vues,* tom. i., pp. 162–3, 226–8; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico,* tom. i., pp. 16–17, 23–5; *Gallatin,* in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.,* vol. i., pp. 120–1; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.,* tom. i., pp. xxi. et seq., p. 116. That portion of the Codex Mendoza given in *Cortés, Hist. N. España,* was from a copy in the Boturini collection. The manuscript describing the Aztec migration was published in Kingsborough, Schoolcraft, Prescott, (Mex., 1846), Humboldt's *Atlas,* Delafield's *Antiq. Amer.,* García y Cubas' *Atlas,* and I have in my Library two copies on long strips of paper folded in the original form.

[11] Ortega, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.,* tom. i., pp. xxii.–xxiv., says they were not given to Veytia as Boturini's executor, but simply intrusted to him for use in his work, and afterwards returned to the archives.

[12] Gondra, in *Prescott, Hist. Conq. Mex.* (Mex., 1846), tom. iii., p. ii., says that Gama was Sigüenza's heir.

[13] *Humboldt, Vues,* tom. i., pp. 163, 230–1.

Digitized by Google

came into the hands of Pichardo, Gama's executor, who spent his private fortune in improving his collection, described by Humboldt as the richest in Mexico. Many of Pichardo's papers were scattered during the revolution, and the remainder descended through his executor Sanchez to the Museum.[14] It is not unlikely, either, that the French intervention in later years was also the means of sending some picture-writings to Europe. Of the documents removed from the Mexican collections on different occasions and under different pretexts, M. Aubin claims to have secured the larger part, which are now in his collection in Paris, with copies of such manuscripts as he has been unable to obtain in the original form.[15]

In order to form a clear idea of the Aztec system of picture-writing, it will be well to consider first the general principles of hieroglyphic development, which are remarkably uniform and simple, and which may best be illustrated by our own language, supposing it, for convenience, to be only a spoken tongue.

It is evident that the first attempt at expressing ideas with the brush, pencil, or knife would be the representation of visible objects by pictures as accurately drawn as possible; a house, man, bird, or flower are drawn true to the life in all their details. But very soon, if a frequent repetition of the pictures were needed, a desire to save labor would prompt the artist to simplify his drawing, making only the lines necessary to show that a house, man, etc., were meant—a retrograde movement artistically considered, but intellectually the first step toward an alphabet. The representation of actions and conditions, such as a house on fire, a dead man, a flying bird, or a red flower, would naturally follow

[14] *Bustamante, Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt i., pp. ii.–iii.

[15] See list of part of M. Aubin's manuscripts in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom i., pp. lxxvi.–lxxviii.; also a very complete account of the different collections of Aztec picture-writings in the introductory chapter of *Domenech, Manuscrit Pictographique*.

Digitized by Google

The three grades of development mentioned belong to what may be termed representative picture-writing. It is to be noted that this writing has no relation to language; that is, the signs represent only visible objects and actions without reference to the words by which the objects are named or the actions expressed in our language. The pictures would have the same meaning to a Frenchman or German as to the painter.

The next higher phase of the art is known as symbolic picture-writing. It springs from the need that would soon be experienced of some method by which to express abstract qualities or invisible objects. The symbolic system is closely analogous in its earlier stages to the representative, as when the act of swimming is symbolized by a fish, a journey by a succession of footprints, night by a black square, light by an eye, power by a hand, the connection between the picture and the idea to be expressed being more or less obvious. Such a connection, real or imaginary, must always be supposed to have existed originally, since it is not likely that purely arbitrary symbols would be adopted, but nearly all the symbols would be practically arbitrary and meaningless to a would-be interpreter ignorant of the circumstances which originated their signification.

We have seen that the symbolic and representative stages of development are in many respects very like one to the other, and there are many hieroglyphic methods between the two, which it is very difficult to assign altogether to either. For instance, when a large painted heart expresses the name of a chief 'Big Heart;' or when a peculiarly formed nose is painted to represent the man to whom it belongs; or when the outlines of the house, man, bird, or flower, already mentioned, are so very much simplified as to lose all their apparent resemblance to the objects represented. It is also to be noted that the symbolic writing, as well as the representative, is entirely independent of language.

Digitized by Google

Picture-writing of the two classes described has been practised more or less, probably, by every savage tribe. By its aid records of events, such as tribal migrations, and the warlike achievements of noted chiefs, may be and doubtless have been made intelligible to those for whose perusal they were intended. But the key to such hieroglyphics is the actual acquaintance of the nation with each character and symbol, and it cannot long survive the practice of the art. In only two ways can the meaning of such records be preserved—the study of the art while actually in use by a people of superior culture, or its development into a hieroglyphic system of a higher grade. Neither of these conditions were fulfilled in the case of our Wild Tribes, but both were so to some extent, as we shall see, in the case of the Civilized Nations. Throughout the Pacific States rock-carvings and painted devices will be noted in a subsequent volume of this work; most of them doubtless had a meaning to their authors, although many may be attributed to the characteristic common to savages and children of whiling away time by tracing unmeaning sketches from fancy. All are meaningless now and must ever remain so. Full of meaning to the generation whose work they were, they served to keep alive in the following generation the memory of some distinguished warrior, or some element of aboriginal worship, but to the third generation they became nothing but objects of superstitious wonder. Even after coming into contact with Europeans the savage often indicates by an arrow and other figures carved on a forest-tree the number of an enemy and the direction they have taken, or leaves some other equally simple representative record.

The next and most important step in hieroglyphic development is taken when a phonetic element is introduced; when the pictures come into a relation, not before attained, with sounds or spoken language; when a picture of the human form signifies *man*,

Digitized by Google

not *homme* or *hombre;* a painted house, *house,* not *casa* or *maison.* Of this phonetic picture-writing in its simplest form, the illustrated rebuses—children's hieroglyphics—present a familiar example; as when charity is written by drawing in succession a chair, an eye, and a chest of tea, 'chair-eye-tea.' In pronouncing the whole word thus written, the sounds of the words represented by the pictures are used without the slightest reference to their meaning. To the Frenchman the same pictures 'chaise-œil-thé' would have no meaning.

In the example given the whole name of each word pictured is pronounced, but the number of words that could be produced by such combinations is limited, and the first improvement of the system would perhaps be to pronounce only the leading syllable or sound of the pictured word, and then charity might be painted 'cha(pel)-ri(ng)-tee(th).' By this system the same word might be written in a great many ways, and the next natural improvement would be the conventional adoption of certain easily pictured words to represent certain sounds, as 'hat,' 'hand,' or 'ham' for the sound *ha,* or simply the aspirated *h.* The next development would be effected by simplifying the outlines of the numerous pictures employed, which have now become too complicated and bulky for rapid writing. For a time this process of simplification would still leave a rude resemblance to the original picture; but at last the resemblance would become very faint, or only imaginary, and perhaps some arbitrary signs would be added—in other words, a phonetic alphabet would be invented, the highest degree of perfection yet achieved in this direction.

To recapitulate briefly: picture-writing may be divided, according to the successive stages of its development, into three classes, representative, symbolic, and phonetic, no one of which, except the last in its highest or alphabetic, and the first in its rudest, state, would be used alone by any people, but rather all

Digitized by Google

would be employed together. In the representative stage a 𓂝 might express a human hand, or as the system is perfected, a large, small, closed, black, or red hand; and finally 'Big Hand,' an Indian chief; and all this would be equally intelligible to American or Asiatic, savage or civilized, without respect to language.

Symbolic picture-writing indicates invisible or abstract objects, actions, or conditions, by the use of pictures supposed to be suggestive of them; the symbols are originally in a manner representative, and rarely, if ever, arbitrarily adopted. As a symbol the 𓂝 might express power, a blow, murder, the number one or five. These symbols are also independent of language.

Phonetic picture-writing represents not objects, but sounds by the picture of objects in whose names the sound occurs; first words, then syllables, then elementary sounds, and last—by modification of the pictures or the substitution of simpler ones—letters and an alphabet. According to this system the 𓂝 signifies successively the word 'hand,' the syllable 'hand' in handsome, the sound *ha* in happy, the aspiration *h* in head, and finally, by simplifying its form or writing it rapidly, the 𓂝 becomes 𓎛, and then the *h* of the alphabet.

The process of development which I have attempted to explain by imaginary examples, and illustrations in our own language, is probably applicable to a greater or less extent to all hieroglyphic systems; yet such hieroglyphics as have been preserved are of a mixed class, uniting in one word, or sentence, or document, all the forms, representative, symbolic, and phonetic; the Egyptians first spelled a word phonetically, and then, to make the meaning clear, represented the word by picture or symbol; the Chinese characters were originally pictures of visible objects, though they would not now be recognized as such, if the originals were not in existence. What proportion of

Digitized by Google

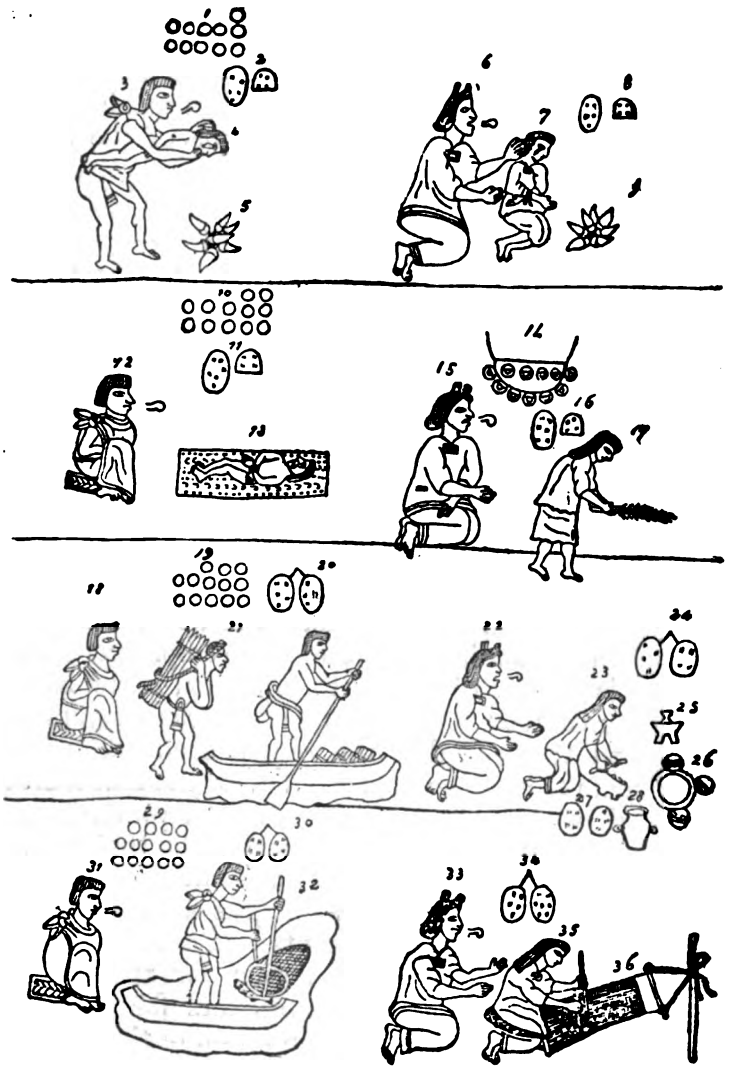
the letters in modern alphabets are simplified pictures, or representative characters, and what arbitrary, it is of course impossible to determine; many of them, however, are known to be of the former class.[16]

In the Aztec picture-writings all the grades or classes of pictures are found, except the last and highest—the alphabet. A very large part of the characters employed were representative; many conventional symbols are known; and the Aztecs undoubtedly employed phonetic paintings, though perhaps not very extensively in the higher grades of development.

The plate on the opposite page is a reproduction of a part of the *Codex Mendoza* from Kingsborough's work. Its four groups describe the education of the Aztec child under the care of its parents. In the first group the father (fig. 3) is punishing his son by holding him over the fumes of burning chile (fig. 5); while the mother threatens her daughter with the same punishment. Figs. 2 and 8 represent, like 11, 16, 20, 24, 30, and 34 in the other groups, the child's allowance of tortillas at each meal. In the second group the son is punished by being stretched naked on the wet ground, having his hands tied, while the girl is forced to sweep, or, as she has no tear in her eye, perhaps is merely being taught to sweep instead of being punished. In the third group the father employs his boys in bringing wood (fig. 21) or reeds, either on the back or in a canoe; and the mother teaches her daughter to make tortillas (fig. 27), and the use of the metate and other household utensils (figs. 23, 25, 26, 28). In the last group the son learns the art of fishing, and the daughter that of weaving.

[16] In the Egyptian development, a pictured mouth first signified the word *ro*, then the syllable *ro*, and finally the letter or sound *r*, although it is doubtful if they made much use of the third stage, except in writing some foreign words. Many of the Chinese pictures are double, one being determinative of sound, the other of sense; as if in English we should express the sound *pear* by a picture of the fruit of that name, the fruit *pear* by the same picture accompanied by a tree, the word *pare* by the same picture and a knife, the word *pair* by the picture and two points etc. *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 177–9; *Tylor's Researches*, pp. 98–101.

Digitized by Google



EDUCATION OF AZTEC CHILDREN.

Thus far all the pictures are purely representative; the remainder are more or less symbolic. The small circles (figs. 1, 10, 19, 29) are numerals, as explained in a preceding chapter, and indicate the age of the

Digitized by Google

children, eleven, twelve, thirteen, and fourteen years, respectively; the character issuing from the mouth of the parents is the symbol of speech, and indicates that the person to whom it is attached is speaking; the tears in the children's eyes are symbols of the weeping naturally caused by the punishment inflicted; and fig. 14 is interpreted to be a symbol of night, indicating that the child was forced to sweep at night.[17]

Many of the Aztec symbols are of clearly representative origin; as, footprints, symbols of travelling; tongues, of speech; a man sitting on the ground, of an earthquake; painted drops, of water; and other signs for day, night, air, movement, etc., which are more or less clear. But of others, as the serpent, symbol of time, the origin is not affirmed. To define the extent to which the symbolic writing prevailed is very difficult, because many of the characters which were, originally at least, representative, would appear to the uninitiated purely arbitrary; and it is not improbable that many signs may have had a double meaning according to the connection in which they were employed. The system is capable of indefinite expansion in the hands of the priesthood for purposes of religious mystification; and the fact that the religious and astrologic documents seem to contain but few of the representative and phonetic signs by which other paintings are interpreted lends some probability to the theory that the priests had a partially distinct symbolic system of their own. The Abbé Brasseur goes so far as to say that all the historical documents had a double meaning, one for the initiated, another for the masses. The use of symbols doubtless accounts for the difficulty experienced in the interpretation of the picture-writings which have been preserved, and for the variety of extravagant theories that have been founded on them.

The intermediate method already mentioned as

[17] *Codex Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. i., pl. lxi. Explanation, vol. v., pp. 96–7. See p. 241 of this volume.

Digitized by Google

coming between the purely representative and the symbolic was very extensively employed by the Aztecs in writing the names of places and persons, nearly all of which were derived from natural objects. Examples of this method are: Itzcoatl, 'stone (or obsidian) serpent;' Chapultepec, 'hill of the grasshopper;' Tzompanco, 'place of skulls;' Chimalpopoca, 'smoking shield;' Acamapitzin, 'hand holding reeds;' Macuilxochitl, 'five flowers;' Quauhtinchan, 'house of the eagle;' all written by the simple pictures of the objects named. The picture expressing a person's name was attached by a fine line to his head.

The use of the phonetic element by the Aztecs was first noticed by the early missionaries in their efforts to teach church forms. The natives, eager or obliged to learn the words so essential to their salvation but so new to their ear, aided their memory by writing phonetically in a rude way the strange words. Amen was expressed by the symbol of water, *atl*, joined to a maguey, *metl*, forming the sounds *atl-metl* or *a-mĕ*, sufficiently accurate for their purpose. Pater-noster was likewise written with a flag, *pantli*, and a prickly pear, *nochtli;* or sometimes a stone, *tetl*, was introduced before and after the prickly pear, the whole reading *pa(ntli)-te(tl)-noch(tli)-te(tl)*. Here it will be observed that the sound only of the objects employed is considered, with no reference to their meaning. The name Teocaltitlan is an excellent specimen of the syllabic-phonetic writing. It is written in one of the manuscripts of the Boturini collection by a pictured pair of lips, *tentli*, for the syllable *te;* footsteps, symbolic of a road, *otli*, for *o;* a house, *calli*, for *cal;* and teeth, *tlantli*, for *tlan*, *ti* being a common connective syllable. The termination *coatl* is a very frequent one in Aztec words, and is often written phonetically by a 'pot,' *comitl*, surmounted by the symbol of water, *atl*, *co-atl;* but *coatl* means 'serpent,' and is also written representatively by a simple picture of that reptile. Matlatlan, 'net-place,'

Digitized by Google

is written by pictured teeth, *tlantli*, phonetic, and a net, *matla*, representative. Mixcoatl, 'cloudy serpent,' is expressed by the representative sign of a cloud, *mixtli*, and by the word *coatl* phonetically written, as before explained. These examples suffice to illustrate the system. There is no evidence that the Aztecs ever reached the highest or alphabetic stage of hieroglyphics, and so far as is known, they only used the syllabic method in writing names, and foreign words after the coming of the Spaniards. Still there is some reason to suspect that the phonetic element was much more in use than has been supposed, and that many characters, which, hitherto considered by students as representative and symbolic signs, have yielded no meaning, may yet prove to be phonetic, and may throw much light on a complex and mysterious subject.[18]

[18] 'On trouve même chez les Mexicains des vestiges de ce genre d'hieroglyphes que l'on appelle phonétiques, et qui annonce des rapports non avec la chose, mais avec la langue parlée.' *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., p. 191, also pp. 162–202. 'But, although the Aztecs were instructed in all the varieties of hieroglyphical painting, they chiefly resorted to the clumsy method of direct representation.' *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 97, also pp. 88–107. 'It is to M. Aubin, of Paris, a most zealous student of Mexican antiquities, that we owe our first clear knowledge of a phenomenon of great scientific interest in the history of writing. This is a well-defined system of phonetic characters, which Clavigero and Humboldt do not seem to have been aware of.' *Tylor's Researches*, p. 95, also pp. 89–100. 'Dans les compositions grossières, dont les auteurs se sont presque exclusivement occupés jusqu'ici, elle (l'écriture Aztèque) est fort semblable aux rébus que l'enfance mêle à ses jeux. Comme ces rébus elle est généralement phonétique, mais souvent aussi confusément idéographique et symbolique. Tels sont les noms de villes et de rois, cités par Clavigero, d'après Purchas et Lorenzana et d'après Clavigero, par une foule d'auteurs.' *Aubin*, in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. xliv., xxx.–lxxiv. See also on Aztec hieroglyphics and their explanation, *Buschmann, Ortsnamen*, tom. i., pp. 37–48; *Gondra*, in *Prescott, Hist. Conq. Mex.* (Mex., 1846), tom. iii.; *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt ii., pp. 29–45; *Ewbank*, in *Schoolcraft's Arch.*, vol. iv., pp. 453–6; *Mendoza*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., pp. 895–904; *Ramirez*, in *Id.*, tom. iii., pp. 69–70; *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 5, 77–87, 96, 112–13; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 187–94; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 49–50; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 5; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 131–7; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 37–8, 58; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., pp. 77, 93; *Foster's Pre-Hist. Races*, p. 322; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 126, 165–8; *Ramirez, Proceso de Resid.*; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 13–16; *Lubbock's Pre-Hist. Times*, p. 279; *N. Amer. Review*, 1839, vol. xlviii., p. 289, 1831, vol. xxxii., pp. 98–107; *Amer. Quart. Review*, June 1827, vol. i., p. 438.

Digitized by Google

On the two following pages is a copy of the painting already referred to as having been published by Gemelli Careri, Humboldt, Kingsborough, Prescott, and others, and which I take from the work of Ramirez as being probably the most reliable source.[19] This painting, preserved in the National Museum, is about twenty by twenty-seven inches, on maguey paper of the finest quality, now mounted on linen. I do not propose to attempt in this chapter any interpretation of the painting, to discuss the interpretations of others, or to investigate its historical importance. I simply present the document as an illustration of the Aztec picture-writing, with interpretations of some of the figures as given by Señor Ramirez, leaving to another volume all consideration of the old absurd theory that a part of the painting (figs. 1–6) pictures the flood, the preservation of Coxcox, the Aztec Noah, and the confusion of tongues.

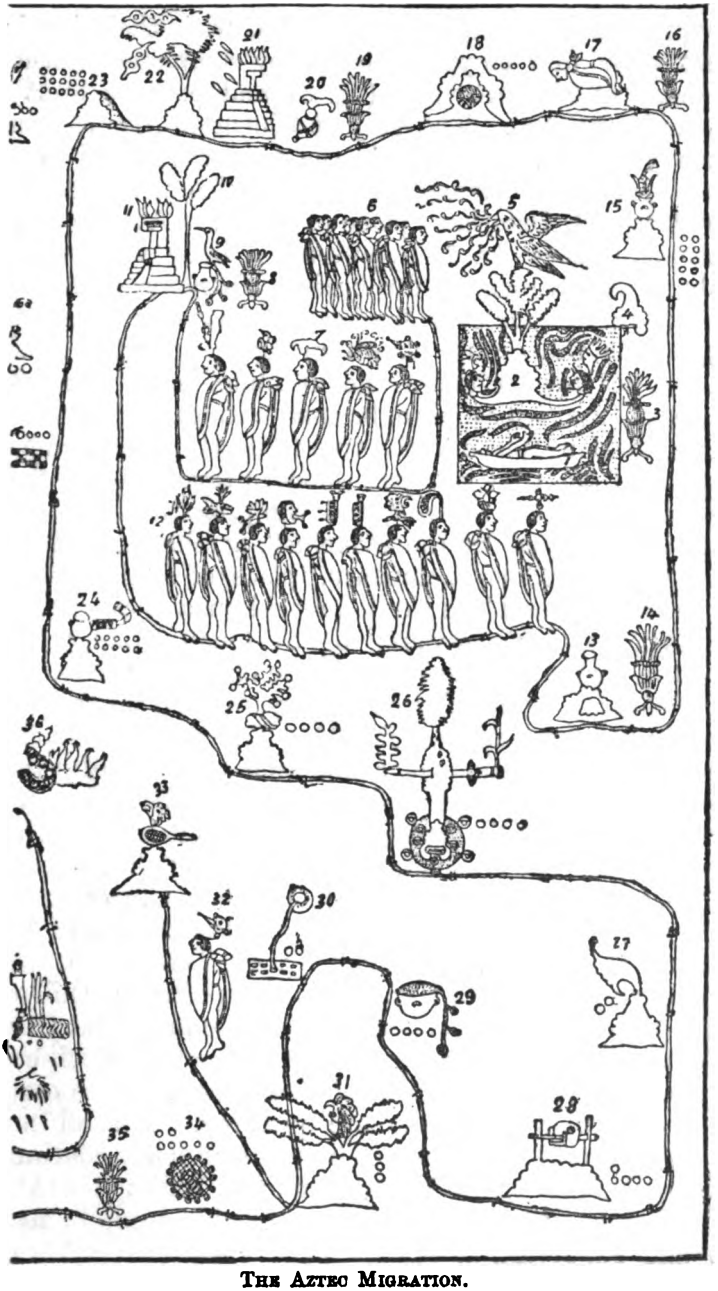
The winding parallel lines, with frequent footprints, by which the different groups of figures are united, are symbols of a journey, and there is little doubt that the whole painting describes the migrations or wanderings of the Aztec people. The square at the right represents the place from which they started. Figs. 1 and 2 perhaps express phonetically its name, but their interpretation is doubtful. It was evidently a watery region, probably a lake island in the valley of Mexico. Fig. 3 is a *xiuhmolpilli*, 'bundle of grass,' symbol of the Aztec cycle of fifty-two years; fig. 4 is a 'curved mountain,' or the city of Culhuacan, on the borders of the lake; fig. 5 is a bird speaking to the people (fig. 6), the tongues issuing from its mouth being, as I have said, the usual symbols of speech. It was a popular tradition among the Aztecs that the voice of a bird started them on their wanderings. The fifteen human forms (figs. 7, 12) are the chiefs of the migrating tribes, whose names are hieroglyphically

[19] In *García y Cubas, Atlas*, with an interpretation.

Digitized by Google

THE AZTEC MIGRATION.

Digitized by Google



THE AZTEC MIGRATION.

Digitized by Google

expressed by the figures connected with their heads. At their first stopping-place they completed another 'sheaf' of fifty-two years (fig. 8), and perhaps built a temple (fig. 11). The stay at Cincotlan (fig. 15) was ten years, as indicated by the ten circles; fig. 17 is interpreted by Gemelli Careri Tocolco, 'humiliation,' and fig. 18, Oztotlan, 'place of caves.' At the next stopping-place fig. 20 represents a body wrapped in the Mexican manner for burial; his name as shown by the character over his head is that of the central figure in the group shown in fig. 7. As this name does not appear again, the meaning is perhaps that one of the tribes here became extinct. Fig. 25 is Tetzapotlan, 'place of the tree *tetzapotl*.' The generic name of the tree is *tzapotl* (modern *zapote*), but a particular species is *tetzapotl*, and the prefix *te* is phonetically expressed by the stone, *tetl*, at the base of the tree. Fig. 28 is Tzompanco, 'place of skulls,' representing supposably a skull impaled on a stick; fig. 29 is Apazco, 'earthen vase;' fig. 31, Quauhtitlan, 'place of the eagle,' and here one of the chiefs of tribes, the right-hand figure of group 7, separates from the rest to form a settlement at fig. 33. The time of stopping at each place and the completion of each fifty-two years are clearly indicated, and need not be mentioned here. Fig. 34 is Azcapuzalco, 'the ant-hill;' fig. 83 is Chalco, 'the chalchiuite stone;' fig. 36, Tlecohuatl, *tletl-cohuatl*, or 'fire-serpent;' fig. 39, Chicomoztoc, 'chicome-oztotl,' 'seven caves;' the lower part of fig. 47 is the symbol of water; fig. 48, Teozomaco, 'the monkey of stone.' Fig. 50 is Chapultepec, 'hill of the locust or grasshopper.' After the arrival at Chapultepec, a great variety of events, most of which can be identified with traditional occurrences in the early history of the Aztecs, are pictured. I shall not attempt to follow them. The route seems to continue toward fig. 80, Tlatelolco; but five tribes (fig. 53), all but one identical with those of the group in figs. 7 and 12, return as fugitives or prisoners (fig. 51) to

Digitized by Google

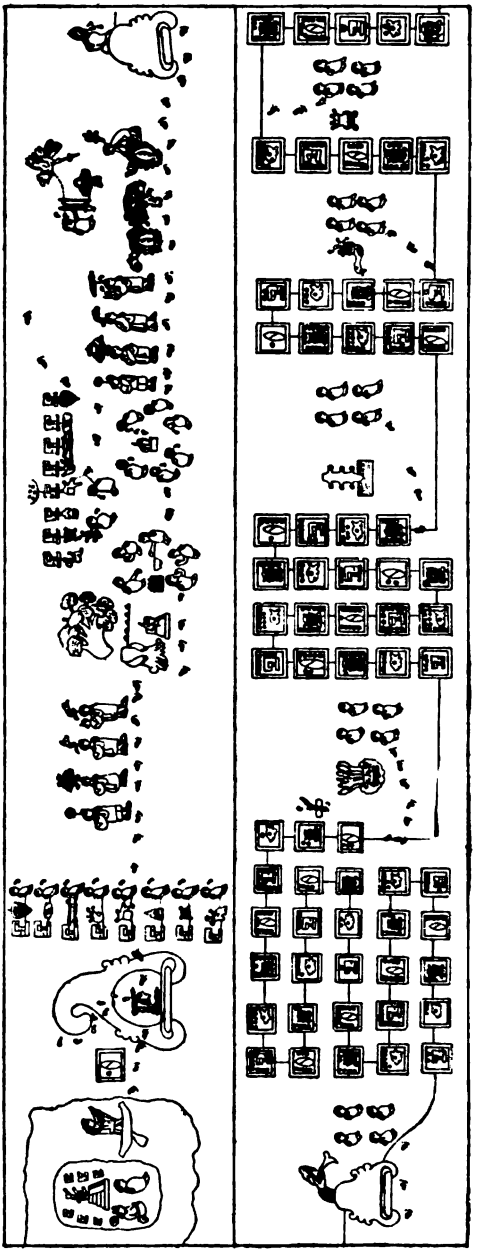
Culhuacan (fig. 54), the original starting-point. Fig. 61, and one of the characters of fig. 65, are the symbols of combat or war. Fig. 67 is Inixiuhcan, 'birthplace,' the picture representing a woman who has just given birth to a child. Fig. 74 is Tenochtitlan, 'place of *tenochtli*,' the tenochtli being a species of nopal represented in the figure, and being also the sign of the name of Tenoch, one of the original chiefs of the group in fig. 12, and also seen in the group in fig. 81. Six of the original tribes seem to have reached Tenochtitlan, afterward Mexico, with the tribe that joined them at Chapultepec; nine having perished or been scattered on the way, which agrees with the historical tradition. The preceding brief sketch will give an idea of a document the full description and interpretation of which, even if possible, would require much space, and would not be appropriately included here.

The picture-writing shown on the following pages is the one already mentioned as having formed part of the Boturini collection, is equally important with the one already described, and is preserved like the former in the National Museum. This painting, like the other, describes a migration, indicated by the line of footprints. Starting from an island, a passage by boat is indicated to Culhuacan, 'the curved mountain,' on the mainland. In this painting we have not only the number of years spent in the migration, and at each stopping-place, but the years are named according to the system described in the last chapter, and the migration began in the year Ce Tecpatl. The character within that of Culhuacan is the name of Huitzilopochtli, the great Aztec god. Next we have in a vertical line the names of the eight tribes, hieroglyphically written, which started on the migration, the Chalcas, Matlaltzincas, Tepanecs, etc., agreeing with the tradition, except three which cannot be accurately interpreted. The first stopping-place after Culhuacan was Coatlicamac, the first figure in the lower column of the first page. Here

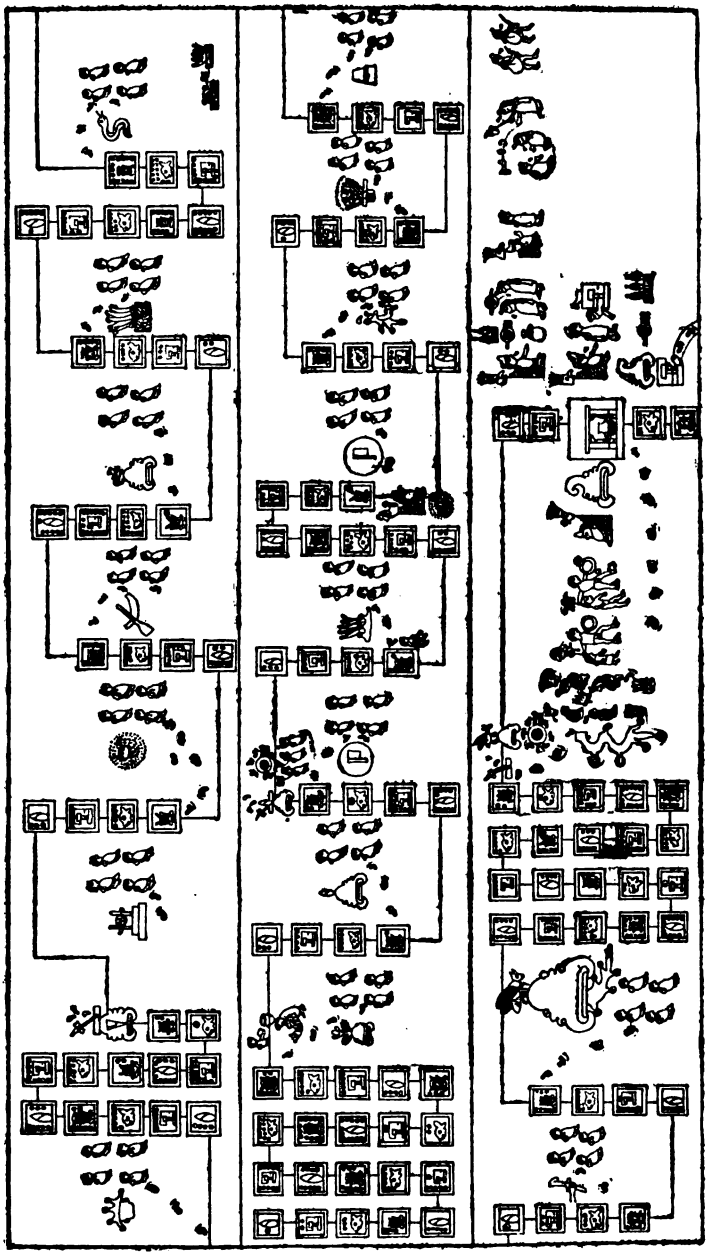
Digitized by Google

PICTURE-RECORD OF THE AZTEC MIGRATION.

FROM THE BOTURINI COLLECTION.



Digitized by Google



Digitized by Google

they remained twenty-eight years, from Ome Calli to Yey Tecpatl, as indicated by the squares connected by a line. The last but one of these years completed the cycle, and is represented by a picture showing the process of kindling fire by friction, instead of the bundle of grass as before. Between the groups of small squares are the hieroglyphic names of the stopping-places, which are in the following order, beginning with the second column of the first page, Coatlicamac, Tollan, Atlicalaquiam, Tlemaco, Atotonilco, Apazco, Tzompanco, Xaltocan, Acolhuacan, Ehecatepec, Tolpetlac, Coatitlan (where they first cultivated the maguey), Huixachtitlan (where they made pulque from the maguey), Tecpayocan, Pantitlan, 'place of the flag,' Amalinalpan, Azcapuzalco, Pantitlan, Acolnahuac, Popotla, ———, Atlacuihuayan (Tacubaya), Chapultepec, Acocolco, and Culhuacan (as prisoners). The migration is not brought down to the arrival in Tenochtitlan, but the chronology is perfectly recorded. Several of the names of places are indicated by the same hieroglyphic signs as in the other painting. It will be observed that there is nothing to locate the starting-place in the north-west. It was probably either on the lakes of Anáhuac, or in the south beyond what is now the isthmus of Tehuantepec. Both of these paintings will be noticed in the historical investigations to be given in Volume V. of this work.

The hieroglyphic paintings afford no test of the Aztec painter's skill; in an artistic point of view the picture-writing had probably been nearly stationary for a long time before the Conquest. The pictures were in most cases conventionally distorted; indeed, to permit different painters to exercise their skill and fancy in depicting the various objects required would have destroyed the value of the paintings as records. The first progressional steps had taught the native scribes to paint only so much of representative and symbolic objects as was necessary to their being understood; convenience and custom would naturally

Digitized by Google

tend to fix the forms at an early period. Bold outlines and bright contrasted colors were the desiderata; elegance was not aimed at. Hence no argument respecting the Aztec civilization can be drawn from the rude mechanical execution of these painted characters.

The American hieroglyphics contain no element to prove their foreign origin, and there is no reason to look upon them as other than the result of original native development. Whether enough of the painted records have been preserved to throw much additional light on aboriginal history may well be doubted; but it is certain that great progress will be made in the art of interpreting such as have been saved, when able men shall devote their lives to a faithful study of this indigenous American literature as they have to the study of Old World hieroglyphics.[20]

I will, in conclusion, call attention to Boturini's statement that knotted cords, similar to the aboriginal Peruvian *quipus*, but called in Aztec *nepohualtzitzin*, were also employed to record events in early times, but had gone out of use probably before the Aztec supremacy. This author even claims to have found one of these knotted records in a very dilapidated condition in Tlascala. His statement is repeated by many writers; if any information on the subject is

[20] 'On distingue dans les peintures mexicaines des têtes d'une grandeur énorme, un corps excessivement court, et des pieds qui, par la longueur des doigts, resemblent à des griffes d'oiseau....Tout ceci indique l'enfance de l'art; mais il ne faut pas oublier que des peuples qui expriment leurs idées par des peintures....attachent aussi peu d'importance à peindre correctement que les savans d'Europe à employer une belle écriture dans leurs manuscrits.' *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. i., pp. 198–200; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 653–4. Valades in 1579 gave an American phonetic alphabet, representing each letter by an object of whose name it was the initial in some language not the Aztec. Nothing is known of it. *Id.*, tom. i., p. lxx. Borunda gives a *Clave General de Geroglificos Americanos*, in *Voz de la Patria*, 1830, tom. iv., No. iii.—an extract in *Leon y Gama, Dos Piedras*, pt ii., p. 33. Sr Eufemio Mendoza, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., p. 899, attaches some importance to Borunda's efforts. On the difficulty of interpretation, see *Boturini, Idea*, p. 116; *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. vi., p. 87; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 149; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 291; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 107.

Digitized by Google

contained in the old authorities, it has escaped my notice.[21]

[21] *Boturini, Idea*, pp. 85–7; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Méj.*, tom. i., p. 5; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 194; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 656. Some additional references on hieroglyphics are *Id.*, pp. 244, 591–2, 650–6, tom. ii., p. 86; *Norman's Rambles in Yuc.*, pp. 293–5; *Domenech's Deserts*, vol. i., pp. 407–8; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., pp. 27–8; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 175–6; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 266–7; *Dapper, Neue Welt*, p. 300; *Delafield's Antiq. Amer.*, p. 42; *Bonnycastle's Span. Amer.*, vol. i., p. 52.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XVIII.

ARCHITECTURE AND DWELLINGS OF THE NAHUAS.

ARCHITECTURE OF THE ANCIENT NATIONS—GENERAL FEATURES OF NAHUA ARCHITECTURE—THE ARCH—EXTERIOR AND INTERIOR DECORATIONS—METHOD OF BUILDING—INCLINED PLANES—SCAFFOLDS—THE USE OF THE PLUMMET—BUILDING MATERIALS—POSITION AND FORTIFICATION OF TOWNS—MEXICO TENOCHTITLAN—THE GREAT CAUSEWAYS—QUARTERS AND WARDS OF MEXICO—THE MARKET-PLACE—FOUNTAINS AND AQUEDUCTS—LIGHT-HOUSES AND STREET-WORK—CITY OF TEZCUCO—DWELLINGS—AZTEC GARDENS—TEMPLE OF HUITZILOPOCHTLI—TEMPLE OF MEXICO—OTHER TEMPLES—TEOCALLI AT CHOLULA AND TEZCUCO.

I SHALL describe in this chapter the cities, towns, temples, palaces, dwellings, roads, bridges, aqueducts, and other products of Nahua architectural and constructive art, as they were found and described by the Spaniards in the sixteenth century. Monuments of this branch of Nahua art, chiefly in the form of ruined temples, or *teocallis*, are still standing, and have been examined in detail by modern travellers. The results of these later observations will be given in Volume IV. of this work, and I have therefore thought it best to omit them altogether here. In order to fully comprehend the subject, the reader will find it advantageous to study and compare the two views taken from different standpoints It is for a general and doubtless exaggerated account of the grandeur and extent of the Nahua structures, rather than any details of

Digitized by Google

their construction, that we must look to the Spanish chronicles; and it is also to be noted that the descriptions by the conquerors are confined almost entirely to the lake region of Anáhuac, the buildings of other regions being dismissed with a mere mention. In this connection, therefore, the supplementary view in another volume will be of great value, since the grandest relics of Nahua antiquity have been found outside of Anáhuac proper, while the oft-mentioned magnificent temples and palaces of the lake cities have left no traces of their original splendor.

The Olmecs, Totonacs, and others of the earlier Nahua nations are credited by tradition with the erection of grand edifices, but the Toltecs, in this as in all other arts, far surpassed their predecessors, and even the nations that succeeded them. I have in a preceding chapter sufficiently explained the process by which this ancient people has been credited with all that is wonderful in the past, and it will be readily understood how a magnifying veneration for past glories, handed down from father to son with ever-accumulating exaggeration, has transformed the Toltec buildings into the most exquisite fairy structures, incomparably superior to anything that met the Spanish gaze. With architectural as with other traditions, however, I have little or nothing to do in this chapter, but pass on to a consideration of this branch of art in later times.

Respect for the gods made it necessary that the temples should be raised above the ordinary buildings, besides which their height made them more conspicuous to the immense multitudes which frequently gathered about them on feast-days, rendering them also more secure from desecration and easier of defence when used as citadels of refuge, as they often were. But as the primitive ideas of engineering possessed by the Aztecs and their insufficient tools did not permit them to combine strength with slightness, the only way the required elevation

Digitized by Google

could be attained was by placing the building proper upon a raised, solid, pyramidal substructure. The prevalence of earthquakes may also have had something to do with this solid form of construction. In the vicinity of the lake of Mexico, the swampy nature of the soil called for a broad, secure foundation; here, then, the substructure was not confined to the temples, but was used in building public edifices, palaces, and private dwellings.

Another general feature of Nahua architecture was the small elevation of the buildings proper, compared with their extent and solidity. These rarely exceeded one story in height, except some of the chapels, which had two or even three stories, but in these cases the upper floors were invariably of wood.

Whether the Aztecs were acquainted with our arch, with a vertical key-stone, is a mooted point. Clavigero gives plates of a semi-spherical *estufa* constructed in this manner, and asserts, further, that an arch of this description was found among the Tezcucan ruins, but I find no authority for either picture or assertion. The relics that have been examined in modern times, moreover, seem to show conclusively that key-stone arches were unknown in America before the advent of the Europeans, though arches made of overlapping stones were often cut in such a manner as to resemble them. The chaplain Diaz, who accompanied Grijalva, mentions an 'arc antique' on the east coast, but gives no description of it. Nevertheless, as the 'antique' would in this connection imply a peculiar, if not a primitive, construction, it is not probable that the arch he saw had a key-stone.[1]

As decorations, we find balconies and galleries supported by square or round pillars, which were often monoliths; but as they were adorned with neither capital nor base, the effect must have been rather bare.

[1] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iv., p. 212; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 27; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 658

Digitized by Google

Battlements and turrets, doubtless first used as means of defence, became later incorporated with decorative art. The bareness of the walls was relieved by cornices and stucco-work of various designs, the favorite figures being coiled snakes, executed in low-relief, which probably had a religious meaning. Sometimes they were placed in groups, as upon the temple walls at Mexico, at other times one serpent twined and twisted round every door and window of an apartment until head and tail met. Carved lintels and door-posts were common, and statues frequently adorned the court and approaches. Glossy surfaces seem to have had a special attraction for the Nahuas, and they made floors, walls, and even streets, extremely smooth. The walls and floors were first coated with lime, gypsum, or ochre, and then polished.

No clear accounts are given of the method of erecting houses. Brasseur de Bourbourg thinks that because the natives of Vera Paz were seen by him to use scaffolds like ours, that these were also employed in Mexico in former times, and that stones were raised on inclined beams passing from scaffold to scaffold, which is not very satisfactory reasoning.[2]

However this may be, we are told by Torquemada that the Aztecs used derricks to hoist heavy timbers with.[3] Others, again, say that walls were erected by piling earth on both sides, which served both as scaffolds and as inclined planes up which heavy masses might be drawn or rolled;[4] but although this was undoubtedly the method adopted by the Miztecs, it was too laborious and primitive to have been general,[5] and certainly could not have been em-

[2] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 658.

[3] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 274. Sahagun, in describing how the people raised a mast to the god of fire, says: 'Atábanle diez maromas por la mitad de él....y como le iban levantando, ponianle unos maderos atados de dos en dos, y unos puntales sobre que descanzase.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 143.

[4] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.* (Translation, Lond., 1726), vol. iii., p. 280.

[5] *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 663; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 201-2.

Digitized by Google

ployed in building the three-story chapels upon Huitzilopochtli's pyramid. The perfectly straight walls built by the Nahuas would seem to indicate the use of the plummet, and we are told that the line was used in making roads.[6] Trees were felled with copper and flint axes, and drawn upon rollers to their destination,[7] a mode of transport used, no doubt, with other cumbrous material. The implements used to cut stone blocks seem to have been entirely of flint.[8]

The wood for roofs, turrets, and posts was either white or yellow cedar, palm, pine, cypress, or oyametl, of which beams and fine boards were made. Nails they had none; the smaller pieces must therefore have been secured by notches, lapping, or pressure.[9] The different kinds of stone used in building were granite, alabaster, jasper, porphyry, certain 'black, shining stones,' and a red, light, porous, yet hard stone, of which rich quarries were discovered near Mexico in Ahuitzotl's reign.[10] After the overflow of the lake, which happened at this time, the king gave orders that this should be used ever after for buildings in the city.[11] *Tecali*, a transparent stone resembling alabaster, were sometimes used in the temples for window-glass.[12] Adobes, or sun-dried bricks, were chiefly used in the dwellings of the poorer classes, but burnt bricks and tiles are mentioned as being sold in the

[6] *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 63; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 201.

[7] 'With their Copper Hatchets, and Axes cunnyngly tempered, they fell those trees, and hewe them smooth....and boaring a hole in one of the edges of the beame, they fasten the rope, then sette their slaues vnto it.... putting round blocks vnder the timber.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x.; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 141.

[8] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 205; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318.

[9] Peter Martyr, dec. v., lib. x., states that they bored holes in beams. They may therefore have known the use of wooden bolts, but this is doubtful.

[10] 'Le *Tetzontli* (pierre de cheveux), espèce d'amygdaloïde poreuse, fort dure, est une lave refroidie. On la trouve en grande quantité auprès de la petite ville de San-Agostin Tlalpan, ou de las Cuevas, à 4 l. S. de Mexico.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 381.

[11] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 202; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 663–4.

[12] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 8.

Digitized by Google

markets.[13] Roofs were covered with clay, straw, and palm-leaves. Lime was used for mortar, which was so skilfully used, say the old writers, that the joints were scarcely perceptible;[14] but probably this was partly owing to the fact that the walls were almost always either whitewashed, or covered with ochre, gypsum, or other substances.

Frequent wars, and the generally unsettled state of the country, made it desirable that the towns should be situated near enough each other to afford mutual protection, which accounts for the great number of towns scattered over the plateau. The same causes made a defensible position the primary object in the choice of a site. Thus we find them situated on rocks accessible only by a difficult and narrow pathway, raised on piles over the water, or surrounded by strong walls, palisades, earthworks and ditches.[15] Although they fully understood the necessity of settling near lakes and rivers to facilitate intercourse, yet the towns on the sea-coast were usually a league or two from the shore, and, as they had no maritime trade, harbors were not sought for.[16]

The towns extended over a comparatively large surface, owing to the houses being low and detached, and each provided with a court and garden. The larger cities seem to have been laid out on a regular plan, especially in the centre, but the streets were narrow; indeed, there was no need of wider ones, as all trans-

[13] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 205. Cortés mentions a 'suelo ladrillado' at Iztapalapan, *Cartas*, p. 83, and Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xii., both *adobes* and *ladrillos* in speaking of building-material.

[14] *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 75; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 665. 'L'ignorante Ricercatore nega a' Messicani la cognizione, e l'uso della calcina; ma consta per la testimonianza di tutti gli Storici del Messico, per la matricola de' tributi, e sopratutto per gli edifizj antichi finora sussistenti, che tutte quelle Nacioni faceano della calcina il medecimo uso, che fanno gli Europei.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 205, tom. iv., pp. 212–13. Both Cortés, *Cartas*, p. 60, and Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. iv., mention walls of dry stone, which would show that mortar was sometimes dispensed with, in heavy structures; but Bernal Diaz, *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 43, contradicts this instance.

[15] At Sienchimalen. *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 57.

[16] *Brasseur de Bourboury, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 89–90

Digitized by Google

portation was done by carriers, and there were no vehicles. At intervals a market-place, with a fountain in the centre, a square filled with temples, or a line of shady trees, relieved the monotony of the long rows of low houses.

The largest and most celebrated of the Nahua cities was Mexico Tenochtitlan.[17] It seems that about the year 1325 the Aztecs, weary of their unsettled condition, and hard pressed by the Culhuas, sought the marshy western shore of the lake of Mexico. Here, on the swamp of Tlalcocomocco, they came upon a stone, upon which it was said a Mexican priest had forty years before sacrificed a certain prince Copil. From this stone had sprung a nopal, upon which, at the time it was seen by the Mexican advance guard, sat an eagle, holding in his beak a serpent. Impelled by a divine power, a priest dived into a pool near the

[17] Mexico is generally taken to be derived from Mexitl, or Mexi, the other name of Huitzilopochtli, the favorite god and leader of the Aztecs; many, however, think that it comes from *mexico*, springs, which were plentiful in the neighborhood. Tenochtitlan comes from *teonochtli*, divine nochtli, the fruit of the nopal, a species of wild cactus, and *titlan*, composed of *tetl*, stone or rock, and *an*, an affix to denote a place, a derivation which is officially accepted, as may be seen from the arms of the city. Others say that it is taken from *Tenuch*, one of the leaders of the Aztecs who settled upon the small island of Pantitlan, both of which names would together form the word. 'Ce nom, qui veut dire *Ville de la Tuna*....Le fruit de cet arbre est appelé *nochtli* en mexicain, car le nom de tuna....est tiré de la langue des insulaires de l'île de Cuba....On a aussi prétendu que le véritable nom de Mexico était Quauhnochtitlan, ce qui veut dire *Figuier de l'Aigle*....D'autres, enfin, prétendent que ce figuier d'Inde n'était pas un *nochtli* proprement dit, mais d'une espèce sauvage qu'on appelle *tenochtli*, ou de celle que les naturels nomment *teonochtli* ou figue divine.' 'Elle avait pris du dieu Mexix celui de Mexico.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., pp. 174–5. 'Los Indios, dezian; y dizen oy Mexico Tenuchtitlan; y assi se pone en las Prouisiones Reales.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiv. 'Tenoxtitlàn, que significa, Tunal en piedra.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 466. The natives 'ni llaman Mexico, sino Tenuchtitlan.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 293. 'Tenuchtitlan, que significa fruta de piedra.' 'Tambien dizen algunos, que tuuo esta ciudad nombre de su primer fundador, que fue Tenuch, hijo segundo de Iztacmixcoatl, cuyos hijos y decendientes poblaron ....esta tierra....Tampoco falta quien piense que se dixo de la grana, que llaman Nuchiztli, la qual sale del mesmo cardon nopal y fruta nuchtli.... Tambien afirman otros que se llama Mexico de los primeros fundadores que se dixeron Mexiti.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 113–15; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 180; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 168–9. '*Tenochtitlan*, c'est-à-dire, auprès des nopals du rocher.' 'Ti-tlan est pris pour le lieu.' *Brasseur de Bourboura Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 446–9.

Digitized by Google

stone, and there had an interview with Tlaloc, god of waters,[18] who gave his permission to the people to settle on the spot.[19] Another legend relates that Huitzilopochtli appeared to a priest in a dream, and told him to search for a nopal growing out of a stone in the lake, with an eagle and serpent upon it, and there found a city.[20]

The temple, at first a mere hut, was the first building erected, and by trading fish and fowl for stone, they were soon enabled to form a considerable town about it. Piles were driven into the soft bottom of the lake, and the intermediate spaces filled with stones, branches, and earth, to serve as a foundation for houses.[21]

Each succeeding ruler took pains to extend and beautify the city. Later on, Tlatelulco,[22] which had early separated from Mexico Tenochtitlan, was reunited to it by King Axayacatl, which greatly increased the size of the latter city. Tezcuco is said to have exceeded it in size and in the culture of its people, but from its important position, imposing architecture, and general renown, Mexico Tenochtitlan stood preeminent. A number of surrounding towns and villages formed the suburbs of the city, as Aztacalco, Acatlan, Malcuitlapilco, Atenco, Iztacalco, Zancopinco, Huitznahuac, Xocotitlan or Xocotlan, Coltonco, Necatitlan, Huitzitlan, etc.[23] The circumference of the city has been estimated at about twelve miles, and the number of houses at sixty thousand, which would

[18] He is also termed god of the earth in the fable.

[19] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 91–4, 289–91; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 443–9.

[20] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 465–7. See also *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 167–8. Nearly all the authors give the whole of the above meanings, without deciding upon any one.

[21] *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 313; *Heredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, p. 95.

[22] It means islet, from *tlatelli*, island. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiv. Veytia says it is a corruption of *xaltelolco*, sandy ground. *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 141; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 115.

[23] *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 218; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 5.

Digitized by Google

give a population of three hundred thousand.[24] It was situated in the salty part of the lake of Mexico, fifteen miles west of its celebrated rival Tezcuco, about one mile from the eastern shore, and close to the channel through which the volumes of the sweet water lake pour into the briny waters of the lake of Mexico, washing, in their outward flow, the southern and western parts of the city. The waters have, however, evaporated considerably since the time of the Aztecs, and left the modern Mexico some distance from the beach.[25]

Fifty other towns, many of them consisting of over three thousand dwellings, were scattered on and around the lake, the shallow waters of which were skimmed by two hundred thousand canoes.[26] Four grand avenues, paved with a smooth, hard crust of cement,[27] ran east, west, north, and south, crosswise, forming the boundary lines of four quarters; at the meeting-point of these was the grand temple-court. Three of these roads connected in a straight line with large causeways leading from the city to the lake shores; constructed by driving in piles, filling up the intervening spaces with earth, branches, and stones, and covering the surface with stone secured by mor-

[24] The Anonymous Conqueror says two and a half to three leagues in circumference, which is accepted by most authors. *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309. But as the embankment which formed a semi-circle round the town was three leagues in length, the circumference of the city would not have been less. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 4. Cortés says that it was as large as Seville or Cordova. *Cartas*, p. 103. Aylon, in *Id.*, p. 43, places the number of houses as low as 30,000. Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l., who is usually so extravagant in his descriptions, confines himself to 'mas de cinquenta mil casas.' Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 113, 60,000, each of which contained two to ten occupants. Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 291, places the number as high as 120,000, which may include outlying suburbs. The size and business of the markets, the remains of ruins to be seen round modern Mexico, and its fame, sustain the idea of a very large population.

[25] See *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 216–17, on former and present surroundings. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiv.; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 103.

[26] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 115.

[27] 'Erano....di terra come mattonata.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil' huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 110.

Digitized by Google

tar. They were broad enough to allow ten horsemen to ride abreast with ease, and were defended by drawbridges and breastworks.[28]

The southern road, two leagues in length, commenced half a league from Iztapalapan, and was bordered on one side by Mexicaltzinco, a town of about four thousand houses, and on the other, first by Coyuhuacan with six thousand, and further on by Huitzilopochco with five thousand dwellings. Half a league before reaching the city this causeway was joined by the Xoloc road, coming from Xochimilco, the point of junction being defended by a fort named Acachinanco, which consisted of two turrets surrounded by a battlemented wall eleven or twelve feet high, and was provided with two gates, through which the road passed.[29] The northern road led from Tepeyacac, about a league off; the western, from Tlacopan, half a league distant; this road was bordered with houses as far as the shore.[30] A fourth causeway from

[28] 'Fueron hechas à mano, de Tierra, y Cespedes, y mui quajadas de Piedra; son anchas, que pueden pasar por cada vna de ellas, tres Carretas juntas, ò diez Hombres à Caballo.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 292; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 69; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 217. 'Tan ancha como dos lanzas jinetas.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 103. He mentions four causeways or entrances, but this must include either the branch which joins the southern road, or the aqueduct. 'Pueden ir por toda ello ocho de caballo á la par.' *Id.*, p. 83. The view of Mexico published in the Luxemburg edition of *Cortés, Cartas*, points to four causeways besides the aqueduct, but little reliance can be placed on these fanciful cuts. Helps thinks, however, that there must have been more causeways than are mentioned by the conquerors. *Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., pp. 456, 472. 'Entrano in essa per tre strade alte di pietra & di terra, ciascuna larga trenta passi.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 4. 'Las puentes que tenian hechas de trecho á trecho.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70.

[29] 'Dos puertas, una por do entran y otra por do salen.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 84, which means, no doubt, that passengers had to pass through the fort. He calls the second town along the road Niciaca, and the third Huchilohuchico. Brasseur de Bourbourg states that within the fort was a teocalli dedicated to Toci, on which a beacon blazed all night to guide travellers. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 209–10. But this is a mistake, for Tezozomoc, *Hist. Mex.*, pt ii., p. 184, his authority for this says, that the beacon was at a hill 'avant d'arriver à Acuchinanco.'

[30] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 292; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 84. The Anonymous Conqueror calls them two leagues, one league and a half, and a quarter of a league

Digitized by Google

Chapultepec served to support the aqueduct which supplied the city with water.[31]

The names of the four quarters of the city, which were thus disposed according to divine command, were Tlaquechiuhcan, Cuecopan, or Quepopan, now Santa María, lying between the northern and western avenues; Atzacualco, now San Sebastian, between the eastern and northern; Teopan, now San Pablo, between the eastern and southern; and Moyotlan, or Mayotla, now San Juan, between the western and southern; these, again, were divided into a number of wards.[32] Owing to the position of the city in the midst of the lake, traffic was chiefly conducted by means of canals, which led into almost every ward, and had on one or both sides quays for the reception and landing of goods and passengers. Many of these were provided with basins and locks to retain the water within them;[33] while at the mouth were small buildings which served as offices for the custom-house officials. Bridges, many of which were upwards of thirty feet wide, and could be drawn up so as to cut off communication between the different parts, connected the numerous cross-streets and lanes, some of which were mere dry and paved canals.[34]

long, respectively. *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 4, makes the shortest a league.

[31] 'Habia otra algo mas estrecha para los dos ecueductos.' *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 217.

[32] In Tezcuco the wards were each occupied by a distinct class of tradespeople, and this was doubtless the case in Mexico also, to a certain extent. 'Cada Oficio se vsase en Barrios de por sì; de suerte, que los que eran Plateros de Oro, avian de estàr juntos, y todos los de aquel Barrio, lo avian de ser, y no se avian de mezclar otros con ellos; y los de Plata, en otro Barrio,' etc. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 147; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 3; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 218.

[33] 'Al rededor de la ciudad habia muchos diques y esclusas para contener las aguas en caso necesario....no pocas que tenian en medio una acequia entre dos terraplenes.' *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 218–19.

[34] 'Hay sus puentes de muy anchas y muy grandes vigas juntas y recias y bien labradas; y tales, que por muchas dellas pueden pasar diez de caballo juntos á la par.' In case of necessity 'quitadas las puentes de las entradas y salidas.' With this facility for cutting off retreat, Cortés found it best to construct brigantines. *Cartas*, p. 103; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 187; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 73.

Digitized by Google

The chief resort of the people was the levee, which stretched in a semicircle round the southern part of the city, forming a harbor from half to three quarters of a league in breadth. Here during the day the merchants bustled about the cargoes and the custom-houses, while at night the promenaders resorted there to enjoy the fresh breezes from the lake. The construction of this embankment was owing to an inundation which did serious harm during the reign of Montezuma I. This energetic monarch at once took steps to prevent a recurrence of the catastrophe, and called upon the neighboring towns to assist with people and material in the construction of an outer wall, to check and turn aside the waters of the fresh lake, which, after the heavy rains of winter, rushed in volumes upon the city as they sought the lower salt lake. The length of the levee was about three leagues, and its breadth thirty feet. In 1498, fifty-two years after its construction, it was further strengthened and enlarged.[85]

Although the Spaniards met with no very imposing edifices as they passed along to the central part of the city where the temple stood, yet they must have found enough to admire in the fine smooth streets, the neat though low stone buildings surmounted by parapets which but half concealed the flowers behind them, the elegantly arranged gardens, gorgeous with the flora of the tropics, the broad squares, the lofty temples, and the canals teeming with canoes.

Among the public edifices, the markets are especially worthy of note. The largest, in Mexico Tenoch-

'Otra Calle avia....mui angosta, y tanto, que apenas podian ir dos Personas juntas, son finalmente vnos Callejones mui estrechos.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 291; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiii.

[85] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 157–8. It is here said to be four fathoms broad. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 231–2; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 32; Mühlenpfordt, *Mejico*, tom. ii., pt ii., p. 255, says: 'Reste des....gegen 39,400 Fuss langen und 65 Fuss breiten Dammes aus Steinen in Lehm, zu beiden Seiten mit Pallisaden verbrämt'

Digitized by Google

titlan, was twice as large as the square of Salamanca, says Cortés, and was surrounded by porticos, in and about which from sixty thousand to one hundred thousand buyers and sellers found room.[36] The market-place at Tlatelulco was still larger, and in the midst of it was a square stone terrace, fifteen feet high and thirty feet long, which served as a theatre.[37]

The numerous fountains which adorned the city were fed by the aqueduct which brought water from the hill of Chapultepec, about two miles off, and was constructed upon a causeway of solid masonry five feet high and five feet broad, running parallel to the Tlacopan road.[38] This aqueduct consisted of two pipes of masonry, each carrying a volume of water equal in bulk to a man's body,[39] which was conducted by branch pipes to different parts of the town to supply fountains, tanks, ponds, and baths. At the different canal-bridges there were reservoirs, into which the pipes emptied on their course, and here the boatmen who made it a business to supply the inhabitants with water received their cargoes on the payment of a fixed price. A vigilant police watched over the distribution of the water and the care of the pipes, only one of which was in use at a time, while the other was cleansed.[40] The supply was obtained from

[36] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 103; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 116; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 299; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 65.

[37] 'Cosi grande come sarebbe tre volte la piazza di Salamanca.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 181.

[38] The Anonymous Conqueror states that this road carried the aqueduct which was three quarters of a league in length. *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 108; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 4; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 207; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 114.

[39] 'Los caños, que eran de madera y de cal y canto.' *Cortés Cartas*, pp. 209, 108; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 304. Other writers make the pipes larger. 'Tan gordos como vn buey cada vno.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 113. 'Tan anchas como tres hombres juntos y mas.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.

[40] Cortés, *Cartas*, p. 108, says 'echan la dulce por unas canales tan gruesas como un buey, que son de la longura de las dichas puentes.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 207; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS.,

Digitized by Google

a fine spring on the summit of Mount Chapultepec, which was guarded by two figures cut in the solid stone, representing Montezuma and his father, armed with lances and shields.[41] The present aqueduct was partly reconstructed by Montezuma II. on the old one erected by the first king of that name. Its inauguration was attended by imposing ceremonies, offerings of quails, and burning of incense.[42]

During Ahuitzotl's reign, an attempt was made to bring water into the city from an immense spring at Coyuhuacan. The lord of that place consented, as become a loyal vassal, to let the water go, but predicted disastrous consequences to the city from the overflow which would be sure to follow if the water were taken there. This warning, however, so enraged the king that he ordered the execution of the noble, and immediately levied men and material from the neighboring towns to build the aqueduct. The masons and laborers swarmed like ants and soon finished the work. When everything was ready, a grand procession of priests, princes, nobles, and plebeians marched forth to open the gates of the aqueduct and receive the waters into the city. Speeches were made, slaves and children were sacrificed, the wealthy cast precious articles into the rolling waters with words of thanks and welcome. But the hour of sorrow was at hand. The prediction of the dead lord was fulfilled; the waters, once loosed, could not be fettered again; a great part of the city was inundated and much damage was done. Then the distracted king called once more upon the neighboring towns to furnish men, but this time to tear down instead of to build up.[43]

Among the arrangements for the convenience of the public may be mentioned light-houses to guide the

cap. 1.; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 114; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 664.

[41] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 113; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiii.

[42] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 500–1; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 207; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 4.

[43] *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. ii., cap. xlviii., xlix.

Digitized by Google

canoes which brought supplies to the great metropolis. These were erected at different points upon towers and heights; the principal one seems to have been on Mount Tocitlan, where a wooden turret was erected to hold the flaming beacon.[44] The streets were also lighted by burning braziers placed at convenient intervals, which were tended by the night patrol. A force of over a thousand men kept the canals in order, swept the streets and sprinkled them several times a day.[45] Public closets were placed at distances along the canals.[46] The care of buildings also received the attention of the government, and every eleventh month was devoted to repairing and cleaning the temples, public edifices, and roads generally.[47] A number of towns on the lake were built on piles, in imitation of Mexico, chiefly for the sake of security. Thus, Iztapalapan stood half on land, half over the water, and

[44] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 427, tom. iv., pp. 209–10; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 184.

[45] *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 319; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 206, 460.

[46] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 7. 'En todos los caminos que tenian hechos de cañas ò paja, ò yervas, porque no los viessen los que passasen por ellos, y alli se metian, si tenian gana de purgar los vientres, porque no se les perdiesse aquella suciedad.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70.

[47] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 298. The authorities for the description of the city are *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309, and in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 390–2, with plans; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 43, 83–4, 102–9, 209; *Id., Despatches*, p. 333, plan; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70–3; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 91–4, 147, 157–8, 206–7, 288–98, 306–7, 460; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 465–8, 500–1; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 180–3, 187–8; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 113–16; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 283–4, 299, 305; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. ii., p. 141; *Ortega*, in *Id.*, tom. iii., p. 319; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xiii., xiv., dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xi.; *Id.*, (Translation, Lond., 1725), vol. ii., p. 372, vol. iii., p. 194, view and plan; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., pp. 174–5; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 168–9; *Heredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, pp. 95–6; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 184; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 81, 238–9; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 443–9, tom. iii., pp. 231–2, 427, tom. iv., pp. 3–7, 209–10; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 310–14, 664, tom. ii., pp. 216–28, with plan; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 16–17, vol. ii., pp. 69, 76–86; *Mühlenpfordt, Mejico*, tom. ii., pt ii., p. 255; *Alaman, Disertaciones*, tom. i., p. 184–8; *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., pp. 310–14, 456, 471–2, 490–1, with plans; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., pp. 35–6; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x.

Digitized by Google

Ayotzinco was founded entirely on piles, and had canals instead of streets.

Other towns had recourse to strong walls and deep ditches to secure their protection. Tlascala especially was well defended from its ancient Aztec enemy, by a wall of stone and mortar[49] which stretched for six miles across a valley, from mountain to mountain, and formed the boundary line of the republic. This wall was nine feet high, twenty feet broad,[50] and surmounted by a breastwork a foot and a half in thickness, behind which the defenders could stand while fighting. The only entrance was in the centre, where the walls did not meet, but described a semicircle, one overlapping the other, with a space ten paces wide and forty long between them.[51] The other side also was defended by breastworks and ditches.[52] The city itself stood upon four hills, and was crossed by narrow streets,[53] the houses being scattered in irregular groups. In size it was even larger than Granada, says Cortés, which is not unlikely, for the market had accommodation for thirty thousand people, and in one of the temples four hundred Spaniards with their attendants found ample room.[54] At Huejutla there was a curious wall of masonry, the outside of which was faced with small blocks of tetzontli, each about nine inches in diameter on the face, which was rounded; the end of each block was pointed, and inserted in the wall.[55]

[48] *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 197; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 69.

[49] Cortés says 'piedra seca.' *Cartas*, p. 60; but this is contradicted by Bernal Diaz, who found it to be of stone and mortar. *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 43. 'Sin mezcla de cal ni barro.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. iv.

[50] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 150, give the measurement at eight feet in height and eighteen in width.

[51] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 60; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 43; *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 225–6; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 150, with a cut.

[52] *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 186.

[53] Delaporte says that streets met on the hills. *Reisen*, tom. x., p. 256.

[54] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 67; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 308; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xii.

[55] *Cortés Cartas*, p. 171. See *Warden, Recherches*, pp. 67–8, on fortifi-

Digitized by Google

The city next in fame and rank to Mexico Tenochtitlan was Tezcuco,[56] which Torquemada affirms contained one hundred and forty thousand houses within a circumference of from three to four leagues.[57] It was divided into six divisions, and crossed by a series of fine straight streets lined with elegant buildings. The old palace stood on the border of the lake, upon a triple terrace, guarding the town, as it were; the newer structure, in the construction of which two hundred thousand men had been employed, stood at the northern end; it was a magnificent building, and contained three hundred rooms. This city was the seat of refinement and elegance, and occupied relatively the same position in Mexico as Paris does in Europe.[58]

The style of architecture for houses did not exhibit much variety; the difference between one house and another being chiefly in extent and material.[59] The

cations. In Michoacan, some towns had walls of planks two fathoms high and one broad. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. iii.

[56] Meaning place of detention, because here the immigrating tribes used to halt, while deciding upon their settlement. *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 214.

[57] Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix., says that it was nearly as large as Mexico. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 115. Motolinia, *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 182, gives it a league in width and six in length. Peter Martyr, dec. viii., lib. iv., gives it 20,000 houses. Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 87–8, estimates it at 30,000 houses, and thinks that Torquemada must have included the three outlying towns to attain his figure. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 304.

[58] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 89–90, 303–4; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 87–8; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 242–4. For further references to Mexican towns, forts, etc., see *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 24, 57–60, 67–8, 74–5, 92–3, 153, 171, 186, 196; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 43; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 308; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. ix., pp. 214, 242, 251–2, 257; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 251–2, 304, 449–50; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 26, 51, 115; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. v., cap. viii., lib. vi., cap. iv., xii., xvi., lib. vii., cap. iv., dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. iii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 150, with cut; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iv., vii., dec. viii., lib. iv.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 283; *West-Indische Spieghel*, pp. 221, 225–6; *Bologne*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 212; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 236; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 186; *Delaporte, Reisen*, tom. x., p. 256; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 87–8, 259, 663, tom. ii., pp. 51, 161; *Warden, Recherches*, pp. 67–8; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 65; *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. ii., p. 296; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 240, 243.

[59] Las Casas states that when a warrior distinguished himself abroad

Digitized by Google

dwellings of the nobles were situated upon terraces of various heights, which in swampy places like Mexico rested upon tiers of heavy piles.[60] They were usually a group of buildings in the form of a parallelogram, built of stone, or in Mexico of tetzontli, joined with fine cement, and finely polished and whitewashed.[61] Every house stood by itself, separated from its neighbor by narrow lanes, and enclosed one or more courts which extended over a large space of ground.[62] One story was the most common form, and there are no accounts of any palaces or private houses exceeding two stories.[63] Broad steps led up the terrace to two gates which gave entrance to the courts; one opening upon the main street, the other upon the back lane, or canal, that often lay beneath it. The terrace platform of the houses of chiefs often had a wide walk round it, and was especially spacious in front, where there was occasionally a small oratorio facing the entrance. This style was particularly noticed on the east coast.[64] The court was surrounded by numerous

he was allowed to build his house in the style used by the enemy, a privilege allowed to none else. *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. lxvi.

[60] 'I fondamenti delle case grandi della Capitale si gettavano a cagione della poca sodezza di quel terreno sopra un piano di grosse stanghe di cedro ficcate in terra.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 202. 'Porque la humedad no les causase enfermedad, alzaban los aposentos hasta un estado poco mas ó menos, y así quedaban como entresuelos.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 121. Speaking of Cempoalla, Peter Martyr says: 'Vnto these houses or habitations they ascend by 10. or 12. steppes or stayres.' Dec. iv., lib. vii. The floor of the palace at Mitla consisted of slabs of stone three feet thick, which rested on ten feet piles. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 26. Houses with elevated terraces were only allowed to chiefs. *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 188.

[61] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix. This mode of whitewashing the walls and polishing them with gypsum seems to have been very common in all parts of Mexico, for we repeatedly meet with mentions of the dazzling white walls, like silver, which the Spaniards noticed all through their march. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 251; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 202.

[62] In Cempoalla, says Peter Martyr, 'none may charge his neighbours wall with beames or rafters. All the houses are seperated the distance of 3. paces asunder.' Dec. iv., lib. 7. Cortés, *Cartas*, p. 24, mentions as many as five courts.

[63] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 291; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. l.; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 76–7; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, p. 173. 'N'avaient guère qu'un étage, à cause de la fréquence des tremblement de terre.' *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 173.

[64] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 24.

Digitized by Google

porticos decorated with porphyry, jasper, and alabaster ornaments, which, again, led to various chambers and halls, lighted by large windows. Two great halls and several reception-rooms were situated in front; the sleeping-chambers, kitchen, baths, and storerooms were in the rear, forming at times quite a complicated labyrinth.[65] The court was paved with flags of stone, tessellated marble, or hard cement, polished with ochre or gypsum,[66] and usually contained a sparkling fountain; occasionally there was a flower-garden, in which a pyramidal altar gave an air of sanctity to the place.[67] The stairway which led to the second story or to the roof was often on the outside of the house, and by its grand proportions and graceful form contributed not a little to the good appearance of the house.[68] The roof was a flat terrace of beams, with a slight slope toward the back,[69] covered with a coat of cement or clay,[70] and surrounded by a battlemented parapet, surmounted at times by small turrets.[71] There were generally flowers in pots upon the roofs, or even a small garden; and here the members of the household assembled in

[65] *Chaves, Rapport,* in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.,* série ii., tom. v., p. 328. The palace at Tecpeque, says Las Casas, was a very labyrinth, in which visitors were liable to lose themselves without a guide. In the palace allotted to Cortés at Mexico he found comfortable quarters for 400 of his own men, 2,000 allies, and a number of attendants. *Hist. Apologética,* MS., cap. lii., l. 'Auia salas con sus camaras, que cabia cada vno en su cama, ciento y cincuenta Castellanos.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.,* dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. v. 'Intorno d'una gran corti fossero prima grandissime sale & stantie, però' v'era vna sala cosi grande che vi poteano star dentro senza dar l'un fastidio all'altro piu di tre mila persone.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese,* in *Ramusio, Navigationi,* tom. iii., fol. 309.

[66] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico,* tom. ii., pp. 200, 202; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.,* tom. i., p. 251.

[67] Tezozomoc, *Hist. Mex.,* tom. i., p. 188, says that chiefs were permitted to erect towers pierced with arrows in the court-yard. *Prescott's Mex.,* vol. ii., p. 120. The houses were often quite surrounded with trees. *West-Indische Spieghel,* p. 220.

[68] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.,* tom. iii., p. 656.

[69] *Tylor's Anahuac,* pp. 135–6.

[70] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.,* tom. i., p. 291. Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética,* MS., cap. l., says: 'Encalados por encima, que no se pueden llover.' 'Couered with reede, thatch, or marish sedge; yet many of them are couered with slate, or shingle stone.' *Peter Martyr,* dec. iv., lib. vii., dec. v., lib. x.

[71] *Peter Martyr,* dec. iv., lib. iv., dec. v., lib. x.; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.,* tom. ii., p. 219.

Digitized by Google

the cool of the evening to enjoy the fresh air and charming prospect.[72] Some houses had galleries, which, like most work added to the main structure, were of wood,[73] though supported upon columns of marble, porphyry, or alabaster. These pillars were either round or square, and were generally monoliths; they were without base or capital, though ornamented with figures cut in low-relief Buildings were further adorned with elegant cornices and stucco designs of flowers and animals, which were often painted with brilliant colors. Prominent among these figures was the coiling serpent before mentioned. Lintels and door-posts were also elaborately carved.[74]

The interior displayed the same rude magnificence. The floors were covered with hard, smooth cement, like the court-yard and streets, rubbed with ochre or gypsum, and polished.[75] The glossy walls were painted and hung with cotton or feather tapestry, to which Las Casas adds silver plating and jewels. The furniture was scanty. It consisted chiefly of soft mats and cushions of palm-leaves or fur, low tables, and small stools with palm-leaf backs. The beds were mats piled one upon another, with a block or a palm-leaf or cotton cushion for a pillow; occasionally they were furnished with coverlets and canopies of

[72] *Helps' Span Conq.*, vol. ii., p. 314.

[73] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 658.

[74] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 200–2; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 173–4; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 632–3, 665.

[75] 'Eran los Patios, y Suelos de ellos, de argamasa, y despues de encalados, cubrian la superficie, y haz, con Almagre, y despues bruñianlos, con vnos guijarros, y piedras mui lisas, y quedaban con tan buena tèz, y tan hermosamente bruñidos, que no podia estarlo mas vn Plato de Plata; pues como fuese de mañana, y el Sol començase à derramar, y esparcir la Lumbre de sus Raios, y començasen à reberverar en los Suelos, encendianlos de manera, que à quien llevaba tan buen deseo, y ansia de haber Oro, y Plata, le pudo parecer, que era Oro el Suelo; y es mui cierto, que los suelos de las Casas, y de los Patios (en especial, de los Templos, y de los Señores, y Personas Principales) se hacian, y adereçaban, en aquellos Tiempos, tales, que eran mui de vèr, y algunos de estos hemos visto tan lisos, y limpios, que sin asco se podia comer en ellos, sin Manteles, qualquier Manjar.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 251–2; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix.

Digitized by Google

cotton or feather-work.[76] Vases filled with smouldering incense diffused their perfume through the chambers. The rooms which were used in winter were provided with hearths and fire-screens, and were lighted by torches.[77] There were no doors, properly called such, to the houses, but where privacy was required, a bamboo or wicker-work screen was suspended across the entrance, and secured at night with a bar. To this was attached a string of shells, which the visitor rattled to call the host or his attendants to the entrance. The interior rooms were separated by hangings, which probably also served to cover the windows of ordinary dwellings,[78] although the transparent *tecali* stone, as before stated, answered the purpose of window-glass in certain parts of some of the temples.[79]

The houses of the poorer classes were built of adobe, wood, cane, or reeds and stones, mixed with mud, well plastered and polished,[80] and, in Mexico, raised on stone foundations, to prevent dampness,[81] though the elevation was less than that of the houses of the richer people. They were generally of an oblong shape, were divided into several apartments, and occasionally had a gallery in front. They could not afford a central court, but had instead a flower or vegetable garden wherever space permitted. Terrace roofs were not uncommon in the towns, but more generally the houses of the poorer people were

[76] 'Toldillos encima.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 66.

[77] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 1.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 66, 68; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. v., vii.; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 174–5; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 79, 174–5. Klemm, *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 15–16, mentions stools of cane and reed, and firebugs which were used for lights.

[78] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 381; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 201; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 662. 'No ay puertas ni ventanas que cerrar, todo es abierto.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318.

[79] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 8.

[80] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xii.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x.; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix.–l.; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 76.

[81] *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. x.

Digitized by Google

thatched with a kind of long thick grass, or with overlapping maguey-leaves.[82]

Besides the oratory and storehouse with which most houses were provided, *temazcall*, or bath, was generally added to the dwelling This, according to Clavigero, consisted of a hemisphere of adobe, having a slightly convex paved floor sunk a little below the level of the surrounding ground. The entrance was a small hole just large enough to admit a man. On the outside of the bath-house, and on the opposite side to the entrance, was a furnace made of stone or brick, separated from the interior by a thin slab of *tetzontli*, or other porous stone, through which the heat was communicated. On entering, the door was closed, and the suffocating vapors were allowed to escape slowly through a small opening in the top. The largest bath-houses were eight feet in diameter and six feet in height. Some were mere square chambers without a furnace, and were doubtless heated and the fire raked out before the bather entered.[83]

The storehouses and granaries which were attached to farms, temples, and palaces were usually square buildings of oxametl-wood, with thatched roofs. The logs had notches near the ends to give them a secure hold. Two windows, or doors, one above the other, gave access to the interior, which was often large enough to contain many thousand bushels of grain.[84]

[82] *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 199; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 200; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 657; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 661–2.

[83] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 214–15, with cut; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 662, 671–2, with cut. The poorer had doubtless resort to public baths; they certainly existed in Tlascala. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvi.; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 240.

[84] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 155; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 635; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 564. For description of houses, see *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 251–2, 291, tom. ii., pp. 381, 564; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xii., xvi., lib. vii., cap. v.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 155, 200–2, 214–15, with cut; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix.–lii.; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 24; *Relatione fatta per un gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom.

Digitized by Google

Love of flowers was a passion with the Aztecs, and they bestowed great care upon the cultivation of gardens. The finest and largest of these were at Iztapalapan and Huastepec. The garden at Iztapalapan was divided into four squares, each traversed by shaded walks, meandering among fruit-trees, blossoming hedges, and borders of sweet herbs.[85] In the centre of the garden was an immense reservoir of hewn stone, four hundred paces square, and fed by navigable canals. A tiled pavement,[86] wide enough for four persons walking abreast, surrounded the reservoir, and at intervals steps led down to the water, upon the surface of which innumerable water-fowl sported. A large pavilion, with halls and corridors, overlooked the grounds.[87]

The Huastepec garden was two leagues in circuit, and was situated on a stream; it contained an immense variety of plants and trees, to which additions were continually made.[88] The *chinampas*, or floating gardens, have been described elsewhere.[89]

The Mexicans required no solid roads for heavy traffic, since goods were carried upon the shoulders of slaves, but a number of pathways crossed the country in various directions, which underwent repair every year, on the cessation of the rains. Here and there

iii., fol. 309; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 66, 68; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 318; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 199; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 121; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 188; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iv., vii., dec. v., cap. x.; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 328; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 221; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 26, 222, 635, 656–8, iv., p. 8; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 76–7, 120; *Chevalier, Mex., Ancien et Mod.*, p. 31; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 173–5, 240; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 661–3, 671–2, with cut, tom. ii., p. 219; *Tylor's Anahuac*, pp. 135–6; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 15–16.

[85] 'El anden, hácia la pared de la huerta, va todo labrado de cañas con unas vergas.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 83.

[86] 'Un anden de muy buen suelo ladrillado.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 83.

[87] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 283; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 636; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 156.

[88] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 196; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 157.

[89] See this vol., p. 345.

Digitized by Google

country roads crossed streams by means of suspension bridges, or fixed structures mostly of wood, but sometimes of stone, with small spans. The suspension bridges were made of ropes, twisted canes, or tough branches, attached to trees and connected by a netting. The Spaniards were rather fearful of crossing them, on account of their swinging motion when stepped upon and the gaping rents in them.[90]

Almost the only specimen of Nahua architecture which has withstood the ravages of time until our day is the temple structure, *teocalli*, 'house of God,' or *teopan*, 'place of God,' of which Torquemada asserts there were at least forty thousand in Mexico. Clavigero regards this as a good deal below the real number, and if we consider the extremely religious character of the people, and accept the statements of the early chroniclers, who say that at distances of from a quarter to half a league, in every town and village, were open places containing one or more temples,[91] and on every isolated rock or hill along the country roads, even in the fields, were substantial structures devoted to some idol, then Clavigero's assertion may be correct.[92]

The larger temples were usually built upon pyramidal parallelograms, square, or oblong, and consisted of a series of superimposed terraces with perpendicular or sloping sides.[93] The celebrated temple at Mexico

[90] 'Hay sus puentes de muy anchas y muy grandes vigas juntas y recias y bien labradas; y tales, que por muchas dellas pueden pasar diez de caballo juntos á la par.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 103. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 632, says that stone bridges were most common, which is doubtless a mistake. Speaking of swinging bridges, Klemm says: 'Manche waren so fest angespannt, dass sie gar keine schwankende Bewegung hatten.' *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 75; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 169.

[91] 'En los mismos patios de los pueblos principales habia otros cada doce ó quince teocallis harto grandes, unos mayores que otros.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 64. 'Entre quatro, ó cinco barrios tenian vn Adoratorio, y sus idolos.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 72.

[92] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 84–6; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 141; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 35.

[93] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 26, 34, cuts; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.* (Translation, Lond., 1725), vol. ii., pp. 372, 378, cuts.

Digitized by Google

forms a fair type of the latter kind, and its detailed description will give the best idea of this class of edifices.

When the Aztecs halted on the site of Mexico after their long wanderings, the first care was to erect an abode for their chief divinity, Huitzilopochtli. The spot chosen for the humble structure, which at first consisted of a mere hut, was over the stone whereon the sacred nochtli grew that had been pointed out by the oracle. A building more worthy of the god was soon erected, and later on, Ahuitzotl constructed the edifice from whose summit Cortés looked down upon the scenes of his conquest. The labor bestowed upon it was immense, and notwithstanding that the material had to be brought from a distance of three or four leagues—a serious matter to a people who were supplied with no adequate means of transport—the temple was completed in two years.[94] The inauguration took place in 1486, in the presence of the chief princes and an immense concourse of people from all quarters, and 72,344 captives, arranged in two long files, were sacrificed during the four days of its duration.[95] The site of the building was indeed worthy of its character, standing as it did in an immense square forming the centre of the town, from which radiated the four chief thoroughfares.[96] The idea of thus keeping the god before the people at all times had, doubtless, as much to do with this arrangement as that of giving him the place of honor. A square wall[97] about four

[94] *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 151–3.

[95] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 186; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 37. Other authors give the number at 60,460, and the attendance at 6,000,000. *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 257.

[96] 'Recibia dentro de su hueco todo el suelo en que aora està edificada la Iglesia Maior, Casas del Marquès del Valle, Casas Reales, y Casas Arçobispales, con mucha parte de lo que aora es Plaça, que parece cosa increible.' *Sahagun*, quoted in *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 146. To-day the Cathedral stands upon the Plaza, and many houses occupy the spot; see *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 226–7, 233–5. Opposite the south gate was the market and 'en face du grand temple se trouvait le palais.' *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 152.

[97] 'Dos cercas al rededor de cal, y canto.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70–1.

Digitized by Google

thousand eight hundred feet in circumference, from eight to nine feet in height, and of great thickness, with its sides facing the cardinal points, formed the court-yard of the temple.[98] It was built of stone and lime, plastered and polished,[99] crowned with battlements in the form of snails, and turreted and adorned with many stone serpents—a very common ornament on edifices in Egypt as well as Anáhuac—for which reason it was called *coatepantli*, 'wall of snakes.'[100] At the centre of each wall stood a large two-story building, divided into a number of rooms, in which the military stores and weapons were kept. These faced the four chief thoroughfares of the town, and their lower stories formed the portals of the gateways which gave entrance to the court-yard.[101] This was partly paved with large smooth flag-stones, partly with

[98] 'Mayores que la plaça que ay en Salamanca.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70. Cortés, *Cartas*, p. 106, states that a town of 500 houses could be located within its compass. Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 144, Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119, Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li., and Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xvii., agree upon a length to each side of one cross-bow or musket shot, and this, according to Las Casas, cap. cxxxii., is 750 paces; in the same places he gives the length at four shots, or 3,000 paces, an evident mistake, unless by this is meant the circumference. Hernandez estimates it at about 86 perches, or 1,420 feet. Sahagun *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 197, who seems to have investigated the matter more closely, places it at 200 fathoms, which cannot be too high, when we consider that the court enclosed 77 or more edifices, besides the great temple. Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 226, gives a length of 250 varas.

[99] 'Era todo cercado de piedra de manposteria mui bien labrado.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 144. 'Estaban mui bien encaladas, blancas, y bruñidas.' *Id.*, p. 141.

[100] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 27; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 661; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 142. 'Era labrada de piedras grandes a manera de culebras asidas las vnas a las otras.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 383; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 63.

[101] Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 333, says an idol stood over each gate, facing the road. It is not stated by any author that the arsenals formed the gateway, but as they rose over the entrance, and nearly all mention upper and lower rooms, and as buildings of this size could not have rested upon the walls alone, it follows that the lower story must have formed the sides of the entrance. 'A cada parte y puerta de las cuatro del patio del templo grande ya dicho habia una gran sala con muy buenos aposentos altos y bajos en rededor.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 146; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 120. Tezozomoc, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 152, mentions three gates. 'A l'orient et à l'occident d'une petite porte et d'une grande vis-à-vis de l'escalier méridional.'

Digitized by Google

cement, plastered and polished, and so slippery that the horses of the Spaniards could scarcely keep their footing.[102] In the centre stood the great temple, an oblong, parallelogramic pyramid, about three hundred and seventy-five feet long and three hundred feet broad at the base, three hundred and twenty-five by two hundred and fifty at the summit, and rising in five superimposed, perpendicular terraces to the height of eighty-six feet.[103] The terraces were of equal

[102] 'Y el mismo patio, y sitio todo empedrado de piedras grandes de losas blancas, y muy lisas: y adonde no auia de aquellas piedras, estaua encalado, y bruñido.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70. The white stones had no doubt received that color from plaster. 'Los patios y suelos eran teñidos de Almagre bruñido, y incorporado con la misma cal.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 141; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix. The dimensions given by the different authors are extremely varied; the Anonymous Conqueror, as the only eye-witness who has given any measurements, certainly deserves credit for those that appear reasonable, namely, the length and width; the height seems out of proportion.

[103] 'Cento & cinquanta passi, ò poco piu di lunghezza, & cento quindici, ò cento & venti di larghezza.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307. This would give the length and breadth of the base in the text, assuming two and a half feet to the pace. With a decrease of two good paces for each of the four ledges which surround the pyramid, the summit measurement is arrived at. The terraces are stated by the same author to be two men's stature in height, but this scarcely agrees with the height indicated by the 120 or 30 steps given. Bernal Diaz, *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70, counted 114 steps, and as most authors estimate each of these at a span, or nine inches in height, this would give an altitude of 86 feet. Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 28–9, gives about 50 fathoms (perches, he calls them) by 43 to the base, and allowing a perch to the ledges, he places the summit dimensions at 43 by 34 fathoms. The height he estimates at 19 fathoms, giving the height of each step as one foot. To prove that he has not overestimated the summit dimensions, at least, he refers to the statements of Cortés, who affirms that he fought 500 Mexicans on the top platform, and of Diaz, who says that over 4,000 men garrisoned the temple. Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 144–5, who follows Sahagun, states it to be 360 feet square at the base, and over 70 at the top; the steps he says are 'vna tercia, y mas' in height, which closely approaches a foot. Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li., says: 'Una torre triangular ó de tres esquinas de tierra y piedra maciza; y ancha de esquina á esquina de ciento y viente pasos ó cuasi....con un llano ó plaza de obra de setenta pies.' In cap. cxxxii. he calls it 100 men's stature in height. Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119, says 50 fathoms square at the base and 18 at the top. Ixtlilxochitl, *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 245, describes a temple which seems to be that of Mexico, and states it to be 80 fathoms square, with a height of 27 men's stature. Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xvii., places the dimensions as low as 30 varas square at the base and from 12 to 15 at the top. Of modern authors, Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 659, gives the dimensions at 300 by 250 feet for the base, and 60 feet for the summit, after allowing from 5 to 6 feet for the ledges—a rather extraordinary computation; unless, indeed, we assume that the terraces were sloping, but

Digitized by Google

height,[104] the lowest, according to Tezozomoc, having a foundation a fathom or more in depth, and each receded about six feet from the edge of the one beneath it, leaving a flat ledge round its base.[105] At the north-west corner the ledges were graded to form a series of steps, one hundred and fourteen in all, and each about nine inches high, which led from terrace to terrace, so that it was necessary to walk completely round the edifice to gain the succeeding flight.[106] This style of building was probably devised for show as well as for defence, for by this means the gorgeously dressed procession of priests was obliged to pass in sight of the entire multitude gathered on all sides of the temple, winding at a solemn pace round each terrace. The structure was composed of well-rammed earth, stones, and clay, covered with a layer of large

there is no reliable cut or description to confirm such a supposition. Humboldt, *Essai Pol.*, tom. i., pp. 169–70, has 97 mètres for the square, and 37 for the height. Ortega, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 280–2, is positive that the height was certainly no less than 38 varas. Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 144, remarks that there is no authority for describing the temple as oblong, except the *contemptible* cut of the Anonymous Conqueror. This may be just enough as regards the cut, but if he had examined the description attached to it, he would have found the dimensions of an oblong structure given. We must consider that the Anonymous Conqueror is the only eye-witness who gives any measurement, and further, that as two chapels were situated at one end of the platform, the structure ought to have been oblong to give the space in front a fair outline.

[104] 'Alto come due stature d'vn huomo.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307.

[105] 'Lasciano vn strada di larghezza di duo passi.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307. See note 87; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 64.

[106] The Anonymous Conqueror, *Relatione*, etc., ubi supra, Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv., Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119, and Torquemada, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 145, all say that there was no ledge on the west side, merely steps, but this is, doubtless, a careless expression, for 23 steps allotted to each terrace would scarcely have extended over a length of about 300 feet, the breadth of the pyramid. Nearly all agree upon the number of the steps, namely, 114. Ixtlilxochitl, *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 245, however, gives 160 steps; Oveido, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 502–3, 60 steps; and Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 333, 30 steps, 30 fathoms wide, but the latter author has evidently mixed up the accounts of two different temples. Tezozomoc, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 152, states that the temple had three stairways, with 360 steps in all, one for every day in the Mexican year. According to *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 155, the steps are on the south corner, but there is no authority for this statement; in the cuts they appear on the north.

Digitized by Google

square pieces of tetzontli, all of equal size, hewn smooth and joined with a fine cement, which scarcely left a mark to be seen; it was besides covered with a polished coating of lime or gypsum.[107] The steps were of solid stone and the platform of the same slippery character as the court.[108] At its eastern end stood two three-story towers, fifty-six feet in height,[109] separated from the edge by a walk barely wide enough for one person. The lower story was of masonry, with the floor raised a few feet above the platform, and an entrance on the west; the two upper stories were of wood, with windows, to which access was had by movable ladders.[110] A wooden cupola well painted and

[107] 'De tierra y piedra, mezclada con cal muy macizada.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xvii. 'Por la parte de fuera iba su pared de piedra: lo de dentro henchíanlo de piedra todo, ó de barro y adobe; otros de tierra bien tapiada.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 63–4. 'Hecha de manposteria.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 144. The pyramid of Teotihuacan, which, according to some authors, has been a model for others, is built of clay mixed with small stones, covered by a heavy wall of tetzontli, which is coated with lime. *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 187. 'Todas las Piedras estauan assentadas de tal suerte, que la mezcla casi no parecia, sino todas las piedras vna.' *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fund. Mex.*, p. 75. The whitewash may, however, have given it this solid appearance. 'Todos aquellos Templos, y Salas; y todas sus paredes que los cercaban, estaban mui bien encaladas, blancas, y bruñidas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 141. The mortar was mixed with precious stones and gold-dust. *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 60.

[108] Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 659, states that three sides of the platform were protected by a balustrade of sculptured stone, and this is not unlikely when we consider the slippery nature of the floor and the dizzy height. See *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 141; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix., cxxiv., and note 75, on polished floors. Carbajal Espinosa, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 664, states that the summit was paved with marble.

[109] 'In alto dieci, ò dodeci stature d'huomo.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307. This is followed by Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 29, who says 56 feet, or about 9 perches. No other dimensions are mentioned by the old chroniclers; Brasseur de Bourbourg, however, gives them a base of 20 feet square. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 659–60, but this becomes absurd when we consider the height of the buildings, and the accommodation required for the gigantic idols they contained. This author hazards the opinion that the chapels were placed close to the edge, to enable the people to see the idols from below, but there is no mention of any doors on the east side, and it is stated that the chapels were placed at this end so that the people in praying might face the rising sun. *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li.

[110] 'Que se mandaban por la parte de adentro, por unas escaleras de madera movedizas.' *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 245. Acosta states that the towers were ascended by 120 steps.

Digitized by Google

adorned formed the roof.[111] The sanctuaries were in the lower story, the one on the right hand dedicated to Huitzilopochtli with his partner and lieutenant, the other to Tezcatlipoca.[112] The gigantic images of these gods rested upon large stone altars three to four feet high,[113] their monstrous grandeur shielded from the vulgar gaze of the multitude by rich curtains hung with tassels and golden pellets like bells, which rattled as the hangings moved. Before the altar stood the terrible stone of sacrifice, a green block about five feet in length, and three in breadth and height, rising in a ridge on the top so as to bend the body of the victim upwards and allow the easy extraction of the heart.[114] The walls and ceilings were painted with monstrous figures, and ornamented with stucco and

Hist. de las Ynd., p. 334. The towers were made of 'artesones.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119. Brasseur de Bourbourg states that the outside of the walls was painted with various figures and monsters, but this seems to be a misinterpretation of Gomara, who places the paintings on the inside. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 660. Bernal Diaz says, besides, that the towers were 'todas blanqueando.' *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70.

[111] The eaves or the domes of the temples were decorated with fine red and white pillars, set with jet-black stones, and holding two figures of stone with torches in their hands, which supported a battlement in form of spiral shells; the torches were adorned with yellow and green feathers and fringes. *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 333; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 242.

[112] Most of the old authors say that Tlaloc occupied the second chapel, but as the next largest temple in the court is dedicated to this god, I am inclined to think, with Clavigero, that Tezcatlipoca shared the chief pyramid with Huitzilopochtli. Another reason for this belief is that Tezcatlipoca was held to be the half-brother of Huitzilopochtli, and their feasts were sometimes attended with similar ceremonies. Tezcatlipoca was also one of the highest if not the highest god, and, accordingly, entitled to the place of honor by the side of the favorite god of the Aztecs. Tlaloc, on the other hand, had nothing in common with Huitzilopochtli, and the only possible ground that can be found for his promotion to the chief pyramid is to be seen in the fable of the foundation of Mexico, in which Tlaloc, as the lord of the site, gives the Aztecs permission to settle there. We have, besides, the testimony of Bernal Diaz, who saw Tezcatlipoca, adorned with the *tezcatl*, or mirror ornament, seated in the left hand temple. *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 71; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 281. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 660, thinks it possible that the second temple was occupied by different idols, in turn, according to the festival.

[113] 'No eran mas altos que cinco palmos.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 29.

[114] Clavigero thinks that the stone was of jasper. *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 46, with cut. It is difficult to define the position of this stone; some place it before the idol within the chapel, others at the western extremity of the platform. Referring to the idols in the chapel, Sahagun says: 'Delante de cada una de estas estaba una piedra redonda á manera de tajon que llaman *texcatl*, donde mataban los que sacrificaban á honra de aquel

Digitized by Google

carved wood-work, and according to Las Casas, the gold and jewel decked interior exceeded even Thebe's famed temple in beauty;[115] but the venerable bishop was evidently led away by his well-known enthusiasm for whatever concerned the natives, for Bernal Diaz and others state that the floors and walls were steeped with blood, diffusing a fetid odor which made the visitors glad to escape to the fresh air.[116] The upper stories were used as receptacles for the ashes of deceased kings and lords,[117] and for the instruments connected with the service of the temple, but Diaz also noticed idols, half human, half monstrous in form, and found the rooms blood-stained like the lower apartment.[118] Before each chapel stood a stone hearth of a man's height, and of the same shape as the piscina in Catholic churches, upon which a fire was continually kept burning by the virgins and priests, and great misfortunes were apprehended if it became extinguished.[119] Here was also the large drum covered

dios, y desde la piedra hasta abajo un *regaxal* de sangre de los que mataban en él'—he describes the stone as round. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 198. And this I am inclined to accept as correct, especially as several points indicate that the stones stood inside the chapel. Their floor, we are told, were steeped in blood that must have flown from the victims; further, we know that the reeking heart was held up before or thrown at the feet of the idol, immediately after being torn out. The act of sacrifice was in itself a ceremony which could only have been performed before the idol. Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 334, and Solis, *Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 397, place it in the middle of the platform. Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. ii., p. 145, states that the stone (one only) stood near the head of the stairway, but this is most likely a hasty interpretation of Diaz' vague account. There may, however, have been a large stone at this place, which was used for the great and general sacrifices. *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 660–1, manages very dexterously to place the two stones before the chapel, and at the same time near the head of the steps. Klemm, *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., p. 98, mentions one stone with a hollow in the middle.

[115] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxii.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119.

[116] *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 71.

[117] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 106. It is also stated that certain chapels in the streets were used for burial-places by the lords. 'Inde Straten waren veel Cappellen, die meest diendeden tot begravinghe van de groote Heeren.' *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 248.

[118] 'Dexian, que era el Dios de las sementeras' (called Centeotl). *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 71.

[119] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 29–30; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 228; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii.

Digitized by Google

with snake-skins,[120] whose sombre notes resounded over a distance of two miles on feast-days and other extraordinary occasions—many a death-knell it struck for the Spaniards before they became masters of it. From this height the Spaniards gazed down upon between seventy and eighty other edifices within the enclosure, with their six hundred braziers of stone, some round, some square, and from two to five feet high,[121] their bright fires flaring in prepetual adoration of their idols, and turning the night into day. About forty of these were temples, each with its idols, scattered round the court and facing the great pyramid as if in adoration.[122] They were considerably smaller than the central temple, and differed chiefly in the form of the roof, which was round, square, or pyramidal, according to the character of the idol.[123] The largest was that of Tlaloc, which stood nearest the pyramid, and was ascended by fifty steps.[124] Quetzalcoatl's was the most singular in form, being circular

p. 145; on p. 141, he says in contradiction: 'Delante de los Altares en estos Templos avia vnos braseros hechos de piedra, y cal, de tres quartas en alto, de figura circular, ò redonda, y otros quadrados, donde de dia, y de noche ardia continuo fuego, tenian sus fogones, y braseros todas las Salas de los dichos Templos, donde encendian fuego, para calentarse los Señores, quando iban à ellos, y para los Sacerdotes.' 'Tan altos como tres palmos y cuatro.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.

[120] *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70.

[121] See note 119; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 65.

[122] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 30. Las Casas, *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li., and Motolinia, *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 64, say that they face in all directions, which tends to prove that they must have faced the temple of the supreme and patron gods. 'Estando encontrados, y puestos vnos contra otros,' adds *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 141, 145. Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 119, states that they were turned against all points but the east, so as to differ from the chief temple. 'Tenian la cara ácia el occidente.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., p. 198. Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 334, states that the court held eight or nine temples facing all quarters.

[123] 'Todos eran vnos; pero diferenciabanse en el asiento, y postura.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 145. 'La cubierta....era de diversas, y varias formas, que aunque eran vnas de madera, y otras de paja, como de Centeno, eran mui primamente labradas, vnas coberturas piramidales, y quadradas, y otras redondas, y de otras formas.' *Ib., Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 118–19; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 662–3.

[124] 'La menor dellas tiene çinquenta escalones para subir al cuerpo de la torre.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 302; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 106.

Digitized by Google

and surmounted by a dome, symbolic of the abode of the god of air, a snake's jaws with exposed fangs formed the low entrance, and made the stranger shudder as he stooped to pass in.[125] Among other notable edifices were the *tezcacalli*, or 'house of mirrors,' so called from the mirrors which covered its walls, and the *teccizcalli*, 'house of shells,' to which the king retired at certain times to perform penance. The high-priest also had a house of retirement, called *poiauhtla*, and there were several others for the use of certain other priests. Among these was a splendid building, provided with baths, fountains, and every comfort, in which notable strangers who visited the temple or the court were entertained. The Ilhuicatitlan temple, dedicated to the planet Venus, contained a large column painted or sculptured with the image of the star, before which captives were sacrificed on the appearance of the planet. Another temple took the form of a cage, in which the idols of conquered nations were confined, to prevent them from assisting their worshippers in regaining their liberty.[126] The *quauhxicalco* was used as a receptacle for the bones of victims sacrificed at various sanctuaries. The skulls of those killed at the great temple were deposited in the *tzompantli*,[127] which stood just outside the court, near the western or main gate. This consisted of an oblong sloping parallelogram of earth and masonry, one hundred and fifty-four feet at the base, ascended by thirty steps, on each of which were skulls.[128] Round the summit were upwards of seventy raised poles, about four feet apart, connected by numerous rows of cross-poles passed through holes in the masts, on each of which five skulls were filed, the

[125] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 145.
[126] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 147–50.
[127] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 201–7; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 149; Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 32, calls it Hueitzompan.
[128] 'En los escalones habia tambien un cráneo entre piedra y piedra.' *Orteya*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 287. But this is unlikely. See also *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 121.

Digitized by Google

sticks being passed through the temples.[129] In the centre[130] stood two towers, or columns, made of skulls and lime, the face of each skull being turned outwards, and giving a horrible appearance to the whole. This effect was heightened by leaving the heads of distinguished captives in their natural state, with hair and skin on. As the skulls decayed, or fell from the towers or poles, they were replaced by others, so that no vacant place was left. The Spaniards are said to have counted one hundred and thirty-six thousand skulls on the steps and poles alone, but this number is no doubt greatly exaggerated.[131] In the court was a large open space which stretched to the foot of the stairway of the great temple. Here the great dances were held, in which thousands took part,[132] and here, in full view of the multitude gathered to join in the festive ring, stood the gladiatorial stone, the *temalacatl*, upon which the captives were placed to fight with Aztec warriors, for their liberty, as it was termed, but rather for the delectation of the masses, for their chance of victory, as we have seen, was very small. It consisted of an immense flat circular stone, three feet in height, very smooth, with sculptured edge, placed upon a small pyramid eight feet in height.[133] In another part of the court were three large halls with flat roofs and plastered walls, painted on the inside, which contained a number of low, dark chambers, each the abode of an idol; the walls were

[129] 'Estos palos hazian muchas aspas por las vigas, y cada tercio de aspa o palo, tenia cinco cabeças ensartadas por las sienes.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 121–2. Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 334, places the masts a fathom apart, and twenty skulls upon each cross-pole, which is, to say the least, very close packing.

[130] At each end of the platform. *Warden, Recherches*, p. 66.

[131] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 32; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 121–2; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xviii.; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 333–5. The account of the latter author is so mixed up with that of the chief temple as to be of little value; Montanus, *Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 242–3, follows him.

[132] Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 333, says that 8,000 to 10,000 persons could dance with joined hands in this place.

[133] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 48, with cut; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 154; *Orteya*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 283; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 662.

Digitized by Google

covered with blood, two fingers in thickness, and the floors, to the depth of a foot almost.[134] The court also contained a grove in which birds were raised for sacrifices, and whence the procession started on the day devoted to the great hunt in honor of Mixcoatl; there were also a number of gardens, where flowers and herbs for offerings were grown. There were several bathing-places, one of which, the *tetzaapan*, 'cleansing water,'[135] was set apart for those who had made vows of penance, and another, at Mixcoatl's temple, filled with black water, for the priests. The *toxpalatl* was a fine fountain, the waters of which were only drunk at solemn festivals. It was supposed to have been the identical spring in which the Aztec priest had the interview with Tlaloc and obtained permission for the nation to settle. The care of all the temple buildings devolved upon a perfect army of priests, monks, nuns, school-children, and other people, estimated at from five to ten thousand, who all slept within the sacred precincts.[136] The passing and repassing of such numbers must have made the place teem with life, yet everything was in such perfect order and kept so scrupulously clean, says Diaz, that not a speck or a straw could he discover.[137]

[134] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 120; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 146–7; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li.

[135] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 151; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 244.

[136] 'Residen en el a la contina cinco mil personas, y todas duermen dentro, y comen a su costa del.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 120. 'V'hauea vna guarnigione di dieci mila homini di guerra.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309.

[137] The authorities on the temple of Mexico are *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 70–2; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 307, 309, and in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 384–5, 394–5, with cuts; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 186, tom. ii., pp. 140–56; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 197–211; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 106; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 118–22; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix., li., cxxiv.; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 37; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 257–8, tom. ii., pp. 25–32, 46–8, with cuts made up from the various descriptions of Diaz and others; see his remarks, p. 26. *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 333–5; this author mixes up the descriptions of the chief temple and the Tzompantli, and represents this account as that of Huitzilopochtli's sanctuary. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xvii.,

Digitized by Google

Besides this, there were several other temples and public oratories in the city, situated either in groups within a square, or scattered throughout the wards, and attended to by their special priests and servants. Torquemada thinks that their number equalled the days in the Aztec year, namely, three hundred and sixty, and Clavigero believes that there were two thousand chapels besides.[138]

The temples in other towns were pretty much like the foregoing, three being usually grouped around a central pyramid in a square, each with its idol and one or two braziers. Others were mounds of earth cased with stone, with one broad stairway in the centre of the western side, or with steps on three sides, sometimes at each corner.[139] The chapels on the platform were usually two or three stories in height, often provided with balconies, the whole edifice being plastered and polished.[140]

The pyramid at Mexico, large as it was, did not equal that at Cholula, which Humboldt estimates at five thousand seven hundred and sixty feet in circumference and one hundred and seventy-seven feet in

xviii.; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 63–5; *Ortega*, in *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 279–89; *Tezozomoc, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 151–3, 193; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 245; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 302–3, 502–3; *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 75; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 394–8; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 242; *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 248; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 187; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 154–5; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 659–65; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 664, tom. ii., pp. 226–35, with cuts; *Warden, Recherches*, p. 66; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 142–5.

[138] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 145; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 33. Gomara, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 120, says that there were 2,000 idols, each of which is supposed to have had a separate chapel. *Cavo, Tres Siglos*, tom. i., p. 2; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxii.; in cap. cxxiv., he adds that 100 of these were great temples.

[139] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 120. Some temple pyramids, says Dávila Padilla, formed a perfect cone, the casing being composed of large stones at the bottom; as the wall rose, the stones decreased in size; the summit was crowned with a precious stone. *Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 75; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 72.

[140] 'Los grandes tenian tres sobrados encima de los altares, todos *de terrados y* bien altos. *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 64; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 141.

Digitized by Google

height. It consisted of four square terraces facing the cardinal points, which seem to have been composed of alternate layers of adobe and clay, and was surrounded by a double wall, according to Diaz. On the top stood the semispherical chapel of Quetzalcoatl, with its door made low so that all who entered should bend in humility.[141] This city contained, besides, a great number of smaller temples, the total equalling the number of days in the Mexican year.[142] The temple at Tezcuco was also several steps higher than the Mexican pyramid.[143] King Nezahualcoyotl, who is said to have believed in one supreme god, erected in his honor a nine-story building, to indicate the nine heavens, the roof of which was studded with stars and surmounted by three pinnacles; the interior was decorated with gold and feather-work and precious stones. The upper floor was a receptacle for musical instruments, from one of which, the *chililitli*, the edifice was named.[144] The traditional temples of early times, very fairy creations according to the accounts of the natives, were far superior to the later ones; but these relations are little more than supernatural fables.[145]

[141] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., pp. 239–40; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 33–4. Bernal Diaz counted 120 steps, which scarcely agrees with the height of the pyramid. *Hist. Conq.*, fol. 72. Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 390–1, mentions 60 steps only. 'Alto bien mas de quarenta estados: fue hecho de Adove, y Piedra.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 281. Montanus adds that on the summit stood a square structure, supported by 28 pillars, within which were thousands of skulls; he mentions two chapels. *Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 236. It had 1,508 steps; in the wall was a large diamond. *West-Indische Spieghel*, p. 238.

[142] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlix. Some of these had two chapels, which would make the number of towers about 400. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. ii.

[143] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 245. The description of the temple as given by this writer is almost identical with that of the great temple at Mexico. *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 72; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 305.

[144] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 257.

[145] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 107–8. Further authorities on Mexican buildings: *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. iv.–v., viii.–xi., xiii.–xviii., dec. iii., lib. i., cap. viii., lib. ii., cap. xi., xv.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii.–iii., viii., x.; dec. viii., lib. iv.; *Mendieta, Hist.*

Digitized by Google

Eccles., pp. 84–7, 121; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.* tom i., p. 155; *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 359, 362; *West-Indische Spieghel* pp. 240–8; *Munster, Cosmographia*, p. 1410; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 80–5, 235–7, 242–3; *Cortés, Aven. y Conq.*, pp. 120, 128–33; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 123–7, 172–5, 252–3, 258–9, 266; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 31–2, 75, 84–5, 97–9, 152–62; *Monglave, Résumé*, pp. 20–1, 24–5, 36–7; *Touron, Hist. Gén.*, tom. iii., pp. 40–8; *Cooper's Hist. N. Amer.*, pt ii., p. 164; *Lafond, Voyage*, tom. i., pp. 106–7; *Brownell' Ind. Races*, pp. 92–5; *Ranking's Hist. Researches*, pp. 336–7; *Domenech, Mexique*, pp. 70–2; *Foster's Pre-Hist. Races*, p. 391; *Dilworth's Conq. Mex.*, pp. 64, 70–1; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 20–1; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 55–7; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, pp. 30–3; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1033, 1123–4, 1133.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XIX.

MEDICINE AND FUNERAL RITES AMONG THE NAHUAS

MEXICAN CONTRIBUTIONS TO MEDICAL SCIENCE—THE BOTANICAL GARDENS—LONGEVITY—PREVALENT DISEASES—INTRODUCTION OF SMALL-POX AND SYPHILIS—MEDICAL TREATMENT—THE TEMAZCALLI—ABORIGINAL PHYSICIANS—THE AZTEC FACULTY—STANDARD REMEDIES—SURGERY—SUPERSTITIOUS CEREMONIES IN HEALING—FUNERAL RITES OF AZTECS—CREMATION—ROYAL OBSEQUIES—EMBALMING—THE FUNERAL PYRE—HUMAN SACRIFICE—DISPOSAL OF THE ASHES AND ORNAMENTS—MOURNERS—FUNERAL CEREMONIES OF THE PEOPLE—CERTAIN CLASSES BURIED—RITES FOR THE SLAIN IN BATTLE—BURIAL AMONG THE TEO-CHICHIMECS AND TABASCANS—CREMATION CEREMONIES IN MICHOACAN—BURIAL BY THE MIZTECS IN OAJACA.

WRITERS on Mexico have paid but slight attention to aboriginal medical science, although the greatest benefit which Europe derived from that part of the New World came doubtless in the form of medicinal substances. Most of the additions to the world's stock of remedies since the sixteenth century were indigenous to tropical America, and in few instances, if any, were their curative properties unknown or unfamiliar to the native doctors. Jalap, sarsaparilla, tobacco, with numerous gums and balsams, were among the simples of American origin. Dr Hernandez, physician to Philip II., was sent to Mexico by his king to investigate the natural history of the country. The results of his researches, in which he

Digitized by Google

was assisted by native experts, were published in a large work, which contains long lists of plants with their medicinal properties, and which has been much used by later writers. I shall not, however, attempt in this chapter to give any catalogue of medicinal plants.[1] The healing art was protected by royalty, and the numerous rare plants in the royal gardens, collected at great expense from all parts of the country, were placed at the disposal of the doctors in the large cities, who were ordered to experiment with each variety, that its curative or injurious properties might be utilized or shunned. Thus the court physicians derived from these constantly increasing collections all the advantages of travel through distant provinces.[2]

The Nahuas were a healthy race; naturally so with their fine climate, their hardy training, active habits, frequent bathing, and temperate diet. The extraordinary statements respecting the great age attained by their kings in the early periods of Nahua history are of course absurdly exaggerated; but as centenarians are often met with among their descendants at the present day, there is no doubt that they were a long-lived race, and that those who did not attain a hundred years succumbed for the most part to acute diseases.[3] Indigestion and its accompanying ills were unknown, and deformed people were so rare that Montezuma kept a collection of them as a curiosity. The diseases most prevalent were acute fevers, colds, pleurisy, catarrh, diarrhœa, and, in the coast districts,

[1] *Hernandez, Nova Plantarum*, etc. The MSS., comprising 24 books of text and 11 books of plates, were sent to the Escurial in Spain, and from them abridged editions were published in Mexico, 1615, and Rome, 1651. The latter edition is the one in my collection. Sahagun also devotes considerable space to a description of herbs and their properties. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., xi.

[2] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 157; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vii., cap. xi.; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 623–4.

[3] 'E'da maravigliare, che i Messicani, e massimamente i poveri, non fossero a molte malattie sottoposti atteso la qualità de'loro alimenti.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 217; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 88.

Digitized by Google

intermittent fever, spasms, and consumption, aggravated by exposure.[4]

Deadly epidemics swept the country at intervals, the traditional accounts of which are so intermingled with fable that we can form no idea of their nature. One of the most fatal and wide-spread recorded was that brought on by famine, war, and the anger of the gods at the breaking up of the Toltec empire.[5] The *matlazahuatl* was a pestilence said to be confined entirely in its ravages to the natives, and which made great havoc even after the Spaniards came. It is thought by some to have attacked the people periodically in former times, and to have been similar in its nature to the yellow fever. While the Aztecs were shut up in their island home, a curious malady, consisting of a swelling of the eyelids, followed by a violent dysentery ending in death, or, as others say, by a swelling of the throat and body, attacked the nations on the mainland, especially the Tepanecs. The popular tradition was, that the fumes of roasted fish and insects, wafted from the island to the shore, created a powerful longing for this new, and to them unobtainable, food, and that the pangs of an unsatisfied appetite originated the pestilence.[6] Ixtlilxochitl relates that a catarrhic scourge fell upon the people during the unusually severe winter of 1450 and carried off large numbers, especially of the aged.[7]

The vices introduced by the Spaniards, their oppression of the natives, and the consequent disregard of the ancient regulations respecting cleanliness and

[4] 'Las principales enfermedades que corrian entre esta gente, eran de abundancia de colera, y flema, o otros malos humores, causados de mala comida, y falta de abrigo.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. x., cap. xxi.

[5] *Tezozomoc, Crón. Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 64; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 365.

[6] 'Hacia malparir las Mugeres, de antojo de comer de aquello que asaban....daban camazas á los Viejos de deseo de comer de aquello; y á las Mugeres se los hinchaban los brazos, las manos, y las piernas, que adolecian mucho, y morian con aquel deseo.' *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. x. Torquemada qualifies this by, 'Esto dicho, pase por cuento.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 93; *Tezozomoc, Crón. Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 21–2, 64.

[7] *Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 250.

Digitized by Google

the use of liquors, prepared the way for new maladies. With the Spaniards came the small-pox, measles, and as some believe, the syphilis. Small-pox is said to have been introduced by a negro from one of Narvaez' ships and spread with frightful rapidity over the whole country, destroying whole households who died and found no other graves than their houses. Measles were introduced some ten or eleven years later, also from the Spanish ships. The yellow fever has never prevailed to any great extent among the natives.[8] Respecting syphilitic diseases and their origin there has been much discussion. The first appearance of the malady has been attributed to the Old World and the New and to many localities in the former. But naturally neither continent nor any nation has been willing to accept the so-regarded dishonor of inflicting on the world this loathsome plague. The discussion of the subject seems unprofitable, and I shall not reopen it here. The testimony in the matter appears to me to prove that syphilis existed in Europe long before the discovery of America; but there are also some indications in the traditional history of the Nahua peoples that the disease in some of its forms was not unknown to the aboriginal Americans before their intercourse with foreigners.[9]

Accustomed to look on death in its most terrible form in connection with their oft-recurring religious festivals, the people seem to have become somewhat callous to its dread presence, and to have met its approach with less fear of the dark and unknown hereafter than might have been expected from their superstitious nature. An attack of illness did not

[8] *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 15; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 148.

[9] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 117–19, tom. iv., pp. 303–28; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. x., cap. xxi.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 148; *Pauw, Rech. Phil.*, tom. i., pp. 46–9; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indigena*, pp. 99–101; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. ii., pp. 434–5; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., pp. 66–71; *Chevalier, Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, p. 53; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 182; *Id.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1858, tom clx., p. 280; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vii., p. 246.

Digitized by Google

necessarily produce great anxiety, or an immediate recourse to the doctor's services; but the common people resorted for the most part to simple home cures, which were the more effective as the curative properties of herbs and their modes of application were generally well known.[10] The unconcern with which they regarded sickness did not result from want of affection, for the Aztecs are said to have been very attentive to their sick, and spent their wealth without stint to save the life of friends. Yet the Tlascaltecs, a hardier race, are reported by Motolinia to have been less attentive, and some other Teo-Chichimec tribes did not hesitate to kill a patient whose malady did not soon yield to their treatment, under pretense of putting him out of his misery, but really to get him off their hands. This work of charity was performed by thrusting an arrow down the throat of the invalid, and old people were especially the recipients of such favors.[11]

The favorite remedy for almost every ill of the flesh was the vapor-bath, or *temazcalli*. No well-to-do citizen's house was complete without conveniences for indulging in these baths, and the poorer families of each community owned one or more temazcalli in common. The reader is already sufficiently familiar with the general features of these baths, a confined space with facilities for converting water into steam being all that was required. Clavigero describes and pictures a very graceful structure for this purpose, for which, as it seems to involve the then unknown principle of the arch, he probably drew somewhat upon his imagination. It is of adobes, semi-globular in

[10] 'Both men, women, and children had great knowledge in herbs.... They did spend little among Physicians.' *Gage's New Survey*, p. 111. 'Casi todos sus males curan con yeruas.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 117. 'No se guardauan de males contagiosos, y enfermedades, y be tialmente se dexavan morir.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. vi., cap. xvi.

[11] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 119. 'Si algun médico entre ellos (Tlascaltecs) fácilmente se puede haber, sin mucho ruido ni costa, van lo á ver, y si no, mas paciencia tienen que Job.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 76.

Digitized by Google

form, about eight feet in diameter, six feet high, with a convex floor a little below the level of the ground. On one side was an opening sufficiently large to admit a man's body, on the opposite side a square furnace separated from the interior by a slab of tetzontli, and at the top an air-hole. Most of the bath-houses, however, were simply square or oblong chambers with no furnace attached, in which case the fire had of course to be removed before the apartment was ready for use. When the apparatus was properly heated, a mat was spread on the floor, and the patient entered, sometimes accompanied by an assistant, bearing a dish of water to be thrown on the floor and walls to produce steam, and a bunch of maize-leaves with which his body, and especially the part affected, was to be beaten. A plunge into cold water after a profuse perspiration was frequently but not always resorted to. As I have said, there were scarcely any maladies for which this treatment was not recommended, but it was regarded as particularly efficacious in the case of fevers brought on by costiveness, bites of venomous serpents and insects, bruises, and unstrung nerves, and to relieve the pains and purify the system of child-bearing women. The steam-baths were also much used to promote cleanliness and to refresh the weary bodies of those in good health.[12]

The beneficial effects of a change of climate upon invalids seem to have been appreciated, if we may credit Herrera, who states that Michoacan was much resorted to by the sick from all parts of the country.[13] For severe cases, the expenses of treating which could not be borne except by the wealthy classes, hospitals were established by the government in all the larger cities, endowed with ample revenues, where patients from the surrounding country were cared for by ex-

[12] *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 214–16, with cuts, copied in *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 671–3; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. xi., pp. 286–7.

[13] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. ix.

Digitized by Google

perienced doctors, surgeons, and nurses well versed in all the native healing arts.[14] Medical practitioners were numerous, who attended patients for a small remuneration; the jealousy of Spanish physicians, however, brought them into disrepute soon after the Conquest, and the healing art, like others, greatly degenerated. It is related that a famous medicine-man of Michoacan was summoned before the college of physicians in Mexico on the charge of being a quack. In reply to the accusation, he asked his judges to smell a certain herb, which produced a severe hemorrhage, and then invited them to check the flow of blood. Seeing that they were unable to do this promptly, he administered a powder that immediately had the desired effect. "These are my attainments," he exclaimed, "and this the manner in which I cure the ailings of my patients."[15]

The Esculapius of the Nahuas was embodied in the persons of Oxomococipactonatl and Tlatecuinxochicaoaca, who were traditionally the inventors of medicine and the first herbalists among the Toltecs. Soon after its invention the healing profession became one of the most highly honored, and its followers constituted a regular faculty, handing down their knowledge and practice from generation to generation, according to the Nahua caste-system, according to which the son almost invariably adopted the profession of his father by whom he was educated. This system of education from early childhood under the father's guidance, the opportunities for practice in the public hospitals, free access to the botanical gardens, and the numerous subjects for anatomical dissection supplied by sacrificial rites, certainly offered to the Nahua doctor abundant opportunities of acquiring great knowledge and skill.

[14] 'En las Ciudades principales....habia hospitales dotadas de rentas y vasallos donde se resabian y curaban los enfermos pobres.' *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxli. 'De cuando en cuando van por toda la provincia á buscar los enfermos.' *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 131; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 165; *Carbajal, Discurso*, pp. 37–8.

[15] *Bustamante*, in *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. xi., p. 282.

Digitized by Google

The profession was not altogether in the hands of the sterner sex; for female physicians were in high repute, especially on the eastern coast. In certain cases, as of childbirth, we find the patient attended by none but women, who administer medicines and baths and render other necessary assistance, even going so far as to cut out the infant in order to save the mother's life.[16]

Medicines were given in all the usual forms of draught, powder, injection, ointment, plaster, etc.; the material for which was gathered from the three natural kingdoms in great variety. Many of the herbs were doubtless obtained from the gardens, but large quantities were obtained in the forests of different provinces by wandering collectors who brought their herbs to the market-places for sale, or even peddled them, it is said, from house to house. Each ailment had its particular corrective, the knowledge of which was not intrusted to the memory alone, but was also recorded in painted books.[17] Doubtless many of the vegetable and other medicines employed were mere nostrums, administered to give an exalted opinion of the doctor's knowledge and skill rather than with any hope of effecting a cure.

Sahagun gives page after page of native recipes for every ailment of the human body, which cannot be reproduced here. Many of the remedies and methods of application are as absurd as any of those which

[16] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., p. 185; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. ix., cap. vii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 211–12, 216–17; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 131.

[17] 'Hay calle de herbolarios donde hay todas las raíces y yerbas medicinales que en la tierra se hallan. Hay casas como de boticarios donde se venden las medicinas hechas, así potables como ungüentos emplastos.' *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 104. They 'possédaient des livres dans lesquels étaient consignées minutieusement toutes leurs observations relatives aux sciences naturelles.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 637–8. See also *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 116; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 300; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 117; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 309. 'Tenian siete, o ocho maneras de rayzes de yeruas y flores: de yeruas y arboles, que eran las que mas comunmente vsauan para curarse.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. x., cap. xxi.

Digitized by Google

have been noticed among the wild tribes. For diseases of the scalp, a wash of urine, an ointment of soot, and an application of black clay were prescribed, together with vegetable specifics too numerous to mention. The white of an egg was much used in mixing remedies for wounds and bruises; a certain animal, *tapaiaxin*, was eaten for a swollen face; the broth of a boiled fowl was recommended for convalescents. Cataracts on the eye were rasped and scraped with certain roots; for bloodshot eyes, the membrane was cut, raised with a thorn, and anointed with woman's milk; clouded eyes were treated with lizard's dung. Morning dew cured catarrh in newly born children. Hoarseness was treated by drinking honey, and an external application of India-rubber. Wounds in the lips must be sewn up with a hair; a certain insect pounded and hot pepper were among the remedies for toothache, and great care of the teeth was recommended. Stammering in children was supposed to be caused by too long suckling. Remedies for a cold were nearly as numerous as in our day. Copper filings were applied to bubos, which may or may not have been syphilitic sores. For looseness of the bowels in infants, the remedy was given, not only to the child, but to the nurse. For a severe blow on the chest, urine in which lizards had been boiled must be drunk. The necessity of regulating the bowels to sustain health was well understood, and the doctor usually effected his purpose by injecting a herbal decoction from his mouth through the leg-bone of a heron. Purgatives in common use were jalap, pine-cones, *tacuache*, *amamaxtla*, and other roots; diuretics, *axixpatli* and *axixtlacotl;* emetics, *mexochitl* and *neixcotlapatli*. *Izticpatli* and *chatalhuic* are mentioned among the remedies for fevers. Balsams were obtained from the *huitziloxitl* by distillation, from the *huaconex* by soaking the bark in water, and from the *maripenda* by boiling the fruit and tender stones. Oils were made from *tlapatl*,

Digitized by Google

chile, chian, ocotl (a kind of pine), and the India-rubber tree. *Octli*, or wine, was often prescribed to strengthen the system, and was also mixed with other medicines to render them more palatable, for which latter purpose cacao was also much used.

Several stones possessed medicinal properties: the *aztetl*, held in the hand or applied to the neck, stopped bleeding at the nose; the *xiuhtomoltetl*, taken in the form of a powder, cured heartburn and internal heat. This latter stone fell from the clouds in stormy weather, sunk into the earth, and grew continually larger and larger, a solitary tuft of grass alone indicating to the collector its whereabouts. The bones of giants dug up at the foot of the mountains were collected by their dwarfish successors, ground to powder, mixed with cacao, and drunk as a cure for diarrhœa and dysentery. Persons suffering from fever, or wishing to allay carnal desires, ate jaguar's flesh; while the skin, bones, and excrement of the same animal, burned, powdered, and mixed with resin, formed an antidote for insanity. Certain horny-skinned worms, similarly powdered and mixed, were a specific for the gout, decayed teeth, and divers other ailments

Surgery was no less advanced than other branches of the healing art, and Cortés himself had occasion to acknowledge the skill and speed with which they cured wounds. Snake-bites, common enough among a barefooted people, were cured by sucking and scarifying the wound, covering it with a thin transparent pellicle from the maguey-plant. Rubbing with snuff, together with heat, was another treatment, and the *coanenepilli* and *coapatli* were also considered antidotes. Fractures were treated with certain herbs and gums, different kinds for different limbs, and bound up with splints; if the healing did not progress satisfactorily, the bone was scraped before the operation of resetting. For painful operations of this nature it is possible that narcotics were administered, for at certain of the sacrifices it is related

Digitized by Google

that the victims were sprinkled with *yauhtli* powder to render them less sensitive to pain. Mendieta states that a stupefying drink was given on similar occasions; and Acosta mentions that *oliliuhqui* was taken by persons who desired to see visions. This latter was a seed, which was also an ingredient of the *teopatli*, or divine medicine, composed besides of India-rubber gum, ocotl-resin, tobacco, and sacred water. This medicine could only be obtained from the priests. Blood-letting was much in vogue for various ills, the lancets used being iztli knives, porcupine-quills, or maguey-thorns. Ulli-marked papers were burned by the recovered patient as a thank-offering to the gods. Veterinary surgeons are mentioned by Oviedo as having been employed in the zoölogical gardens of Montezuma.[18]

The medicines, though prepared and applied by the doctors themselves, were not deemed sufficient for the patient; superstitious ceremonies were held to be indispensable to effect a cure, and to enhance the value of professional services. Evil beings and things had to be exorcised, the gods must be invoked, especially the patron deity, known chiefly by the name of Teteionan, who was esteemed the inventor of many valuable specifics, as the ocotl-oil and others, and confessions were extorted to ease the conscience and appease the offended deity. The affected parts were rubbed and pressed amid mutterings and strange gestures, and to work the more upon the simple-minded

[18] Acosta adds that the ashes of divers poisonous insects were mixed with the teopatli composition, which benumbed the part to which it was applied. 'Aplicado por via de emplasto amortigua las carnes esto solo por si, quanto mas con tanto genero de ponçoñas, y como les amortiguaua el dolor, pareciales efecto de sanidad, y de virtud diuina.' *Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 370–1. For details of medical practice, see *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 85–105, 109, lib. xi., pp. 212, 236–86, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 214–15; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxli., ccxiii.; *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, pp. 100, 139; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 274, 550, 558; *Oviedo, Hist. Ind.*, tom. iii., p. 306; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. ii.–iii.; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. x., cap. xxi., dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., dec. iv., lib. ix., cap. viii.; *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del. Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 77, 212–16; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 189, tom. iii., pp. 638–40, tom. iv., p. 355.

Digitized by Google

patient, they pretended to extract a piece of coal, bone, wood, or other object, the supposed cause of the ailment. A favorite treatment in certain prostrating cases was to form a figure of corn dough, which was laid upon a prickly maguey-leaf and placed in the road, with the view of letting the first passer-by carry away the disease—a charitable hope that seems to have afforded much relief to the afflicted. However absurd this jugglery may appear, it no doubt gave a powerful stimulus to the imagination, which must have aided the working of the medicine. In critical cases, chance was often consulted as to the fate of the sufferer. A handful of the largest grains or beans was thrown on the ground, and if any happened to fall upright it was regarded as a sure sign that the patient would die, and he received little or no attention after that; otherwise prescriptions and encouraging words were not spared. Sometimes a number of cord rings were thrown in the same manner, and if they fell in a heap, death was expected to result; but if any fell apart, a change for the better was looked for. To encounter a snake or lizard was held to be a sign of death for the person himself or for his sick friend. Although no curative process, probably, in the case of a serious illness, was altogether free from superstitious rites, yet it is surprising that these played so unimportant a rôle. Among a people so addicted on every occasion to complicated ceremonies, the most complicated might naturally be sought in their efforts to combat disease; but it is just here that the least reliance seems to have been placed in supernatural agencies.[19]

[19] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxli.; *Id.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 234. 'Lanzábanlos (unos cordeles como llavero) en el suelo, y si quedaban revueltos, decian que era señal de muerte. Y si alguno ó algunos salian extendidos, teníanlo por señal de vida, diciendo: que ya comenzaba el enfermo á extender los piés y las manos.' *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 110; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 130–1; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 491–2; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. ix., cap. vii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 216–17. Other authorities on medicine are *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., p. 1133; *Gage's New Survey*, p. 111; *West-Indische Spie-*

Digitized by Google

The Aztecs were very particular about the disposal of their dead, and conducted funeral rites with the pomp that attended all their ceremonials. The obsequies of kings were especially imposing, and their description, embracing as it does nearly all the ceremonies used on such occasions by these nations, will present the most complete view of the proceedings.

When the serious condition of the monarch became apparent, a veil[20] was thrown over the face of the patron god, to be removed on his death, and notice was sent to all the friendly princes, the grandees and nobles of the empire, to attend the obsequies; those who were unable to attend in person sent representatives to deliver their condolence and presents. As soon as the king had breathed his last, certain masters of ceremonies, generally old men whose business it was to attend on these occasions, and who were doubtless connected with the priesthood,[21] were summoned to prepare the body for the funeral. The corpse was washed with aromatic water, extracted chiefly from trefoil,[22] and occasionally a process of embalming was resorted to. The bowels were taken

ghel, p. 247; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 48, vol. ii., pp. 119–20, 137, 434–5; *Carbajal Espinosa*, *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 668–74; *Mühlenpfordt*, *Mejico*, tom. i., pp. 132–4; *Klemm*, *Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 90–1; *Chevalier*, *Mex. Ancien et Mod.*, p. 16; *Baril*, *Mexique*, p. 208; *Pimentel*, *Mem. sobre la Raza Indíyena*, p. 51. I further have in my possession a very rare and curious medical work by Dr Monardes, treating of the various medicinal plants, etc., found in Mexico and Central America, printed in Seville in 1574.

[20] 'Ponen mascaras a Tezcatlipuca, o Vitzilopuchtli, o a otro idolo.' *Gomara*, *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309. As the idols wore masks, it is more likely that a veil was thrown over the face than that another mask should have been put on. 'Suivant une coutume antique attribuée à Topiltzin-Acxitl, dernier roi de Tollan, on mettait un masque au visage des principales idoles, et l'on couvrait les autres d'une voile.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 572. 'Mettevan una maschera all' Idolo di Huitzilopochtli, ed un'altra aquello di Tezcatlipoca.' *Clavigero*, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 95.

[21] 'Ciertas mujeres y hombres que están salariados de público.' *Zuazo*, *Carta*, in *Icazbalceta*, *Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 364. Brasseur de Bourbourg thinks that they were only employed by the common people. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 569. Tezozomoc states that princes dressed the body. *Crónica*, *Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 142.

[22] Zuazo says that the corpse was held on the knees of one of the male or female shrouders, while others washed it. *Carta*, in *Icazbalceta*, *Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 364.

Digitized by Google

out and replaced by aromatic substances, but the method does not seem to have been very complete, and may only have been intended to serve while the body lay in state, for no remains of embalmed mummies have been found. The art was an ancient one, however, dating from the Toltecs as usual, yet generally known and practised throughout the whole country. A curious mode of preserving bodies was used by the lord of Chalco, who captured two Tezcucan princes, and in order that he might feast his eyes upon their hated forms, had them dried and placed as light-holders in his ball-room.[23] When the invited guests had arrived, the body was dressed in many mantles, often to the number of fifteen or twenty, such as the king had worn on the most solemn occasions, and consequently richly embroidered and glittering with jewels.[24] While some were shrouding the body, others cut papers of different colors into strips of various forms, and adorned the corpse therewith. Water was then poured upon its head with these words: "This is the water which thou usedst in this world;"[25] and a jug of water was placed among the shrouds, the priest saying: "This is the water wherewith thou art to perform the journey." More papers were now delivered to the deceased in bunches, the priest explaining the import of each, as he placed it with the body. On delivering the first bunch, he said: "With these thou art to pass between two mountains that confront each other." The second bunch, he was told, would pass him safely over a road guarded by a large snake; the third would conduct him by a place held by an alligator, *xochitonal;*

[23] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 151, 87; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., p. 16; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 145, tom. ii., p. 99; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap., xiv.

[24] The chapter on dress furnishes all the information respecting the royal wardrobe. It is not unlikely that princes assisted in robing the king, for such was the custom in Michoacan, and that the mantles brought by them were used for shrouding, but authors are not very explicit on this point.

[25] Brasseur de Bourbourg uses the expression, 'C'est cette eau que tu as reçue en venant au monde.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 569.

Digitized by Google

the fourth would protect and aid him in traversing the 'eight deserts;' other papers would facilitate the passage of the 'eight hills,' and still others afford protection against the cutting winds termed *itzehecayan*, which were so strong as to tear out rocks and cut like very razors; here the wearing apparel buried with him would also be of great service. A little red dog was thereupon slain by thrusting an arrow down its throat, and the body placed by the side of the deceased, with a cotton string about its neck. The dog was to perform the part of Charon, and carry the king on his back across the deep stream called Chicunahuapan, 'nine waters,'[26] a name which points to the nine heavens of the Mexicans.

It will thus be seen that the dead had a difficult road to travel before reaching their future abode, which was on the fifth day after the burial, and that they needed the articles of comfort and necessity, as food, dresses, and slaves, which affectionate friends provided for their use. The ideas entertained by the Nahuas respecting a future life belong to another department of my work, and will only be alluded to incidentally in this chapter. After the defunct had received his passports, he was covered with a mantle like that of the god which his condition and mode of death rendered appropriate, and decorated with its image. As most kings were warriors, he would be dressed in a mantle of Huitzilopochtli, and would, in addition, wear the mantle of his favorite god.[27] A lock of hair was cut off, and placed, with one that had been cut at his birth, as well as small idols, in a casket painted inside and out with the images of the

[26] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 527; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 94. Gomara says the dog served as guide: 'Vn perro que lo guiasse adonde auia de yr.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309.

[27] 'Le ponian los vestidos del Dios, que tenia por mas Principal en su Pueblo, en cuia Casa, ò Templo, ò Patio se havia de enterrar.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 521; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 93–5. Duran mentions an instance where a king was dressed in the mantles of four different gods. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309.

Digitized by Google

patron deity. The casket used for this purpose in the case of some of the Chichimec kings is described to have been of emerald or other fine stone, three feet square, and covered by a gold lid set with precious stones. A mask, either painted, or of gold, or of turquoise mosaic, was placed over the face,[28] and a chalchiuite, which was to serve for a heart, between the lips. According to Tezozomoc and Duran, a statue was placed with the king, dressed in royal insignia by the hands of princes. The chiefs of the senate redressed it in other robes after painting it blue. It was then honored with addresses and presents, and again undressed, painted black, and arrayed in a robe of Quetzalcoatl; a garland of heron feathers was placed upon its head, bracelets and jewelry about its body, a small gilded shield by its side, and a stick in the hand. This figure shared the honors given to the body, and was burned with it.[29]

The arrayed corpse was either laid upon a litter covered with rich cloths, or seated upon a throne, and watched over by a guard of honor, while princes and courtiers came to pay their last respects.[30] They approached with great manifestations of grief, weeping, lamenting, clapping their hands, bending the body or exhibiting neglect of person, and addressed the de-

[28] 'Sobre la mortaja le ponian vna mascara pintada.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 521. Perhaps he confounds the idol image on the robe with the mask, for it is unlikely that the mask should be placed upon the shroud. 'Visage découvert.' *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 201. Speaking of the obsequies of Tezozomoc of Azcapuzalco, Ixtlilxochitl says that a turquoise mask was put over his face, 'conforme lo fisonomía de su rostro. Esto no se usaba sino con los monarcas de esta tierra; á los demas reyes les ponian una máscara de oro.' *Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 370. Veytia states that it was a gold mask 'garnecida de turquezas.' *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 5. The hair, says Gomara, 'quedaua la memoria de su anima.' *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309.

[29] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 90, 98-9; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix. 'On plaçait sur le lit de parade la statue que l'on faisait toujours à l'image du roi.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 572. The only statue referred to by other authors is that made of the ashes after the cremation.

[30] Some of the early Chichimec kings lay five days in state, and Tlaltecatzin, forty days, his body being buried on the eightieth day. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 61, 72, 87.

Digitized by Google

funct, referring to his present happiness, the loss his departure had caused, his goodness and bravery, and begged his acceptance of the presents they had brought. This performance was enacted by all, those of higher rank taking precedence, and leaving offerings of ten slaves, a hundred robes, and other things, while others brought gifts of less value. Then came the women, and while they were leaving their presents of food, the aged courtiers intoned the funeral chant, the *miccacuicatl*. Addresses of condolence were also made to the royal family or the senate. The human sacrifices were inaugurated at this time by the immolation of the sacerdotal slave under whose charge the household idols stood.[31] On the fifth day, before daybreak, a grand procession formed for the temple, preceded by an enormous paper banner, four fathoms in length, and richly adorned with feathers, on which the deeds of the defunct were doubtless inscribed, and attended by priests who wafted incense and chanted his glory, though in mournful strains, and without instrumental accompaniment.[32] The corpse was borne upon the state litter by the most trusted of the noble servitors, while at the sides walked the chief lords and princes dressed in mourning, their attire consisting of long, square mantles of dark color, trailing on the ground, without any ornaments; some, however, were painted with figures of skulls, bones, and skeletons. Behind them came the ambassadors of absent princes, the grandees and nobles from all parts of the country, each carrying some insignia, weapons, or jewels to be offered on the pyre.[33] In the procession were also a large

[31] Acosta, *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 321, among others, calls this slave a priest.

[32] Although Acosta says, 'tañendo tristes flautas y atambores.' *Hist. de las Ynd*, p. 322; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xviii. 'On faisait deux grandes bannières de papier blanc.' *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 309.

[33] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 370; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 6–7. Duran states that kings bore the corpse and that the mourners were dressed as water-goddesses. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix., xl., tom. ii., cap. li. Acosta says that the arms and insignia were carried before the body by knights. *Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 321.

Digitized by Google

number of slaves, all newly attired in the royal livery,[34] and carrying clothes, implements, and other articles, according to the duties assigned them. On reaching the court-yard of the temple, the priest who directed the burning came to receive the procession, and conducted it to the altar devoted to cremation, all chanting the while a moral song, in which they reminded the mourners that as they were now carrying a senseless body to its last resting-place, so would they be carried; they also reminded them that good deeds alone would remain to keep their remembrance green, and pictured the glories in store for the deserving. These priests were called *coacuiles*, and their office was held to be of such importance that they prepared for it by fasting and confession. They appeared in the same idol dress as the dead king, though with more elaborate ornaments. We find them on one occasion as demons with faces at different parts of their dress, set with eyes of mirrors and gaping mouths; and at another time with blackened or dyed bodies and paper maxtlis, swinging the yellow sticks used to stir the ashes. According to Ixtlilxochitl, the high-priest of Cihuacoatl, who was supposed to gather the dead, came out to receive the procession.[35]

The opinions as to the introduction of cremation are extremely varied, but it seems to have been practised in very ancient times by the migrating tribes, who took this means to secure the remains of honored chiefs from desecration; their ashes could thus be carried along and serve as talismanic relics. Ixtlilxochitl gives an instance of this in the case of a Chichimec king who died in battle, and whose body was

[34] Tezozomoc, *Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 90, 142, states that they were dressed in royal insignia and jewels, which is not very likely; a number of them, however, were loaded with the royal wardrobe, which fact may have given rise to this statement.

[35] *Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 370; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Id.*, vol. v., pp. 200–1; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 322; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xl. 'Salia el gran Sacerdote; con los otros Ministros, à recibirlo.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 521.

Digitized by Google

burned, so that the ashes might be carried home with convenience and safety. Brasseur de Bourbourg also holds that cremation was an ancient Toltec custom, but the first recorded case is that of the last Toltec king, Topiltzin.[36] Others assert that the Toltecs who remained in the country after the destruction of their empire adhered to interment, as did the early Chichimecs. Veytia affirms that Ixtlilxochitl or Tezozomoc was the first to be deposited according to the forms instituted by Topiltzin and used by the Mexicans, namely, burning; Torquemada distinctly states that the Chichimecs used cremation, and Clavigero agrees with him.[37] Veytia also thinks that the first Aztec kings were buried, but this is contrary to all other reliable accounts. The custom may not have been very general, for Sahagun states that during Itzcoatl's reign it was resolved by the chiefs that all should be burned, indicating at the same time that cremation was then already in use. The later established usage was to burn all except those who died a violent death or of incurable diseases, and those under seventeen years of age, who were all interred. The Tlascaltecs and Tarascos practised burning, like the Aztecs.[38]

The altar devoted to the burning was doubtless one attached to the temple consecrated to the deity to whose abode the deceased was supposed to go. Cha-

[36] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 332, 325, 327, 388.

[37] 'El [the mode] que estos Chichimecas vsaron, fue quemarlos.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 60, 72, 87; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 369, 388; *Id., Hist. Chich.*, pp. 214, 223, 261–2. Veytia, who introduces some arguments on this point, thinks that Tezozomoc introduced burning, yet he describes ceremonial cremations in the case of several kings before him. *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 3–4, tom. ii., p. 113; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 140, tom. ii., pp. 97–8.

[38] *Camaro, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 165, 202. 'La gente menuda comunmente se enterraua.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 308; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 200; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 528; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 4; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 129. 'Sabia por las pinturas, que se quemaron en tiempo del señor de México que se decia *Itzcóatl*, en cuya época los señores, y los principales que habia entónces, acordaron y mandaron que se quemasen todas, para que no viniesen á manos del vulgo.' *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 140–1.

Digitized by Google

ves describes it as three feet in height and the same in width,[39] on which a heap of ocotl was piled. Upon this pyre the body was laid in full array, together with the dog, and as the fire flared up, the mourners added insignia, jewels, weapons, food, and other tributes. Two of the demon-like coacuiles stirred the fire while others stood by chanting appropriate songs and sprinkling blessed water and incense upon the remains, as well as upon the mourners. Now began the sacrifice of those doomed to follow the deceased to the other world and there administer to his wants and pleasure. These were at first but few in number, but during the bloody dominion of the Aztecs they increased to several hundred, as at the funeral of Nezahualpilli, when two hundred males and one hundred females were immolated; they consisted chiefly of slaves and deformed beings from the royal retinue, and such as had been presented. Duran says that all slaves and deformed persons belonging to the household were killed, and Acosta goes so far as to state that the whole royal household was despatched, including the favorite brother of the king; but this must be taken with a grain of allowance, for at this rate the nobles, who crowded the service of the monarch, even in menial positions, would soon have been exterminated. Some courtiers were, no doubt, expected to prove the sincerity of their life-long adulations by either offering themselves as victims, or submitting to a selection made from their number. Sometimes a chief would signify his preference for those among his concubines whom he wished to have with him, a mark of favor often received with great joy, for they would thus be sure of entering into the supreme heaven, where the warlike lords usually went, while they might otherwise be doomed to dark Mictlan. Self-immolation of wives was, accordingly, not uncommon, although not prescribed by law, as in India. Brasseur says

[39] *Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 309.

Digitized by Google

that captives were sacrificed, but Duran states that they were not offered except to the gods. Persons born during the last five days of the year—the unlucky days—were, however, reserved for royal obsequies.[40]

This array of victims was harangued by a relative of the deceased, who dilated on the happiness before them in being allowed to join their master, and admonished them to serve him as faithfully in the next world as they had done here. They were then consigned to the priests, who laid them upon a teponaztli,[41] cut open the breast, and tore out the heart, which was thrown upon the pyre, while the bodies were cast upon another blazing hearth near by.[42] Gomara and others state that the bodies were interred, but as the dog and the property were burned, it is not likely that the more important and useful human servants were buried.[43]

When the body had been thoroughly burned, the fire was quenched, the blood collected from the victims being used for this purpose, according to Duran, and the ashes, sprinkled with holy water, were placed, with the charred bones, stones, and melted jewelry, in the urn or casket, which contained also the hair of the deceased. On the top of this was placed a statue of wood or stone, attired in the royal habiliments, and bearing the mask and insignia, and the casket was deposited at the feet of the patron deity, in the

[40] *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 379, 388; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix., xl.; *Bologne*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 213–14; *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 432; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 202; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 573; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 8–9.

[41] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 90; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix, tom. ii., cap. li.

[42] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 521; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 321. Camargo indicates that the bodies were thrown upon the same pyre together with the presents. *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 202. 'Sacándoles los corazones, y la sangre de ellos en una batea ó gran xícara, con la cual rociavan á Huitzilopochtli, á quien le presentaron los corazones de todos los muertos.' *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 90.

[43] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 370; *Tezozomoc*, ubi sup.

Digitized by Google

chapel.[44] On the return of the procession a grand banquet was given to the guests, ending, as usual, with a presentation of gifts. For four days the mourners paid constant visits to the shrine to manifest their sorrow and to present the offerings of food, clothes, or jewels, termed *quitonaltia*, 'to give good luck.' These were either placed by the urn or upon the altar of the god, and removed by the priests, who ate the food and sent the valuables to the temple treasury. These ceremonies closed with the sacrifice of ten to fifteen slaves, and then the casket was deposited in that part of the temple appointed for its permanent reception.[45] Among the Chichimecs the royal casket often remained forty days on view in the palace, whence it was carried in procession to its final resting-place.[46]

In cases of interment the deceased was deposited in the grave, seated on a throne in full array, facing the north,[47] with his property and victims around him. In early times, when the practice of interment was more general, the victims were few, if not dispensed with entirely, and consisted usually of two favorite concubines, placed one on each side of their master, who, it is said, were entombed alive, though it is more

[44] 'La colocaron en el mismo lugar en que ardió la pira.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 9. This author says that the mouth stone of the deceased, together with the masks, robes, and ornaments, were taken off before the body was placed upon the pyre; this could only have been for the purpose of dressing the wooden statue therein; the stone was, however, placed inside the urn. *Ixtlilxochitl*, ubi sup. Brasseur de Bourbourg calls this bundle of bones *tlaquimilolli*, which he says was sacredly preserved, whether of kings or braves. *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1858, tom. clx., p. 268. In the case of Nauhyotl of Culhuacan, the bones were exhumed and placed in a statue, which was made in his honor, and deposited in a temple consecrated to him. *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix.

[45] 'Al cuarto dia, al anochecer, cargaron los sacerdotes la arca de las cenizas y la estatua, y la colocaron en una especie de nicho, dentro del templo.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., p. 10. 'Sous le pavé même du sanctuaire, devant la statue du dieu.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 574. Duran mentions that the ashes of one king were deposited at the foot of the stone of sacrifice. *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. ii., cap. li.; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 142; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 106; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. li.

[46] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 72, 87; *Vetancort, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., pp. 15–16.

[47] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vii., p. 257.

Digitized by Google

probable that they were stupefied by narcotic drinks, or clubbed, as in Michoacan. This practice of burying alive is ascribed to the Toltecs.[48] The graves were usually large subterranean vaults of stone and lime, situated in the temple court, palace, or some favorite spot near the city, as Chapultepec. It is related that the temple pyramid in Mexico was the superstructure of royal graves, the remains being deposited on the summit, and the successor to the crown erecting upon this another platform. On destroying the temple, the Spaniards found several vaults, one beneath the other, with their valuable contents of jewelry.[49] The Toltecs also buried their dead in and near the temples, and according to some authors, the mounds at Teotihuacan, to the number of several hundred, which will be described in Volume IV. of this work, are the graves of Toltec chiefs.[50] The Chichimec kings were usually buried in round holes, five to six feet deep, situated in caves beneath the palace or in the mountains; in later times, however, they chose the temples.[51]

Twenty days after the burial further offerings were made, together with a sacrifice of from four to five slaves; on the fortieth day two or three more died; on the sixtieth, one or two; while the final immolation, consisting of ten to twelve slaves, took place at the end of eighty days, and put an end to the mourning. Motolinia adds, however, that testimo-

[48] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 316, 331; *Bologne*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 213–14; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 192, 202.

[49] 'La muerte se haçian enterrar en la más alta grada, é despues el subçessor subia otras dos gradas.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 503. 'Los Príncipes necesitaban de gran sepultura, porque se llevaban tras sí la mayor parte de sus riquezas y familia.' *Solis, Hist. Conq. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 432. 'Io aiutai a cauar d'vna sepoltura tre mila Castigliani poco piu ò meno.' *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 310.

[50] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 141; *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 327; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 189.

[51] *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 214; *Id., Relaciones*, pp. 335, 344; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 98.

Digitized by Google

nials of sorrow accompanied by offerings continued to be made every eightieth day for the space of a year.[52]

The obsequies of the subjects were, of course, on a scale of much less grandeur, though the rich and nobles ventured to exhibit a certain pomp. The common man, after having been washed in aromatic waters, was dressed in his best garments; a cheap stone, called the *tentetl*, 'mouth-stone,' was inserted between the lips; the passport papers for the dark journey were handed to him with the usual address; and by his side were placed the water, the dog, the insignia of his trade, as arms, spade, or the like—spindle or broom in the case of a woman—with the dresses and other things required for comfort. Lastly, the mantle of the god which his condition in life and manner of death rendered appropriate was placed upon him; thus a warrior would wear the mantle of Huitzilopochtli with the image of the war god upon it; a merchant the mantle of Iyacatecutli; the artisan that of the patron deity of his trade. A drunkard would, in addition, be covered with the robe of the god of wine; a person who had died by drowning, with that of the water gods; the man executed for adultery, with that of the god of lasciviousness; and so on.[53] According

[52] *Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 31; *Ritos Antiguos*, p. 20. in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix. Ixtlilxochitl, *Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 371, states that the sacrifices on the fourth day consisted of five to six slaves, on the tenth of one, on the eightieth of three. 'Le cinquième on sacrifiait plusieurs esclaves, et cette immolation se répétait encore quatre fois, de dix en dix jours.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 574. Duran, *Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xiv., xxxix., mentions a fast of eighty days, at the end of which a statue was made, like one which he states was burned with the corpse, and to this exactly the same ceremonies were paid as to the defunct, the statue being burned with an equally large number of slaves as before. The fullest descriptions of royal obsequies are given in *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 521–3; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. iii., pp. 3–11; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 95–8; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309–10; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 571–4; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xxxix., xl., tom. ii., cap. xlviii.; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 86–90, 99.

[53] After describing the robing of drunkards and others, Gomara says: 'Y finalmente a cada oficial dauan el traje del idolo de aquel oficio, which

Digitized by Google

to Zuazo, the corpse was further decorated with feathers of various colors, and seated in a chair to receive the expressions of sorrow and respect of friends, and their humble offerings of flowers, food, or dresses. After a couple of hours a second set of shrouders removed the garments, washed the body again, redressed it in red mantles, with feathers of the same color, and left it to be viewed for an hour or more, according to the number of the visitors. A third time the body was washed, by a fresh corps of attendants, and arrayed, this time, in black garments, with feathers of the same sombre color. These suits were either given to the temple or buried with the body.[54] Nobles had the large banner borne in their procession, and seem to have been allowed the use of sacrifices.[55] According to Chaves, the common people were also burned in their own premises or in the forest, a statement which Acosta and others indirectly confirm by saying that they had no regular burial-places, but their ashes were deposited in the yards of their houses, in the temple courts, in the mountains, or in the field. Upon the graves were placed flags, ornaments, and various offerings of food during the four days of mourning. Visits of condolence with attendant feasting extended over a period of several days, however.[56] People who had died a violent death, by lightning or other natural causes, or of incurable dis-

certainly indicates that a drowned or besotted artisan would wear the mantle due to his position in life as well as that due to his manner of death. *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 309. Clavigero, *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 93–4, uses the following expression: 'Vestivanlo d'un abito corrispondente alla sua condizione, alle sue facoltà, *ed* alle circostanze della sua morte.'

[54] *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., pp. 364–5.

[55] Camargo says, with reference to sacrifices and pompous ceremonies, 'tout cela avait lieu, plus ou moins, à toutes les funérailles, selon la richesse du défunt.' *Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 202; *Prescott's Mex.*, vol. i., p. 63.

[56] *Zuazo, Carta*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 365; *Chaves, Rapport*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série ii., tom. v., p. 310. 'Durauan las exequias diez dias.' *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 321. 'On passait vingt ou trente jours au milieu des fêtes et des festins.' *Camarga, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles, Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., p. 202; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. ii., cap. xviii.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 93–5.

Digitized by Google

eases such as leprosy, tumors, itch, gout, or dropsy, were not burned, but interred in special graves. Branches or shoots of amaranth were placed upon their cheeks, the brow was rubbed with *texutli*, certain papers were laid over the brain, and in one hand was placed a wooden rod which was supposed to become green and throw out branches in the other world. The bodies of women who died in childbirth were also buried; and the burial was attended by great difficulty, since warriors and sorcerers fought bravely to obtain possession of some part of her body, as has been stated in a preceding chapter.[57]

A trader of the rank of pochteca, who died on a journey, was dressed in the garb of his class, with eyes painted black, red circles round the mouth, and with strips of paper all over his person. The body was then deposited in a cacaxtli, or square basket, well secured by cords, and carried to the top of a mountain, where it was fixed to a tree, or pole driven into the ground, and left to wither. The spirit was supposed to have entered the abode of the sun.[58] On the return of the caravan the death was reported to the guild, who broke the news to the family of the deceased. A puppet made of candlewood, and adorned with the usual paper ornaments, was left at the temple for a day, during which the friends mourned over it as if the body was actually before them. At midnight the puppet was burned in the quauhxicalco and the ashes buried in the usual manner. Funeral ceremonies were held for four days, after which the relatives washed the faces, that had remained untouched by water during the absence of the trader, and put an end to the mourning. The practice of paying honors to the dead in effigy was especially in vogue among the warrior class.[59]

[57] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 529; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. vi., pp. 186–91. See p. 269 of this volume.

[58] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. ii., lib. ix., p. 358.

[59] Sahagun intimates that the puppet was for those who were slain by enemies, but adds, afterwards, that a puppet was burned with the same cere-

Digitized by Google

Besides funeral honors to individuals, ceremonies for all those who died in a battle or war were of frequent occurrence, as that ordered by the first Montezuma in memory of the slain in the campaign against Chalco. A procession of all the relatives and friends of the dead, headed by the fathers bearing decorated arms and armor, and terminated by the children, marched through the streets, dancing and chanting mournful songs in honor of those who had fallen fighting for their country and their gods, and for each other's mutual consolation. Toward evening presents were distributed by the king's officials, clothing to the common people, ornaments to the chiefs, and food to all. An effigy was then prepared, the details of whose dress and decoration are minutely described, and before it, placed in the *cihuacalli*, war songs were chanted, instruments were played, women danced and cried for four days; then the image was burned before the temple, the ceremony being called *quitlepanquetzin*, 'burning the dead of the last war.' Some of the ashes were scattered upon the relatives, who fasted for eighty days, the remaining ashes being in the mean time buried; but after the eighty days had passed they were dug up and carried to the hill of Yahualiuhcan, on the boundaries of Chalco, where they were left. Five days later a feast took place, during which the garments of the dead warriors were burned, more offerings were made, and as a final honor to the memory of the departed, all became intoxicated with pulque. Very distinguished warriors were sometimes honored with the funeral rites of royalty.[60]

The ceremonies during the period of mourning were

monies in the court of the house, if they died at home. *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. iv., pp. 314–15; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 587; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 621–2. See this vol., p. 392.

[60] *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 37–8, 86–7, 161–2; *Duran, Hist. Indias*, MS., tom. i., cap. xviii., tom. ii., cap. xlviii.· *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 259–61, 407–8.

Digitized by Google

not the last honors paid to deceased friends. Every year during the four years that the souls were supposed to live in a preparatory state in the heavens,[61] offerings of choice viands, wine, flowers, and reeds of perfume were placed before the casket or upon the grave; songs extolling the merits of the departed were sung, accompanied by dances, the whole closing with feasting and drinking. After this the dead were left to oblivion.[62] These commemorations took place in the months of Tlaxochimaco and Xocotlhuetzin. The former was termed 'the small festival of the dead,' and seems to have been devoted to the common people and children, but at the celebration in the latter month great demonstrations were observed by all; and certain royal personages and warriors who had died for their country were awarded divine honors, their statues being placed among those of the gods, to whose presence they had gone. While the priests were burning incense and making other offerings to the dead, the people stood with blackened bodies on the roofs of their houses, and facing north, prayed to their dead relatives, calling on them to visit their former homes.[63]

In the month of Quecholli another celebration took place, which seems to have been chiefly intended for warriors who had perished in battle. On the fifth day certain small arrows, from five to nine inches in length, and torches, were tied in bundles of four each and placed upon the graves, together with a pair of sweet tamales. At sunset the bundles were set on fire, and the ashes interred with the dead. The shield of the dead, with arrow, mantle, and maxtli attached,

[61] *Explicacione del Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 130; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Id.*, p. 193.

[62] *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 31; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 523.

[63] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 298; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., pp. 193–4. 'Los tres dias ultimos de es' o mes ayunavan todos los vivos á los muertos.' *Explicacione del Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 130. See this vol., pp. 328, 331

Digitized by Google

was afterwards fastened to a stalk of maize of nine joints, mounted by two paper flags, one of which reached the length of the stalk. On the small flag was a cross, worked in red thread, and on the other an ornamentation of red and white thread, from the white part of which a dead humming-bird was suspended. Bunches of white *aztatl* feathers, tied in pairs, were also attached to the stalk by a thread covered with white hen-feathers. This was burned at the next quauhxicalco.[64]

Among the peoples whose funeral ceremonies differ from those described, may be mentioned the Teo-Chichimecs, who interred their dead, and danced and sang for several days after.[65] In Tabasco interment seems also to have prevailed, for Grijalva found a grave in the sand, containing a boy and a girl wrapped in cotton cloth and adorned with jewelry.[66] In Goazacoalco it was the custom to place the bones in a basket, as soon as the flesh was gone, and hang them up in a tree, so that the spirit of the defunct might have no trouble in finding them.[67]

In Michoacan the funeral rites were of a very exacting character. When the king lay on his deathbed, it was incumbent on all vassals and courtiers to attend at the palace, and those who stayed away were severely punished. While awaiting the final breath they were royally entertained, but none could enter the death-chamber. When the corpse was ready for shrouding, the lords entered to dress it in festive robes, each attending to a particular part of the attire; the emerald brooch was put between the lips, and the

[64] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., lib. ii., pp. 163–4; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 281. Brasseur de Bourbourg says that this celebration was of a general character, and dilutes the meagre and doubtful information of his authority considerably. The arrows and food, 'après qu'elles y avaient demeuré un jour et une nuit, on les enlevait et on brûlait le tout ensemble en l'honneur de Mixcohuatl et de ses compagnons d'armes.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 234, tom. iii., pp. 528–9.

[65] *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., p. 119.

[66] *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 304; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 532.

[67] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. ix., cap. vii.

Digitized by Google

body was laid upon a litter covered with cloths of different colors. On one side of the body were placed a bow and quiver, on the other was a doll made up of fine mantles and dressed exactly like the king.[68] While the courtiers were giving vent to lamentations and tendering their respects, the new king proceeded to select those among the servitors, who, according to the inviolable law of the country, were doomed to follow the dead prince. Seven of these were noble women, to whom various duties were assigned; one was appointed to carry the precious lip-ornament, another to keep the rest of the jewels, a third to be cup-bearer, and the others to attend at table and to cook. Among the male victims, who seem to have been slaves of the most part, every trade and profession was represented,[69] as valets, hair-dressers, perfumers, fan-holders, chair-bearers, wood-cutters, boatmen, sweepers, door-keepers, and artisans; also clowns, and some of the physicians who had failed to save the life of the monarch. Occasionally some enthusiast would offer to join his beloved master of his own accord, but this seems to have been prohibited; besides, the new king had doubtless selected all that were obnoxious to him, and could not afford to lose good servants. At midnight the litter was carried on the shoulders of the chief men to the temple, followed by vassals, warriors, and courtiers, some blowing trumpets, others chanting the glories of the dead. In the van of the procession were the victims, who had been bathed in aromatic waters and adorned with garlands stripped of their leaves and branches, and with yellow streaks over the face, who marched in files,

[68] *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 310. 'Esta figura se la ponian encima al Difunto.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 524. It is not likely, however, that a life-size figure, as Gomara calls it, or any figure, for that matter, should have been placed over the ornaments of the king and pressed upon the body. Beaumont says: 'Lo cubrian con una manta, en que estaba pintado ó realzado el cadaver con los mismos adornos.' *Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 55. 'Au-dessus on asseyait une poupée de la taille du défunt.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 83.

[69] 'Matauan vno y aun mas de cada oficio.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 311

Digitized by Google

sounding whistles, rattling bones, and beating tortoise-shell drums. Torch-bearers attended the party, and ahead went a number of men who swept the road, singing at the same time; "Lord, here thou hast to pass, see that thou dost not miss the road!"[70] Four turns were made round the pyre before depositing the corpse upon it. While the flames shot up, and the funeral chants fell from the lips of the mourners, the victims were stupefied with drinks and clubbed; the bodies were thrown into holes behind the temple, by threes or fours, together with the ornaments and other belongings of the deceased. The ashes and valuables were gathered from the smoking pyre, and made into a figure, which was dressed in royal habiliments, with a mask for its face, a golden shield on its back, bows and arrows by its side; this was set upon a throne facing the east, the whole being placed in a large urn, which was deposited upon a bed of golden shields and silver articles in a grave with stone walls, lined with mats, about twelve feet square, and equally deep, situated at the foot of the temple. The urn was covered with a number of valuable mantles, and around it were placed various implements, food, drink, and boxes filled with feather-work and ornaments; the grave was finally bridged with varnished beams and boards, and covered with a coating of earth and clay. After the funeral, all who had taken an active part in the ceremonies went to bathe, in order to prevent any injury to their health,[71] and then assembled at the palace to partake of a sumptuous repast. At the close of the banquet a cotton cloth was given to each guest wherewith to wipe his face, but all remained seated for five days with lowered

[70] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 525. The slaves, he says, 'los embadurnaban todo el cuerpo, con vna tinta amarilla.' 'Yban las andas ó atahud en hombros de los tres principales.' *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 56.

[71] 'Todos los que habian tocado el Caltzontzi y á los demas cuerpos se iban á bañar por preservarse de alguna enfermedad.' *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 57.

Digitized by Google

heads, without uttering a word, except the grandees, who went in turn by night to watch and mourn at the grave. During this period the mourning was general, no corn was ground, no fires lighted, no business transacted; the streets were deserted, and all remained at home, mourning and fasting. The obsequies of the people bore a general resemblance to the above, the ceremonies being regulated by the rank and means of the deceased. The graves were usually situated in the fields or on the slope of a hill.[72]

Among the Miztecs, in Oajaca, where cremation does not seem to have obtained, compliments and addresses were presented to the corpse of a chief, just as if he were alive. A slave arrayed in the same splendid garments worn by his master, with mask, mitre, and other insignia, was placed before it; and while the funeral procession accompanied the body to burial, he represented the chief, and received the honors paid to royalty. At midnight four priests carried the body to the forest, where it was placed, in the presence of the mourners, in a cave, with the feet to the east, and surrounded with various weapons and implements. Two male and three female slaves, who had in the mean time been made drunk and strangled, were also placed in the grave, together with idols to serve as guides. Burgoa was told by the natives that devoted servants used to follow their lord alive into the grave. On the return of the funeral cortège, the slave who represented the deceased was sacrificed and deposited in a hole, which was left unclosed. The cave selected for the grave of the chief was supposed to be the gate to paradise. Burgoa found two of these resting-places. One was situated in a hill and lighted by loop-holes from above. Along the sides were stone

[72] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 54–8; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 523–6; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 310–12; *Gage's New Survey*, pp. 157–60, with a cut; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 82–6; *Payno*, in *Soc. Mex. Geoy., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. i., pp. 717–19.

Digitized by Google

benches, like troughs, upon which lay the bejeweled skeletons, and here and there were niches occupied by idols. Another was a stone vault, with plastered walls, arranged like the former; a stone block closed the entrance.[73] Some authors state that when the flesh was consumed, the bones were taken out and placed in graves in the houses or in the temples; this may, however, only have applied to certain chiefs, for Burgoa found skeletons, as we have seen, in the caves which he explored. Every year, on the anniversary of the birth of the last defunct lord, not on that of his death, great ceremonies were held in his honor.[74] Like the Aztecs, they believed that the soul wandered about for a number of years before entering into perfect bliss, and visited its friends on earth once a year.[75] On the eve of that day the house was prepared as if for a festive occasion, a quantity of choice food was spread upon the table, and the inmates went out with torches in their hands, bidding the spirits enter. They then returned and squatted down round the table with crossed hands and eyes lowered to the ground, for it was thought that the spirits would be offended if they were gazed upon. In this position they remained till morning, praying their unseen visitors to intercede with the gods in their favor, and then arose, rejoiced at having observed due respect for the departed. The food, which the spirits were supposed to have rendered sacred by inhaling its virtue, was distributed among the poor, or deposited in some out-of-the-way place. During the day further ceremonies, accompanied by offerings, were made at the temples, and a table was spread for the priests.[76]

[73] *Geog. Descrip.*, tom. i., pt ii., fol. 160–1, tom. ii., pt ii., fol. 320.

[74] *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 98–9; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xiii.; *Explicacione del Codex Telleriano-Remensis*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 130; *Spiegazione delle Tavole del Codice Mexicano* (Vaticano), in *Id.*, p. 193; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 22–4.

[75] 'Au douzième mois de l'année zapotèque.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 23.

[76] *Burgoa, Geog. Descrip.*, tom. ii., pt ii., fol. 392–3; *Brasseur de Bour-*

Digitized by Google

The Nahuas were physically a fine race. They are described by all the old writers as being tall,[77] well-formed, and of an olive or light copper color; as having thick, black, coarse, though soft and glossy hair, regular teeth, low, narrow, retreating foreheads,[78] black eyes, scant beards,[79] and very little hair on their

bourg, Hist. Nat. Civ., tom. iii., pp. 23–4. Additional references to funeral ceremonies are *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 238, tom. ii., pp. 79, 231–2, 298; *Vetancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, pt ii., pp. 15, 25, 29; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 89–91, 98–9, 141–2, 178–9; *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. iv., pp. 1029–30, 1138–9; *Gemelli Careri*, in *Churchill's Col. Voyages*, vol. iv., p. 514; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, pp. 261–2; *D'Avity, L'Amérique*, tom. ii., p. 69; *Adair, Amer. Ind.*, p. 217; *Touron, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 9–10; *Delaporte, Reisen*, tom. x., pp. 318–23; *Lenoir, Parallèle*, pp. 11–13, 28, 30; *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1824, tom. xxiv., pp. 137–8; *Fransham's World in Miniature*, vol. ii., p. 19; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 666; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, pp. 64–5; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 234, 559–64, tom. ii., pp. 375, 604; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 424–5, tom. iii., pp. 407–8, 453, 520–3, 528–9, 569–74; *Carli, Cartas*, pt i., p. 107; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 456; *Simon's Ten Tribes*, pp. 275–6; *Monglave, Résumé*, p. 32; *Cooper's Hist. N. Amer.*, vol. ii., p. 163; *Baril, Mexique*, p. 203; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, pp. 147–9; *Ranking's Hist. Researches*, pp. 381–4; *Brownell's Ind. Races*, p. 96; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 31, 49–53, 77, 184; *Carbajal, Discurso*, p. 37.

[77] Except the Zapotecs, who, Carbajal Espinosa says, were of low stature and broad-shouldered. *Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 245.

[78] Gomara says they had wide foreheads. *Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317. 'La forma, ò figura de las Cabeças, comunmente las tienen proporcionadas à los cuerpos, y à los otros miembros de èl, y derechas; algunos las tienen empinadas, y las frentes quadradas, y llanas; otros (como son estos Mexicanos, y algunos del Pirù) las tenian, y tienen de mejor forma, algo de hechura de Martillo, ò Navio, que es la mejor forma de todas.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 582–3. 'The Aztec skulls are described as being remarkable for the shortness of their axis, their large flattened occiput obliquely truncated behind, the height of the semicircular line of the temples, and the shortness and trapezoidal form of the parietal plane. They present an elevation or ridge along the sagittal suture; the base of the skull is very short, and the face slightly prognathic, as among the Mongol-Kalmucs. They bear a strong analogy to the skulls of a Peruvian Brachycephali delineated by Morton.' *Foster's Pre-Hist. Races*, p. 326. 'The aboriginal Mexicans of our own time are of good stature and well proportioned in all their limbs. They have narrow foreheads, black eyes, white, well-set, regular teeth, thick, coarse, and glossy black hair, thin beards, and are in general without any hair on their legs, thighs, or arms. Their skin is olive coloured, and many fine young women may be seen among them with extremely light complexions. Their senses are very acute, more especially that of sight, which they enjoy unimpaired to the most advanced age.' *Figuier's Hum. Race*, p. 455. For remarks on Mexican Crania, descriptions and measurements of skulls with cuts, see *Morton's Crania Amer.*, pp. 144–7, 152–7, 231–3, 257, and plates xvi.–xviii.[a], lix.–lxi.

[79] According to Herrera, *Hist. Gen.* (Lond., 1726), vol. iv., p. 125, and Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 35, the Mixtecs had long beards.

Digitized by Google

bodies. Their senses were very acute, especially that of sight, which they enjoyed unimpared to the most advanced age.[80] Their bodies they kept in training by constant exercise. They were wonderful runners and leapers, and, as we have seen, some of their athletic and acrobatic feats were looked upon by the conquerors as nothing short of the work of the devil. It was no unusual thing to meet with people who from their color could scarcely be distinguished from Europeans. The people of Michoacan enjoy the reputation of having been the tallest and handsomest among the Nahuas.[81] The women of Jalisco found great favor in the eyes of the Reverend Father Torquemada. He was shown one there, he says, who might be considered a miracle of beauty; indeed, so fair was her skin, so well-proportioned her body, and so regular her features, that the most skilful portrait-painter would have been put to it to do her justice.[82] Deformed people were very uncommon; indeed, as we have seen, their rarity made them valuable as objects of curiosity, and kings and princes kept collections of them.[83]

[80] 'En los Sentidos exteriores (como son los de el Vèr, Oìr, Oler, y Gustar) los alcançan admirables; porque vèn mui de lejos, y no vsan de Antojos, si no son mui pocos, despues que los han visto, en nuestros Españoles, y eso es en la vejez, y tienen comunmente los ojos buenos, y hermosos, oien mucho, huelen tambien qualquier cosa de mui lejos; lo mismo es el Gusto; el Sentido del tacto, comunmente es delicado, lo qual se verifica en ellos, porque qualquier cosa, que pueda lastimarlos, como es frio, calor, açotes, ù otra exterior afliccion, los aflige mui facilmente, y en mucho grado, y qualquiera enfermedad los adelgaça, mas presto los enflaquece, y mata, que à otra Nacion, asi Española, como otra alguna, como es notorio, à todos los que los conocemos, y son para sufrir mui poco trabajo.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 580.

[81] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., p. 50; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 218; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 337, tom. iii., p. 332; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 57.

[82] He adds further: 'Y esto (aunque no en tanto extremo) corre, mui en general, por todos estos Reinos, y en especial en aquel de Xalisco, en la Nacion, que llaman Coca, y Tecuex, que son los Tonaltecos, y por acà en la de Tlaxcalla, y otras muchas, que por escusar enfado, callo.' *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 582; see also tom. i., p. 339.

[83] 'Sonovi così rari i deformi, che tutti quegli Spagnuoli, e Creogli, che nel 1768, vennero dal Messico in Italia, restarono allora, e sono anche og gidì maravigliati dall' osservare nelle Città di questa coltissima penisola un sì gran numero di ciechi, di gobbi, di zoppi, d'attratti ec.' *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. iv., p. 163. See further, concerning the physical

Digitized by Google

The character of the Nahuas, although the statements of the best authors are nearly unanimous concerning it, is in itself strangely contradictory. We are told that they were extremely frugal in their habits, that wealth had no attractions for them, yet we find them trafficking in the most shrewd and careful manner, delighting in splendid pageants, gorgeous dresses, and rich armor, and wasting their substance in costly feasts; they were tender and kind to their children, and solicitous for their welfare, yet the punishments they inflicted upon their offspring were cruel in the extreme;[84] they were mild with their slaves, and ferocious with their captives; they were a joyous race, fond of feasting, dancing, jesting, and innocent amusements, yet they delighted in human sacrifices, and were cannibals; they possessed a well-advanced civilization, yet every action of their lives was influenced by gross superstition, by a religion inconceivably dark and bloody, and utterly without one redeeming feature; they were brave warriors, and terrible in war, yet servile and submissive to their superiors; they had a strong imagination, and in some instances good taste, yet they represented their gods as monsters, and their religious myths and historical legends are absurd, disgusting, and puerile.

That the Nahuas were a most ingenious people is abundantly proven by their work as well as by the statements of those who knew them. It has been

peculiarities of the Nahuas and earlier peoples, *Ixtlilxochitl, Relaciones*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., pp. 326, 336–7, 341, 344–5, 395; *Velancvrt, Teatro Mex.*, tom. ii., p. 12; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 37, 44, 95, 318; *Sahagun, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., lib. x., pp. 112, 119, 132; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., pp. 37, 51, 255, tom. ii., pp. 580–83; *Cortés, Cartas*, tom. i., p. 23; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 143–6, tom. ii., p. 5; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. x., cap. xix.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 499; *Clavijero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 118–19, tom. iv., pp. 161–76; *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., fol. 304; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 282, tom. ii., pp. 187, 189, tom. iii., p. 35; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 90, 245, tom. ii., pp. 326, 487; *Dupaix, Rel.*, 2de Expéd., p. 25; *Gordon's Hist. and Geog. Mem.*, pp. 71–2; *Dillon's Hist. Mex.*, p. 45; *Macgregor's Progress of Amer.*, vol. i., p. 21; *Cooper's Hist. N. Amer.*, vol. ii., p. 163.

[84] See this volume, p. 242.

Digitized by Google

said that they were not inventive, but this Clavigero indignantly denies.[85] It is certain that their power of imitation was very great,[86] and that they were very quick to learn the new arts introduced among them by the Spaniards.[87] They were generous and remarkably free from avarice.[88] They are said to have been very temperate in their habits,[89] but judging from the vast number of dishes served up at the tables of the rich, and the stringent laws which were necessary to prevent drunkenness, this appears doubtful. Although terrible to their enemies, and naturally warlike, they were peaceable among themselves, and seldom quarrelled. Las Casas says that when a difficulty arose between two of them, the disputants did not come at once to blows, but contended themselves with such personal abuse as: "Go to, thou hast bad eyes; thou

[85] 'Vi sono molti, che accordano ai Messicani una grande abilità per l'imitazione; ma lor contrastano quella dell invenzione. Error volgare, che trovasi smentito nella Storia antica di questa Nazione.' *Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., p. 120.

[86] See this volume, pp. 475–6.

[87] 'Los niños de los Indios no son molestos con obstinacion ni porfia à la Fè Catholica, como lo son los Moros y Indios; antes aprenden de tal manera las verdades de los Christianos, que no solamente salen con ellas, sino que las agotan, y es tanta su facilidad que parece que se las beuen. Aprenden mas presto que los niños Españoles; y con mas contento los Articulos de la Fè por su orden, y las demas oraciones de la doctrina Christiana, reteniendo en la memoria fielmente lo que se les enseña.' *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 139. 'Il n'était rien que les Indiens n'apprissent avec une rapidité surprenante, et s'il arrivait quelque nouveau métier dont ils n'eussent aucune connaissance, ils s'appliquaient à le voir faire avec tant d'intelligence, que, malgré les soins de l'ouvrier à leur cacher son secret, ils le lui enlevaient au bout de quelques jours.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 728.

[88] 'Son muy ladrones, mentirosos, y holgazanes. La fertilidad de la tierra deue causar tanta pereza, o por no ser ellos codiciosos.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317. 'La liberalità e lo staccamento da qualsisia interesse sono dei principali attributi del loro carattere. L'oro non ha presso i Messicani tutta quella stima, che gode presso altri. Danno senza dispiacere quello, che si procacciano con somma fatica. Questo loro staccamento dall'interesse, ed il poco amore, che portano a quei che gli governano, ii fa rifiutare quelle fatiche, a cui sono da essi costretti, e questa è appunto la tanto esagerata pigrizia degli Americani.' *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 121–2. 'Estavan libres de la enfermedad de la codicia, y no pensauan en la vanidad del oro, y plata, ni hazian estimacion dello.' *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 18. 'Segun lo que aquella edad permite, son inclinadissimos à ser liberales. Tanto monta que lo que se les da, se de à vno como á muchos: porque lo que vno recibe, se reparte luego entre todos.' *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, p. 139.

[89] The most sober people known. *Relatione fatta per vn gentil'huomo del Signor Fernando Cortese*, in *Ramusio, Navigationi*, tom. iii., p. 304.

Digitized by Google

art toothless;" or they threw handfuls of dirt in each other's faces, and then separated and washed themselves. On rare occasions they pushed and elbowed each other, or even had a scuffle, in which hair was pulled out, clothes were torn, and bloody noses received; but deadly weapons were never used, nor even worn except by soldiers on duty. The same writer relates that two women were put to death by order of the king of Tezcuco for fighting in the public market-place, a scandalous outrage upon public decency, the like of which had never been heard of before. He says, further, that when two young men became enamored of the same woman, or when one carried off the other's mistress, the rivals were allowed to fight a duel for the possession of the woman. The combat did not take place, however, until the army went forth to war, when upon the first engagement they sought out each other, and fought with their weapons until one was vanquished.[90] They seem to have been very strict and jealous in all matters relating to their women.[91]

The Tlascaltecs were great lovers of liberty, and were always ready to fight for it; they were, besides, quick to take offence, otherwise they are said to have been of a peaceable, domestic disposition, content to stay at home and listen to or tell stories in their own

[90] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 124–5.

[91] 'Son celosissimos, y assi las apporrean mucho.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 317. We have seen in a former chapter that Nezahualcoyotl put his dearest son to death for speaking lewdly to his father's concubine. See this volume, pp. 447 et seq.; see further, concerning the character of the Mexicans, about whom the above remarks, though doubtless applicable to many other of the Nahua nations, are more particularly made, *Esplicacion de la Coleccion de Mendoza*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. v., p. 40; *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, pp. 458–9; *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fvnd. Mex.*, pp. 139; 270; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. iii., p. 232; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, pp. 317–18; *Padilla, Conq. N. Galicia*, MS., p. 8; *Zorita*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 235; *Tezozomoc, Crónica Mex.*, in *Id.*, vol. ix., p. 167; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xliv., xlv., lxvii., cxl.; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. i., pp. 119–23, tom. iv., pp. 177–202; *Soden, Spanier in Peru*, tom. ii., p. 17; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., pp. 727–30, 810; *Edinburgh Review*, 1867; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 8–10; *Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., pp. 90–3; *Gordon's Hist. and Geog. Mem.*, pp. 73–6; *Chevalier, Mexique*, pp. 53–4.

Digitized by Google

families, an amusement of which they were very fond. They are further described as truthful, just, frugal, and industrious.[92]

The Cholultecs, so celebrated for their pottery, are reported to have been very peaceful, industrious, and shrewd traders, yet brave withal, and capable of defending their rights.[93] The Zapotecs were a fierce people, always at war with their neighbors.[94] The Miztecs are said by Herrera to have been the bravest people in all New Spain; the same writer asserts that they were lazy and improvident, while Espinosa speaks of them as an industrious race.[95] The natives of Vera Cruz are spoken of as affable and shrewd.[96] The people of Jalisco were witty and slothful, yet they willingly carried burdens for the Spaniards, Herrera tells us.[97] The Tarascos were exceedingly valorous, great liars, and industrious.[98]

[92] For the character of the Tlascaltecs, see *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 68; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcviii., pp. 197–200, tom. xcix., pp. 136, 149, 151; *Motolinia, Hist. Indios*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 76; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 87; *Alcedo, Dicc.*, tom. v., p. 155; *Heredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, p. 88; *Ixtlilxochitl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 294; *Peter Martyr*, dec. v., lib. i.; *Pradt, Cartas*, pp. 175–6; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. ii., pp. 121, 129, 511; *Klemm, Cultur-Geschichte*, tom. v., pp. 186–7; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 230; *Dillon, Hist. Mex.*, p. 7.

[93] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 499; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 95; *Pradt, Cartas*, p. 176; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iv., p. 130; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 259, tom. ii., p. 121, 339.

[94] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xiv.; *Dávila Padilla, Hist. Fund. Mex.*, p. 548; *Delaporte, Reisen*, tom. x., p. 183.

[95] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. xiii.; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 244; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., p. 35.

[96] *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 57.

[97] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. ii.

[98] *Beaumont, Crón. Mechoacan*, MS., pp. 51–2; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 337, tom. iii., p. 332; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 563; *Ixtlilxochutl, Hist. Chich.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. ix., p. 308; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iii., cap. x.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 218; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 56–7; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom i., p. 291, tom. ii., p. 595; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 456.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XX.

GOVERNMENT, SOCIAL CLASSES, PROPERTY, AND LAWS OF THE MAYA NATIONS.

INTRODUCTORY REMARKS—VOTAN'S EMPIRE—ZAMNÁ'S REIGN—THE ROYAL FAMILIES OF YUCATAN; COCOMES, TUTUL XIUS, ITZAS, AND CHELES—TITLES AND ORDER OF SUCCESSION—CLASSES OF NOBLES—THE QUICHÉ-CAKCHIQUEL EMPIRE IN GUATEMALA—THE AHAU AHPOP AND SUCCESSION TO THE THRONE—PRIVILEGED CLASSES—GOVERNMENT OF THE PROVINCES—THE ROYAL COUNCIL—THE CHIAPANECS—THE PIPILES—NATIONS OF NICARAGUA—THE MAYA PRIESTHOOD—PLEBEIAN CLASSES—SLAVES—TENURE OF LANDS—INHERITANCE OF PROPERTY—TAXATION—DEBTORS AND CREDITORS—LAWS AND THE ADMINISTRATION OF JUSTICE.

MY reasons for dividing the Civilized Nations of our territory into two groups, the Nahuas and the Mayas, whose institutions are separately described, have been stated in the General View, to which a preceding chapter has been devoted. In the same place was given an outline sketch of the nations composing each group, and their mutual relations,[1] which may serve as an introduction to the remainder of this volume. Without further preliminary remarks, I may therefore enter at once upon the subject-matter of this second division of my topic, a description of Maya institutions, or the manners and customs of the civilized nations whose home was south of the isthmus

[1] See pp 81–123 of this volume, and especially pp. 114–23, on the Maya nations

Digitized by Google

of Tehuantepec. It will be evident to the reader from what has been said that this account must be not only much briefer, but also less complete and satisfactory, than that of the Nahua nations. Concerning the Aztecs and kindred peoples about the lakes of the Mexican valley, as we have seen, a large amount of information has been preserved; I have consequently been able, in treating of the northern peoples, to take these nations of the valley as a nucleus, adding in their proper places such fragments of knowledge as are extant respecting tribes outside the limits of Anáhuac. In the south, fragmentary information is all we have; there is no nucleus round which to group it; the matter of the following chapters will, therefore, be very similar in its nature to what that of the proceeding would have been, had I undertaken to describe the Tarascos, Totonacs, Zapotecs, etc., without the Aztecs. In this branch of my subject I shall follow as nearly as possible the same order as in the preceding, bringing together into one chapter, however, the topics before treated in several. I shall also include the civilized nations of Nicaragua in this division, although one at least of them was of Nahua blood and language. In the days of ancient Maya glory, when Votan and his successors reigned over mighty and perhaps confederated empires in Chiapas, Guatemala, and Yucatan, the kings played rôles to a great extent mythical, being pictured by tradition as combining the character and powers of legislators, teachers, high-priests, and monarchs. Details of the system by which they governed are altogether wanting,[2] but after a long term of prosperity this government in Guatemala and Chiapas became weakened, and at last practically destroyed; the country was

[2] Although Brasseur de Bourbourg, on the authority of some of his original MSS. perhaps, states that Xibalba in the height of its glory was ruled by thirteen princes, two of whom were kings, the second being subordinate to the first, and also that there was a council of twelve, presided over by the king. He also mentions a succession of seventeen kings after Votan. *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 127, 123, 95-7.

Digitized by Google

divided among petty chiefs, concerning whose rule even less is known than of that of their predecessors, but who not improbably based their forms of authority on the ideas handed down from Votan. From these governmental relics there sprung up in later years, under new and perhaps foreign leaders, the Quiché and Cakchiquel empires, of whose government some details are known, since these nations came into direct contact with the Spaniards at the Conquest. Leaving these nations for the present, I will speak first of another branch of the primitive Maya empire.

Yucatan received its culture traditionally from Zamná, who came from abroad, governed the Mayas through a long life, and left the throne as a heritage to his successors. He was doubtless a companion or a descendant of Votan, and founded institutions similar to those of the western kingdoms whence he came. The government and institutions established in Yucatan met to a certain extent the same fate as those of Chiapas; that is, the country was finally split up by civil wars into numerous petty independent sovereignties; but this division was at a much later date than that of Votan's western empire—not long preceding the Spanish Conquest—and the government of the independent chieftains was substantially that of their ancestors, many of whom claimed to be of the royal family founded by Zamná. Consequently some scraps of information are extant respecting the form of government, as well as other institutions, in Yucatan; and from these we may form a faint idea of the earlier institutions of Guatemala and Chiapas.

Zamná, like Votan, united in himself the qualities of ruler, law-giver, educator, and priest; he founded the city of Mayapan, and divided the whole country among the chiefs of the leading families who came with him, making them vassals of the king whom he left on the throne at Mayapan. The nobles of the royal family were of course the highest, a family

Digitized by Google

which was perhaps that known later as the Cocomes, and which lasted to the coming of the Spaniards. Each of the vassal princes had to live in the capital during a certain part of every year; and Brasseur de Bourbourg, following Ordoñez, thinks that Mayapan may have formed a confederacy with Tulhá and Palenque in Chiapas.[3]

Another royal family, the Tutul Xius, sprung up later and became very powerful as allies and vassals of the king reigning in Mayapan; and still another family, the Itzas, built up a strong government of theocratic nature at Chichen Itza. Then came Cukulcan with some new religious teachings—a famous personage bearing a striking resemblance in his traditional career and in the etymology of his name to the Quetzalcoatl of the Nahuas. Being finally called to the throne at Mayapan, he formed a confederacy, making the princes of the Tutul Xius and Itzas his associate monarchs, subordinate nominally in rank, but practically independent except where mutual assistance was required. Cukulcan left the throne to the Cocomes, seven of whom ruled during a period of great prosperity, the succession being from father to son, down to about the eleventh century. Afterward the Cocomes, becoming tyrranical, were deposed from their high position, Mayapan destroyed, and a new confederacy established with the Tutul Xius at the head, Uxmal being at first their capital, the Itzas second, and the Cheles at Izamal third. The Tutul Xiu rule was no less glorious than that of the Cocomes. They rebuilt Mayapan and made it once more the capital, but the unfortunate city was again sacked, this time by foreigners—perhaps the Quichés—in the thirteenth century; and was finally destroyed in the middle of the fifteenth century by the vassal lords of the realm, who revolted, overthrew the Tutul Xiu dynasty, obtained their complete independence, and ruled

[3] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 178–9; *Ordoñez, Hist. del cielo y de la Tierra*, MS.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 78–80.

Digitized by Google

each his petty province with sovereign power. This was their condition when the Spaniards came, but before that time by civil war, and by famine and pestilence also, as tradition tells us, the power of the rulers and the population of the country had been greatly diminished and the ancient Maya glory had departed forever. Shortly before the final destruction of the monarchy a portion of the Itzas had left Chichen and migrated southward to found a small but powerful nation in what is now the province of Peten, belonging politically to Guatemala. It is from traditionary accounts of the kingdom under the Tutul Xius, and from the meagre observations of the Spaniards in the sixteenth century, that our slight knowledge of Maya institutions in the peninsula is gained.

The highest title of the king at Mayapan was Ahtepal, which signifies in the Maya tongue 'Majestic,' or 'August.' His power was absolute, but he rarely acted in matters of importance without consulting his lords, and, in accordance with their advice and that of the chief priests, he appointed all officials, secular and religious, in the kingdom, possessing moreover the right to organize all courts and to condemn to death any of his subjects. The succession to the throne was confined to the royal family, to the male line, and to the sons of noble wives; the eldest son seems to have been the acknowledged heir to the throne, and Landa tells us that if the king died during the childhood of his heir, then his eldest or most capable brother ruled, not only during the son's minority, but during all his own life; and in case there were no brothers, the priests and nobles chose a suitable person to reign.[4]

[4] 'Si moria el señor, aunque le sucediesse el hijo mayor, eran siempre los demas hijos muy acatados, y ayudados y tenidos por señores.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 112. 'Si quando el señor moria no eran los hijos para regir y tenia hermanos, regia de los hermanos el mayor o el mas desenbuelto y al heredero mostravan sus costumbres y fiestas para quando fuesse hombre y estos hermanos, aunque el eredero fuesse para regir, mandavan toda su vida, y sino avia hermanos, elegian los sacerdotes y gente principal un hombre sufficiente para ello.' *Id.*, p. 138. Brasseur de Bourbourg, in his French translation of this passage, gives a different meaning from what I deem the cor-

Digitized by Google

One author speaks of the king as having the right to appoint a council which should name his successor, and Remesal mentions that in the province of Campeche, a woman who came in the direct line of succession received high honors, but the most capable of her male relatives ruled the state.[5]

Whenever the king appeared in public, he was always attended by a large company, and wore a long white flowing robe decorated with ornaments of gold and precious stones, bracelets, a magnificent collar, and sandals of gold His crown was a plain golden circle somewhat wider on the forehead than behind, and surmounted with a plume of quetzal-feathers. This bird was reserved for the king and highest nobles, death being the penalty, according to Ordoñez, for one of lower rank who should capture the bird or wear its plumage. The monarch was borne on the shoulders of his nobles reclining in a palanquin, shaded by a feather canopy, and constantly fanned by attendants of high rank. Any person who came into the presence of the king or other high official was expected to bring some gift proportioned to his means; and Herrera informs us that the highest mark of respect was to place the right hand, anointed with spittle, on the ground, and then to rub it over the heart. Villagutierre mentions without description a kind of small throne among the Itzas, and states that the king of this southern realm bore the title of Canek, the name of the leader of their migration. Our only knowledge of the royal palaces of Yucatan is derived from their examination, when more or less in ruins, by modern explorers; consequently I refer the reader to the chap-

rect one as given in my text. He understands that the brother succeeded in any case. 'Ce n'étaient pas ses fils qui succédaient au gouvernement, mais bien l'aîné de ses frères;' and also that the person appointed by the priests if there was no brother, ruled only during the heir's minority, 'jusqu' à la majorité de l'héritier,' all of which may be very reasonable, but certainly is not found in the Spanish text.

[5] 'Organisait les conseils de la religion et de l'état qui devaient, après lui, nommer son successeur.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 53–6; *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 256.

Digitized by Google

ter on Maya buildings for a general description of these grand stone structures, and to another volume of this work for a detailed account with illustrative plates.

The nobility of the highest class belonged to members of the royal families, the Cocomes, Tutul Xius, Cheles, and Itzas, those of the reigning king's own blood taking naturally the highest rank. Ahua was the ordinary title of the princes, and Halach Winikel, 'most majestic men,' was a high title among the Tutul Xius. From nobles of the royal families mentioned, governors of provinces and all the highest officials were chosen. Their positions were nominally at the king's disposal, but practically they descended hereditarily in the same manner as the royal power, the king interfering with new appointments only on extraordinary occasions. These occasions were almost absolute in matters concerning their own provinces, and exacted great honors, ceremonial attendance, and implicit obedience from all their subjects; but they were not exempt in matters of crime from the penalties of the law, and were obliged to reside during a part of each year in the capital, to render personal service to the monarch, and to take part in the supreme council by which he was guided in the administration of public affairs. They were, however, exempt from all tribute except that of personal service, and lived on the product of portions of the public domain assigned them. Cogolludo tells us that the nobles of Mayapan were also required to perform certain services in the temples, and to assist at the religious festivals. They not only had the exclusive right to the government of provinces, but also to the command of armies.

Nobles of a lower class, with the title Batab, governed cities, villages, or other subdivisions of provinces. They were not of royal blood, or at least were only connected with the reigning family through the female branch. Their position was also practically hereditary, although the heir could not assume his

Digitized by Google

inherited rank without the royal sanction. No government officials received any salary, but they were obliged to maintain themselves and the poor and disabled of their respective communities from the products of their inherited estates.[6]

The most powerful kingdoms in Guatemala at the coming of the Spaniards were that of the Quichés, whose capital was Gumarcaah, or Utatlan, near the site of the modern Santa Cruz del Quiché; and that of the Cakchiquels, capital Iximché, or Patinamit, near Tecpan Guatemala. These two nations were independent of and hostile to each other in the sixteenth century, but they had been united in one empire during the days of Guatemala's greatest glory; their separation dated back only about a century, and their institutions were practically identical, although they were traditionally distinct tribes in the more remote past. The same remark may be made

[6] 'Todos los señores tenian cuenta con visitar, respetar, alegrar a Cocom, acompañandole y festejandole y acudiendo a el con los negocios arduos.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 40. A kind of mayordomo called Caluac, whose badge of office was a thick short stick, was the agent through whom the lord performed the routine duties of his position. *Ib.* 'Concertavan las cosas, y negocios principalmente de noche.' *Id.*, p. 112. 'Fuè todo el Reyno de Yucatàn, y sus Provincias, con el Nombre de Mayapàn, desde que los Indios fueron à èl y le poblaron, sujeto à vn solo Rey, y Señor absoluto, con Govierno Monarquico. No durò esto poco tiempo, sino por muchos Años.' *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 28. Among the Itzas Cortés was visited by 'el Canek, con treinta y dos Principales.' *Id.*, p. 46. 'Despues llamó el Canek à Consejo à todos sus Capitanes, y Principales.' *Id.*, p. 91. 'Vno, como à modo, ò forma de Trono pequeño, en que èl solia estar.' *Id.*, p. 105. 'Vna Corona de Plumas, de varios colores.' *Id.*, p. 349. Yucatan 'regido de Señores Particulares, que es el Estado de los Reies: Governavanse por Leies, y costumbres buenas; vivian en Paz, y en Justicia, que es Argumento de su buen Govierno.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 345. Brasseur refers to Torquemada, lib. xi., cap. xix., on Yucatan Government, but that chapter relates wholly to Guatemala. 'Quando los Señores de la Ciudad de Mayapàn dominaban, toda la tierra les tributaba.' In later times they attached much importance to their royal blood. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 179. 'Dizese, que vn Señor de la Ciudad de Mayapàn, cabeça de el Reyno, hizo matar afrentosamente à vn hermano suyo, porque corrompió vna doncella.' *Id.*, p. 182. See also, on the system of government in Yucatan, *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii.-iv.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 16–17, 38, 46, 53–6; 72; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 147; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., pp. 182–4; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indigena*, p. 27; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 262; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 45–6, 146; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 55–6, 115–16.

Digitized by Google

respecting the institutions of the other nations in Guatemala, which were wholly or partially independent of the powers mentioned above. All the aboriginal powers had greatly deteriorated by wars, one with another, and their mutual hatred made their defeat by foreigners possible, as had been the case in the conquest of the Nahua nations farther north.

There is little doubt that the Quiché-Cakchiquel peoples were direct descendants of Votan's subjects, but the line of traditional history that unites the two empires is broken at many points and cannot be satisfactorily followed. There are evidences also of foreign, chiefly Nahua, influences of the moulding of Quiché institutions, exerted before or after the Toltec era in Anáhuac, probably at both periods. The traditional history of the Quiché empire for three or four centuries before the Conquest rests almost entirely on manuscripts written in the native languages with the Roman alphabet, which have only been consulted by one modern writer. Into the labyrinth of this complicated record of wars and political changes I shall not attempt to enter, especially since the general nature of Quiché institutions does not seem to have been perceptibly modified by the events recorded.

An aristocratic monarchy, similar in nearly every feature to that I have described in Yucatan, seems to have been the basis of Quiché government from the first. All high positions, judicial, military, or sacerdotal, were hereditary and restricted to noble families, which traced their genealogy far back into the mythic annals of the nations. Between noble and plebeian blood the lines were sharply defined. The nobles were practically independent and superior in their own provinces, but owed tribute, allegiance, and military aid to the monarch. At the time of Guatemala's highest prosperity and glory, when King Qikab from his throne in Utatlan ruled over all the country, the monarch, if we may credit the traditional account,

Digitized by Google

made an effort to diminish the power of the nobles, by conferring military commands and other high positions on the ablest men of plebeian blood. Thus a new class of nobles, called Achihab, was created. This newly conferred power became, acting with the alienation of the old hereditary nobility, too great to be restrained by the monarch who created it. The Achihab became ambitious and insubordinate; they were at last put down, but the dissolution of the empire into several states was the indirect result of their machinations.

Respecting the order of succession to the Quiche throne, Torquemada and Juarros state that the king's brother was the king elect, and the direct heir to the throne; the king's oldest son was the senior captain and the next heir; and the latter's first cousin, the nephew of the king, was junior captain and third heir. When the king died each heir was promoted one degree, and the vacant post of junior captain was filled by the nearest relative—*whose* nearest relative the authors neglect to say. Whoever may have been elevated to the vacant position, the whole system as a regular order of succession would be a manifest absurdity. Brasseur de Bourbourg agrees with the authors cited, and gives to the king, the elect, and the two captains the titles of Ahau Ahpop, Ahau Ahpop Camha, Nim Chocoh Cawek, and Ahau Ah Tohil, respectively; but when the last position was left vacant by the death of the king, the Abbé tells us that "it was conferred upon the eldest son of the new monarch"—that is, upon the same man who held it before! Padre Ximenez implies perhaps that the crown descended from brother to brother, and from the youngest brother to a nephew who was a son of the oldest brother. I have no authorities by the aid of which to throw any light upon this confused subject; it is evident, however, that if the last-mentioned system, identical with that which obtained among some of the Nahua nations, be not the correct one,

Digitized by Google

nothing whatever is known of the matter in question.[7]

All the authorities state that this remarkable system of succession was established to prevent the power from coming into the hands of young and inexperienced men; and that an incompetent person in the regular line could not succeed to the throne, but retained throughout his life the rank to which he was born. It is not clearly explained how the heir's competency was decided upon, but it seems probable that the matter was settled by the reigning king with the advice of his council of princes. The king's children by his first wife were preferred above the rest, though all received high honors. At Rabinal, the Ahau, or ruling prince, was regularly chosen by the nobles, from the royal family, but was not necessarily a son or brother of the last ruler. Among the Cakchiquels the succession alternated between two royal families. The king's title was Ahpozotzil; the next heir from the other branch bore the title Ahpoxahil; their eldest sons, the elder of which became Ahpoxahil on the king's death, had the titles Ahpop Qamahay and Galel Xahil. Inferior titles were Galel Qamahay, Atzih Winak, and Ahuchan Xahil, the bearers of which succeeded to the throne in default of nearer heirs. It

[7] 'It was ordained that the eldest son of the king (that is, of the first king who founded the monarchy) should inherit the crown; upon the second son the title of *Elect* was conferred, as being the next heir to his elder brother; the sons of the eldest son received the title of Captain senior, and those of the second Captain junior. When the king died, his eldest son assumed the sceptre, and the Elect became the immediate inheritor; the Captain senior ascended to the rank of Elect, the Captain junior to that of Captain senior, and the next nearest relative to that of Captain junior.' *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, pp. 188–9. 'Luego el Capitan menor, entraba por maior, y metian otro en el que avia vacado del Capitan menor, que ordinariamente era el Pariente mas cercano.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 338–41. 'Restait alors la charge d'Ahau-Ah-Tohil; elle était conférée au fils aîné du nouveau monarque.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 547, 103, 496. 'Luego que el primero subió al reino, mandó el padre [the first king] que el segundo fuese capitain, y mandó por ley, que si fuesen cuatro, que el primero reinase, el segundo fuese como principe, el tercero capitan general, y el cuarto capitan segundo, y que muerto el primero, reinasen todos por su órden, si se alcanzasen en vida.' Note, 'Bien clara está la descendencia de padres á hijos de todos tres hermanos.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat., Escolios*, pp. 195–6.

Digitized by Google

will be noticed that this plan of succession is but little clearer than that attributed to the Quichés.[8]

The ceremonies of coronation in the kingdom of Rabinal, and, so far as can be known, in the other kingdoms of Guatemala, consisted of an assemblage of all the nobles at the capital—each being obliged to attend or send a representative—the presentation of gifts and compliments to the new king, a discourse of congratulation and advice addressed to him by one of the ancients, and finally a splendid feast which lasted several days, and usually degenerated into a drunken orgy. The Quichés and Cakchiquels also bathed the new king and anointed his body with perfumes before seating him on the throne, which was a seat, not described, placed on a carpet or mat, and surmounted by four canopies of feather-work placed one above another, the largest at the top; the seats of the three lower princes already mentioned were also shaded by canopies, three, two, and one, respectively. Whenever he appeared in public, the monarch was borne in a palanquin on the shoulders of the nobles who composed his council.[9]

The machinery of government was carried on in the provinces by lieutenants of the king's appointment, and the monarch was advised in all matters of state by a council of nobles. Juarros tells us that the supreme Quiché council was composed of twenty-four grandees, who enjoyed great privileges and honors,

[8] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 549–50, 534, with reference to *Roman, Repub. de los Indios*, lib. ii., cap. viii. 'Titles in Atitlan, *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 416. 'Las Prouincias de Tazulatlan, gente belicosa y braua, si bien con pulicia, porque viuian en poblaciones formadas, y gouierno de Republica.' *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 148. Tazulatlan, or Tuzulutlan, was the province of Rabinal. *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 147.

[9] 'Aqui havia muy grandes, y sumptuosas comidas, y borracheras.' 'Sentaban al nuevo Electo en vna estera mui pintada.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 342, 338–45. 'In one of the saloons stood the throne, under four canopies of plumage; the ascent to it was by several steps.' *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 88. The twenty-four counsellors 'carried the emperor on their shoulders in his chair of state whenever he quitted his palace.' *Id.*, p. 189. 'No se diferenciaba el rey de Guatemala ó de Utatlán de los otros en el trage, sino en que él traia horadadas las orejas y narices, que se tenia por grandeza.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 197, 193.

Digitized by Google

personally attended the king, and managed the administration of justice and the collection of the royal revenue, but were liable to severe punishment if they committed crime. Brasseur de Bourbourg speaks of a supreme council, giving the names of the princes that composed it, and also of an ordinary council, whose members were called *ahchaoh*, or 'judges,' and were intrusted with the collection of tribute. The other authorities, Torquemada and Ximenez, state that the councils were not permanent, but were summoned by the king and selected for their peculiar fitness to give advice upon the subject under consideration. The lieutenants had also their provincial councils to advise them in matters of local importance, but all cases of national import, or affecting in any way the nobles of high rank, were referred to the royal council. So great was the power of the nobles assembled in council, that they might, under certain conditions, depose a tyrannical sovereign and seat the next heir on the throne. No person unless of noble blood could hold any office whatever, even that of door-keeper to the council-chamber, if we may credit Juarros; consequently the greatest care was taken to insure a lineage free from any plebeian stain. A noble marrying a woman of the common people was degraded to her rank, took her name, and his estate was forfeited to the crown. Ximenez states that travelling officials visited from time to time the different provinces, to observe the actions of the regular judges, and to correct abuses.[10]

[10] 'Tenia el rey ciertos varones de gran autoridad y opinion, que eran como oidores, y conocian de todos los pleitos y negocios que se ofrecian;' they collected the royal revenues and attended to the expenses of the royal family. 'Tenia en cada pueblo grande sus cancillerias con sus oidores, que eran las cabezas de calpul; pero no era muy grande la comision que tenian.' 'Poderosos Señores, los quales esperaban su confirmacion de sus estados del dicho rey.' 'Aun en las cosas pequeñas y de poca importancia entraban en consulta.' 'Unos como alquaciles que servian de llamar y convocar al pueblo.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 196–7, 201–2. The king's lieutenants 'tenian su jurisdicion limitada, la qual no era mas, que la que el Señor, ò Rei les concedia, reservando para si, y su Consejo las Cosas graves.' These lieutenants held their positions for life if they were qualified and obedient, but to hold them they must have been promoted from lower offices. 'El

Digitized by Google

The following is the Abbé Brasseur's account of the grades of nobility taken from the Quiché manuscript published under the title of Popol Vuh: "Three principal families having a common origin constituted the high nobility of Quiché, modelled on the ancient imperial family of the Toltecs. The first and most illustrious was the house of Cawek, the members of which composed the royal family proper; the second was that of Nihaïb; and the third that of Ahau Quiché. Each of these houses had its titles and charges perfectly distinct and fixed, which never left it, like the hereditary offices of the English court at the present time; and to each of these offices were attached fiefs, or particular domains, from which the titularies drew their revenue, their attendants, and their vassals, and a palace where they lived during their stay in the capital. The house of Cawek, or royal house proper, included only princes of the blood, like the eldest branch of the Bourbons in France. It was composed of nine *chinamital*, or great fiefs, whose names corresponded to those of the palaces occupied by these princes in the capital, and whose titles were as follows: I. Ahau Ahpop, or 'lord of the princes,' title of the king, corresponding nearly to 'king of kings,' whose palace was called *cuha;* II. Ahau Ahpop Camha, or 'lord of the princes and seneschal' (*camha*, he who cares for the house, majordomo), whom the Spaniards called the second king, and whose palace was

consejo no era de qualesquiera Personas, sino de aquellas, que mas cursadas estaban en la misma cosa, de que se trataba.' They sometimes called in the aid of foreign nations to depose a tyrant. *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 339–40, 343, 386. 'There was no instance of any person being appointed to a public office, high or low, who was not selected from the nobility.' *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, pp. 190–1. Some members of the councils were priests when religious interests were at stake. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x. 'Les personnes ou officiers qui servaient le souverain à la court se nommaient Lolmay, Atzihunac, Calel, Ahuchan. C'étaient les facteurs, les contador, et trésoriers.' *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 418. 'De l'assemblée des princes des maisons de Cawek, d'Ahau-Quiché et de Nihaïb, réunis avec le Galel-Zakik, et l'Ahau-Ah-Tzutuha, se composait le conseil extraordinaire du monarque.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 548–9. The king 'constitua vingt-deux grandes dignités, auxquelles il éleva les membres de la haute aristocratie.' *Id.*, pp. 496–7.

Digitized by Google

called *tziquinaha*, or 'house of birds;' III. Nim Chocoh Cawek, or 'grand elect of Cawek;' IV. Ahau Ah Tohil, or 'lord of the servants of Tohil,' priests of Tohil, the principal Quiché god; V. Ahau Ah Gucumatz, or 'lord of the servants of Gucumatz,' (priests of Quetzalcoatl); VI. Popol Winak Chituy, or president of the counsellors; VII. Lolmet Quehnay, the principal receiver of royal tributes, or minister of finance; VIII. Popol Winak Pahom Tzalatz Xcaxeba, or 'grand master of the hall of the council of the game of ball;' IX. Tepeu Yaqui, 'chief or lord of the Yaquis' (Toltecs, or Mexicans).

"The house of Nihaïb, the second in rank, had also nine chinamital, with names corresponding to their palaces, and titles as follows: I. Ahau Galel, 'lord of the bracelets,' or of those who have the right to wear them, and chief of the house of Nihaïb; II. Ahau Ahtzic Winak, 'lord of those who give,' or of those who made presents (especially to ambassadors, who were introduced by him); III. Ahau Galel Camha, 'lord of the bracelets, and seneschal;' IV. Nimah Camha, 'grand seneschal;' V. Uchuch Camha, 'mother of the seneschals;' VI. Nima Camha Nihaïb, 'grand seneschal of Nihaïb;' VII. Nim Chocoh Nihaïb, 'grand elect of Nihaïb;' VIII. Ahau Awilix, 'lord of Awilix' (one of the gods of the Quiché trinity); IX. Yacol Atam, 'grand master of feasts.'

"The third house, that of Ahau Quiché, had on four chinamital, with the following titles: I. Ahtzic Winak Ahau, 'great lord of givers;' II. Lolmet Ahau, 'grand receiver;' III. Nim Chocoh Ahau, 'lord grand elect;' IV. Ahau Gagawitz, 'lord of Gagawitz' (one of the gods of the Quiché trinity)."[11]

Respecting the Chiapanecs, who are not generally considered as the descendants of the peoples who inhabited the country in Votan's time, we have no

[11] Lists of the nobility. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, pp. 337–47; *Id., Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 430–32.

Digitized by Google

knowledge of their government save a probably unfounded statement by García that they were ruled by two chiefs, elected each year by the priests, and never had a king.[12] The Pipiles in Salvador, although traditionally among the partially civilized nations, seem to have been governed in the sixteenth century by local chieftains only, like most of the wild tribes already described. These chiefs handed down their power, however, to their sons or nearest relatives. Palacio tells us that to regulate marriages and the planting of crops was among the ruler's duties. Squier concludes that all these petty chiefs were more or less allied politically, and acted together in matters affecting the common interests.[13]

Nicaragua, when first visited by Europeans, was divided into many provinces, inhabited by several nations linguistically distinct one from another, one of them, at least, speaking the Aztec tongue; but in respect to their government and other institutions, the very meagre information preserved by Oviedo enables us to make little or no distinction between the different tribes. In many of the provinces we are told the people lived in communities, or little republics, governed by certain *huehues*, or 'old men,' who were elected by the people. These elective rulers themselves elected a captain-general to direct their armies in time of war, which official they had no hesitation in putting to death when he exhibited any symptoms of insubordination or acquired a power over the army which seemed dangerous to the public good. In other and probably in most provinces a chieftain, or *teite*,

[12] 'Nunca tuvieron Rei, sino solo elegian los Sacerdotes cada Año dos Capitanes, que eran como Governadores, à quien todos obedecian, aunque era maior el respeto, i veneracion, que tenian à los Sacerdotes.' *García, Origen de los Ind.*, p. 329; a statement repeated in *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 27; and *Heredia y Sarmiento, Sermon*, p. 84. García refers to *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xi., where the only statement on the subject is that 'son muy respetados los principales.'

[13] 'No doubt there were individual chiefs who possessed a power superior to the others, exercising a great influence over them, and perhaps arrogating a qualified authority.' *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, pp. 331–4; *Palacio, Carta*, p. 78.

Digitized by Google

ruled the people of his domain with much the same powers and privileges as we have noticed in Yucatan and Guatemala. These teites had their petty vassals and lords to execute their orders, and to accompany them in public displays, but it seems they could claim no strictly personal services in their palaces from any but members of their own household. Peter Martyr speaks of a 'throne adorned with rich and princely furniture.' These rulers affected great state, and insisted on a strict observance of court etiquette. They would receive no message, however pressing the occasion, except through the regularly appointed officials; and one of them, in an interview with the Spaniards, would not condescend to open his royal mouth to the leader until a curtain was held between him and his foreign hearers. On several occasions they met the Spaniards in a procession of men and women gayly decked in all their finery, marching to the sound of shell trumpets, and bearing in their hands presents for the invaders. But even in the provinces nominally ruled by the teites, all legislative power was in the hands of a council called *monexico*, composed of old men, who were elected every four moons. Without the consent of the monexico, the chief could take action in no public matter whatever, not even in war. The council could decide against the teite, but he had the right to assemble or dissolve it, and to be present at all its meetings. The decisions of the monexico were made known in the market-place by a crier, whose badge of office was a rattle. The lords also, in sending an ambassador or messenger on any public business, gave him a fan, bearing which credential he was implicitly trusted wherever he might go. Two members of the council were chosen as executive officers, and one of them must be always present in the market-place to regulate all dealings of the buyers and sellers. Squier says that the council-houses were called *grepons*, and its corridors or porticos *galpons;* Oviedo in one place terms the buildings *galpones*,

Digitized by Google

and in another applies the name to a class of vassal chiefs.[14]

It is only of the priesthood as connected with the government, as an order of nobility, as a class of the community, that a mention is required here. In their quality of priests proper, religious teachers, oracles of the gods, leaders of ceremonious rites, confessors, and sacrificers, they will be treated of elsewhere. Their temporal power, directly exercised, or indirectly through their influence upon kings and chieftains, was perhaps even greater than we have found it among the Nahua nations. Votan, Zamná, Cukulcan, and all the other semi-mythical founders of the Maya civilization, united in their persons the qualities of high-priest and king, and from their time to the coming of the Spaniards ecclesiastical and secular authority marched hand in hand. In Yucatan, the Itzas at Chichen were ruled in the earlier times by a theocratic government, and later the high-priest of the empire, of the royal family of the Cheles, became king of Izamal, which became the sacred city and the headquarters of ecclesiastical dignitaries. The gigantic mounds still seen at Izamal are traditionally the tombs of both kings and priests. The office of chief priest was hereditary, the succession being from father to son—since priests and even the vestal virgins were permitted to marry—but regulated apparently by the opinions of kings and nobles, as well as of ecclesiastical councils. The king constantly applied to the high-priest for counsel in matters of state, and in turn gave rich presents to the head of the church; the security of the temples was also confided to the highest officers of the state. The rank of Ixnacan Katun, or superior of the vestals, was founded by a princess of royal blood.

In Guatemala the high-priests who presided over

[14] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 36–8, 52, 54, 104, 108, 110, tom. iii., p. 231; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., pp. 340–6; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. iii.; *Scherzer, Wanderungen*, p. 64.

Digitized by Google

the temples of the Quiché trinity, Tohil, Awilix, and Gucumatz, were all princes of the three royal families; their titles have been given in the lists of the Quiché nobility; and one of the most powerful kings is said to have created two priestly titles for the family of Zakik, to each of which he attached a province for its support. Ximenez tells us that in Vera Paz the chief priest, next in power to the king, was elected from a certain lineage by the people. In the province of Chiquimula, Mictlan is described as a great religious centre, and a shrine much visited by pilgrims. Here the power was in the hands of a sacerdotal hierarchy, hereditary in one family, whose chief bore the title Teoti, and was aided by an ecclesiastical council of five members, which controlled all the priesthood, and from whose number a successor to the Teoti was appointed by the chief of the Pipiles, or, as some authorities state, was chosen by lot.

Thus we see that while the priesthood had great power over even the highest secular rulers in all the Maya nations, yet the system by which the high-priests were members of the royal families rendered their power a support to that of royalty rather than a cause of fear. The fear which kings experienced towards the priests seems consequently to have been altogether superstitious on account of their supernatural powers, and not a jealous fear of any possible rivalry. Ordinary priests were appointed by the higher authorities of the church, but whether the choice was confined to certain families, we are not informed. It is altogether probable, however, that such was the case in nations whose lowest secular officers must be of noble blood.[15]

In the south as in the north, the status of the

[15] On the status of the priesthood, see *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 42, 54, 56, 114, 160, 354; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 198; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x., lib. x., cap. ii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 56; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxxiii.; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 62, 64; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 200–1; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 74, 79, tom. ii., pp. 6, 10, 19, 33, 40, 48, 114, 551–6.

Digitized by Google

lower classes, or plebeians, has received no attention at the hands of the Spanish observers. We know that in Yucatan the nobles were obliged to support from their revenues such of the lower classes as from sickness, old age, or other disabling cause were unable to gain a livelihood. It has been seen also that none of plebeian blood could hold any office, the only exception noted being the attempt of one of the Quiché kings to humiliate the aristocracy by raising plebeian soldiers to the new rank of Achihab, 'men' or 'heroes.' The lower classes of freemen were doubtless for the most part farmers, each tilling the portion of land allotted him in the domain of a noble; and beyond the obligation to pay a certain tax from the product of their labor, and to render military service in case of necessity, they were probably independent, and often wealthy.[16]

Lowest in the scale among the Mayas, as elsewhere in America, were the slaves. Slavery was an institution of all the nations in the sixteenth century, and had been traditionally for some centuries. In Yucatan, tradition speaks of a time when slavery was unknown; its introduction by a powerful Cocome king was one of the acts of oppression which brought about a revolution and deposed him from the throne. During the power of the Tutul Xius which followed, slavery is said to have been abolished, but must—if indeed the tradition be not altogether unfounded—

[16] 'L'idée de la supériorité de caste est tellement évidente dans le *Popol-Vuh*, par example, que le *peuple*, c'est-à-dire la masse étrangère aux tribus quichées, n'est jamais désigné que sous des nommes d'animaux; ce sont les fourmis, les rats, les singes, les oiseaux, etc.' *Viollet-le-Duc.*, in *Charnay, Ruines Amér.*, p. 88. 'Acostumbravan buscar en los pueblos los mancos y ciegos y que les davan lo necesario.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 40. 'Y los señores dauan Gouernadores a los pueblos, a los quales encomendauan mucho la paz, y buen tratamiento de la genta menuda.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii. '*Achih*....signifie régulièrement héros, guerrier; il semble toutefois s'appliquer á ceux qui n'appartenaient point à l'aristocratie, mais à une classe intermédiaire entre la noblesse et les serfs ou paysans.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, pp. 92-3, 324-5; *Id., Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 56-8. Among the Pipiles 'los que no eran para la guerra, cultivaban las tierras millpas del cazique i papa i sacerdotes, i de las propias suyas davan un tanto para la gente de guerra.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 82. Beggars mentioned in Nicaragua. *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 204.

Digitized by Google

have been reintroduced at a still later period.[17] In the annals of other Maya nations, no time seems to be noted when slaves were not held. This unfortunate class was composed chiefly of captives in war, or of those whose parents had been such; the condition was hereditary, but, in Yucatan at least, the children had the right to redeem themselves by settling on unoccupied lands and becoming tribute-payers. Foreign slaves were also brought into the country for sale; and Cortés speaks of Acalan, a city of Guatemala, as a place where an extensive trade in human kind was carried on.[18] In Nicaragua, a father might sell himself or his children into bondage, when hard pressed by necessity; but in such cases he seems to have had the right of redemption.[19] In Nicaragua and Yucatan, the thief was enslaved by the owner of stolen property, until such time as he paid its value; he could even be sold to other parties, but it is added that he could only be redeemed in Nicaragua with the consent of the cacique. In Yucatan, if a slave died or ran away soon after his sale the purchaser was entitled to receive back a portion of the price paid.[20]

Kidnapping, according to Las Casas, was common in Guatemala, but the laws against the offense were very severe. He who sold a free native into slavery

[17] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 35, 41, 70. 'Cocom fue primero el que hizo esclavos pero por deste mal se siguio usar las armas con que se defendieron para que no fuessen todos esclavos.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 50.

[18] 'En las guerras, que por su ambicion hazian vnos à otros, se cautiuaban, quedando hechos esclauos los vencidos, que cogian. En esto eran rigurosissimos, y los trataban con aspereza.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 161–2; *Carrillo* in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., p. 267; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 70; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 421; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 144. In Nicaragua, Helps tells us that only the common captives were enslaved, the chiefs being killed and eaten. *Span. Conq.*, vol. iii., p. 257.

[19] 'Acaesçe que venden los padres á los hijos, é aun cada uno se puede vender á sí proprio, si quiere é por lo que quisiere.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 51, 54; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 345. Bienvenida says that in Yucatan as soon as the father dies the strongest of those who remain enslave the others. In *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 331.

[20] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Gomara, Hist. In...*, fol. 234; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 161–2; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indigena*, p. 34; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, p. 117.

Digitized by Google

was clubbed to death, his own wife and children were sold, and a large part of the price received went to fill the public exchequer.[21] Pimentel concludes that slaves were more harshly treated in Yucatan than in Mexico; Gomara and Herrera state that no punishment was decreed to him who killed a slave in Nicaragua; but in Yucatan the killer of another's slave must pay the full value of the property destroyed, and was also amenable to punishment if the murdered slave was his own. In Guatemala if a freeman had sexual intercourse with the female slave of another, he had to pay the owner her full value, or purchase for him another of equal value; but if the woman were a favorite of the owner, the penalty, though still pecuniary, was much increased. In the province of Vera Paz, as Las Casas states, if slaves committed fornication with women of their own condition, both parties were slain by having their heads broken between two stones, or by a stick driven down the throat, or by the garrote; the man, however, being sometimes sold for sacrifice. Among the Pipiles a freeman cohabiting with a slave was himself enslaved, unless pardoned by the high-priest for services rendered in war. In Yucatan, as it is expressly stated, and elsewhere probably, the master was permitted to use his female slaves as concubines, but the offspring of such connection could not inherit. Thomas Gage tells us of a town in Guatemala whose inhabitants in the olden time were all slaves and served the people of Amatitlan as messengers. The only distinguishing marks of slaves that are mentioned were the shearing of the hair in Yucatan, and marks of powdered pine charcoal, called *tile*, in Nicaragua.[22]

[21] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 136, 144; *Herrera*, *Gomara*, and *Pimentel*, ubi sup.

[22] *Torquemada*, *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 387; *Las Casas*, ubi sup.; *Herrera*, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Palacio*, *Carta*, pp. 80–2; *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 70, 573; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 46–7; *Cogolludo*, *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 182; *Gage's New Survey*, p. 414; *Oviedo*, *Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 204.

Digitized by Google

Respecting the tenure of landed property among the Maya nations, the little information extant applies chiefly to Yucatan. The whole country, as we have seen, was divided into many domains, or fiefs, of varying extent, ruled over by nobles, or lords, of different rank. Although each lord had, under the king, nearly absolute authority over his domain, yet he does not seem to have been regarded as in any sense the owner of the lands, or to have had a right to sell or in any way alienate them. A certain portion of these lands was set apart for the lord's support, and was worked by his people in common; the rest of the land seems to have been divided among the people, the first occupant being regarded in a certain sense as its owner, and handing it down as an inheritance from generation to generation, but having no right to sell it, and being also obliged to contribute a certain part of its products to the lord of the domain. Cogolludo and Landa speak of the land as being common property, yet by this they probably do not mean to imply that any man had a right to trespass on the cultivated fields of another, but simply that unoccupied lands might be appropriated by any one for purposes of cultivation. Game, fish, and the salt marshes were likewise free to all, but the hunter, fisherman, or salt-maker must pay a tribute to the lords and to the king. In Nicaragua land could not be sold, and if the owner wished to change his residence, he had to leave all his property to his relatives, since nothing could be removed.[23]

[23] 'Las tierras por aora es de comun, y assi el que primero las ocupa las possee.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 130. 'Las tierras eran comunes, y assi entre los Pueblos no auia terminos, ò mojones, que las dividiessen: aunque si entre vna Provincia, y otra, por causa de las guerras.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 180. Las Casas, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 139, speaks of boundary marks between the property of different owners. 'Les habitations était pour la plupart dispersées sans former de village.' *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 45. 'Leur qualité de seigneurs héréditaires ne les rendait pas, pour cela, maîtres du sol ni propriétaires des habitants.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 56–8. 'Property was much respected [in Nicaragua]; but.... no man could put up his land for sale. If he wished to leave the district,

Digitized by Google

At a man's death his property, in Yucatan, was divided between his sons equally, except that a son who had assisted his father to gain the property might receive more than the rest. Daughters inherited nothing, and only received what might be given from motives of kindness by the brothers. In default of sons, the inheritance went to the brothers or nearest male relatives. Minor heirs were intrusted to tutors, who managed the estate, and from it received a recompense for their services. According to Oviedo, property in Nicaragua was inherited by the children, but if there were no children, it went to the relatives of both father and mother. Squier states that in the latter case all personal property was buried with the deceased.[24]

Taxes and tribute paid by the people for the support of the kings and nobles consisted of the products of all the different industries. The merchant contributed from the wares in which he dealt; the farmer from the products of the soil, chiefly maize and cacao; the hunter and fisherman from the game taken in forest and stream. Cotton garments, copal, feathers, skins, fowl, salt, honey, and gold-dust composed a large part of the tribute, and slaves are also mentioned in the lists. Personal labor in working the lands of the lords, and in supplying his household with wood and water, was also an important element of taxation in the provinces. Officials were appointed to assess and collect taxes from all subjects. In Yucatan the tribute of the king and that of the local lords were kept separate, and were attended to by dif-

his property passed to the nearest blood relation, or, in default, to the municipality.' *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 274; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 345; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.

[24] 'Los indios no admittian las hijas a heredar con los hermanos sino era por via de piedad o voluntad.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 136–8. 'Mejorauan al que mas notablemente auia ayudado al padre, a ganar el hazienda.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 180; *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., pp. 267–8; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 70; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 36; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50; *Squier*, in *Palacio, Carta*, p. 119.

Digitized by Google

ferent officials; but in Guatemala it is implied that all taxes were collected together and then distributed to the king and several classes of nobles according to their rank. In the ancient times those who lived in Mayapan were exempt from all taxation. In Nicaragua, we are told that the teite received no tribute or taxes whatever from his subjects, but in the case of a war or other event involving extraordinary expense, the council decided upon the amount of revenue needed, and chose by lot one of their number to assess and collect it. Taxation among the Mayas does not seem to have been oppressive, and the attempt to extort excessive tribute contributed largely to the overthrow of the Cocome power in the twelfth century.[25]

A sale of property or other contract was legalized in Yucatan by the parties drinking before witnesses. A strict fulfilment of all contracts was required both by the law and by public sentiment. Heirs and relatives were liable, or at least assumed the liability, for debts; and often paid, as did the lords of the province, the pecuniary penalty incurred by some poor man, especially if the crime had been committed involuntarily or without malice.[26]

[25] 'Hanno abondanza di cottone, & ne fanno manti che sono come lenzuoli, e camisette senza maniche, e questo s'è il principal tributo che danno à suoi patroni.' *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 99. 'El tributo era mantas pequeñas de algodon, gallinas de la tierra, algun cacao, donde se cogia, y vna resina, que seruia de incienso en los Templos, y todo se dize era muy poco en cantidad.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 179. 'Allende de la casa hazian todo el pueblo a los señores sus sementeras, y se las beneficiavan y cogian en cantidad que le bastava a el y a su casa.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 110–12, 130–2. 'Sus majordomos....que recibian los tributos, y los dauan a los señores.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii. Some authors speak of a tribute of virgins and of a coin called *cuzcas*. *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 262. 'Jamais l'impôt n'était réparti par tête, mais par ville, village ou hameau.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 57–8, 33, 553. In Guatemala, 'en lo tocante á las rentas del rey y Señores, habia este órden, que todo venia á un monton, y de allí le daban al rey su parte, despues daban á los Señores, segun cada uno era, y despues daban á los oficiales, y á quienes el rey hacia mercedes.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 201–2. 'Ils possédaient les esclaves mâles ou femelles que ces sujets leur payaient en tribut.' *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 416–17; *Id.*, in *Nouvelles, Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 45; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 345, 386; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 104; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 341; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., p. 195.

[26] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 180–1; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles*

Digitized by Google

The administration of justice and the execution of the laws were among the Mayas intrusted to the officials that have been mentioned in what has been said respecting government. Serious crimes or other important matters affecting the interests of the king, of the state, or of the higher ranks of nobility, were referred directly to the royal council presided over by the monarch. The king's lieutenants, or lords of royal blood who ruled other provinces, took cognizance of the more important cases of provincial interest; while petty local questions were decided by subordinate judges, one of whom was appointed in each village or hamlet. But even in the case of the local judges the advice of a council was sought on every occasion, and persons were appointed to assist both judges and parties to the suit in the character of advocates. Although these judges had the right to consult with the lord of their province, and the latter, probably, with the royal council, yet after a decision was rendered, there was apparently no right of appeal in any case whatever; but we are told that in Yucatan at least a royal commissioner travelled through the provinces and reported regularly on the manner in which the judges performed their duties, and on other matters of public import. Both judges and advocates might receive presents from all the parties to a suit, according to Cogolludo, and no one thought of applying for justice without bringing some gift proportioned to his means. In Guatemala, as Las Casas states, the judge received half the property of the convicted party; this is probably only to be understood as applying to serious crimes, which involved a confiscation of all property.

In Vera Paz the tax collectors served also as constables, being empowered to arrest accused parties and witnesses, and to bring them before the judges.

Annales des Voy., 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 46; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 70–1; *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., p. 268.

Digitized by Google

Very little is known of the order of procedure in the Maya courts, but great care was apparently taken to ascertain all the facts bearing on the case, and to render exact justice to all concerned. Court proceedings, testimony, arguments, and decisions are said to have been altogether verbal, there being no evidence that written records were kept as they were by the Nahuas, although the Maya system of hieroglyphic writing cannot be supposed to have been in any respect inferior to that of the northern nations. Nothing in the nature of an oath was exacted from a witness, but to guard against false testimony in Yucatan a terrible curse was launched against the perjurer, and a superstitious fear of consequences was supposed to render falsehood impossible. In Guatemala so much was the perjurer despised that a fine and a reprimand from the judge were deemed sufficient punishment. Torture, if we may credit Las Casas, by tying the hands, beating with clubs, and the inhalation of smoke, was resorted to in Vera Paz to extort confession from a person suspected of adultery or other serious crimes. Great weight seems to have been attached to material evidence; for instance, it was deemed important to take the thief while in actual possession of the stolen property; and a woman to convict a man of rape must seize and produce in court some portion of his wearing apparel. The announcement of the judge's decision was, as I have said, delivered verbally, and sometimes, when the parties to the suit were numerous, Cogolludo informs us that all were invited to a banquet, during which the verdict was made known. As there was no appeal to a higher tribunal, so there seems to have been no pardoning power, and the judge's final decision was always strictly enforced. Except a mention by Herrera that the Nicaraguan ministers of justice bore fans and rods, I find no account of any distinguishing insignia in the Maya tribunals.

Punishments inflicted on Maya criminals took the

Digitized by Google

form of death, slavery, and pecuniary fines; imprisonment was of rare occurrence, and apparently never inflicted as a punishment, but only for the retention of prisoners until their final punishment was legally determined. Cogolludo states that culprits were never beaten, but Villagutierre affirms that, at least among the Itzas, they were both beaten and put in shackles; and the same author speaks of imprisonment for non-payment of taxes at Coban. The death penalty was inflicted by hanging, by beating with the garrote or club, and by throwing the condemned over a precipice. Ximenez mentions burning in Guatemala; Oviedo speaks of impalements in Yucatan; those condemned to death in Nicaragua seem to have been sacrificed to the gods by having their hearts cut out; and throwing the body from a wall or precipice is the only method attributed to the Pipiles.

At a town in Yucatan called Cachi, Oviedo mentions a sharp mast standing in the centre of a square and used by the people for impaling criminals alive. The method of imprisonment, as described by Cogolludo, consisted in binding the hands behind the back, placing about the neck a collar of wood and cords, and confining the culprit thus shackled in a wooden cage, At Campeche a place of punishment is mentioned by Peter Martyr and Torquemada as having been seen by the early voyagers. Three beams or posts were fixed in the ground, to them were attached three cross-beams, and scattered about were blood-stained arrows and spears. This apparatus would indicate, if it was really a place of punishment, a method of inflicting the death penalty not elsewhere mentioned; and a stone structure adjoining, covered with sculptured emblems of punishment, is suggestive of ceremonial rites in connection with executions. The death sentence generally involved the confiscation of the criminal's property and the enslaving of his family. All but the most heinous offences could be expiated by the payment of a fine consisting of slaves or other

Digitized by Google

property, and the whole or a large part of this fine went to the judges, the lords, or the king.

Murder was punished in all the nations by death, but in Yucatan and Nicaragua if there were extenuating circumstances, such as great provocation or absence of malice, the crime was atoned by the payment of a fine. In Yucatan a minor who took human life became a slave; the killing of another's slave called for payment of the value destroyed; the killing of one's own slave involved a slight penalty or none at all. In Nicaragua no penalty was decided upon for the murder of a chief, such a crime being deemed impossible.

Theft was atoned by a return of the stolen property and the payment of a fine to the public treasury. In case the criminal could not pay the full value, he was sold as a slave until such time as he might be able to redeem his freedom. In some cases the amount seems to have been paid with the price he brought as a slave, and in others he served the injured party. Fines, however, in most cases seem to have been paid by the relatives and friends of the guilty party, so that the number of persons actually enslaved was perhaps not very large. In Guatemala stolen articles of trifling value went with the fine to the public treasury, since the owner would not receive them. The incorrigible thief, when his friends refused to pay his fine, was sometimes put to death; and death was also the penalty for stealing articles of value from the temple. In Nicaragua the thief who delayed too long the payment of his fine was sacrificed to the gods; and in Salvador, banishment was the punishment for trifling theft, death for stealing larger amounts. Landa informs us that in Yucatan a noble who so far forgot his position as to steal had his face scarified, a great disgrace.

Adultery was punished in Yucatan and Guatemala with death; in the latter if the parties were of the common people they were thrown from a precipice.

Digitized by Google

Fornication was atoned by a fine, or if the affronted relatives insisted, by death. A woman who was unchaste was at first reprimanded, and finally, if she persevered in her loose conduct, enslaved. Rape in Guatemala was punished by death; an unsuccessful attempt at the same, by slavery. Marriage with a slave, as already stated, reduced the freeman to a slave's condition; sexual connection with one's own slave was not regarded as a crime. He who committed incest in Yucatan was put to death.

Treason, rebellion, inciting to rebellion, desertion, interference with the payment of royal tribute, and similar offenses endangering the well-being of the nations, were sufficient causes for death.

In Guatemala, he who kidnapped a free person and sold him into slavery lost his life. For an assault resulting in wounds, a fine was imposed. He who killed the quetzal, a bird reserved for the kings, was put to death; and the same fate was that of him who took game or fish from another's premises, if the injured party was an enemy and insisted on so severe a penalty.

The Pipiles condemned a man to be beaten for lying; but the same offence in time of war demanded capital punishment, as did any disrespect shown for the sacred things of religion.

Ximenez states that in Guatemala the *balam*, or sorcerer, was burned; the same offence in Vera Paz, according to Torquemada, caused the guilty party to be beaten to death or hanged.

A strict payment of all just debts was enforced, and in Guatemala he who bought many things on credit and failed to pay for them was finally enslaved or even killed. Both here and in Nicaragua the borrower was obliged to return or pay for borrowed articles, and if the articles were products of the soil, the lender might repay himself from the borrower's field. He who injured another's property, even servants in the lord's palace who broke dishes or fur-

Digitized by Google

niture must make good all damage. In Yucatan, we are told that a man could not be taken for debt unaccompanied by crime. Some additional laws and regulations of the Maya nations will appear in their appropriate places in other chapters.[27]

[27] On the Maya laws, see *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 132–4, 176–8; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 196–200, 208; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., pp. 338–46, 386–92; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 135–46; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 179–83; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 80–2; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., pp. 229–30, tom. iv., pp. 50–1; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. ii.; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 162; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, pp. 191–2; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263–4; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, L'ist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 59–61, 572–4; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 345; *Id., Cent. Amer.*, p. 334; *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 417–18; *Id.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 46–7; *'Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. iii., pp. 256–7; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 116–17; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre de la Raza Indigena*, pp. 29–34.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXI.

EDUCATION AND FAMILY MATTERS AMONG THE MAYAS.

EDUCATION OF YOUTH—PUBLIC SCHOOLS OF GUATEMALA—BRANCHES OF STUDY IN YUCATAN—MARRYING AGE—DEGREES OF CONSANGUINITY ALLOWED IN MARRIAGE—PRELIMINARIES OF MARRIAGE—MARRIAGE CEREMONIES—THE CUSTOM OF THE DROIT DU SEIGNEUR IN NICARAGUA — WIDOWS — MONOGAMY — CONCUBINAGE — DIVORCE — LAWS CONCERNING ADULTERY — FORNICATION — RAPE — PROSTITUTION — UNNATURAL CRIMES—DESIRE FOR CHILDREN—CHILDBIRTH CEREMONIES—RITE OF CIRCUMCISION — MANNER OF NAMING CHILDREN — BAPTISMAL CEREMONIES.

THE Maya nations appear to have been quite as strict and careful in the education of youth as the Nahuas. Parents took great pains to instruct their children to respect old age, to reverence the gods, and to honor their father and mother.[1] They were, be-

[1] They were taught, says Las Casas, 'que honrasen á los padres y les fuesen obedientes; que no tuviesen codicia de muchos bienes; que no adulterasen con muger agena; que no fornicasen, ni llegasen á muger, sino á la que fuese suya; que no mirasen á las mugeres para codiciarlas, diciendo que no traspasasen umbral ageno; que si anduviesen de noche por el pueblo, que llevasen lumbre en la mano; que siguiesen su camino derecho, que no bajasen de camino, ni subiesen tampoco del; que á los ciegos no les pusiesen ofendiculo para que cayesen; á los lisiados no escarneciesen y de los locos no se riesen, porque todo aquello era malo; que trabajen y no estubiesen ociosos; y para esto desde niños les enseñavan como havian de hacer las sementeras y como beneficiallas y cogellas.' *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 132. Brasseur de Bourbourg remarks that the respectful term of *you* instead of *thou*, is frequently used by children when addressing their parents, in the Popol Vuh. *Popol Vuh*, p. 96. The old people 'eran tan estimados en esto que los moços no tratavan con viejos, sino era en cosas inevitables, y los moços por casar; con los casados sino muy poco.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 178.

Digitized by Google

sides, encouraged while mere infants to amuse themselves with warlike games, and to practise with the bow and arrow. As they grew older, the children of the poor people were taught to labor and assist their parents. The boys were in their childhood educated by the father, who usually taught them his own trade or calling; the girls were under the especial care of the mother, who, it is said, watched very closely over the conduct of her daughters, scarcely ever permitting them to be out of her sight. Children of both sexes remained under the immediate control of their parents until they were of an age to be married, and any disobedience or contumacy was severely punished, sometimes even with death. The boys in Guatemala slept under the portico of the house, as it was thought improper that they should observe the conduct and hear the conversation of married people.[2] In Yucatan, also, the young people were kept separate from their elders. In each village was an immense whitewashed shed, under the shelter of which the youths of the place amused themselves during the day, and slept at night.[3]

The various little events in a child's life which among all peoples, savage or civilized, are regarded as of so great importance by anxious mothers, such as its being weaned, its first step, or its first word, were celebrated with feasts and rejoicing; the anniversaries of its birthday were also occasions of much merry-making. The first article that a child made with its own hands was dedicated to the gods.[4] In Yucatan children went naked until they were four or five years old, when the boys were given a breech-clout to wear

[2] 'Dormian en los portales no solo cuando hacian su ayuno, mas aun casi todo el año, porque no les era permitido tratar ni saber de los negocios de los casados, ni aun sabian cuando habian de casarse, hasta el tiempo que les presentaban las mugeres, porque eran muy sujetos y obedientes á sus padres. Cuando aquestos mancebos iban á sus casas á ver á sus padres.... tenian su cuenta de que no hablasen los padres cosa que fuese menos honesta.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 181.

[3] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 178.

[4] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxix.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 559.

Digitized by Google

and a piece of cloth to sleep under; girls began at the same age to wear a petticoat reaching from the waist downward.[5] In Guatemala, children were left naked till they were eight or ten years of age, at which time they were required to do light labor.[6] As soon as a child reached the age of seven years, it was taken by its father to the priest, who foretold its future destiny, and instructed it how to draw blood from its body, and perform other religious observances.[7]

The Mayas intrusted the more advanced education of youth entirely to the priesthood. In Guatemala the youths assisted the priests in their duties, and received, in turn, an education suited to their position in life. There were schools in every principal town, at which youths were instructed in all necessary branches by competent teachers. The principal of these was a seminary in which were maintained seventy masters, and from five to six thousand children were educated and provided for at the expense of the royal treasury.[8] Girls were placed in convents, under the superintendence of matrons who were most strict in their guardianship. It is said that they entered when eight years old, and were not free until about to be married.[9]

In Yucatan, social distinctions seem to have been more sharply defined than in Guatemala. Here the schools of learning were only open to the children of the nobility; a poor man was content to teach his son his own trade or profession. The children of the privileged classes were, however, very highly educated. The boys were initiated, we are told, into the mysteries and strange rites of their religion; they studied

[5] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 180.

[6] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xiv.; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 195.

[7] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 569.

[8] *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 87; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 569.

[9] *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 194; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 195; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 569.

Digitized by Google

law, morals, music, the art of war, astronomy, astrology, divination, prophecy, medicine, poetry, history, picture-writing, and every other branch of knowledge known to their people. The daughters of the nobles were kept in strict seclusion, and were carefully instructed in all the accomplishments required of a Maya lady.[10]

In Yucatan, the young men usually married at the age of twenty years.[11] In Guatemala, Las Casas tells us that the men never married until they were thirty, notwithstanding he has previously made the extraordinary assertion that the great prevalence of unnatural lusts made parents anxious to get their children wedded as early as possible.[12] Girls among the higher classes must have been married at a very early age in Guatemala, since it is related that when a young noble espoused a maiden not yet arrived at the age of puberty, her father gave him a female slave to lie with him until the wife reached maturity. The children of this slave could not inherit his property, however.[13]

The Guatemalans recognized no relationship on the mother's side only, and did not hesitate to marry their own sister, provided she was by another father.[14]

[10] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 42–4; *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., p. 269; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., p. 191; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 61–2.

[11] *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 203; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 52; Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv., says that in later times they married at twelve or fourteen.

[12] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 135.

[13] *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 208. This is the same passage that Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 572, cites as *Roman, Rep. Ind.*, lib. ii., cap. x.

[14] 'Los Indios de la Vera-Paz muchas veces, segun el Parentesco, que vsaban, era fuerça que casasen Hermanos con Hermanas, y era la raçon esta: Acostumbraban no casar los de vn Tribu, ò Pueblo, con las Mugeres del mismo Pueblo, y las buscaban, que fuesen de otro; porque no contaban por de su Familia, y Parentesco los Hijos que nacian en el Tribu ò Linage ageno, aunque la Muger huviese procedido de su mismo Linage; y era la raçon, porque aquel Parentesco se atribula à solo los Hombres. Por manera, que si algun Señor daba su Hija à otro de otro Pueblo, aunque no tuviese otro heredero este Señor, sino solos los Nietos, Hijos de su Hija, no los reconocia por Nietos, ni Parientes, en raçon de hacerlos herederos, por ser Hijos del otro Señor de otros Pueblos y asi se le buscaba al tal Señor, Muger

Digitized by Google

Thus, if a noble lady married an inferior in rank or even a slave, the children belonged to the order of the father, and not of the mother.[15] Torquemada adds that they sometimes married their sisters-in-law and step-mothers.[16]

Among the Pipiles of Salvador, an ancestral tree, with seven main branches, denoting degrees of kindred, was painted upon cloth, and within these seven branches, or degrees, none were allowed to marry, except as a recompense for some great public or warlike service rendered. Within four degrees of consanguinity none, under any pretext, might marry.[17] In Yucatan, there was a peculiar prejudice against a man marrying a woman who bore the same name as his own, and so far was this fancy carried that he who did this was looked upon as a renegade and an outcast. Here, also, a man could not marry the sister of his deceased wife, his step-mother, or his mother's sister, but with all other relatives on the maternal side, no matter how close, marriage was perfectly legitimate. A Yucatec noble who wedded a woman of inferior degree descended to her social level, and was dispossessed of a part of his property,

que fuese de otro Pueblo, y no de el proprio. Y asi sucedia, que los Hijos de estas Mugeres, no tenian por Parientes à los Deudos de su Madre, por estàr en otro Pueblo, y esto se entiende, en quanto à casarse con ellas, que lo tenian por licito, aunque en lo demàs se reconocian. Y porque la cuenta de su Parentesco era entre solos los Hombres, y no por parte de las Mugeres. Y por esto no tenian impedimento, para casarse, con los tales Parientes; y asi se casaban con todos los grados de Consanguinidad, porque mas por Hermana tenian qualquiera Muger de su Linage, aunque fuese remotisima, y no tuviese memoria del grado, en que le tocaba, que la Hija de su propia Madre, como fuese havida de otro Marido, y por este error se casaban, con las Hermanas de Madre, y no de Padre.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 419.

[15] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 572.

[16] *Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 419.

[17] 'En lo que tocava al parentesco, tenian un arbol pintado, i en el siete ramos que significava siete grados de parentesco. En estos grados no se podia casar nadie, i esto se entendia por linea recta si no fuese que alguno huviese fecho algun gran fecho en armas, i havia de ser del tercero grado fuera; i por linea traversa tenia otro arbol con quatro ramos que significaban el quarto grado, en estos no se podia casar nadie.... Qualquiera que tenia quenta carnal con parienta en los grados susodichos morian por ello ambos.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 80; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 334.

Digitized by Google

and deprived of his rank.[18] In Nicaragua, no one might marry within the first degree of relationship, but beyond that there was no restriction.[19]

The question of dowry was settled in Guatemala by the relatives of the young couple.[20] The Yucatec son-in-law served his father-in-law for four or five years, and the omission of such service was considered scandalous;[21] while in Nicaragua the dower was usually paid in fruit or land.[22]

Each of the Maya nations seems to have had a method of arranging marriages peculiar to itself. In Guatemala, the whole affair was managed by the nearest relatives of the betrothed pair, who were kept in profound ignorance of the coming event, and did not even know each other until the day of the wedding. It seems incredible that the young men should have quietly submitted to having their wives picked out for them without being allowed any voice or choice in the matter. Yet we are told that so great was their obedience and submission to their parents, that there never was any scandal in these things. If this be the case, what a strange phenomenon Guatemalan society must have been, with no love affairs, no wooing permitted, and Cupid a banished boy! But for all that, many a Guatemalan youth may have looked coldly upon his bride as he thought of another, and to him fairer, face, and many a loyal young wife may have been sometimes troubled with the vision of a comely form that she had admired before she saw her lord.

When a man of rank wished to marry his son, he sent a number of his friends with presents to the

[18] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 134–6, 140; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 61.

[19] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 419; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343.

[20] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 570.

[21] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 53. 'Los dotes eran de vestidos, y cosas de poca sostancia, lo mas se gastaua en los combites.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[22] *Oviedo, Hist Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343.

Digitized by Google

parents of the young girl upon whom his choice had fallen. If the presents were refused, it was a sign that the offer of alliance was declined, and no further steps were taken in the matter; but if they were accepted, it showed that the match was thought a desirable one. In the latter case, a few days having elapsed, another embassy, bearing more costly gifts than before, was despatched to the parents of the girl, who were again asked to give their consent to the marriage. Finally, a third deputation was sent, and this generally succeeded in satisfactorily arranging the affair. The two families then commenced to treat each other as relations, and to visit each other for the purposes of determining the day of the wedding and making preparations for the event. Among the lower classes, the father usually demanded the bride of her parents in person.[23] It was customary among the Pipiles of Salvador for the father of the boy, after having obtained the consent of the girl's parents to the match, to take her to his house when she was twelve years of age, and his son fourteen, and there educate and maintain her as if she were his own child. In return he was entitled to her services and those of his son until they were able to sustain themselves, and of a suitable age to marry. The parents of the couple then jointly made them a present of a house and gave them the means to start in life. Thereafter, if the young man met his father-in-law in the street, he crossed to the other side of the way, and the girl paid the same courtesy to her mother-in-law.[24]

In the greater part of Nicaragua matches were arranged by the parents, but there were certain independent towns in which the girls chose their husbands from among the young men while the latter were sitting at a feast.[25]

[23] *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 204–6; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 569–71.

[24] *Palacio, Carta*, p. 78; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 321.

[25] *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1855), vol. ii., p. 343.

Digitized by Google

I have already alluded to the fact that if in Guatemala or Yucatan a young man married into a rank lower than his own, he lost caste in consequence, hence his parents were the more careful to select for him a bride from among the maidens of his own standing in society. Among the Mayas of Yucatan, when the day appointed for a marriage ceremony arrived, the invited friends assembled at the house of the bride's father, where the betrothed couple with their parents and the officiating priest were already waiting. For the joyful occasion a great feast was prepared, as it was customary to incur a large expense in food and wine for the entertainment of invited guests. When all were present, the priest called the bride and bridegroom with their parents before him, and delivered to them an address concerning the duties of the wedded state. He then offered incense and certain prayers to the gods, concluding the ceremony by asking a blessing from heaven for the newly wedded couple.[26] No ceremonies took place when a widow or widower was married; in such case a simple repast or the giving of food and drink one to another was deemed sufficient to solemnize the nuptials.[27]

It was customary in Guatemala, when all preliminaries of a marriage had been settled and the day fixed for the wedding, for the bridegroom's father to send a deputation of old women and principal men to conduct the bride to his house. One of those sent for this purpose carried her upon his shoulders, and when they arrived at a certain designated point near the bridegroom's home, she was met by other men, also chosen by her father-in-law, who offered incense four or five times before her, and sacrificed some quail or other birds to the gods, at the same time giving thanks for her safe arrival. As soon as she came to

[26] 'Haziase vna platica de como se auia tratado, y mirado aquel casamiento, y que quadraua: hecha la platica el Sacerdote sahumaua la casa; y con oraciones bendezia a los nouios, y quedauan casados.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[27] *Ib.*; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 142.

Digitized by Google

the house she was seated with much ceremony upon a couch covered with mats or rich carpets; immediately a number of singers began a song suited to the occasion; musicians played on their instruments; dancers came forth and danced before her.[28] The consent of the cacique had to be obtained to all marriages that were celebrated in his territory; before the ceremony the priest desired the young man and his bride to confess to him all the sins of their past life. No person was allowed to marry in Yucatan until the rite of baptism had been administered.[29] In Guatemala, if the betrothed belonged to the higher classes of society, the cacique joined their hands, and then tied the end of the man's mantle to a corner of the woman's dress, at the same time advising them to be faithful and loving toward each other. The ceremony ended, all partook of the wedding-feast, and the bride and bridegroom were carried to the house intended for them, upon the shoulders of some of those who had assisted at the marriage; they were then conducted to the bridal-chamber, and, as Ximenez tells us, received instructions from two of the most honored old women respecting certain marital duties.[30]

The marriage ceremonies of the Pipiles were simple and unique; matches were made by the cacique and carried into effect under his direction. At the appointed time, the kinsfolk of the bride proceeded to the house of the bridegroom, whence he was borne to the river and washed. The relatives of the bride performed the same act of cleansing upon the person of the bride. The two parties with their respective

[28] 'Llegada á casa, luego la ponian y asentaban en un tálamo bien aderezado, y comenzaban grandes bailes y cantares y otros regocijos muchos, con que la fiesta era muy solemne.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 206; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 570–1.

[29] 'Sin él ninguno se casaba.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 183; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 191; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 196.

[30] 'A la noche, dos mugeres honradas y viejas metíanlos en una pieza, y enseñábanlos como habian de haberse en el matrimonio.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 206.

Digitized by Google

charges then repaired to the house of the bride. The couple were now tied together by the ends of the blankets, in which they were infolded naked and laid away—married.[31] After the ceremony an interchange of presents took place between the relatives of the newly married couple, and they all feasted together.

Among the civilized nations of Nicaragua, when a match was arranged to the satisfaction of the parents, some fowls were killed, cacao was prepared, and the neighbors were invited to be present. The father, mother, or whoever gave away the bride, was asked in presence of the assembled guests whether or not she came as a virgin; if the answer was in the affirmative, and the husband afterward found that she had been already seduced, he had the right to return her to her parents, and she was looked upon as a bad woman; but if the parents answered that she was not a virgin, and the man agreed to take her for a wife, the marriage was valid.[32]

When they were to be united the cacique took the parties with his right hand by the little fingers of their left hands and led them into the house set apart for marriages, leaving them, after some words of advice, in a small room, where there was a fire of candlewood. While the fire lasted they were expected to remain perfectly still, and not until it was burned out did they proceed to consummate the marriage. The following day, if the husband made no objection in respect to the girl's virginity, the relations and friends assembled and expressed their gratification with loud cries of joy, and passed the day in feasting and pleasure.[33]

[31] Palacio says they were each wrapped in a new white mantle. 'Ambos los enbolvian cada qual en su manta blanca nueva.' *Carta*, p. 78. See also *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 333.

[32] 'Si la tomo por virgen, y la halla corrompida, desecha la, mas no de otra manera.' *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 49.

[33] 'Los novios se están quedos, mirando cómo aquella poca tea se quema;

Digitized by Google

Notwithstanding the disgrace attached to a woman who had lost her virginity before marriage and concealed the fact, we are assured by Andagoya that in Nicaragua a custom similar to the European 'droit du seigneur' was practised by a priest living in the temple, who slept with the bride during the night preceding her marriage.[34]

A widow was looked upon as the property of the family of her deceased husband, to whose brother she was invariably married, even though he might have a wife of his own at the time. If she had no brother-in-law, then she was united to the nearest living relative on her husband's side.[35] In Yucatan, the widow could not marry again till after a year from her husband's death.[36]

Monogamy seems to have been the rule among the Maya nations, and many authors assert positively that polygamy did not exist. It was only in the border state of Chiapas that the custom is mentioned by Remesal. To compensate for this, concubinage was largely indulged in by the wealthy. The punishment for bigamy was severe, and consisted, in Nicaragua,

é acabada, quedan casados é ponen en efetto lo demás.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50. 'En muriendose la lumbre, quedan casados.' *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 273.

[34] 'La noche ántes avia de dormir con la novia uno que tenian por papa.' *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viages*, tom. iii., p. 414; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. v., cap. xii. Oviedo perhaps alludes to this custom when he says: 'Muchos hay que quieren más las corrompidas que no las vírgenes.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 472.

[35] 'Comunmente estas gentes compraban la muger, y aquellos dones que llevaban, era el precio, y así la muger jamas volvía á casa de sus padres aunque enviudase; porque luego el hermano del muerto la tomaba por muger *aunque él fuese casado*, y si el hermano no era para ello, un pariente tenia derecho á ella. Los hijos de las tales mugeres no tenian por deudos á los tales abuelos, ni á los demas deudos de las madres, porque la cuenta de su parentesco venia por línea de varones, y así no tenian impedimentos para casarse con los parientes de sus madres, esto se entiende para contraer matrimonio; que en lo demas amábanse y queríanse unos á otros.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 207; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 146; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 388; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 571–2.

[36] 'No se casavan despues de viudos un año, por no conocer hombre a muger en aquel tiempo, y a los que esto no guardavan, tenian por poco templados y que les vendria por esso algun mal.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 156.

Digitized by Google

of banishment and confiscation of the entire property for the benefit of the injured wife or husband, who was at liberty to marry again, a privilege which was not, however, accorded to women who had children. Landa tells us that the Chichen Itza kings lived in a state of strict celibacy, and Diaz relates that a tower was pointed out to him on the coast of Yucatan, which was occupied by women who had dedicated themselves to a single life.[37]

With their loveless marriages it was fortunate that divorce could be obtained on very slight grounds. In Yucatan, says Landa, the father would, after a final separation, procure one wife after another to suit the tastes of his son. If the children were still of tender age at the time the parents separated, they were left with the mother; if grown up, the boys followed the father, while the girls remained with the mother. It was not unusual for the husband to return to the wife after a while, if she was free, regardless of the fact that she had belonged to another in the mean time.[38] In Guatemala the wife could leave her husband on the same slight grounds as the man, and if she refused to return to him after being requested to do so, he was allowed to marry again; she was then considered free, and held of no little consequence. In Nic-

[37] *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 13. 'Todos toman muchas mugeres, empero vna es la legitima,' says Gomara, *Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263, in speaking of Nicaragua. 'Comunmente cada uno tiene una sola muger, é pocos son los que tienen más, exçepto los prinçipales ó el que puede dar de comer á más mugeres; é los caçiques quantas quieren.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 37. The word 'muger' evidently means women who lived with the man, the wife and concubines, for, on p. 50, it is stated that only one legitimate wife was allowed. The punishment for bigamy helps to bear this out. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 310, 499. 'Nunca los yucataneses tomaron mas de una.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 142, 341. This view is also taken by Cogolludo, *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 193, who adds, however: 'Contradize Aguilar en su informe lo de vna muger sola, diziendo, que tenian muchas;' but this may refer to concubines. Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 55, says: 'La pluralité des femmes étant admises par la loi,' and gives *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv., as his authority; but this author merely refers to concubinage as being lawful.

[38] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 138–40. 'Tenian grandes pendencias, y muertes sobre ello,' says Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv., referring to their married life.

Digitized by Google

aragua, the husband decided whether the children were to remain with him or the divorced wife.[39]

The Mayas seem to have dealt more leniently with adulterers than the Nahuas. In Guatemala, the married man who committed adultery with a maiden was, upon complaint of the girl's relations, compelled to pay as a fine from sixty to one hundred rare feathers. It generally happened, however, that the friends of the woman were careful to keep the matter secret, as such a scandal would cause great injury to her future prospects. If a married man was known to sin with a married woman or widow, both were for the first or even the second offence merely warned, and condemned to pay a fine of feathers; but if they persevered in their crime, then their hands were bound behind their backs, and they were forced to inhale the smoke of a certain herb called *tabacoyay*, which, although very painful, was not a fatal punishment. The single man who committed adultery with a married woman was obliged to pay to the parents of the latter the amount which her husband had paid for her; doubtless this fine was handed over to the injured husband, who, in such a case, repudiated his wife. It sometimes happened, however, that the husband did not report the matter to the authorities, but gave his unfaithful wife a bird of the kind which was used in sacrifices, and told her to offer it to the gods, and, with her companion in crime, to confess and be forgiven. Such a husband was regarded as a most virtuous and humane man.[40] A noble lady taken in adultery was reprimanded the first time, and severely punished or repudiated for the second offence. In the latter case, she was free to marry again.[41] It was a capital crime to commit adultery

[39] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 146; *Brasseur de Bourboury, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 572.

[40] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 137–8.

[41] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 572.

Digitized by Google

with a lord's wife; if he who did so was a noble, they strangled him, but if he was a plebeian, they flung him down a precipice.[42]

Cogolludo says that among the Itzas the man and woman taken in adultery were put to death. The woman was taken beyond the limits of the town to a place where there were many loose stones. There she was bound to a post, and the priest who had judged her having cast the first stone, and the injured husband the second, the crowd that was never missing on such occasions joined so eagerly in the sport that the death of their target was a speedy one. The male adulterer, according to the same account, was also bound to a post, and shot to death in the same manner with arrows.[43]

In Vera Paz, incorrigible adulterers were enslaved.[44] In Nicaragua, the faithless wife was repudiated by her husband, and not allowed to marry again, but she had the right of retaining her dowry and effects. The adulterer was severely beaten with sticks by the relations of the woman he had led astray. The husband appears to have taken no part in the matter.[45] In Yucatan, adultery was punished

[42] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 387. 'Acontecio quexarse vn Indio contra vn Alcalde de su nacion, que sin pedimento suyo hauia castigado a su muger por ocho adulterios, y hechole pagar a el la condenacion, de manera que aliende de su afrenta, le lleuaua su dinero.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. viii. 'Cuando queria que la muger se huia y se iba con otro, ó por sencillas se volvia en casa de sus padres, requeríala el marido que volviese, y si no queria, él se podia casar luego con otra, porque en este caso las mugeres eran poderosas y libres. Algunos sufrian un año aguardándolas; pero lo comun era casarse luego, porque no podian vivir sin mugeres, á causa de no tener quien les guisese de comer.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 200.

[43] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 699.

[44] 'Quando las mugeres eran halladas en adulterio, la primera vez eran corregidas de palabra; y si no se enmendaban, repudiábanlas; y si era Señor, hermano ó pariente del Señor de la tierra, luego en dejándola, se podia casarse con quien quisiere. Los vasallos hacian tambien esto muchas veces, pero tenian un poco de mas paciencia, porque las corregian dos y cinco veces, y llamaban á sus parientes para que las reprehendiesen. Pero si eran incorregibles, denunciaban ellas delante del Señor, el cual las mandaba comparecer ante sí y hacianlas esclavas, y la misma pena se daba á las que no querian hacer vida con sus maridos.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 208–9.

[45] Oviedo asserts that the husband avenged his own honor. The Friar asks: '¿Qué pena le dan al adúltero, que se echa con la muger de otro?'

Digitized by Google

with death. According to Cogolludo, offenders of both sexes were shot to death with arrows; Landa tells us that the man was killed with a stone by the husband of his paramour, but the woman was punished with disgrace only. It is said that in more ancient times adulterers were impaled or disembowelled. But so great was the horror in which the Yucatecs held this crime, that they did not always wait for conviction, but sometimes punished a suspected person by binding him, stripping him naked, shaving off his hair, and thus leaving him for a time.[46] Among the Pipiles of Salvador, he who made advances to a married woman, and did nothing worse, was banished, and his property was confiscated. The adulterer, if we may believe Palacio,[47] was put to death; Squier says he became the slave of the dishonored husband.[48]

Simple fornication was punished with a fine, to be paid in feathers of a certain rare bird, which, by the laws of Vera Paz at least, it was death to kill without express permission, as its plumage formed a most valuable article of trade with the neighboring provinces.[49] But if any complaint was raised, such as by a father in behalf of his daughter, or by a brother for his sister, the seducer was put to death, or at least made a slave.[50] In Yucatan, death seems to have been the inevitable fate of the seducer.[51]

In Guatemala and Salvador, consummated rape was punished with death. He who merely attempted

The Indian answers: 'El marido della riñe con él é le da de palos; pero no lo mata.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 50. Squier, *Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343, says that the woman was also severely flogged, but this does not seem to have been the case. See *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 273.

[46] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 182; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 48–176; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 46; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii.; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, p. 117.

[47] *Carta*, p. 80.

[48] *Cent. Amer.*, p. 334.

[49] *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 137, 144; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 387.

[50] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 144; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 388.

[51] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 182.

Digitized by Google

rape was enslaved.[52] In Nicaragua, the penalty for this crime was not so severe, since he who committed it was only obliged to compensate pecuniarily the parents of his victim; though if he could not do this he became their slave. He who ravished the daughter of his employer or lord was, however, always put to death.[53] Incest is said to have been an unknown crime.[54]

Public prostitution was tolerated, if not encouraged, among all the Maya nations. In every Nicaraguan town there were establishments kept by public women, who sold their favors for ten cacao-nibs, and maintained professional bullies to protect and accompany them at home and abroad. Parents could prostitute their daughters without shame; and it is said, further, that during a certain annual festival, women of whatever condition could abandon themselves to the embrace of whomever they pleased, without incurring any disgrace.[55] It was no unusual thing for parents of the lower orders to send their daughters on a tour through the land, that they might earn their marriage portion by prostitution.[56]

All the old writers appear anxious to clear the civil-

[52] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 144; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 388; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.; *Palacio, Carta*, p. 82; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 334.

[53] *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 51; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343.

[54] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 51; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343.

[55] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 252, 316, tom. iv., pp. 37, 51; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263–4; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Müller, Amerikanische Urreligionen*, p. 663; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., pp. 343–4; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 273. 'Dado que e vido que en otras partes de las Indias usavan del nefando peccado en estas tales casas, en esta tierra [Yucatan] no e entendido que hiziessen tal, ni creo lo hazian, porque los llagados desta pestilencial miseria dizen que no son amigos de mugeres como eran estos, ca a estos lugares llevavan las malas mugeres publicas, y en ellos usavan dellas, y las pobres que entre esta gente acertava a tener este officio no obstante que recibian dellos gualardon, eran tantos los moços que a ellas acudian que las traian acossadas y muertas.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 178.

[56] *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 414; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. v., cap. xii.; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 344; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., pp. 273–4.

Digitized by Google

ized aborigines from the charge of sodomy, yet the fact that no nation was without strict laws regarding this unnatural vice, combined with the admissions reluctantly made by the reverend fathers themselves, seems to show that pederasty certainly was not unknown. Thus Las Casas says that sodomy was looked upon as a great and abominable sin in Vera Paz, and was not known until a god,[57] called by some Chin, by others Cavil, and again by others Maran, instructed them by committing the act with another deity. Hence, it was held by many to be no sin, inasmuch as a god had introduced it among them. And thus it happened that some fathers gave their sons a boy to use as a woman; and if any other approached this boy he was treated as an adulterer. Nevertheless, if a man committed a rape upon a boy, he was punished in the same manner as if he had ravished a woman. And, adds the same writer, there were always some who reprehended this abominable custom.[58] In Yucatan, certain images were found by Bernal Diaz which would lead us to suppose that the natives were at least acquainted with sodomy,[59] but here again the good father[60] takes up the cudgels in be-

[57] A demon, Las Casas calls him, but these monks spoke of all the New World deities as 'demons.'

[58] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 138. Before this he writes: 'Y es aqui de saber, que tenian por grave pecado el de la sodomia como abajo dirémos, y comunmente los padres lo aborrecian y prohibian á los hijos. Pero por causa de que fuesen instruidos en la religion, mandavanles dormir en los templos donde los mozos mayores en aquel vicio á los niños corrompian. Y despues salidos de alli mal acostumbrados, dificil era librarlos de aquel vicio. Por esta causa eran los padres muy solicitos de casarlos quan presto podian, por los apartar de aquella corrupcion vilissima aunque casallos muchachos contra su voluntad y forzados, y solamente por aquel respeto lo hacian.' *Id.*, pp. 134–5.

[59] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 180.

[60] 'Otro acerrimo infamador de estas naciones, que Dios Nuestro Señor haya, en cuya historia creo yo que tuvo Dios harto poca parte, dixo ser indicio notorio de que aquellas gentes eran contaminadas del vicio nefando por haver hallado en cierta parte de aquella tierra, hechos de barro ciertos idolos uno encima de otro. Como si entre nuestros pintores ó figulos no se finjan cada dia figuras feas y de diversos actos, que no hay sopecha por nadie obrarse, condenarlos todos por aquello, haciendolos reos de vicio tan indigno de se hablar, no carece de muy culpable temeridad, y asi lo que ariba dije tengo por la verdad, y lo demas por falsos testimonios dignos de divino castigo.' *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 147.

Digitized by Google

half of his favorites. In Nicaragua, sodomites were stoned to death.[61]

The desire to possess children seems to have been very general, and many were the prayers and offerings made by disappointed parents to propitiate the god whose anger was supposed to have deferred their hopes. To further promote the efficacy of their prayers, the priest enjoined upon man and wife to separate for a month or two, to adhere to a simple diet, and abstain from salt.[62] Several superstitious observances were also regarded; thus, among the Pipiles, a husband should avoid meeting his father-in-law, or a wife her mother-in-law, lest issue fail them.[63] These observances tend the more to illustrate their longing to become parents, since the women are said to have been very prolific. The women were delivered with little difficulty or pain,[64] yet a midwife was called in, who attended to the mother's wants, and facilitated parturition by placing a heated stone upon the abdomen. In Yucatan, an image of *Ixchel*, the goddess of childbirth, was placed beneath the bed. Among the Pipiles and in Guatemala, the woman was confessed when any difficulty arose, and it not unfrequently happened that an officer of justice took advantage of such opportunities to obtain criminating evidence. If the wife's confession alone did not have the desired effect, the husband was called upon to avow his sins; his maxtli was besides laid over the wife, and sometimes blood was drawn from his tongue and ears, to be scattered toward the four quarters with various invocations.[65] After delivery a turkey hen was im-

[61] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 51; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 343.

[62] 'Que comiesen el pan seco ó solo maiz, ó que estuviesen tantos dias en el campo metidos en alguna cueva.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 193.

[63] *Palacio, Carta*, p. 78.

[64] In Vera Paz 'las mugeres paren como cabras, muchas vezes a solas, tendidas en el suelo: otras por los caminos, y luego se van a lauar al rio.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xiv.; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 192.

[65] 'Le hazian dezir sus pecados i si no paria, hazia que se confesase el

Digitized by Google

molated, and thanks rendered to the deity for the happy issue. The midwife thereupon washed the child, placed a bow and arrow in its hands if a boy, a spindle, if a girl, and drew a mark upon its right foot, so that it might become a good mountaineer.

The birth of a son was celebrated with especial rejoicings, and extensive invitations issued for the feasts that took place on or about the day when the umbilical cord was to be cut,[66] a ceremony which seems to have borne the same festive character as baptism among the Nahuas and other nations. The *ahgih*, astrologer, was asked to name a favorable day for the rite. The cord was then laid upon an ear of maize to be cut off with a new knife and burned. The grains were removed from the cob and sown at the proper season; one half of the yield to be made into gruel and form the first food of the child aside from the mother's milk, the other half to be sent to the ahgih, after reserving a few grains for the child to sow with his own hands when he grew up, and make an offering thereof to his god. At the same time a kind of circumcision may have been performed, a rite which could not, however, have been very general, if indeed it ever existed, for Cogolludo positively asserts that it never was practised in Yucatan, and Landa thinks that the custom of slitting the foreskin, which the devout performed before the idol, may have given rise to the report. Palacio asserts that certain Indians in Salvador are known to have scarified themselves as well as some boys in the same manner.[67]

marido, i si no podia con esto, si havia dicho i confesado que conoña alguno, ivan á casa de aquel i traian de su casa la manta é pañetes i ceiñola á la preñada paraque pariese.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 76; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 139.

[66] It would seem that the child remained with the navel-string attached to it until a favorable day was selected for performing the ceremony of cutting it. 'Echaban suertes para ver que dia seria bueno para cortar el ombligo.' And farther on: 'Muchos tribus de indios de Centro-America conservan hasta hoy al nacimiento de un niño el uso de quemarle el ombligo; costumbre barbara de que mueron muchos niños.' This would indicate that the cord was burned while attached to the infant. *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 193–4; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 448.

[67] In Cezori 'ciertos Indios idolatraron en un monte en sus terminos, i

Digitized by Google

The naming of the child was the next important affair. Among the Pipiles it was taken to the temple on the twelfth day, over a road strewn with green branches,[68] and here the priest gave it the name of its grandfather or grandmother, after which offerings of cacao and fowl were presented to the idol and some gifts to the minister. In Guatemala, the child was named after the god to whom the day of its birth was dedicated, for it was not thought desirable to call it after the parents; other names were, however, applied afterward, according to circumstances.[69] Las Casas adds that the parents lost their name on the birth of the first son and daughter, the father being called 'father of Ek,' or whatever might be the name of the son, and the mother receiving the cognomen of 'mother of Can,' etc.[70] The Itzas gave their children a name formed of the combined names of the father and mother, that of the latter standing first; thus, in Canek, *can* is taken from the mother's name, *ek* from the father's. In Yucatan, the former home of this people, the custom was almost the same, except that *na* was prefixed to the names of the parents; thus, Na-Chan-Chel denoted son of Chel and Chan, but as the name of the father, according to Landa, was perpetuated in the son only, not in the daughter, it fol-

entre ellos que uno se harpó i hendió su miembro, i que circuncidaron quatro muchachos de doze años para arriba al uso judaico, i la sangre que salio dellos la sacrificaron á un idolo.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 84. 'Se harpaven el superfluo del miembro vergonçoso, dexandolo como las orejas, de lo qual se engaño el historiador general de las Indias, diziendo que se circumcidian.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 162–3. 'Ni aquellos Religiosos Dominicos, ni el Obispo de Chiapa, haziendo tan particular inquisicion, hazen memoria de auer hallado tal cosa....los Indios, ni estos tienen tradicion de que vsassen tal costumbre sus ascendientes.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 191. They 'are Circumcised, but not all.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. i. Circumcision was 'un usage général dans l'Yucatan, observé de temps immémorial: elle était pratiquée sur les petits enfants dès les premiers jours de leur naissance.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 51. This positive and isolated assertion of the Abbé must be founded upon some of his MSS., as usual.

[68] 'Cortarban ramos verdes en que pisase.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 76.

[69] Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 568, refers only to the first-born. 'Dabanle el nombre del Dia, en que havia nacido, ó segun lo que precediò en su Nacimiento.' *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 448; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 193.

[70] *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxix.

Digitized by Google

lows that the girl could not have been named in the same order; it is possible that the mother's name was placed last, and served as surname in their case. In later years this name was not usually imposed until the time of baptism; but in earlier times a distinctive name was given by the priest at the time of taking the horoscope, shortly after birth. The name of the father was borne till the marriage-day, the names of both parents being assumed after that event.[71] On the conclusion of the above ceremonies, the Guatemalan or Pipile infant and mother were taken to a fountain or river, near a fall if possible, to be bathed, and during the bath incense, birds, or cacao were offered to the water, apparently with a view of gaining the good-will of the god of that element. The utensils which had served at the birth, such as warming stone, cups, and knife, were thrown into the water at the same time.[72]

The mothers were good and patient nurses, suckling their infants for over three years, for the habit of taking warm morning drinks, the exercise of grinding maize, and the uncovered bosom, all tended to produce large breasts and an abundant supply of milk. Otherwise the children received a hardy training, clothing being dispensed with, and the bare ground serving for a couch. When working, the mother carried them on her back; in Yucatan, however, they were usually borne across the hip, and for this reason a large number became bow-legged. Landa also mentions another deformity, that produced by head-

[71] 'A sus hijos y hijas siempre llamavan del nombre del padre y de la madre, el del padre como propio y de la madre apellativo.' The pre-baptismal name was abandoned when the father's name was assumed. *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 136, 194. Only the few who were destined to receive the baptism obtained the distinctive name. *Medel*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 44–5; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 489.

[72] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 448. Palacio, *Carta*, p. 76, states that this ceremony was performed after the twelfth day, and that the mother only was taken to be bathed. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x., and *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 333; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 568.

Digitized by Google

flattening, which is to be noticed on the sculptures of the Maya ruins.[73]

It is related by all the old Spanish historians, that when the Spaniards first visited the kingdom of Yucatan they found there traces of a baptismal rite; and, strangely enough, the name given to this rite, in the language of the inhabitants, was *zihil*, signifying 'to be born again.' It was the duty of all to have their children baptized, for by this ablution they believed that they received a purer nature, were protected against evil spirits and future misfortunes. I have already mentioned that no one could marry unless he had been baptized according to their customs; they held, moreover, that an unbaptized person, whether man or woman, could not lead a good life, nor do anything well. The rite was administered to children of both sexes at any time between the ages of three and twelve years. When parents desired to have a child baptized they notified the priest of their intentions. The latter then published a notice throughout the town of the day upon which the ceremony would take place, being first careful to fix upon a day of good omen. This done, the fathers of the children who were to be baptized selected five of the most honored men of the town to assist the priest during the ceremony. These were called *chacs*.[74] During the three days preceding the ceremony, the father and assistants fasted and abstained from women When the appointed day arrived, all assembled with the children who were to be baptized, in the house of the giver of the feast, who was usually one of the wealthiest of the parents. In the court-yard fresh leaves were strewn, and there the boys were ranged in a row in charge of their godfathers, while in another row were

[73] 'Allanarles las frentes y cabeças.' 'Comunmente todos estevados, porque.. .van ahorcajados en los quadriles.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 192-4, 112; *Juarros, Hist. Guat*, p. 195.

[74] *Chác*, or *Chaac*, was the title given to certain laymen who were elected to assist the priest in some of his religious duties. Also the name of a divinity, protector of the water and harvests. See *Landa, Relacion*, p. 485.

Digitized by Google

the girls with their godmothers. The priest now proceeded to purify the house with the object of casting out the devil. For this purpose four benches were placed one in each of the four corners of the court-yard, upon which were seated four of the assistants holding a long cord that passed from one to the other, thus enclosing part of the yard; within this enclosure were the children and those fathers and officials who had fasted. A bench was placed in the centre, upon which the priest was seated with a brazier, some ground corn, and incense. The children were directed to approach one by one, and the priest gave to each a little of the ground corn and incense, which, as they received it, they cast into the brazier. When this had been done by all, they took the cord and brazier, with a vessel of wine, and gave them to a man to carry outside the town, with injunctions not to drink any of the wine, and not to look behind him; with such ceremony the devil was expelled.[75] The yard was then swept clean, and some leaves of a tree called *chihom*, and of another called *copo*, were scattered over it. The priest now clothed himself in long gaudy-looking robes, consisting, according to Landa, of a jacket of red feathers with flowers of various colors embroidered thereon; hanging from the ends were other long feathers, and on his head a coronet of plumes. From beneath the jacket long bands of cotton hung down to the ground. In his hand he held some hyssop fastened to a short stick. The chacs then put white cloths upon the children's heads, and asked the elder if they had committed any sins; such as confessed that they had were then

[75] Who was selected to take the wine, brazier, and cord outside the town, or what he did with it afterward, we are not told. Cogolludo says: 'Daban à vn Indio vn vaso del vino que acostumbraban beber, y embiabanle fuera del Pueblo con èl, mandandole, que ni lo bebiesse, ni mirasse atràs, con que crelan quedaba totalmente expulso el demonio.' *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 191. 'En un vaso enviaban vino fuera del pueblo, con órden al indio que no lo bebiese ni mirase atras, y con esto pensaban que habian echado al demonio.' *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 183; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

Digitized by Google

placed apart. The priest then ordered the people to sit down and be silent; he next blessed the boys, and offering up some prayers, purified them with the hyssop with much solemnity. The principal officer who had been elected by the fathers now took a bone, and having dipped it in a certain water, moistened their foreheads, their features, and their fingers and toes.[76] After they had been thus sprinkled with water, the priest arose and removed the cloths from the heads of the children, and then cut off with a stone knife a certain bead that was attached to the head from childhood; they were then given by one of the assistants some flowers to smell, and a pipe through which they drew some smoke, after which they were each presented with a little food, and a vessel full of wine was brought as an offering to the gods, who were entreated to receive it as a thanksgiving from the boys; it was then handed to one of the officials, who had to drink it at one draught. A similar ceremony took place with the female children, at the conclusion of which their mothers divested them of a cord, which was worn during their childhood, fastened round the loins, having a small shell that hung in front. The removal of this signified that they could marry as soon as their parents permitted.[77] The children were then dismissed, and their fathers distributed presents among those who had assisted at the ceremony. A grand banquet, called *emku*, or 'the descent of god,' was then held, and during the nine succeeding days the fathers of the children fasted. and were not to approach their wives.[78]

[76] 'Esta agua hazian de ciertas flores y de cacao mojado y desleido con agua virgen que ellos dezian traida de los concavos de los arboles o de los montes.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 150.

[77] 'Los varoncillos usavanles siempre poner pegada a la cabeça en los cabellos de la coronilla una contezuela blanca, y a las muchachas traian ceñidas por las renes muy abaxo con un cordel delgado y en el una conchuela asida que les venia a dar encima de la parte honesta, y destas dos cosas era entre ellos peccado y cosa muy fea quitarla de las mochachas antes del baptismo.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 144, 146.

[78] Brasseur de Bourbourg says they feasted nine days: 'Tous ensemble,

Digitized by Google

The Nicaraguan husbands are said to have been so much under the control of their wives that they were obliged to do the housework while the women attended to the trading. The latter were, moreover, great shrews, and would on the slightest provocation drive their offending husbands out of the house; we are told that it was no unusual occurrence for the neighbors to be suddenly called in to appease some unfortunate man's Xanthippe.[79] The women of Yucatan were renowned for their modesty and conjugal faithfulness. Landa, one of the first bishops of Yucatan, relates an anecdote illustrating this trait. Alonso Lopez de Avila, during the war against Bacalar, took prisoner a very beautiful Indian girl. Struck by her beauty, the captor endeavored by all means to induce her to gratify his desires, but in vain. She had promised her warrior-husband, who during those perilous

prêtres et parents, festoyaient après cela, pendant neuf jours, les pères étant obligés, durant cet intervalle, de s'abstenir de leurs femmes.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 52. He appears to have misunderstood Cogolludo, to whom he refers, since that author's words are 'acabando la fiesta en banquetes, y en los nueve dias siguientes no auian de llegar à sus mugeres los padres de los niños.' *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 191. 'Allende de los tres dias que se avia, como por ayuno, abstenido, se avia de abstener nueve mas y lo hazian inviolablemente.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 154. See, further, *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., pp. 182–3; *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 205; *Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 272; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 44–5.

[79] *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 414; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., lib. v., cap. xii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 39, 61, 103; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 472; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263. In Guatemala 'il est à remarquer ici que quand il s'agit simultanément d'hommes et de femmes dans le discours, les femmes ont presque toujours la préséance sur les hommes.' 'C'est peut-être en mémoire de la mère de Hun-Ahpu que les femmes-chefs en bien des contrées devaient leurs prérogatives.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, pp. 93–4. In Yucatan, the women 'son zelosas y algunas tanto que ponian las manos a las de quien tenian zelos, y tan colericas, enojadas, aunque harto mansas, que solian dar buelta de pelo algunas a los maridos con hazerlo ellos pocas vezes.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 188, 190. The women of Yucatan had, however, their duties to perform. 'Son grandes travajadoras y vividoras, porque dellas cuelgan los mayores y mas trabajos de la sustentacion de sus casas y educacion de sus hijos, y paga de sus tributos y con todo esso sies menester llevan algunas vezes mayor carga, labrando y sembrando sus mantenimientos. Son a maravilla grangeras, velando de noche el rato que de servir sus casas les queda, yendo a los mercados a comprar y vender sus cosillas.' The women joined and aided one another in the work, as weaving, etc. 'Elles avaient leurs saillies et leurs bons mots pour railler et conter des aventures et par moment aussi pour murmurer de leurs maris.' *Id.*, p. 190.

Digitized by Google

times was constantly face to face with death, that none but he should ever call her wife; how, then, while perhaps he yet lived, could she become another's mistress? But such arguments did not quench the Spaniard's lust, and as she remained steadfast, he ordered her to be cast among the blood-hounds, who devoured her—a martyr at the hands of the men who pretended to preach Jesus Christ and him crucified.[80]

[80] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 186.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXII.

FEASTS AND AMUSEMENTS OF THE MAYAS.

SPECIAL OBSERVANCES—FIXED FEASTS—SACRIFICE OF SLAVES—MONTHLY FEASTS OF THE YUCATECS—RENEWAL OF THE IDOLS—FEAST OF THE CHACS—HUNTING FESTIVAL—THE TUPPKAK—FEAST OF THE CACAO-PLANTERS—WAR FEAST—THE MAYA NEW-YEAR'S DAY—FEASTS OF THE HUNTERS, FISHERS, AND APIARISTS—CEREMONIES IN HONOR OF CUKULCAN—FEAST OF THE MONTH OF MOL—FEAST OF THE YEARS KAN, MULUC, IX, AND CAUAC—YUCATEC SACRIFICES—THE PIT OF CHICHEN—SACRIFICES OF THE PIPILES—FEAST OF VICTORY—FEASTS AND SACRIFICES IN NICARAGUA—BANQUETS—DANCES—MUSICAL INSTRUMENTS—GAMES.

THOUGH the information concerning the feasts, religious and otherwise, of the Maya nations is not so full as that touching the Nahuas, yet there is no doubt that the former people were quite as fond of such matters as the latter.

The Quichés had many festivals and special observances, in some of which the whole people took part, while others were performed by private persons through excess of piety. They always made a sacrifice before commencing any work of importance. There were four special things for which they besought the gods; namely, long life, health, progeny, and the necessaries of life. They had particular oratories where they went upon occasions of great distress, and drew blood from several parts of their body. When they desired to have sons, they sacrificed at

Digitized by Google

fountains. They had oratories in thick groves, and if they found a spot where a large tree grew over a spring, they held the place to be divine, because two divinities met in the tree and in the pool.[1]

The religious feasts, in which all the people took part, were held on certain fixed days of the calendar. One of their most notable and solemn festivals was more a time of penance and vigil than of feasting. When the season of its celebration approached, the lord of a province with the principal men held a council and sent for a diviner, and advised with him concerning the day upon which the sacrifice should take place. The wise man at once began his sorceries, and cast lots in order to ascertain what day would be the most propitious. When the day was fixed, all men had from that time to sleep in houses apart from their wives during a period of sixty or eighty days, or even longer, according to the severity demanded. Upon each of these days every one had to offer sacrifice by drawing blood from his arms, thighs, tongue, and other parts of his body. This they did at certain hours of the day and night, and also burned incense. They could not bathe while the observances lasted. From the day when this lent began, the slaves who were to be sacrificed were allowed a certain freedom, and permitted to go about the town wheresoever they pleased. On the neck of each, however, was fastened a ring of gold, silver, or copper, through which a stick was passed, and as a further precaution against escape, each was accompanied by a guard of three or four men. They were at liberty to enter any house, whether it was that of the supreme lord or of the poorest man, and wherever they applied for food or drink it was given them. The same liberty was accorded to the guard. When the day of sacrifice arrived, the high-priest attired himself in his finest vestments. These con-

[1] 'Los universales sacrificios se ofrecian ordinariamente cuando venian las fiestas, las cuales habia en unas provincias cinco, y en otras seis, ó se ofrecian por necesidad particular, por uno de estos dos respectos.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 177; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxix.

Digitized by Google

sisted of certain cloaks, with crowns of gold, silver, or other metal, adorned with precious stones. The idols were placed upon a frame ornamented with gold, silver, and gems, and decked with roses and other flowers. The slaves were then brought in procession to the temple-yard amid songs, music, and dancing; and the idols were set upon altars, before which were the sacrificial stones. As the hour of sacrifice drew near, the supreme lord, and principal men with him, repaired to the room where the slaves were waiting; each then seized his slave by the hair and carried him before the god, crying with a loud voice: O God our Lord, remember thy servants, grant them health, offspring, and prosperity, so that they may increase and serve thee. Give us rain, O Lord, and seasonable weather to support us, that we may live, hearken to our prayers, aid us against our enemies, give us comfort and rest. On reaching the altar the sacrificing priest stood ready, and the lord placed the victim in his hands. He then, with his ministers, opened the breast with the sacrificial knife, tore out the heart and offered it to the idol, at the same time anointing it with the blood. Each idol had its holy table; the Sun, the Moon, the East, the West, the North, and the South had each one. The heads of the sacrificed were put on stakes. The flesh was seasoned, cooked, and partaken of as a holy thing. The high-priest and supreme lord were given the hands and feet, as the most delicate morsels, and the body was distributed among the other priests. All through the days of the sacrificing great liberty was permitted to the people, grand banquets were held, and drunken revels ensued.[2]

[2] 'Aquel dia era libertado para hacer grandes banquetes y borracheras, y así se mataban infinitas aves, mucha caza y vinos muy diferentes, hacian muchas danzas y bailes en presencia de los ídolos. Duraban aquestas fiestas, tres, cinco y siete dias, segun lo que ordenaban los ministros, y lo decian cuando habian de comenzar. En estos dias, en cada tarde andaban en procesion con grandes cantos y músicas, llevando al ídole por las calles y plazas, y donde habia lugar preeminente, hacian altares y ponian mesas, y allí paraban, y como nosotros representamos farsas, así ellos jugaban á la

Digitized by Google

Concerning the religious feasts and observances of the Yucatecs, Landa is the best and most complete authority, and I will therefore take from his work such scattered notices as he gives.

In the month of Chen they worked in fear and trembling, making new idols. And when these were finished, those for whom they were made gave presents of the best they had to those who had modelled and carved them. The idols were then carried from the building in which they had been made to a cabin made of leaves, where the priest blessed them with much solemnity and many fervent prayers, the artists having previously cleansed themselves from the grease with which they had been besmeared, as a sign of fasting, during the entire time that they remained at work. Having then driven out the evil spirit, and burned the sacred incense, the newly made images were placed in a basket, enveloped in a linen cloth, and delivered to their owners, who received them with every mark of respect and devotion. The priest then addressed the idol-makers for a few moments on the excellence and importance of their profession, and on the danger they would incur by neglecting the rules of abstinence while doing such sacred work. Finally, all partook of an abundant repast, and made amends for their long fast by indulging freely in wine.

In one of the two months called Chen and Yax, on a day determined by the priest, they celebrated a feast called *ocna*, which means the renovation of the temple in honor of the Chacs, whom they regarded as the gods of the fields. During this festival, they consulted the oracle of the Bacabs.[2] This feast was celebrated every year. Besides this, the idols of baked clay and the braziers were renewed at this season, because it was customary for each idol to have its own little brazier, in which incense was burned before it;

pelota delante de sus dioses.' *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 187; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxvii.

[2] The manner in which this was done will be described elsewhere in this chapter.

Digitized by Google

and if it was necessary, they built the god a new dwelling, or renovated the old one, taking care to place on the walls an inscription commemorating these things, in the characters peculiar to them.

In the month of Zac, on the day appointed by the priest, the hunters held a feast similar to that which, as we shall presently see, took place in the month of Zip. This was for the purpose of averting the anger of the gods from them and the seed they had sown, because of the blood which had been shed in the chase; for they regarded as abominable all spilling of blood, except in sacrifice.[4] They never went out to hunt without first invoking their gods and burning incense before them; and on their return from a successful hunt they always anointed the grim visages of the idols with the blood of the game. On another day of this month a great feast was held, which lasted for three days, attended with incense-burning, sacrifices, and general orgies. But as this was a movable feast, the priests took care to give notice of it in advance, in order that all might observe a becoming fast.

During the month of Mac, the old people celebrated a feast in honor of the Chacs, gods of the cornfields, and of another deity named Yzamna. Some days before this the following ceremony, called in their language *tuppkak*,[5] was observed. Having brought together all the reptiles and beasts of the field that could be procured in the country, they assembled with them in the court of the temple, in the corners of which were the chacs and the priests, to drive away the evil spirit, each having by his side a jug filled with water. Standing on end, in the centre, was an enormous bundle of dry and fine wood, which was set on fire after some incense had been burned. As the

[4] 'Ce qui, d'accord avec divers autres indices, annoncerait bien que l'effusion du sang, et surtout du sang humain, dans les sacrifices, était d'origine étrangère, nahuatl probablement.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 247.

[5] Meaning 'quenching of fire.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 254. Yzamna is otherwise callee Zamná.

Digitized by Google

wood burned, the assembled crowd vied with each other in tearing out the hearts of the victims they had brought with them and casting them into the flames. If it had been impossible to procure such large game as jaguars, pumas, or alligators, they typified the hearts of these animals by incense, which they threw into the fire; but if they had them, they were immolated like the rest. As soon as all the hearts were consumed, the chacs[6] put out the fire with the water contained in their pitchers. The object of this feast and of that which followed was to obtain an abundance of water for their cornfields during the year. This feast was celebrated in a different manner from others, because no one fasted before it, with the exception of the beadle (muñidor) of the occasion. On the day of the feast called tuppkak, the people and the priests met once more in the courtyard of the temple, where was erected a platform of stone, with steps leading up to it, the whole tastefully decorated with foliage. The priest gave some incense to the beadle, who burned in a brazier enough to exorcise the evil spirit. This done, the first step of the platform was with great solemnity smeared with mud taken from a well or cistern; the other steps were stained a blue color. As usual, they ended these ceremonies by eating and drinking and making merry, full of confidence in the efficacy of their rites and ceremonies for this year.

In the month of Muan, the cacao planters held a festival in honor of the gods Ekchuah, Chac, and Hobnil, who were their patron deities.[7] To solemnize it, they all went to the plantation of one of their number, where they sacrificed a dog having a spot on its skin of the color of cacao. They burned incense

[6] This word *chacs*, which before was interpreted as the 'gods of the cornfields,' probably here means the priests of those deities. In a former chapter, we have seen the word applied to those who assisted at the rite of baptism.

[7] '*Ekchuah*, écrit ailleurs *Echuah*, était le patron des marchands et naturellement des cacaos, marchandise et monnaie à la fois.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 261.

Digitized by Google

to their idols, and made offerings of blue iguanas, feathers of a particular kind of bird, and game

After this they gave to each of the officials[8] a branch of the cacao plant. The sacrifice being ended, they all sat down to a repast, at which, it is said, no one was allowed to drink more than three glasses of wine. All then went into the house of him who had given the feast, and passed the time pleasantly together.

In the month of Pax a feast was held, called Pacumchac, which was celebrated by the nobles and priests of the villages, together with those of the great towns. Having assembled, they passed five nights in the temple of Cit Chac Coh,[9] praying and offering incense. At the beginning of these five days, they went all together to the house of the general of their armies, whose title was Nacon, and carried him in state to the temple, where, having placed him on a seat, they burned incense before him as though he had been a god. But though they prayed during these five nights, they did not by any means fast in the daytime, but ate and drank plentifully, and executed a kind of grand war-dance, which they called *holkan okot*, which is to say, 'dance of the warriors.' The five days being passed, the real business of the feast began, which, as it concerned matters of war and victory, was a very solemn affair. It was commenced with ceremonies and sacrifices similar to those already described as taking place in the month of Mac. Then the evil spirit was expelled in the usual manner, after which were more prayers, offerings, and incensing. While all this was going on, the nobles once more took the Nacon upon their shoulders, and carried him in procession round the temple. On their return a dog was sacrificed, its

[8] 'Officiales;' this may mean officiating priests, or overseers on the plantations, or almost anything else.

[9] '*Cit* paraît être une sorte de cochon sauvage; *chac* est le nom générique des dieux de la pluie, des campagnes, des fruits de la terre, etc. *Coh* est le puma ou lion américain; suivant d'autres, *chac-coh* est le léopard.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 265.

Digitized by Google

heart being torn out and presented to the idol between two dishes. Every one present then shattered a large jug filled with some beverage, which completed this part of the festival. The usual banquet followed, after which the Nacon was again placed upon the shoulders of the nobles and carried to his house.

There, the nobles and priests partook of a grand banquet, at which all got drunk, except the Nacon; the people meanwhile returning to their homes. On the morrow, having slept off the effects of the wine, the guests of the Nacon received from him large presents of incense which had been previously blessed. He also took advantage of this opportunity to deliver a long discourse, in which he recommended his hearers to observe scrupulously in both town and country the feasts of the gods, in order to obtain a prosperous and abundant year. As soon as the Nacon had finished speaking, there was a general and noisy leave-taking, and the guests separated, and set out for their respective homes. There they occupied themselves in celebrating the festivals proper to the season, keeping them up sometimes to the month of Pop. These feasts were called Zabacilthan, and were observed as follows: The people of each place or district sought among the richest of their number for some who were willing to defray the expenses of the celebration, and recommended them to take the matter into consideration, because it was customary to make merry during the three last months of the year. This having been settled, all met in the house of one of these prominent men, after having driven away the evil spirit as usual. Copal was burned, offerings were made, and the wine cup, which seems to have been the chief attraction on these occasions, was not neglected. And all through these three months, the excesses in which the people indulged were pitiful to see; cuts, bruises, and eyes inflamed with drink were plentiful amongst them; to gratify their passion for drink they cast themselves away.

Digitized by Google

During the last five days of the month of Cumhu, which were the last days of the year, the people seldom went out of their houses, except to place offerings in the temples, with which the priests bought incense to be burned in honor of the gods. They neither combed their hair nor washed themselves during these five days; neither men nor women cleansed themselves; they did no work of any kind lest some misfortune should befall them.

The first day of the month of Pop, the Maya New-Year's Day, was a season of rejoicing, in which all the nation took part. To give more importance to the event, they renewed at this time all the articles which they used, such as plates, cups, baskets, clothes, and the dresses of the idols; they swept their houses and cast everything into the place where they put their rubbish; and no one dared to touch what was cast away, even though greatly in need of it. To prepare for this feast, princes, priests, and nobles, and all who wished to show their devotion, fasted and abstained from their wives for a longer or shorter period, some for three months preceding it, some for two, according to their ideas of propriety, but none for less than thirteen days. During this season of abstinence, they ate their meat unseasoned, which was considered severe discipline. At this time, also, they elected the officers who were to assist the priest at the ceremony. The priest prepared a number of little balls of fresh incense on small boards made for the purpose, for those who fasted to burn before the idols. Great care was taken not to break the fast after it had been once commenced; for if this were done, it was thought that misfortune must inevitably ensue.

New-Year's Day having arrived, all the men assembled in the court-yard of the temple. Women could assist at no feast which was celebrated within the temple, except those who went to take part in particular dances; on other occasions, however, the women were allowed to be present. On the day in

Digitized by Google

question, the men came alone, adorned with paint, and cleansed from the grease with which they had been bedaubed during the days of penance. When all were assembled, with offerings of food and newly fermented wine, the priest purified the temple and seated himself in the centre of the court, clothed in his robes of office, and having by his side a brazier and the balls of incense before mentioned. After the evil spirit had been expelled, all present offered up prayers, while the assistants kindled the new fire for the year. The priest now cast one of the balls of incense into the brazier, and then distributed the remainder among the assembled worshippers. The nobles came first in the order of their rank, and as each received a ball from the priest, who gave it with great solemnity, he dropped it gently into the brazier and stood still until it was consumed. The inevitable banquet and orgies terminated the ceremonies. This was the manner in which they celebrated the birth of the new year. During the month, some of the most devout among them repeated the feast in their own homes, and this was particularly done by the nobles and priests, who were ever foremost in religious observances.

During the month of Uo, the priests and sorcerers began to prepare for a festival called *pocam*, which was solemnized by the hunters and fishers on the seventh day of the next month, which was Zip. Having assembled, clothed in their ornaments, at the house of the prince, they expelled the evil spirit, and then uncovered their books and exposed them upon a carpet of green leaves and branches, which had been prepared for this purpose. They next invoked with reverence a deity named Cinchau Yzamna, who had been, they said, the first priest.[10] To him they offered

[10] '*Cinchau-Yzamná* este une orthographe erroné, si l'on en juge après les leçons précédentes; c'est probablement une mauvaise abréviation de *Kinich-Ahau-Ytzamná*, donné, d'ailleurs, comme l'inventeur des lettres et de l'écriture, l'auteur de tous les noms imposés au Yucatan.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 284–5.

Digitized by Google

various gifts, and burned balls of incense in his honor. In the mean time, others took a vessel and a little verdigris with some pure water, which had to be procured from a wood into whose recesses no woman had ever penetrated. They now cleaned the leaves of their books by moistening them; this done, the wisest among them opened a volume and examined the prospects of the coming year, which he declared aloud to all present. He concluded with a brief discourse, in which he advised them how to avoid coming evils. Jollity now reigned and the wine flowed freely—a consummation which many of the old priest's hearers had doubtless been long looking forward to impatiently. The solemnities on this occasion were varied at times by performing a dance called *okot uil.*

On the following day, the doctors and sorcerers with their wives came together in the house of one of their number. The priests, having driven away the evil spirit, brought to view their medicine-bags, in which they kept a number of charms, some little images of Ixchel, goddess of medicine, from whom the feast was named *ihcil ixchel*, and some small stones called *am*, which they used in their sorceries. Then with great devotion, the doctors and sorcerers invoked the gods of medicine, Yzamna, Citbolontum, and Ahau Chamahez, while the priests burned incense, and the assistants painted themselves blue, the color of the books used by the priests. Bearing their medicine-bags in their hands, they then joined in a dance called *chantunyab*, after which the men seated themselves in a row on one side, and the women on the other; a day was appointed for holding the feast during the ensuing year, and then the usual drunken orgies commenced. It is said that the priests abstained from wine on this occasion, perhaps because the women were present; but they took their share, nevertheless, and reserved it for a more private opportunity.

On another occasion the hunters, with their wives,

Digitized by Google

assembled in the house of one of their number, and performed there certain ceremonies. The first proceeding was, of course, to expel the evil influence; then the priests, who were never absent from these meetings, placed in the middle of the room some incense, a brazier, and some blue coloring material. Next, the huntsmen prayed with great devotion to the gods of the chase, Acanum, Zuhuy Zipi, Tabai, and others, and cast incense into the brazier. While this was burning, each took an arrow and a deer's head, which the priest's assistants had painted blue; thus equipped, some danced, holding hands; others pierced their ears or their tongue, and passed through the holes which they made seven leaves of an herb called *ac*. Then priests and their assistants made offerings to the gods and joined in the dance. Finally, the festivities closed by all present becoming, to quote the words of Bishop Landa, 'as drunk as baskets.'

The next day it was the turn of the fishermen to celebrate a feast, which they did in the same manner as the hunters, except that instead of a deer's head, they smeared their fishing implements with color; neither did they pierce their ears, but cut round about them, and after doing this they executed a dance called *chohom*. Then they consecrated a large tree, which they left standing. After the feast had been duly celebrated in the towns, it was customary for the nobles and many of the people to go down to the coast on a grand fishing expedition. The patron divinities of the fishermen were Ahkak Nexoi, Ahpua, Ahcitz, and Amalcum.[11]

[11] 'C'étaient là sans doute les dieux de la pêche, à propos desquels Cogolludo dit les paroles suivantes: "On dit aussi que bien après la conquête, les Indiens de la province de Titz imin, quand ils allaient pêcher le long de la côte de Choáca, avant de se mettre à la pêche, commençaient par des sacrifices et des oblations à leurs faux dieux, leur offrant des chandelles, des réaux d'argent et des *cuzcas*, qui sont leurs émeraudes, et d'autres pierres précieuses, en certain endroits, au *ku* et oratoires qui se voient encore dans les bras de mer (estuaires) et les lagunes salées qu'il y a sur cette côte vers le *Rio de Lagartos*."' (*Hist. Yuc.*, lib. iv., cap. iv.); *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 292–3.

Digitized by Google

In the month of Tzoz, the apiarists prepared for a feast which was to take place in the next month, called Tzec, by a fast, which was, however, optional with all except the priests who were to officiate, and their assistants. The day of celebration having arrived, the participants came together in the house of him who gave the feast, and performed nearly the same ceremonies as the hunters and fishermen, except that they drew no blood from their bodies. The apiarists had for their patron deities the Bacabs, and particularly Hobnil. They made many propitiatory offerings at this time, especially to the four gods of abundance, to whom they presented four dishes adorned with figures of honey The usual drunken bout was not omitted.

After the mysterious departure of Cukulcan,[12] the Maya Quetzalcoatl, from Yucatan, the people, convinced that he had gone to the abode of the gods, deified him, and built temples and instituted feasts in his honor. These latter were scrupulously observed throughout the entire country up to the time of the destruction of Mayapan; but after that event they were neglected by all the provinces but that of Mani.[13] In remembrance, however, of the respect shown of old to Cukulcan, these provinces sent annually, by turn, to Mani four or five magnificent feather banners, which were used in the ceremonies there. On the sixteenth day of the month of Xul, all the nobles and priests of Mani, being prepared by fast and penance

[12] '*Cuculcan*, écrit quelquefois *Kukulcan*, vient de *kuk*, oiseau qui paraît être le même que le quetzal; son déterminatif est *kukul* qui uni à *can*, serpent, fait exactement le même mot que *Quetzal Cohuatl*, serpent aux plumes vertes, ou de Quetzal.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa*, *Relacion*, p. 35.

[13] 'La province de Mani avait été colonisée par les Tutul-Xius, dont l'origine était toltèque ou nahuatl; les fêtes de Kukulcan se bornant à cette province après la destruction de Mayapan, ne laissent point de doute sur l'origine de ce personnage, et donnent lieu de penser que le reste du Yucatan, tout en vénérant jusqu'à un certain point ce mythe ou ce prophète, avait gardé au fond la religion qui avait précédé celle des Toltèques. Ce serait un point d'histoire d'une grande importance au point de vue philosophique. Nous trouverons plus loin d'autres indices du culte primitif des Mayas.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa*, *Relacion*, pp. 300–1.

Digitized by Google

for the occasion, came together, and with them came a considerable multitude of people. In the evening all set out in procession from the house of the lord, and, accompanied by a large number of professional actors, proceeded slowly toward the temple of Cukulcan, which had already been decorated in a suitable manner. Upon arriving they placed the banners on high in the temple, offered prayers, and going into the court-yard spread out their idols upon green leaves and branches; then they burned incense in many places, and made offerings of meat cooked without pepper or salt, bean soup, and calabashes. After this, those who had observed the fast did not go home, but passed five days and five nights in the temple, praying, burning copal, and executing sacred dances. During this time the actors went from one house to another, representing their plays and receiving gifts from those whom they entertained. At the end of the five days, they carried all their earnings to the temple and distributed them among the watchers there. Afterward, all returned to the prince's palace, taking with them the banners and the idols. Thence each betook himself to his home. They said, and confidently believed, that Cukulcan descended from heaven on the last day of the feast and received personally the gifts which were presented to him. This festival was called *chic kaban.*

During the month of Yaxkin, it was the custom to prepare for a general festival, called *olohzabkamyax,* held in the month of Mol, in honor of all the gods. At this feast, after the usual preliminary rites, they smeared with blue coloring matter the instruments used in every profession, from the sacred implements of the priests to the distaffs of the women, and even the doors of their houses. Children of both sexes were daubed in the same manner, but instead of coloring their hands, they gave them each nine gentle raps on the knuckles. The little girls were brought to the feast by an old woman, who for that reason

Digitized by Google

was called *ixmol*, conductress. The blows were given to the children in order that they might become skilled workmen in the profession of their fathers or mothers. The usual conclusion ensued.

During the month of Mol, the apiarists had another festival similar to that of the month of Tzec, in order to induce their patron gods to cause the flowers to grow, from which the bees gathered honey.

The Mayas depended so much upon the produce of the soil for their sustenance that a failure of the crops was one of the heaviest misfortunes that could fall upon them. To avoid this they made four idols, named Chichac Chob, Ek Balam Chac, Ahcan Uolcab, and Ahbuluc Balam.[14] Having placed them in the temple, and, according to custom, burned incense before them, they presented them with two pellets of a kind of resin called *kik*, some iguanas, some bread, a mitre, a bouquet of flowers, and a stone upon which they set great value. Besides this, they erected a great wooden arch in the court, which they filled with wood, taking care to leave openings through which to pass backwards and forwards. The greater part of the men then took each a long stick of dry wood, and while a musician mounted on the top of the pile sang and beat a drum, all danced reverently and in good order, as they did so passing in and out the wood-pile. This they kept up until evening, when, leaving their sticks behind them, they went home to eat and rest. During the night they returned, and each taking his faggot, lit it and applied it to the pile, which burned fiercely and rapidly.[15] As soon as the heap was reduced to red-hot ashes, those who had danced gathered

[14] '*Ek-balam-chac* signifie tigre noir dieu des champs: ce sont du reste des noms donnés au tigre encore aujourd'hui. *Ahcan* est le serpent mâle en général. *Ahbuluc-Balam* signifie Celui des onze tigres.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 230–1.

[15] 'Ne croirait-on pas lire la description de cette fête des Scythes, rapportée par Hérodote, et que M. Viollet-Leduc a insérée dans ses *Antiquités mexicaines*, formant l'introduction de l'ouvrage de M. Désiré Charnay: *Cités et Ruines américaines*, page 16?' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 232–3.

Digitized by Google

about it, and passed barefooted over the coals, some without injury, and some with; this they believed would avert misfortune and appease the anger of the gods.[16]

It was customary in all the towns of Yucatan to erect at the limits of each of the four quarters, east, west, north, and south, two heaps of stones, facing each other, and intended to be used during the celebration of two solemn festivals, which were as follows: In the year of which the dominical letter was *kan*, the sign was *hobnil*, and according to the Yucatecs, these both ruled in the south. They made this year, of baked earth, an idol which they called Kanu Uayeyab, and having made it, they carried it out to the heaps of stones which lay toward the south. They then selected a principal man of the place, and in his house they celebrated the feast. For this purpose they made another image, of the god Bolon Zacab,[17] and placed it in the chosen house, in a prominent place, so that all who arrived might see it. This done, the nobles, priests, and people came together, and set out by a road swept clean, ornamented with arches, and strewed with foliage, to the southern heaps of stones, where they gathered about the idol Kanu Uayeyab. The priest then incensed the god with forty-nine grains of maize, ground up and mixed with copal; the nobles next placed incense in the brazier, and burned it before the idol. The incense burned by the priest was called *zacah*, that used by the nobles, *chahalté*. When these rites were completed, the head of a fowl was cut off and offered to the idol, which was now placed on a litter called *kanté*,[18] and upon its shoulders were placed other little images, as signs of abundance of water and a good

[16] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 230–2.

[17] '*Bolon* est l'adjectif numéral neuf, *zacab*, dont la racine est *zac*, blanc, est le nom d'une sorte de maïs moulu, dont on fait une espèce d'orgeat. Cette statue était-elle une image allégorique de cet orgeat offert en cette occasion?' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 212–13.

[18] '*Kanté*, bois jaune; c'est probablement le cèdre.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 213.

Digitized by Google

year, and these images were frightful to behold. Amid dances and general rejoicing the idol was carried toward the house where the statue of Bolon Zacab had been placed, and while the procession was on the road, the nobles and priests partook of a beverage made from four hundred and fifteen grains of roasted maize, which they called *picula kakla*. Arrived at their destination, they placed the image that they carried opposite the idol which they found there, and made many offerings of food and drink, which were afterward divided among the strangers who were present, the officiating priest receiving only the leg of a deer. Some of the devotees drew blood from their bodies, scarified their ears, and anointed with the blood a stone idol named Kanal Acantun. They modelled a heart of dough of maize and of calabash-seeds, and offered it to the idol Kanu Uayeyab. And in this manner they honored both the idols during the entire time of the feast, burning before them incense of copal and ground maize, for they held it certain that misfortune would overwhelm them if they neglected these rites. Finally, the statue of Bolon Zacab was carried to the temple, and the other image to the western entrance of the town, where it remained until the next celebration of the feast.

The ceremonies of the new year, under the sign of *muluc*, were very similar to those just described, though held in honor of other deities. A dance performed upon a high scaffolding, attended with sacrifices of turkeys; another executed by the old people, holding little baked-clay images of dogs in their hands; and the sacrifice of a peculiarly marked dog—were, however, additional features. The same may be said of the new year under the sign of *yx*, and of the new year under the sign of *cauac*, when the rites which were performed were sufficiently like those which have gone before to need no further description.[19]

[19] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 210–32.

Digitized by Google

The gods of the Yucatecs required far fewer human lives at the hands of their worshippers than those of the Nahuas. The pages of Yucatec history are not marred by the constant blood-blots that obscure the Nahua record. An event which in Mexico would be the death-signal to a hecatomb of human victims would in Yucatan be celebrated by the death of a spotted dog. The office of sacrificer, which in Mexico was one of the highest honors to which a priest could attain, was in Yucatan regarded as unclean and degrading.[20] Nevertheless, the Yucatec religion was not free from human sacrifice, and although captives taken in war were used for this purpose, yet it is said that such was their devotion that should a victim be wanting they would dedicate their children to the altar rather than let the gods be deprived of their due.[21] But it seldom happened that more than one victim was sacrificed at a time, at least in earlier days, and even then he was not butchered as by the Nahuas, but was shot through the heart with arrows before being laid upon the sacrificial stone.[22]

At Chichen Itza, human sacrifices were made in a peculiar manner. In the centre of the city was an immense pit containing water, and surrounded on all sides by a dense grove, which served to render the spot silent and solitary, in spite of its position. A circular staircase, rudely cut in the rock, descended to the edge of the water from the foot of an altar which stood upon the very brink of the pit.[23] At first, only

[20] 'La charge de *Nacon* était double: l'un était perpétuel et peu honorable, parce que c'était lui qui ouvrait la poitrine aux victimes humaines qu'on sacrifiait.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 161. 'El oficio de abrir el pecho a los sacrificados, que en Mexico era estimado, aqui era poco honroso.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[21] *Ib.*

[22] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 166; *Herrera*, ubi sup.

[23] The present appearance of the pit is thus described by Stephens: 'Setting out from the Castillo, at some distance we ascended a wooded elevation, which seemed an artificial causeway leading to the senote. The senote was the largest and wildest we had seen; in the midst of a thick forest, an immense circular hole, with cragged, perpendicular sides, trees growing out of them and overhanging the brink, and still as if the genius of silence reigned within. A hawk was sailing around it, looking down into the

Digitized by Google

animals and incense were offered here, as the teachings of Cukulcan forbade the sacrifice of human victims, but after the departure of the great Maya apostle the Yucatecs returned to the evil of their ways,[24] and the pit of Chichen was once more polluted with human bodies. At first one victim sufficed, but the number gradually increased, until, during the later years of Maya independence, hundreds were immolated at a time. If some calamity threatened the country, if the crops failed or the requisite supply of rain was wanting, the people hastened to the pit of horror, to offer prayers and to appease the wrath of the gods with gifts of human life. On the day of sacrifice, the victims, who were generally young virgins, were taken to the temple, clothed in the garments appropriate to the occasion, and conducted thence to the sacred pit, accompanied by a multitude of priests and priestesses of all ranks. There, while the incense burned on the altar and in the braziers, the officiating priest explained to them the things for which they were to implore the gods into whose presence they were about to be introduced. A long cord was then fastened round the body of each victim, and the moment the smoke ceased to rise from the altar, all were hurled into the gulf. The crowd, which had gathered from every part of the country to see the sacrifice, immediately drew back from the brink of the pit and continued to pray without cessation for some time. The bodies were then drawn up and buried in the neighboring grove.[25]

water, but without once flapping its wings. The water was of a greenish hue. A mysterious influence seemed to pervade it, in unison with the historical account that the well of Chichen was a place of pilgrimage, and that human victims were thrown into it in sacrifice. In one place, on the very brink, were the remains of a stone structure, probably connected with ancient superstitious rites; perhaps the place from which the victims were thrown into the dark well beneath.' *Yucatan*, vol. ii., p. 324.

[24] We have seen that even the memory of Cukulcan was neglected in all the provinces of Yucatan but one.

[25] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. i.; *Medel*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 43; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 44–5.

Digitized by Google

The Pipiles had two idols, one in the figure of a man, called Quetzalcoatl, the other in the shape of a woman, called Itzqueye. Certain days of their calendar were specially set apart for each of the deities, and on these the sacrifices were made. Two very solemn sacrifices were held in each year, one at the commencement of summer, the other at the beginning of winter. At these, Herrera says, only the lords were present.[26] The sacrifice was made in the interior of the temple, and the victims were boys between the ages of six and twelve years, bastards, born among themselves. For a day and a night previous to the sacrifice, drums and trumpets were sounded, and on the day following the people assembled. Four priests then came out from the temple, each bearing a small brazier with burning incense; together they turned in the direction of the sun, and kneeling down offered up incense and prayers; they then did the same toward the four cardinal points.[27] Their prayers finished, they retired within four small chapels built at the four corners of the temple, and there rested. They next went to the house of the high-priest, and took thence the boy who was to be sacrificed and conducted him four times around the court of the temple, dancing and singing. When this ceremony was finished, the high-priest came out of his house, with the diviner and guardian of the sanctuary, and ascended the steps of the temple, with the cacique and principal men, who, however, remained at the door of the sanctuary. The four priests now seized the boy by the arms and legs, and the guardian of the temple, coming out with little bells on his wrists and ankles, opened the left breast of the victim, tore out the heart, and handed it to the high-priest, who placed it in a small embroidered purse which he carried. The four priests received

[26] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.

[27] 'Ivanse derechos todos quatro juntos á do sale el sol, i se hincavan de rodillas ante el, i le zaumavan diciendo palabras é invocaciones, i esto fecho se dividian hacia quatro partes, lest, oest, norte, sur, i predicavan sus rictes i ceremonias.' *Palacio, Carta*, p. 68.

Digitized by Google

the blood of the victim in four jicaras, or bowls, made from the shell of a certain fruit, and descending one after the other to the court-yard, sprinkled the blood with their right hands in the direction of the cardinal points. If any blood remained over, they returned it to the high-priest, who placed it with the purse containing the heart in the body of the victim through the wound that had been made, and the body was interred in the temple. This was the ceremony of sacrifice at the beginning of each of the two seasons.

When information was received from their war chief that he had gained a victory, the diviner ascertained to which of the gods sacrifice was to be made. If to Quetzalcoatl, the ceremony lasted fifteen days; if to Itzqueye, five days; and upon each day they sacrificed a prisoner. These sacrifices were made as follows: All those who had been in the battle returned home in procession, singing and dancing, bringing with them the captives who were to be sacrificed, their wrists and ankles decorated with feathers and chalchiuites, and their necks with strings of cacao-nibs. The high-priests and other ministers went out at the head of the populace to meet them with music and dancing, and the caciques and captains delivered over those who were to be sacrificed to the high-priest. Then they all went together to the court-yard of their *teupa*, or temple, where they continued dancing day and night during the time the sacrifices lasted In the middle of the court was a stone bench on which the victim was stretched, four priests holding him by the feet and hands. The sacrificing priest then came forward, adorned with many feathers and loaded with little bells, holding in his hand a flint knife, with which he opened the breast of the victim, tore out the heart, brandished it toward the cardinal points, and finally threw it into the air with sufficient force to cause it to fall directly in the middle of the court, saying: "Receive, O God, this thank-offering for the

Digitized by Google

victory."[28] This sacrifice was public and beheld by all the people. The men drew blood from their private parts, and the women from their ears, tongue, and other parts of the body; as the blood flowed it was taken up with cotton and offered by the men to Quetzalcoatl, by the women to Itzqueye.

When the Pipiles were about to undertake any hunting or fishing expedition, they first made an offering to their gods. For this purpose they took a living deer,[29] and leading it to the temple-yard, they there strangled and afterward flayed it, saving the blood in a vessel. The liver, lungs, and stomach were chopped in small pieces, which were afterward laid aside with the heart, head, and feet. The remainder of the deer was cooked by itself, and the blood likewise, and while this was being done the people danced. The high-priest with his assistant next took the head by the ears, and each of the four priests one of the feet, while the guardian of the sanctuary put the heart into a brazier and burned it with copal and ulli to the god who was the protector of hunting. After the dance, the head and feet were scorched in the fire before the idol and given to the high-priest to be eaten. The flesh and blood were eaten by the other ministers of the temple before the idol, and the same was done with other animals sacrificed. The entrails of fish were burned before the idol.[30]

Among the civilized nations of Nicaragua, it would appear there were eighteen distinct festivals, corresponding with the eighteen months in their calendar.[31]

[28] 'Yua el sacristan y sacauale con la nauaja el coraçon, y arrojauale al dios, o a la diosa, y dezia, Toma el fruto desta vitoria.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.

[29] Brasseur de Bourbourg says 'cerf blanc.' *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 557.

[30] 'Le sacrifice du cerf blanc, d'abord un des plus augustes, devint, plus tard, l'offrande commune et exclusive des chasseurs qui désiraient se rendre favorables les dieux protecteurs de la chasse et des forêts.' *Id.*, p. 557; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 74–6.

[31] 'Echauan las fiestas que eran diez y ocho, como los meses subidos en el gradario, o sacrificadoro que tenian los patios de los templos.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii. In the evidence taken by Fray Françisco de Bobadilla, the number of festivals is given as twenty-one and eleven; I

Digitized by Google

These were proclaimed by the priest, holding the instrument of sacrifice in his hand, from the steps leading to the sacrificial altar in the court of the temple. He made known who and how many were to be sacrificed, and whether they were to be prisoners taken in battle or individuals reared among themselves for the purpose.[32] When the victim was stretched upon the stone, the officiating priest walked three times round him, singing in a doleful tone; he then opened the victim's breast, plucked out his heart, and daubed his face with the blood. He next dismembered the body and gave the heart to the high-priest, the feet and hands to the king, the thighs to him who had captured him, the entrails to the trumpeters, and the remainder to the people, that all might eat.[33] The heads of those sacrificed were set as trophies on trees appointed for the purpose.[34] If the person sacrificed had been bought, they buried the entrails, hands, and feet in a gourd, and burned the heart and all the rest.[35] As it was lawful for a father to sell his own children, and each person himself, they therefore did not eat the flesh of such sacrifices, because they were their own countrymen and relations.

must therefore leave the reader to decide for himself which is correct. 'Y. —En un año tenemos veynte é un dias de fiestas (é no juntos estos dias). ....F.—En el tiempo de aquellas onçe fiestas, que deçis que teneys cada año.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 47, 52.

[32] 'For there are two kindes of humane sacrifices with them: the one, of enemies taken in the warres, the other of such as are brought vp and maintained at home.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. vi.

[33] 'And whosoeuer should haue no parte nor portion of the sacrificed enemie, would thinke he shoulde bee ill accepted that yeere.' *Ib.*

[34] 'Euery King nourisheth his appointed trees in a fielde neere vnto him, obseruing the names of euery hostile country, where they hange the heads of their sacrificed enemies taken in the warres.' *Ib.*

[35] Herrera gives a similar account of the disposal of the body, but adds: 'Saluo que ponian la cabeça en los arboles.' *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii. I think it improbable that the heads were treated in the same manner as those of their enemies. Peter Martyr says nothing distinctly of the disposal of the head, but speaking of the sacrifice, says: 'They reuerence all parts thereof, and partly bury them beefore the dores of their temples, as the feete, handes, and bowels, which they cast together into a gourde, the rest (together with the hartes, making a great fire within the view of those hostile trees, with shril hyms, and applauses of the Priestes) they burne among the ashes of the former sacrifices, neuer thence remooued, lying in that fielde.' Dec. vi., lib. vi.

Digitized by Google

When they ate the flesh of foreigners sacrificed, they held exciting dances, and passed the days in drunken revels and smoking, but had no sexual intercourse with their wives while the festival lasted.[36] At certain feasts they offered blood drawn from their own bodies, with which they rubbed the beard and lips of the idol.

The priests wore white cotton cloaks, some short and small, others hung from the shoulders to the heels, with bands having bags attached, in which they carried sharp stone knives, papers, ground charcoal, and certain herbs. The lay brothers bore in their hands little flags with the idol they held most in veneration painted thereon, and small purses containing powder and awls; the youths had bows and arrows, darts and shields. The idol, in form and appearance very frightful, was set upon a spear and carried by the eldest priest. The ascetics marched in file, singing, to the place of worship. They spread mantles and strewed roses and flowers, that the standards might not touch the ground. The procession halted; the singing ceased; they fell to prayer. The prelate clapped his hands; some drew blood from the tongue, others from the ears, from the privy member, or from whatever part their devotion led them. They took the blood on paper or on their fingers and smeared the idol's face. In the mean time the youths danced, leaped about, and shook their weapons. Those who had gashed themselves cured their wounds by an application of powdered charcoal and herbs that they carried for the purpose. In these observances they sprinkled maize with the blood from their privy parts, and it was distributed and eaten as blessed bread.[37]

[36] 'En aquellas fiestas no trabaxamos ni entendemos en más de emborracharnos; peró no dormimos con nuestras mugeres, é aquellos dias, por quitar la ocasion, duermen ellas dentro en casa é nosotros fuera della: é al que en tales dias se echa con su muger, nuestros dioses les dan dolencia luego, de que mueren; é por esso ninguno lo osa haçer, porque aquellos dias son dedicados á nuestros dioses.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 52.

[37] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. vi., vii; *Squier*, in *Palacio, Carta*, p. 116.

Digitized by Google

Like the Mexicans, the Mayas had a great predilection for entertaining each other at banquets, and it is related of them that they often spent on one such occasion a sum that it had taken them many months to earn. Seasons of betrothal and marriage were always enlivened by sumptuous feasts. Whenever any contract had to be arranged, a feast was given, and the act of eating and drinking together in public and before witnesses sufficed to make such contract valid.[88] The lords and principal men gave feasts to each other, and as it was incumbent upon all the guests to return the compliment, there must have been a continual round of feasting. Cogolludo states that meat was eaten at banquets only, and this may in some measure account for the frequency with which they occurred, and the etiquette that required the invitation to be returned.

They observed a certain formality at their entertainments, seating themselves either in twos or fours. Each of the guests received a roasted fowl, some bread, and an abundance of cacao. When the meal was finished, presents were distributed to the guests, each being presented with a mantle, a small stool, and a handsome cup. Beautiful women acted as cupbearers, and when one of these presented a cup of wine to a guest, she turned her back to him while he drank. The feast lasted until all were intoxicated, and then the wives led their drunken husbands home. When a marriage banquet, or one in commemoration of the deeds of their ancestors, was given, no return invitation was expected.[89] Their entertainments were usually enlivened by a company of dancers and musicians, who performed dramatic representations under the leadership of one who was called *holpop*, or master of the ceremonies; he gave instruc-

[88] 'En las ventas, y contratos, no auia escritos que obligassen, ni cartas de pagago, que satisfaciessen; pero quedaba el contrato valido con que bebiessen publicamente delante de testigos.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 180–1.

[89] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 122–4.

Digitized by Google

tions to the actors, directed the singers and musicians, and from him all had to take their cue. The actors were called *balzam*, a name corresponding to jester or mimic. As women were not permitted to take part in the mummeries, their places were supplied by men. Their movements during the play were grave and monotonous, yet they were clever in mimicry and caricature, which they frequently made use of as a means of reproving their chief men.[40] The plays were generally of an historical character, having for their subject the great deeds of their ancestors; their songs consisted of ballads founded upon local traditions and legendary tales.[41]

A favorite dance of the Mayas was one called *colomche;* a large number of men took part in it, sometimes as many as eight hundred. These formed a ring, and were accompanied during their movements by a number of musicians. When the dancing began, two of the actors, still keeping step with the rest, came out from the ring, one holding in his hand a bunch of wands and dancing upright, while the other cowered down, still dancing. Then he who had the wands threw them with all his force at his companion, who with great dexterity parried them with a short stick. When the two had finished, they returned to their former position in the circle, and two others took their place and went through the same performance, the rest following in their turn. They had also war dances, in which large numbers joined, the performers holding small flags in their hands.[42]

They had a variety of musical instruments, prominent among which was the *tunkul*, which was almost

[40] 'Son graciosos en los motes, y chistes, que dizen à sus mayores, y Iuezes: si son rigurosos, ambiciosos, auarientos, representando los sucessos que con ellos les passan, y aun lo que vèn à su Ministro Doctrinero, lo dizen delante dèl, y à vezes con vna sola palabra.' *Coyolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 187.

[41] See *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., pp. 259, 261; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 65–7; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 47.

[42] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 126, 128.

Digitized by Google

the same thing as the teponaztli of the Mexicans.[43] They had other drums, made of a hollow trunk and covered at one end with deer-skin, tortoise-shells that they struck with deer's horns, trumpets—some of marine shells and others of hollow canes with a calabash at the end—whistles and flutes made from bone and cane, besides various kinds of rattles.[44] Landa says that in every village there was a large house, or rather shed, for it was open on all sides, in which the young men met for amusement.[45] Oviedo, who witnessed some dances and games among the Nicaraguans, thus describes one he saw at Tecoatega after the harvesting of the cacao: As many as sixty persons, all men, though a number of them represented women, took part in a dance. They were painted of various colors and patterns, and wore upon their heads beautiful tufts of feathers, and about their persons divers ornaments, while some wore masks like birds' heads. They performed the dance going in couples and keeping at a distance of three or four steps between pair and pair. In the centre of a square was a high pole of more than sixty feet in height driven firmly into the ground; on the top was seated a gaudily painted idol, which they called the god of the *cacaguat*, or cacao; round the top were fixed four other poles in the form of a square, and rolled upon it was a thick grass rope, at the ends of which were bound two boys of seven or eight years of age. One of them had in one hand a bow and in the other a bunch of arrows; the other boy carried a beautiful feather fan and a mirror.

[43] 'El timbal yucateco (*tankul ó tunkul*), es el instrumento mas notable de la música yucateca, y en general de la música americana, que acompañaban las danzas ó bailes sagrados, y el nombre maya de ese notable instrumento, nos revela hasta hoy el carácter sagrado de aquellas fiestas, pues el nombre de *tunkul ó tankul*, significa ligeramente la hora de la adoracion.' *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., p. 259. I have one of these instruments in my possession.

[44] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 124, 126; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 77, 186; *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., p. 260; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 64–5.

[45] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 178.

Digitized by Google

At a certain step of the dance the boys came out from the square and the rope began to unroll; they went round and round in the air, always going farther out and counterbalancing one another, the rope still unrolling. While they were descending, the sixty men proceeded with their dance to the sound of singers beating drums and tabors. The boys passed through the air with much velocity, moving their arms and legs to present the appearance of flying. When they reached the ground the dancers and singers gave some loud cheers and the festival was concluded.[46] Another favorite amusement was a performance on a swinging bar. For this, two tall forked posts were firmly planted in the ground; across them and resting in the forks a pole was strongly bound. This pole passed at right angles through a hole in the centre of a thick bar, made to revolve upon it and of very light wood; near the end of the bar were cross-sticks for the performers to take hold of. A man placed himself at each end, and when the bar was set in motion, they went tumbling round and round, to the delight of the spectators.[47]

[46] This is very similar to the Nahua game described on pages 295 et seq., of this volume.

[47] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 93-4, 111-12, pl. v., fig. i., ii.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIII.

FOOD, DRESS, COMMERCE, AND WAR CUSTOMS OF THE MAYAS.

INTRODUCTION OF AGRICULTURE—QUICHÉ TRADITION OF THE DISCOVERY OF MAIZE—MAIZE CULTURE—SUPERSTITIONS OF FARMERS—HUNTING AND FISHING—DOMESTIC ANIMALS, FOWL, AND BEES—PRESERVATION AND COOKING OF FOOD—MEALS—DRINKS AND DRINKING HABITS—CANNIBALISM—DRESS OF THE MAYAS—MAXTLIS, MANTLES, AND SANDALS—DRESS OF KINGS AND PRIESTS—WOMEN'S DRESS—HAIR AND BEARD—PERSONAL DECORATION—HEAD-FLATTENING, PERFORATION, TATTOOING, AND PAINTING—PERSONAL HABITS—COMMERCE—CURRENCY—MARKETS—SUPERSTITIONS OF TRAVELLERS—CANOES AND BALSAS—WAR—MILITARY LEADERS—INSIGNIA—ARMOR—WEAPONS—FORTIFICATIONS—BATTLES—TREATMENT OF CAPTIVES.

THE tierra caliente and the low forest-clad foothills of the Usumacinta region on the confines of Yucatan, Guatemala, Chiapas, and Tabasco, present claims as strong at least as those of any other locality to be considered the birthplace of American civilization. Here, apparently, Votan and Gucumatz, demi-gods or civilizers, won their first triumphs over the powers of barbarism. In the most remote times to which we are carried by vague tradition and mythic fable, gods with strangely human attributes, or men of wonderful supernatural powers, newly arrived in this land, took counsel one with another how they might subject to their power and reclaim from barbarism the native bands of savages, or 'animals,' who roamed

Digitized by Google

naked through the forests, and subsisted on roots and wild fruits. The discussion of the tradition with reference to its historic signification is foreign to my present purpose, but as the story includes the traditional origin of agriculture and the discovery of maize under the form of a new creation, it is an appropriate introduction to the present chapter on the food, dress, and commerce of the Maya nations. The story runs as follows in the aboriginal Quiché annals:[1]

Behold how they began to think of man, and to seek what must enter into the flesh of man. Then spake he who begets, and he who gives being, Tepeuh, Gucumatz, the creator and the former, and said: "Already the dawn is nigh; the work is finished; behold the support, the foster-father, is ennobled; the son of civilization, man, is honored, and humanity on the face of the earth." They came, and in great numbers they assembled; in the shadows of the night they joined their wise counsel. Then sought they and consulted in sadness, meditating; and thus the wisdom of these men was manifest; they found and were made to see what must enter into the flesh of man; and the dawn was near.

In Paxil, or Cayala ('land of divided and stagnant waters'), as it is called, were the ears of yellow maize and of white.. These are the names of the barbarians who went to seek food: the Fox, the Jackal, the Paroquet, and the Crow—four barbarians who made known to them the ears of the white maize and of the yellow, who came to Paxil and guided them thither. There it was they obtained at last the food that was to enter into the flesh of man, of man created and formed; this it was that was his blood, that

[1] This history, written with Roman characters, but in the Quiché language, in the early years of the Conquest, was quoted by Brasseur de Bourbourg as the *MS. Quiché de Chichicastenango*, in his *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 59–60; a translation into Spanish by Ximenez appeared in 1857, *Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 79–80; and a translation into French by Brasseur de Bourbourg in 1861, *Popul Vuh*, pp. 195–9. Brasseur's rendering is followed for the most part in my text, but so far as this extract is concerned there are only slight verbal differences between the two translations.

Digitized by Google

became the blood of man—this maize that entered into him by the provision of him who creates, of him who gives being.

And they rejoiced that they had at last arrived in this most excellent land, so full of good things, where the white and yellow maize did abound, also the cacao, where were sapotes and many fruits, and honey; all was overflowing with the best of food in this country of Paxil, or Cayala. There was food of every kind; there were large and small plants, to which the barbarians had guided them. Then they began to grind the yellow and white maize, and of them did Xmucané make nine drinks, which nourishment was the beginning of strength, giving unto man flesh and stature. Such were the deeds of the begetter and giver of being, Tepeuh, Gucumatz. Thereupon they began to speak of creating our first mother and our first father. Only yellow maize and white maize entered into their flesh, and these alone formed the legs and arms of man; and these were our first fathers, the four men who were formed, into whose flesh this food entered.

And from this time of its traditional discovery by Gucumatz, or Quetzalcoatl, down to the conquest by the Spaniards, and even down to the present time, the yellow and white maize, in their several varieties, have been the chief reliance of the Maya as of the Nahua nations for daily food. Every year during the latter months of the dry season, from March to May, the farmer busied himslf in preparing his *milpa*, or cornfield, which he did by simply cutting or uprooting the dense growth and burning it. The ashes thus produced were the only fertilizer ever employed, and even this was probably never needed in this land of tropical fertility. Just before the first rain fell, equipped with a sack of seed-maize on his shoulder and a sharpened stick in his hand, he made holes at regular intervals among the ashes, and in each deposited five or six grains, covering it with the same in-

Digitized by Google

strument, aided perhaps by the foot. In Yucatan, the planters united in bands of twenty for mutual assistance, working together until the land of all the club was properly seeded. It was not customary to plant very large fields, but rather many in different localities, to guard against a possible partial failure of the crops from local causes. Hedges, ditches, and fences were constructed to enclose the milpas, so effective in the Lacandone country that the Spaniards' horses were unable to leap them. The corn was carefully kept free from weeds while growing, and watched by boys after it had begun to ripen. In Nicaragua, where, Oviédo tells us, more attention was paid to agriculture than in any other region visited by him, the boys took their station in trees scattered over the field, or sometimes on raised covered scaffolds of wood and reeds, called *barbacoas*, where they kept up a continual shouting to drive away the birds. Irrigation was practised when the rains were backward, and if we may credit Oviedo, by thus artificially forcing the crop in Nicaragua, well-filled corn was plucked only forty days after planting the seed. Villagutierre states that the Itzas spent most of their time in worship, dancing, and getting drunk, trusting to uncultivated fruits and the fertility of their soil for a subsistence, and contenting themselves with very small milpas.

After maize, cacao was perhaps the crop to which most attention was paid. It grew in hot and shady localities, and where there was no natural shade, trees were set out for the purpose. It was called *cacaguat* in Nicaragua, and was gathered from February to April. Several varieties, of a somewhat inferior quality, grew wild, and were much used by the natives. The cultivation of beans, pepper, cotton, and of numerous native fruits, was carried on extensively, but we have no details respecting the methods employed.[2] In

[2] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 130; *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Id.*, p. 361. On the coast of Yucatan, 'des racines dont ils font le pain, et qu'ils nomment

Digitized by Google

connection with the planting and growth of the various cultivated plants, the Mayas entertained some peculiar superstitions. Far from understanding the simplest laws of nature, they recognized only supernatural agencies in the growth or blighting of their crops. In Yucatan, Cogolludo states that no meat was eaten while cotton was growing, from fear that it would fail to mature. The Nicaraguans, according to Dávila, ate no salt or pepper, nor did they drink any intoxicating beverage, or sleep with their women during the time of planting. Oviedo also observed certain bundles of sticks placed at the corners of each field, as well as leaves, stones, and cotton rags, scattered over the surface by ugly and deformed old hags, for some unknown but doubtless superstitious purpose. Palacio tells us that the Pipiles, before beginning to plant, gathered in small bowls specimens of all the seeds, which, after performing certain rites with them before the idol, they buried in the ground, and burned copal and ulli over them. Blood was drawn freely from different parts of the body, with which to anoint the idol; and, as Ximenez states, the blood of slain fowls was sprinkled over the land to be sown. In the case of cacao, the finest grains of seed were exposed to the moonlight during four nights; and whatever the seed to be planted, the tillers of the soil must sleep apart from their wives and concubines for several days, in order that on the

maïs.' *Dixe, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 8. The Lacandones applied themselves 'al trabajo de sus Milpas, y Sementeras de Maiz, Chile, y Frixoles, entre que sembravan Piñas, Platanos, Batatas, Xicamas, Xacotes, Zapotes, y otras Frutas;' their milpas were large, and were cleared with stone hatchets. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 310–11. The Itzas had 'mucha Grana, Cera, Algodòn, Achiote, Baynillas, y otras Legumbres.' *Id.*, pp. 354, 499. Many varieties of beans raised in Nicaragua. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 285. 'Vi muchos destos perales en la provinçia de Nicaragua, puestos á mano en las heredades ó plaças ó assientos de los indios, é por ellos cultivados. É son tan grandes árboles como nogales algunos dellos.' *Id.*, p. 353. Planting of maize. *Id.*, pp. 265–6, tom. iv., pp. 104–5. See also on agriculture, *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, 102–3; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., pp. 413–14; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 405; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, pp. 551, 556; *Viollet-le-Duc*, in *Charnay, Ruines Amér.*, p. 71; *Humboldt, Essai Pol.*, tom. i., p. 269; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 8.

Digitized by Google

night before the planting they might indulge their passions to the fullest extent; certain persons are even said to have been appointed to perform the sexual act at the very moment when the first seeds were deposited in the ground. Before beginning the operation of weeding, they burned incense at the four corners of the field, and uttered fervent prayers to the idols. When the corn was ripe, they plucked the finest ears and offered them to the gods, to the priests, and sometimes also to the poor. At harvest time, the corn was heaped up in the field, and was not mowed until the grain itself gave the signal that it was ready; the signal was, as Brasseur states it, the springing up of a fresh blade, or, according to Ximenez, the falling of an ear from the heap.[3]

The home of the Mayas in nearly every part abounded in many varieties of game, and the authors report the natives to have been expert hunters and fishermen, but respecting the particular methods employed in capturing food from forest, ocean, and river, little information has been preserved. The people of Yucatan used the bow and arrow; were especially skilful at throwing a kind of arrow or dart by means of a piece of wood three fingers thick, pierced with a hole at one third its length; and, according to Cogolludo, they bred hunting dogs which were trained to follow and seize deer, tigers, and boars, as well as badgers, rabbits, armadillos, and iguanas. The latter animal was, as it still is, a favorite food. Tradition relates that the Tutul-Xius when they first came to Yucatan used no weapons, but were famous for their skill in taking game by means of snares, traps, and similar devices. In Guatamala, a blow-pipe and earthen bullets were sometimes used to shoot birds. A portion of all game taken had to be given to the rulers of town and province, and also a large portion—half, Las Casas tells

[3] *Ximènez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 190–1; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 183; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 72–4; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 285; *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 233; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 565–6.

Digitized by Google

us, in Guatemala—must be offered to the god of hunting, or in other words, furnished for the priests' tables. Fish and turtles were the chief articles of food in some coast regions, and the Nicaraguans are described by Oviedo as expert fishermen, who took fish from ocean and river by means of rods, lines, and flies, also in cotton nets, and by pens and embankments in the tide-waters. They are said to have had a plant, the *baygua*, a decoction of which being put in the water brought the fish senseless to the surface. The Itzas and probably others used the harpoon. Young alligators just hatched were esteemed as delicacies in Vera Paz, and large fleets of canoes were sent at the proper season to take them. The tapir was also a favorite article of food. Toads and other reptiles seem to have been eaten when other supplies were not at hand.[4]

As an article of daily food, meat was comparatively little used; Cogolludo even goes so far as to say it was never eaten in Yucatan except at feasts. Besides the game supply, dogs of a certain species were raised for food. They were of small size, without hair, could not bark, and when castrated became immensely fat. They were called *xulos* in Nicaragua, and *tzomes* in Yucatan, but were probably the same as the *techichis* already mentioned in Mexico. Turkeys, ducks, geese, and other fowl were domesticated; and pigs, rabbits,

[4] 'In the province of Campeche, the Spaniards were feasted on 'Peacockes and crammed foule both of the Mountaynes, Woods, and Water, as Patryches, Quayles, Turtles, Duckes, Geese, and fourefooted wilde beastes, as Boores, Hartes, and Hares: besides Wolfes, Lyons, Tygers, and Foxes.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. ii. 'Juntanse tambien para la caça de L en L, mas o menos, y la carne del venado assan en parillas, porque no se les gaste, y venidos al pueblo, hazen sus presentes al señor, y distribuyen como amigos y el mesmo hazen en la pesca.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 130–2, 46. In Vera Paz, 'tejones, que tienen buena carne, el bilab es mejor que carnero: venadillos vermejos, y otros bayos, y muchos otros que los Indios flechan, y comen algunos desollados, otros ahumados, y assados, en barbocoa, y en charque, y todo malguisado.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xiii., xiv., ii. At Cozumel, 'el pescado es su casi principal manjar.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 22. See also *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 355, 424, 497, tom. iv., p. 33; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 187; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. 177; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. 63.

Digitized by Google

and hares are mentioned as having been bred. Multitudes of bees were kept for their honey and wax, and hives are spoken of by Las Casas without description. Gomara says the bees were small and the honey somewhat bitter. The only methods of making salt that I find particularly mentioned were to bake tide-washed earth, boiling down the brine made of the product, and also to boil the lye produced by leeching the ashes of a palm called *xacxam*. The former method was practised in Guatemala, at great cost of labor and wealth, as Herrera says; the second is referred to Yucatan. Many roots were of course utilized for food, and a peculiar herb, called *yaat*, was mixed with lime and carried constantly in the mouth by the Nicaraguans on the march or journey, as a preventive of fatigue and thirst.[5]

Respecting the preservation and cooking of food, as well as the habits of the people in taking their daily meals, there are no differences to be recorded from what has been said of the Nahuas. The inevitable tortillas and tamales were the standard dish, made in the same way as at the north; meat was dried, salted, roasted, and stewed, with pepper for the favorite seasoning. Fruits were perhaps a more prominent article of food, and were eaten for the most part raw.[6] Cogolludo informs us that the Yucatecs ate regularly once a day, just before sunset; and we are also told that they took great pains to keep their bright colored table-cloths and napkins in a state of perfect cleanliness. In Nicaragua, they were accus-

[5] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 118; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 148; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 184, 187–8, 700; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 41, 311; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 206–7, 411, 497, 507, tom. iii., p. 227; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. vi., ii., dec. vi., lib. iii.; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. i., lib. v., cap. v., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. viii.; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 23; *Id., Hist. Ind.*, fol. 61–2; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 449; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, p. 32.

[6] Cortés, *Cartas*, p. 23, tells us that no bread was made in Yucatan, but that maize was eaten roasted. The best tortillas in Nicaragua were called *tascalpachon*. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 267, 324, 355, 411, 513, 523, tom. iii., p. 227. See also *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 116–20, 135; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xiii.

Digitized by Google

tomed to wash the hands and mouth after eating; and the chiefs, who sat in a circle on wooden benches and were served by the women, also washed at the commencement of the meal. The men and women ate always separately, the latter taking their food from the ground, or sometimes from a palm-leaf basket-work platter. Very little food sufficed for the Mayas, and they could bear hunger for a long time, but like all the aboriginal inhabitants of America, they ate plentifully when well supplied, taking no heed for a time in the future when food might be lacking.[7]

We have seen that in the beginning, according to the tradition, Xmucané invented nine drinks, which were prepared from maize. The exact composition of these famous beverages of antiquity is not given; but Landa speaks of at least six in the preparation of which maize was used, at least as an ingredient. To make the first, the corn was half-boiled in lime-water, coarsely ground, and preserved in small balls, which were simply mixed with water for use; this beverage was much used on journeys, and was often the only provision, serving for food as well. The second was made of the same hulled corn ground fine and mixed in water so as to form a gruel, which was heated and thickened over the fire, and was a favorite drink taken hot in the morning. The third was parched corn ground, mixed in water, and seasoned with pepper or cacao. The fourth was composed of ground maize and cacao, and was designed especially for public festivals. For the fifth, a grease, much like butter, was extracted from cacao and mixed with maize. The sixth was prepared from raw maize ground. The fermented liquor, made of maize and cacao, which was drunk by the Itzas, was called *zaca*. Native wines were made of honey and water, of figs, and of a great variety of fruits; that made of the

Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ., tom. ii., p. 69; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 120; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 180; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 111.

Digitized by Google

native fruit called *jacote*, and one of red cherries, were very popular in Nicaragua. *Chicha* was a fermented drink made of pine-apple juice, honey or sugar, and water. Pulque made from the maguey is mentioned, but this plant does not seem to have played so important a rôle in the south as in the north; at least, there is very little said of it. A very strong and stinking wine is also mentioned as being prepared from a certain root. Herrera tells us that the maize-wines resembled beer, and Andagoya, that their intoxicating properties were not very lasting. Benzoni complains that the native wines failed to comfort the spirit, warm the stomach, and soothe to sleep like those of Castile. Chocolate and other drinks prepared from cacao were universal favorites, and were prepared both from wild and cultivated varieties. Oviedo states that in Nicaragua none but the rich and noble could afford to drink it, as it was literally drinking money. He describes the manner of preparing the cacao, *coco*, or *cacaguat*. It was picked from the trees from February to April, dried in the sun, roasted, ground in water, mixed with a quantity of *bixa* until it was of a bright blood-color, and the dried paste was preserved in cakes. With this paste the natives delighted to bedaub their faces. To prepare the drink, they do not seem to have employed heat, at least in this part of the country, but simply dissolved the paste in water, and poured it from one dish into another to raise a froth.

The Mayas seem to have been a people greatly addicted to the vice of drunkenness, which was much less disgraceful and less severely punished by the laws than among the Nahuas. It was quite essential to the thorough enjoyment of a feast or wedding to become intoxicated; the wife even handed the tempting beverages to her husband, modestly averted her head while he drank, kindly guided him home when the festivities were over, and even became intoxicated herself occasionally, if Landa may be

Digitized by Google

believed. The same authority represents the natives of Yucatan as very brutal and indecent when drunk, and Oviedo says that he who dropped down senseless from drink in a banquet was allowed to remain where he fell, and was regarded by his companions with feelings of envy.[8]

The custom of eating the flesh of human victims who were sacrificed to the gods was probably practised more or less in all the Maya regions; but neither this cannibalism nor the sacrifices that gave rise to it was so extensively indulged in as by the Mexicans. Some authors, as Gomara, deny that human flesh was ever eaten in Yucatan, but others, as Herrera, Villagutierre, and Peter Martyr, contradict this, although admitting that cases of cannibalism were rare, and the victims confined to sacrificed enemies. Las Casas states that in Guatemala the hands and feet were given to the king and high-priest, the rest to other priests, and that none was left for the people. In Nicaragua, the high-priest received the heart, the king the feet and hands, he who captured the victim took the thighs, the tripe was given to the trumpeters, and the rest was divided among the people. The head was not eaten. The edible portions were cut in small pieces, boiled in large pots, seasoned with salt and pepper, and eaten together with cakes of maize. At certain feasts also maize was sprinkled with blood from the genitals. According to Herrera, some Spaniards were eaten in Yucatan, but Albornoz tells us that the natives of Honduras found the foreigners too tough and bitter to be eaten.[9]

[8] *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza,* pp. 89, 98, 312; *Landa, Relacion,* pp. 116–20, 192; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.,* dec. i., lib. v., cap. v., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap vii., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. ix., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.,* tom. i., pp. 257, 317–18, tom. iv., p. 95; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo,* fol. 102–3, 109; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética,* MS., cap. clxxvii.; *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.,* p. 40; *Cortés' Despatches,* p. 4; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.,* tom. ii., pp. 51–2, 499.

[9] In Yucatan, 'these Barbarians eate onely their enemies, or such strangers as come vnto them, otherwise they abstaine from mans flesh.' *Peter Martyr,* dec. iv., lib. vi. In Guatemala, the heads and tripe were seasoned

Digitized by Google

By reason of the warmer climate in the southern lands, or of a difference in the popular taste, somewhat less attention seems to have been paid to dress and personal adornment by the Mayas than by the Nahuas, or rather the Maya dress was much more simple and more uniform among the different classes of society; and, so far as can be determined from the very scanty information extant, there was only a very slight variation in the dress of the different nations—much less, indeed, than would naturally be expected between the tribes of the low Yucatan plains and of the Guatemalan highlands. Very little of the information that has been preserved, however, relates to the people of Guatemala. Men wore almost universally the garment known in Mexico as the maxtli, a long strip of cotton cloth wound several times round the loins and passing between the legs. This strip was often twisted so as to resemble a cord, and the higher the class or the greater the wealth of the wearer, the greater the length of the cord and the number of turns about the body. Among the Itzas and other tribes of Yucatan, instead of passing this garment between the legs, its ends were often allowed to hang, one in front and the other behind, being in such cases more or less embroidered or otherwise decorated.[10] In more modern times, the maxtli seems

with wine. *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. clxxvii.; *Id.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 147; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 649, 651; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 62; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vi., vii., lib. vii., cap. iii., dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 37, 51–2, 56, 108; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 420; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 35, 104; *Albornoz*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 486; *Helps' Span. Conq.*, vol. iii., p. 88; *Pimentel, Mem. sobre la Raza Indígena*, p. 23; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., p. 191.

[10] The Itzas, men and women, wore 'faxas' 4 varas long and ½ vara wide. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 312, 402, 498. At Campeche, a strip of cotton one hand wide, twisted and wound 20 or 30 times about the body. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 512–13. This garment called *mastate. Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2. Ends embroidered and decorated with feathers. *Landa, Relacion*, p. 116. *Almayzares*, called in New Spain *mastil;* otherwise naked. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. i., lib. v., cap. v., dec. ii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Cortés' Despatches*, p. 4. The Chiapanecs naked except this cloth about the loins. *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, pp. 292, 302.

Digitized by Google

to have been, in some cases at least, replaced by cotton drawers, fastened with a string round the waist, and having the legs rolled up to the middle of the thigh.[11] A large proportion of the Mayas, especially of the poorer classes, wore commonly no other garment than the one mentioned; but very few were without a piece of cotton cloth about four or five feet square, which was used as a covering at night and was often worn in the daytime, by tying two corners on the same side over the shoulders and allowing the cloth to hang down the back. The Spaniards uniformly apply the somewhat indefinite term 'mantle' to this garment. These mantles are still worn.[12] The only other garment mentioned, and one not definitely stated to have been worn except in Yucatan, was a kind of loose sleeveless shirt reaching to the knees. These shirts as well as the mantles were worn both white and dyed in brilliant and variegated colors.[13] I find no mention of other material than cotton used for clothing, except in the case of the Cakchiquels, who, according to Brasseur, wore both bark and maguey-fibre.[14]

There is nothing to indicate that the dress of nobles, priests, or kings, differed essentially from that of the common people, except in fineness of material or richness and profusion of ornaments. It is probable, however, that the higher classes were always clad in the garments which have been described, while a majority of the plebeians wore only the maxtli, which

[11] Plate showing the costume of an Indian of the interior. *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.*, pl. v. Trowsers of cotton in Salvador. *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 321.

[12] Called *tilmas* or *hayates*, a yard and a half square. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 187. Mantles called *zuyen. Id.*, p. 2. 'Mantas pintadas.' *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 147.

[13] Cotton robes of bright colors. *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 551. 'Tuniques.' *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 52. 'Sacks.' *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 284–5. 'Camisetas de colores.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 497. 'Xaquetas de algodon.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2. 'Camisette senza maniche.' *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, pp. 98, 104.

[14] *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 172. Mayas dress like the Mexicans. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.

Digitized by Google

was sometimes only a single strip of cloth passing once round the waist and between the legs. As rulers and priests are often spoken of as dressed in 'large white mantles' or 'flowing robes,' it is probable that the mantle worn by them was much larger, as well as of finer stuff, than that described. Landa speaks of a priest in Yucatan who wore an upper garment of colored feathers, with strips of cotton hanging from its border to the ground. Palacio tells us of priestly robes in Salvador of different colors, black, blue, green, red, and yellow. According to Remesal, the priests of Guatamala were filthy, abominable, and ugly—in fact, very hogs in dress. In Nicaragua, Herrera describes white cotton surplices, and other priestly vestments, some small, others hanging from the shoulders to the heels, with hanging pockets, in which were carried stone lancets, with various herbs and powders, indispensable in the practice of sacerdotal arts. Ximenez represents the Guatemalan king's dress as like that of the people, except that he had his ears and nose pierced, of which more anon.[15]

The women universally wore a skirt formed by winding a wide piece of cotton cloth round the body and fastening it at the waist. This garment reached from the waist to the knee, as worn by the plebeian women, but those of a higher class covered with it their legs as low as the ankles. In some parts of Nicaragua, especially on the islands, Herrera says that except this skirt, which was so scanty as hardly to merit a better name than breech-clout, the women were naked; but elsewhere they were always particular to cover their breasts from sight. This they accomplished in some cases by a piece of cloth round the neck, and fastened under the arms; but they also

[15] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 148–50; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 62–4; *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 137; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x., dec. ii., lib. ii., cap. xvii.; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 197; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 54.

Digitized by Google

often wore a kind of chemise, or loose sack, with holes for the head and arms, and sometimes with short sleeves. The latter garment was always worn on feast-days by those who had it to wear. Andagoya mentions a sort of cape worn in Nicaragua, which had a hole for the head, and covered the breasts and half of the arms. Herrera speaks of a sack open at both ends, and tightened at the waist, worn in Nicaragua; and Landa mentions the same garment in Yucatan. The women, like the men, used a square mantle to sleep under, and carried it with them on journeys. Children were allowed to remain naked in Yucatan till they were four or five years old, and in Guatemala to the age of eight or nine years; but in Yucatan, Landa tells us that a boy at the age of three years had a white ornament tied in his hair, and a girl of the same age had a shell fastened by a string in such a manner as to cover certain parts of her person.[16]

It is very difficult to form any definite idea of the Maya methods of dressing the hair, save that all allowed it to grow long, and most persons separated it into tresses, winding some of them about the head and allowing others to hang down the back. Landa informs us that the Yucatecs burned the hair on the crown, allowing it to remain short there, but permitted the rest to grow as long as it would, binding it round the head, except a queue behind. In Nicaragua, the forehead was shaved, and sometimes the whole head, except a tuft at the crown. The women everywhere and men generally took great pains with the hair; the former often mixed feathers with their raven locks,

[16] 'L'étoffe rayée d'une ou de plusieurs couleurs que les femmes se roulent encore autour du corps en la serrant à la ceinture comme un jupon, descendant plus ou moins bas au-dessous du genou, se trouve être exactement la même que l'on voit aux images d'Isis et aux femmes égyptiennes des époques pharaoniques.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 67. Skirt from the waist to feet, called *pic*. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 187–8, 699. 'Ropas de algodon, que llaman naguas.' *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrette, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 414; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 184–6, 16, 144–6, 180.

Digitized by Google

which were dressed differently according as the owners were married or single, and particular care was devoted to the coiffure of a bride. All the authorities agree that the priests in Yucatan wore the hair long, uncombed, and often saturated with sacrificial blood. Plumes of feathers seem to have been their usual head-dress. Palacio and Herrera mention a colored head-dress, mitre, or diadem with hanging plumes worn by a priest in Salvador. Over the hair a piece of cloth was usually worn by females, in which the Abbé Brasseur finds a resemblance to the Egyptian *calantica*. A tuft of hair hanging over the face of children often made them cross-eyed; indeed, mothers are said to have arranged it with a view to this very effect, deemed by them a desirable thing, or to have attached to the forehead a small hanging plaster for the same purpose. The number of 'bizcos' treated by Dr Cabot, who accompanied Mr Stephens in his excursion through Yucatan, shows that though squinting eyes are still common in the country, the defect has at least lost its charm to the Maya mothers.[17]

No beard was worn, and the few hairs that made their appearance on the face were immediately extracted. According to Landa, mothers are said to have burned the faces of young children with hot cloths to prevent the growth of a beard in later years. After the Conquest, many of the natives grew beards, which, though sometimes long, were always thin and

[17] 'Es lo mas dificultoso en los Indios el reduzirlos à cortarles el pelo.' *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 498, 312. In Guatemala, somewhat less attention seems to have been paid to the hair. 'Trayanlo encrespado, ò rebujado en la cabeça como estopas, à causa de que no se lo peynauan.' *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 302; Cogolludo, *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 187, speaks of straw and palm-leaf hats, but he probably refers to his own time. Hair of priests filled with blood. *Id.*, p. 5; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 3; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, pp. 321, 551. In Nicaragua, 'traen rapadas las cabeças de la mitad adelante é los aladares por debaxo, é déxanse una coleta de oreja á oreja por detrás desde la coronilla.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 38, 108; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 112–14, 184; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 68; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii., lib. viii., cap. x. Aguilar wore a 'corona y trença de cabellos, como los naturales.' *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 62; *Id., Conq. Mex.*, fol. 23; *Palacio, Carta*, p. 62.

Digitized by Google

coarse. Something like a beard is also to be seen on some of the sculptured faces among the Maya ruins. Oviedo met in Nicaragua a man about seventy years of age, who had a long flowing white beard.[18]

The Mayas, when they covered the feet at all, wore a kind of sandal of coarse cloth, or more frequently of dry deer-skin. These sandals were simply pieces of skin, often double, covering and fitting somewhat the sole, and fastened by cotton strings from the ankle to the toes, and perhaps also to the heel. I find no account of hand-coverings except in the Popol Vuh, where gloves are spoken of as being used in the game of ball.[19]

Having provided for their comfort by the use of the articles of dress already described, the Mayas, like most other American aborigines, deemed it essential to modify and improve their physique by artificial means. This they accomplished by head-flattening, teeth-filing, perforation of the ears, nose, and lips, tattooing, and painting; yet it is not probable that all these methods of disfigurement were practised by all the natives. In Nicaragua, the heads of infants were flattened; the people believed that the custom had been originally introduced by the gods; that the compressed forehead was the sign of noble blood and the highest type of beauty; and besides that, the head was thus better adapted to the carrying of burdens. In Yucatan, according to Landa, the same custom obtained. Four or five days after birth, the child was laid with the face down on a bed and the head was compressed between two pieces of wood, one on the forehead and the other on the back of the head, the boards being kept in place for several days until the

[18] *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, p. 35; *Charnay, Ruines Amér.*, p. 341; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 114; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 111.

[19] 'Traian sandalias de cañamo o cuero de venado por curtir seco.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 116. They generally went barefoot. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 187. Sandals in Nicaragua called *gutaras*. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 38–9; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 347; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. 77.

Digitized by Google

desired cranial conformation was effected. So great was the pressure that the child's skull was sometimes broken. I find no account of forehead-flattening in Guatemala and Chiapas, though Mr Squier, following Fuentes' unpublished history, says that among the Quichés, Cakchiquels, and Zutugils the back of the head was flattened by the practice of carrying infants tied closely to a straight board. Yet from the frequent occurrence of this cranial type in the sculptured profiles in Chiapas, Honduras, and Yucatan, there can be no doubt that in the most ancient times a flattened forehead was the ideal of manly beauty, and I think we have sufficient reason to believe that the artificial shaping of the skull was even more universally practised in ancient than in modern times. The origin of the custom is a most interesting topic for study and speculation.[20]

The practice of filing the teeth prevailed to a certain extent among the women of Yucatan, whose ideal of dental charms rendered a saw-teeth arrangement desirable. The operation was performed by certain old women, professors of the art, by means of sharp gritty stones and water.[21] The piercing of ears, nose, and lips was practised among all the nations by both men and women apparently, except in Guatemala, where, Ximenez tells us, it was confined to the kings, who perforated the nose and ears as a mark of rank and power. We have no authority for supposing that persons of any class in Yucatan and Nicaragua were restrained from this mutilation of their faces, or from wearing in the perforated features any ornaments they could afford to purchase. Such ornaments were small sticks, bones, shells, and rings of amber or gold. Other ornaments besides those inserted in the ears, nose, and lips, were bracelets, rings, gold beads, and medals,

[20] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 54; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii.; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 345; *Id.*, in *Palacio, Carta*, p. 106; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 114, 180, 194.

[21] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 182.

Digitized by Google

shell necklaces, metallic and wooden wands, gilded masks, feathers and plumes, and pearls. Besides this piercing for ornamental purposes, it should be noted that perforation of cheeks and tongues, and scarifyings of other parts of body and limbs, were common in connection with religious rites and duties.[22]

Tattooing was effected in Yucatan and Nicaragua by lacerating the body with stone lancets, and rubbing the wounds with powdered coal or black earths, which left indelible marks. Stripes, serpents, and birds seem to have been favorite devices for this kind of decoration. The process was a slow and painful one, and to submit to it was deemed a sign of bravery. The tattooing was done by professors who made this art a specialty. Cogolludo says the Itzas had the whole body tattooed, but Landa and Herrera tell us that neither in Yucatan nor in Nicaragua were the breasts of the women subjected to this decorative mutilation.[23] Painting the face and body was uni-

[22] A war party: 'Agujeradas narizes, y orejas con sus narigeras, y orejeras de Cuzcas, y otras piedras de diuersos colores.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 73. The Itzas wore in the nose 'una baynilla olorosa,' and in the ears, 'vn palo labrado.' *Id.*, p. 699. 'Sartales de Caracoles colorados,' much prized by the Itzas. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 48. Small sticks in the ears, and little reeds or amber rings, or grains of vanilla, in the nose. *Id.*, pp. 312, 402. A few silver and gold ear-ornaments. *Id.*, pp. 497–9. On the peninsula of Yucatan, 'trayan las orejas horadadas para çarcillos.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 114. The priest carried 'un isopo en la mano de un palo corto muy labrado, y por bardas o pelos del isopo ciertas colas de unas culebras que son como caxcaveles.' *Id.*, pp. 149–50. Women pierced nose and ears. *Id.*, p. 182. In Nicaragua, 'traen sajadas las lenguas por debaxo, é las orejas, é algunos los miembros viriles, é no las mugeres ninguna cosa destas, y ellos, y ellas horadadas las orejas de grandes agujeros.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 38–9, tom. i., p. 497. King in Yucatan wore 'des bracelets et des manchettes d'une élégance égale à la beauté de la matière.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 54. '*Tecaüh*, qui est le bijou que les chefs indiens portaient fréquemment à la lèvre inférieure ou au cartilage du nez.' *Id.*, p. 92. See also *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 3; *Camargo, Hist. Tlax.*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcix., p. 144; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., lib. vii., cap. ix., dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. iii., lib. x., cap. iii., iv.; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 60, 62; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 347; *Id., Cent. Amer.*, p. 551; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 197; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 16, 25, 39; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 147.

[23] 'Los oficiales dello labravan la parte que querian con tinta, y despues sejavanle delicadamente las pinturas, y assi con la sangre y tinta quedavan en el cuerpo las señales, y que se labran poco a poco por el tormento grande, y tambien se ponen despues malos, porque se les enconavan los labores, y

Digitized by Google

versal, but little can be said respecting the details of the custom, save that red and black were apparently the favorite colors, and colored earths the most common material of the paints. Bixa was, however, much used for red, and cacao tinted with bixa to a blood-red hue was daubed in great profusion on the faces of the Nicaraguans. In Yucatan, young men generally restricted themselves to black until they were married, indulging afterward in varied and bright colored figures. Black was also a favorite color for war-paint. Odoriferous gums were often mixed with the paints, especially by the women, which rendered the decoration durable, sticky, and most disagreeable to foreign olfactories. It appears that in Guatemala, and probably elsewhere, a coat of paint was employed, not only for ornamental purposes, but as a protection against heat and cold. At certain Nicaraguan feasts and dances the naked bodies were painted in imitation of the ordinary garments, cotton-fibre being mixed with the paint.[24]

All were fond of perfumes, and besides the odoriferous substances mixed by the ladies in their paint, copal and other gums were burned on many occasions, not only in honor of the gods, but for the agreeable odor of the smoke; sweet-smelling barks, herbs, and flowers were also habitually carried on the person.[25] All the Mayas, especially females, were rather neat

haziase materia, y que con todo esso se mofavan de los que no se labravan.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 120, 182; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 186, 699; *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 293; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 402, 498; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 38; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 47; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 121, 285; *Bussierre, L'Empire Mex.*, p. 205.

[24] *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 302; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 114–16, 178–80, 182, 184; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 6, 77; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 107, 402, 490, 499; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 297, 318, 498, tom. iv., p. 111; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 422; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 62; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, pp. 71–2, 189.

[25] 'Eran amigos de buenos olores y que por esto usan de ramilletes de flores y yervas olorosas, muy curiosos y labrados.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 114. 'Des roseaux longs de deux palmes, et qui répandaient une excellente odeur quand on les brûlait.' *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 7; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 68; *Valois, Mexique*, p. 206.

Digitized by Google

than otherwise in their personal habits, taking great pains with their dress and so-called decorations. They bathed frequently in cold water, and sometimes indulged in hot baths, perhaps in steam-baths; but of the latter very little is said, although Brasseur says it was used in Guatemala under the name of *tuh*. The women were very modest, and usually took much pains to prevent the exposure of their persons, but in bathing and on certain other occasions both sexes appear to have been somewhat careless in this respect. In both Yucatan and Nicaragua, mirrors were employed by the men, but the women required or at least employed no such aids.[26] Although such disfigurements as have been described, painting, tattooing, and perforation, are reported by all the authors, and were all doubtless practised, yet one can hardly avoid forming the idea in reading the narratives of the conquerors, that such hideous mutilations were confined to certain classes and certain occasions, and that the mass of the people in every day life presented a much less repulsive aspect.

I have already spoken of the tenure of landed property and the laws of inheritance among the Mayas. To the accumulation of wealth in the form of personal property, they do not seem to have attached much importance. They were content for the most part with a supply of simple food for their tables, the necessary household utensils, and such articles of dress and ornament as were required by their social rank; with

[26] 'Se vañavan mucho, no curando de cubrirse de las mugeres, sino quando podia cubrir la mano.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 114. 'Se lavan las manos y la boca despues de comer.' *Id.*, p. 120. The women stripped naked in the wells where they bathed; they took hot baths rather for health than cleanliness. *Id.*, p. 184. The women 'tienen poco secreto, y no son tan limpias en sus personas ni en sus cosas con quanto se lavan como los ermiños.' *Id.*, p. 192. 'Los hombres haçen aguas puestos en cluquillas, é las mugeres estando derechas de piés á dó quiera que les viene la gana.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 38; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii., iv.; *Dávila, Teatro Eccles.*, tom. i., p. 203; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Carbajal Espinosa, Hist. Mex.*, tom. i., p. 263; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 68.

Digitized by Google

these and a sufficient surplus to entertain their friends in a fitting style, they took little care for the future. Yet traders were a class much honored, and their profession was a lucrative one. An active trade was carried on in each town, as also between different towns, provinces, and nations, in order that the people of each locality might be supplied with the necessary commodities both of home and foreign production. Few details have been preserved respecting the manner of conducting trade, but what is known on the subject indicates that the commercial system was identical with that of the Nahuas, to which a preceding chapter has been devoted. Commodities of every class, food, dress, ornaments, weapons, and implements, were offered for sale in the market-place, or plaza, of every village, where all transactions between buyers and sellers were regulated by an official who had full authority to correct abuses and punish offences against the laws of trade. Fairs were held periodically in all the larger towns, which were crowded by buyers and sellers from abroad. Travelling merchants traversed the country in every direction, busied in the exchange and transport of varied local products. Yucatan did a large foreign trade with Tabasco and Honduras, from both of which regions large quantities of cacao were imported. Other international routes of commerce doubtless existed in different directions; we have seen that the Nahua merchants crossed the isthmus of Tehuantepec to traffic in Maya lands, and the southern merchants were doubtless not unrepresented in the northern fairs. Transportation was effected for the most part by carriers overland, and in many parts of the country, as in Yucatan, magnificent paved roads offered every facility to the traveller; quite an extensive coasting trade was also carried on by water.

The ordinary mercantile transactions were effected by exchange, or barter, of one commodity for another; but where this was inconvenient, cacao passed current as money among all the nations. Thus a rabbit in

Digitized by Google

Nicaragua sold for ten cacao-nibs, and one hundred of these seeds would buy a tolerably good slave. Notwithstanding the comparatively small value of this cacao money, Oviedo tells us that counterfeiting was sometimes attempted. According to Cogolludo, copper bells and rattles of different sizes, red shells in strings, precious stones, and copper hatchets often served as money, especially in foreign trade. Doubtless many other articles, valuable and of compact form, were used in the same way. Landa speaks of net-work purses in which the money of the natives was carried.

We are informed that in Yucatan articles of ordinary consumption, like food, were sold always at a fixed price, except maize, which varied slightly in price according to the yield. Maize was sold by the cargo, or load, which was about one half of the Castilian fanega. In Nicaragua, the matter of price was left altogether to the contracting parties. The Mayas of all nations were very strict in requiring the exact fulfilment of contracts, which, in Yucatan, as has been said, and in Guatemala also, according to Brasseur de Bourbourg, were legalized by the parties drinking together, the beverage being generally colored with certain leaves called *max*. In the Nicaraguan markets, some extraordinary regulations were enforced. Men could not visit the market-place of their own towns, either to buy, sell, or for any other purpose; they even incurred the risk of receiving a sound beating, if they so much as peeped in to see what was going on. All the business was transacted by the women; but boys, into whose minds, by reason of their tender years, carnal thoughts were supposed not to have entered, might be present to assist the women, and even men from other towns or provinces, were welcome, provided they did not belong to a people of different language.

No peculiar ceremonies are mentioned as accompanying the setting-out or return of trading caravans,

Digitized by Google

but some customs observed by travellers, a large proportion of whom were probably merchants, are recorded. In Yucatan, all members of a household prayed often and earnestly for the safe return of the absent member; and the traveller himself, when he chanced to come in contact with a large stone which had been moved in opening the road, reverently laid upon it a green branch, brushing his knees with another at the same time as a preventive of fatigue. He also carried incense on his journey, and at each nightfall, wherever he might be, he stood on end three small stones, and on three other flat stones placed before the first he burned incense and uttered a prayer to Ekchua, god of travellers, whose name signifies 'merchant.' When the traveller was belated, and thought himself likely to arrive after dark at his proposed stopping-place, he deposited a stone in a hollow tree, and pulled out some hairs from his eyebrows, which he proceeded to blow toward the setting sun, hoping thereby to induce that orb to retard somewhat its movements. In Guatemala, small chapels were placed at short intervals on all the lines of travel, where each passer halted for a few moments at least, gathered a handful of herbs, rubbed with them his legs, spat reverently upon them, and placed them prayerfully upon the altar with a small stone and some trifling offering of pepper, salt, or cacao. The offering remained untouched, no one being bold enough to disturb the sacred token.[27]

[27] The following are my authorities on the Maya commerce, many references to simple mentions of articles bought and sold and to the use of cacao as money being omitted: *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 203; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 137, 147; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. i., lib. v., cap. v., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., lib. v., cap. xii., lib. vii., cap. ix., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. iii., ix.; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 32, 128–30, 156–8; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 181, 183; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 311; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 316, tom. iii., p. 253, tom. iv., pp. 36–7, 49, 54, 104; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. i.; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 422; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 102, 109; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 50–1, 71, 564; *Id., Popol Vuh*, p. 97; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 346; *Id., Cent. Amer.*, p. 320; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 8; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 414.

Digitized by Google

Oviedo states that in Nicaragua, or at least in certain parts of that country, the people had no canoes, but resorted to balsas when it became necessary to cross the water. The balsa in this region was simply a raft of five or six logs tied together at the ends with grass, and covered with cross-sticks The author referred to saw a fleet of these aboriginal vessels which bore fifteen hundred warriors. On the coast of Yucatan and in the lakes of Peten, the natives had many canoes for use in war and commerce, and were very skilful in their management. These canoes were 'dug-outs,' made from single trunks, capable of carrying from two to fifty persons, and propelled by paddles. Cogolludo tells us that canoes with sails were seen by Córdova during his voyage up the coast, and some modern writers speak of the famous canoe met by Columbus off the Honduras coast as having been fitted with sails; but in the latter case there seems to be no authority for the statement, and that sails were ever employed may well be considered doubtful. The boat seen by Columbus was eight feet wide, "as long as a galley," bore twenty-five men, and an awning of mats in the centre protected the women and children. All the information we have respecting boats in Guatemala is the statement of Peter Martyr that the 'dug-outs' were also in use there, and of Juarros that the Lacandones had a large fleet of boats; Guatemala was a country, however, whose physical conformation would rarely call for navigation on an extensive scale. Villagutierre says that the Chiapanecs used gourd balsas, or 'calabazas.'[28]

Wars among the Maya nations were frequent—more so, probably, during the century preceding the

[28] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 4; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 21; *Id.*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 292; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 353, 369, 489, 76; *Peter Martyr*, dec. viii., lib. v.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 100; *Juarros' Hist. Guat.*, p. 271; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. i., lib. v., cap. v.; *Folsom*, in *Cortés' Despatches*, pp. 3-4; *Foster's Pre-Hist. Races*, pp. 226-7. See vol. i., p. 699, of this work.

Digitized by Google

Spanish Conquest, when their history is partially known, than in the more glorious days of the distant past—but they were also, as a rule, of short duration, partaking more of the character of raids than of regular wars. One campaign generally decided the tribal or national dispute, and the victors were content with the victory and the captives taken. Landa and Herrera report that the nations of Yucatan learned the art of war from the Mexicans, having been an altogether peaceful people before the Nahua influence was brought to bear on them. The latter also suspects that the Yucatec war customs, as observed by the Spaniards, may have been modified by the teaching of Guerrero and Aguilar, white men held for several years as prisoners before the invaders came; but neither theory seems to have much weight.

The profession of arms was everywhere an honorable one, but military preferment and promotion seem to have been somewhat more exclusively confined to the nobility than among the Nahuas. According to Landa, a certain number of picked men were appointed in each town, who were called *holcanes*, must be ready to take up arms whenever called for, and received a small amount of money for their services while in actual war. This is the only instance of a paid soldiery noted in the limits of our territory.[29]

In Nicaragua, Tapaligui was the most honorable title a man could win by bravery, and from the number of those who bore the title the war captain was in most provinces appointed either by the monexico, or council, or by the cacique. This captain was for the most part independent of the civil ruler in time of war, but Boyle speaks of certain cities where the cacique himself commanded the army. The civil chief, however, if he possessed the requisite bravery, often accompanied the troops to the field to take com-

[29] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 174, 48; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv., lib. iii., cap. iii. The Chiapanecs were among the boldest warriors. *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 178.

Digitized by Google

mand at the captain's death, or appoint his successor.[30] In Yucatan, they had two war captains, one of whom held his position by inheritance, while the other was chosen for a term of three years. The title of the latter was Nacon, and his office seems to have been attended with some inconveniences, since during the three years he could know no woman, eat no meat, indulge in no intoxication, and have but little to do with the public. Fish and iguana-flesh were allowed him, but it must be served on dishes used by no one but himself, and must not be served by women. In Vera Paz, the captains were chosen from among the most distinguished braves, and seem to have held their position for life.[31]

In Yucatan, skins and feathers, worn according to fixed rules, not recorded, were among the most prominent insignia of warriors. The face was painted in various colors; and tattooing the hands was a privilege accorded to the brave. The Itzas fought naked, but painted face, body, and limbs black, the brave tattooing the face in stripes. Feather plumes are the only insignia mentioned in connection with Guatemalan warriors; but the grade of a Pipile's prowess was indicated by the number of holes he had in ears, nose, and other features. All officers in the Nicaraguan armies had distinguishing marks, which they wore both in time of war and of peace; the Tapaligui was allowed to shave his head except on the crown, where the hair was left a finger long, with a longer tuft projecting from the centre. The arrangement of the feathers on the shield also indicated to the soldiers an officer's rank.[32]

[30] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 38, 53; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 264; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 342; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 272.

[31] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 172; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 202.

[32] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 38; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 172; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. iv., cap. viii., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., lib. v., cap. x., lib. vii., cap. iii., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 70–2; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 391, 498–9; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 342; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 558–9; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 270.

Digitized by Google

The universal Maya armor was a thick quilted sack of cotton, which fitted closely over the body and arms, and reached generally to the middle of the thighs, although Alvarado found the Guatemalans clad in similar sacks reaching to the feet. In Yucatan, according to Landa, a layer of salt was placed between the thickness of cotton, making the garment very hard and impenetrable. As the Guatemalan armor is described as being three fingers thick and so heavy that the soldiers could with difficulty run or rise after falling, we may suppose that salt or some similar material was also used by the Quichés. Squier mentions, apparently without sufficient authority, short breeches worn to protect the legs. The Spaniards were not long in recognizing the advantages of the native cotton armor, and it was commonly adopted or added to their own armor of steel. The head-armor, when any was worn, seems to have been ordinarily a kind of cap, also of quilted cotton. Landa says that in Yucatan a few leaders wore wooden helmets; they are also mentioned by Gomara and Las Casas. Peter Martyr speaks of golden helmets and breast-plates as worn in Nicaragua. Shields were made of split reeds, were round in form, and were covered generally with skins and decorated with feathers, though a cotton covering was also used in Nicaragua.[33]

Bows and arrows, lances, and darts were used as weapons of war by all the Maya tribes, the projectiles being usually pointed with flint, but often also with fish-bone or copper. Arrows were carried in quivers and were never poisoned. The Yucatec bow, as Landa informs us, was a little shorter than the man

[33] Cotton armor called in some places *escaupiles*. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. iii. Both white and colored. *Id.*, dec. iii., lib. v., cap. x., lib. iv., cap. vi., dec. ii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., lib. iii., cap. i. Called by the Quichés *achcaupiles*. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 91; *Landa, Relacion*, p. 172; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 6; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 62; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 148; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iii., p. 484, tom. iv., p. 53; *Alvarado*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 140; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 347.

Digitized by Google

who carried it, and was made of a very strong native wood; the string was made of the fibres of certain plants. The arrows were light reeds with a piece of hard wood at the end. Oviedo tells us of lances, or pikes, in Nicaragua, which were thirty spans long, and others in Yucatan fifteen spans long; Herrera says they were over twenty feet long in Guatemala, and that their heads were poisoned; though Oviedo denies that poison was used. In Nicaragua and Yucatan, heavy wooden swords, called by the Mexicans *macuahuitl*, were used, but I find no special mention of these weapons in Guatemala. A line of sharp flints were firmly set along the two edges, and, wielded with both hands, they were a most formidable weapon. Waldeck found in modern times the horn of a saw-fish covered with skin and used as a weapon. He thinks the aboriginal weapon may have been fashioned after this natural model. Slings were extensively used in Yucatan, and also copper axes to some extent, but these are supposed to have been imported from Mexico, as no metals are found in the peninsula.[34]

The Quichés, Cakchiquels, and other tribes inhabiting the high lands of Guatemala, chose the location of their towns in places naturally well-nigh inaccessible, strengthening them besides with artificial fortifications in the shape of massive stone walls and deep ditches. Ruins of these fortified towns are very numerous and will be described elsewhere; a few words

[34] Macanas used as weapons in Nicaragua. *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 53, 33, tom. i., pp. 511–12, tom. iii., pp. 231, 484. Crystal-pointed arrows used by the Itzas and chiefs had short flint knives, with feathers on the handles. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 495, 41, 92. Hardened rods, or pikes. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 77, 2. Darts thrown from a 'tiradera.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vi., lib. v., cap. x., lib. vii., cap. iii., dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii. A bat was the sign of a Cakchiquel armory. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Popol Vuh*, p. 225. See also Maya weapons. *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 341, 347; *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. v.; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 258; *Scherzer, Wanderungen*, p. 63; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 48, 170; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 148; *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.*, p. 64, with cut; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., pp. 186, 194; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 25; *Id.*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 295; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 127.

Digitized by Google

respecting Utatlan, the Quiché capital, and one of the most securely located and guarded cities, will suffice here. Standing on a level plateau, the city was bounded on every side by a deep ravine, believed to have been at some points artificial, and which could only be crossed at one place. Guarding this single approach a line of massive stone structures connected by ditches extends a long distance, and within this line of fortifications, at the entrance of the pass, is El Resguardo, a square-based pyramidical structure, one hundred and twenty feet high, rising in three terraces, and having its summit platform enclosed by a stone wall covered with hard cement. A tower also rises from the summit. The Spaniards under Alvarado found their approach obstructed at various points in Guatemala by holes in which were pointed stakes fixed in the ground, and carefully concealed by a slight covering of turf; palisades, ditches, and walls of stone, logs, plants, or earth, were thrown across the road at every difficult pass; and large stones were kept ready to hurl or roll down upon the invaders. Numerous short pointed sticks were found on at least one occasion fixed upright in the ground, apparently a slight defence, but really a most formidable one, since the points were poisoned. Doubtless all these methods of defence had been practised often before in their international wars against American foes. Strong defensive works are also mentioned in Chiapas, and Andagoya tells us of a town in Nicaragua fortified by a high and impenetrable hedge of cacti. In Yucatan, the Spaniards' progress was frequently opposed, at points favorable for such a purpose, by temporary trenches, barricades of stone, logs, and earth, and protected stations for bowmen and slingers; but in the selection of sites for their towns, notwithstanding the generally level surface of their country, facilities for defence seem to have been little or not at all considered. One only of the many ruined cities which have been explored, Tuloom, on the eastern coast,

Digitized by Google

stands on an eminence overlooking the ocean, in a very strong natural position; but strangely enough it is just here, where artificial defences were least needed, that we find a massive wall surrounding the chief structures—the only city wall standing in modern times, though Mayapan was traditionally a walled town, and a few slight traces of walls have been found about other cities.[85]

The ambition of the native rulers to increase their dominions by encroachments upon their neighbors' territory was probably the cause of most wars among the Maya nations; but raids were also undertaken occasionally, with no other object than that of obtaining victims for sacrifice. In the consultations preceding the declaration of war, the priesthood had much to say, and played a prominent part in the accompanying ceremonies. In Salvador, the high-priest with four subordinates decided on the war by drawing of lots and by various other sorceries, and even gave directions how the campaign was to be carried on. The high-priest was generally on the ground, in charge of certain idols, when an important battle was to be fought. Supplies were carried, in Yucatan at least, on the backs of women, and the want of adequate means of transportation is given as one reason why the Maya wars were usually of short duration. The Nicaraguan soldier, as Oviedo states, regarded a calabash of water and a supply of the herb *yaat* already mentioned, as the most indispensable of his supplies. Respecting their ceremonies before giving battle we only know that on one occasion in Yucatan they brought a brazier of burning perfume which they placed before the Spanish forces, with the intimation that an attack

[85] See vol. iv., chap. iv., v., for a full description of Maya ruins, with plates. See *Landa, Relacion*, p. 174; *Alvarado*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 112, 117; *Godoi*, in *Id.*, p. 158; *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 425–6; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 87; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 534, tom. iii., pp. 477–8; *Fuentes*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 243; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. iii., lib. x., cap. iii.; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 41; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 407.

Digitized by Google

would be made as soon as the fire went out; and also that Alvarado noticed in Guatemala the sacrifice of a woman and a bitch as a preliminary of battle.

All fought bravely, with no apparent fear of death, endeavoring to capture the enemy alive, rather than to kill them, and at the same time to avoid being captured themselves by the sacrifice of life if necessary. In most nations, it was deemed important to terrify the enemy by shouting, clanging of drums, sticks, and shells, and blowing of whistles. The armies of Yucatan are said to have exhibited somewhat better order in their military movements than those of other nations. They formed their forces into two wings, placing in the centre a squadron to guard the captain and high-priest. The Nicaraguans fought desperately until their leader fell, but then they always ran away. He who from cowardice failed to do his duty on the battle-field was by the Nicaraguan code disgraced, abused, insulted, stripped of his weapons, and discharged from the service, but was not often put to death. As has been stated in a preceding chapter, treason and desertion were everywhere punished with death. All booty except captives belonged to the taker, and to return from a campaign without spoil was deemed a dishonor.

Captives, if of noble blood or high rank, were sacrificed to the gods, and were rarely ransomed. The captor of a noble prisoner received high honors, but was punished if he accepted a ransom, the penalty being death, in Nicaragua. The heads of the sacrificed captives were in Yucatan suspended in the branches of the trees as memorials of victory, a separate tree being set apart for each hostile province. The bones, as Landa tells us, were kept by the captors, the jaw-bone being worn on the arm, as an ornament. We read of no actual torture of prisoners, but the Cakchiquels danced about the victim to be sacrificed, and loaded him with insults. Among the Pipiles it was left to the priests to decide whether the

Digitized by Google

sacrifice should be in honor of a god or goddess; if the former, the festival lasted, according to Palacio, fifteen days; the captives were obliged to march in procession through the town, and one was sacrificed each day; if the feast was dedicated to a diety of the gentler sex, five days of festivities and blood sufficed. Prisoners of plebeian blood were enslaved, or only sacrificed when victims of higher rank were lacking. They were probably the property of the captors. At the close of a campaign in which no captives were taken, the Nicaraguan captains went together to the altar, and there wept ceremonial tears of sorrow for their want of success. The authorities record no details of the methods by which peace was ratified; the Yucatecs, however, according to Cogolludo, expressed to the Spaniards a desire for a suspension of hostilities, by throwing away their weapons, and by kissing their fingers after touching them to the ground.[36]

[36] *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. ii., p. 386; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 5, 77, 130, 181; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. iii., lib. viii., cap. x., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 72–3, 76, 142, 281; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 168, 174, 176; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 144, 148; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 70–2; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 276, 511–12, 523, tom. iii., pp. 230, 477, tom. iv., pp. 53–4; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 61, 264; *Juarros' Hist. Guat.*, p. 185, etc.; *Peter Martyr*, dec. viii., lib. v.; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 170, 198, 202–3; *Alvarado*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 112, 138; *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Id.*, pp. 17–18; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, pp. 325, 333; *Id., Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 342; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 544, 558–9; *Ternaux-Compans*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., p. 46; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., p. 186; *Boyle's Ride*, vol. i., p. 259; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 92, 116.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXIV.

MAYA ARTS, CALENDAR, AND HIEROGLYPHICS.

SCARCITY OF INFORMATION—USE OF METALS—GOLD AND PRECIOUS STONES—IMPLEMENTS OF STONE—SCULPTURE—POTTERY—MANUFACTURE OF CLOTH—DYEING—SYSTEM OF NUMERATION—MAYA CALENDAR IN YUCATAN—DAYS, WEEKS, MONTHS, AND YEARS—INDICTIONS AND KATUNES—PEREZ' SYSTEM OF AHAU KATUNES—STATEMENTS OF LANDA AND COGOLLUDO—INTELCALARY DAYS AND YEARS—DAYS AND MONTHS IN GUATEMALA, CHIAPAS, AND SOCONUSCO—MAYA HIEROGLYPHIC SYSTEM—TESTIMONY OF EARLY WRITERS ON THE USE OF PICTURE-WRITING—DESTRUCTION OF DOCUMENTS—SPECIMENS WHICH HAVE SURVIVED—THE DRESDEN CODEX—MANUSCRIPT TROANO—TABLETS OF PALENQUE, COPAN, AND YUCATAN—BISHOP LANDA'S KEY—BRASSEUR DE BOURBOURG'S INTERPRETATION.

OUR knowledge of Maya arts and manufactures, so far as it depends on the statements of the early Spanish writers, is very slight, and may be expressed in few words; especially as most of these arts seem to have been very nearly identical with those of the Nahuas, although many of them, at the time of the Conquest at least, were not carried to so high a grade of perfection as in the north. Some branches of mechanical art have indeed left material relics, which, examined in modern times, have extended our knowledge on the subject very far beyond what may be gleaned from sixteenth-century observations. But a volume of this work is set apart for the consideration of material rel-

Digitized by Google

ics with numerous illustrative plates, and although the temptation to use both information and plates from modern sources is particularly strong in some of the topics of this chapter and the following, a regard for the symmetry of the work, and the necessity of avoiding all repetition, cause me to confine myself here almost exclusively to the old authors, as I have done in describing the Nahua arts.

Iron was not known to the Mayas, and it is not quite certain that copper was mined or worked by them. The boat so often mentioned as having been met by Columbus off the coast, and supposed to have come from Yucatan, had on board crucibles for melting copper, and a large number of copper hatchets. Similar hatchets, together with bells, ornaments, and spear and arrow points of the same metal, were seen at various points, and were doubtless used to a considerable extent throughout Yucatan, Chiapas, and Guatemala. But there are no metallic deposits on the peninsula, and the copper instruments used there, or at least the material, must have been brought from the north, as it is indeed stated by several authors that they were. No metallic relics whatever have been found among the ruins of Yucatan, and only very few in other Maya regions. Copper implements are not mentioned by the early visitors to Nicaragua, and although that country abounds in ore of a variety easily worked, yet there is no evidence that it was used, and Squier's statement that the Nicaraguans were skilful workers in this metal probably rests on no stronger basis than the reported discovery of a copper mask at Ometepec. Godoi speaks of copper in Chiapas, and also of a metallic composition called *cacao!*

Small articles of gold, intended chiefly for ornamental purposes, were found everywhere in greater or less abundance by the Spaniards, the gold being generally described as of a low grade. Cortés speaks of the gold in Yucatan as alloyed with copper, and the same alloy is mentioned in Guatemala by Herrera, and in

Digitized by Google

Nicaragua by Benzoni. The latter author says that gold was abundant in Nicaragua, but was all brought from other provinces. He also states that there were no mines of any kind, but Oviedo, on the contrary, speaks of 'good mines of gold.' Articles of gold took the form of animals, fishes, birds, bells, small kettles and vases, beads, rings, bracelets, hatchets, small idols, bars, plates for covering armor, gilding or plating of wooden masks and clay beads, and settings for precious stones. Peter Martyr speaks of gold as formed in bars and stamped in Nicaragua, and Villagutierre of silver 'rosillas' in use among the Itzas. We have but slight information respecting the use of precious stones. Oviedo saw in Nicaragua a sun-dial of pearl set on jasper, and also speaks of wooden masks covered with stone mosaic and gold plates in Tabasco. Martyr tells us that the natives of Yucatan attached no value to Spanish counterfeited jewels, because they could take from their mines better ones of genuine worth.[1]

The few implements in common use among the Mayas, such as knives, chisels, hatchets, and metates, together with the spear and arrow heads already mentioned, were of flint, porphyry, or other hard stone. There is but little doubt that most of their elaborate sculpture on temples and idols was executed with stone implements, since the material employed was for the

[1] Two spindles with golden tissue. *Cortés, Cartas*, pp. 3, 422. Six golden idols, each one span long, in Nicaragua. *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. v. 20 golden hatchets, 14 carats fine, weighing over 20 lbs. *Id.*, lib. iv., cap. vi. Houses of goldsmiths that moulded marvellously. *Id.*, cap. vii. See also *Id.*, dec. i., lib. v., cap. v. Little fishes and geese of low gold at Catoche. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 4. Golden armor and ornaments at Tabasco River. *Id.*, pp. 12–13. Idols of unknown metals among the Itzas. *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 495, 497. Gilded wooden mask, gold plates, little golden kettles. *Diaz, Itinéraire*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 16, 25. Vases of chiselled gold in Yucatan. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 69; *Id.*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 32; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 102; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 39, 95, tom. i., p. 520; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. i., dec. vi., lib. ii., vi.; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 354; *Godoi*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. x., p. 178; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., p. 346. Respecting a copper mask from Nicaragua and two copper medals from Guatemala, see vol. iv. of this work.

Digitized by Google

most part soft and easily worked. The carvings in the hard sapote-wood in Yucatan must have presented great difficulties to workmen without iron tools; but the fact remains that stone implements, with a few probably of hardened copper, sufficed with native skill and patience for all purposes. Villagutierre informs us that the Lacandones cut wood with stone hatchets. Cogolludo speaks of the remarkable facility which the natives displayed in learning the mechanical arts introduced by Spaniards, in using new and strange tools or adapting the native implements to new uses. All implements, whether of the temple or the household, seem to have been ceremonially consecrated to their respective uses. Oviedo speaks of deer-bone combs used in Guatemala, and of another kind of combs the teeth of which were made of black wood and set in a composition like baked clay, but which became soft on exposure to heat.

The early writers speak in general terms of idols of various human and animal forms, cut from all kinds of stone, and also from wood; Martyr also mentions an immense serpent in what he supposed to be a place of punishment in Yucatan, which was 'compacted of bitumen and small stones.' The Itzas constructed of stone and mortar the image of a horse, modelled on an animal left among them by Cortés. The Spanish authors say little or nothing of the sculpture of either idols or architectural decorations, except that it was elaborate, and often demon-like; but their observations on the subject would have had but little value, even had they been more extended, and fortunately architectural remains are sufficiently numerous and complete, at least in Yucatan, Honduras, and Chiapas, to supply information that, if not entirely satisfactory, is far more so than what we possess respecting other branches of Maya art. Brasseur de Bourbourg speaks of vases exquisitely worked from alabaster and agate in Yucatan; there is some authority for this in modern discoveries, but little or none, so far

Digitized by Google

as I know, in the writings of the conquerors. Earthenware, shells, and the rind of the gourd were the material of Maya dishes. All speak of the native pottery as most excellent in workmanship, material, and painting, but give no details of its manufacture. Herrera, however, mentions a province of Guatemala, where very fine pottery was made by the women, and Palacio tells us that this branch of manufactures was one of the chief industries of Aguachapa, a town of the Pipiles.

All that is known of cloths and textile fabrics has been given in enumerating the various articles of dress; of any differences that may have existed between the Nahua and Maya methods of spinning and weaving cotton, we know nothing. It is probable that the native methods have not been modified essentially in modern times among the same peoples. We are told that in Yucatan the wife of a god invented weaving, and was worshipped under the name of Ixazalvoh; while another who improved the invention by the use of colored threads was Yxchebelyax also a goddess. Spinning and weaving was for the most part women's work, and they are spoken of as industrious and skilful in the avocation. Bark and maguey-fibre were made into cloth by the Cakchiquels, and Oviedo mentions several plants whose fibre was worked into nets and ropes by the Nicaraguans. The numerous dye-woods which are still among the richest productions of the country in many parts, furnished the means of imparting to woven fabrics the bright hues of which the natives were so fond. Bright-colored feathers were highly prized and extensively used for decora tive purposes. Garments of feathers are spoken of, which were probably made as they were in Mexico by pasting the plumage in various ornamental figures on cotton fabric.[2]

[2] For slight notices of the various mechanical arts of the Mayas, see the following authorities: *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 276, 350, 521, tom. iv., pp. 33, 36, 105–9; *Torquemada, Monarq. Ind.*, tom. i., p. 354, tom. ii., p. 345; *Lael, Novus Orbis*, p. 329; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 4, 13, 187,

Digitized by Google

The following table will give the reader a clear idea of the Maya system of numeration as it existed in Yucatan; the definitions of some of the names are taken from the Maya dictionary, and may or may not have any application to the subject.

1	hun, 'paper'	60	oxhal, 3 × 20
2	ca, 'calabash'	61	huntucankal
3	ox, 'shelled corn'	70	lahucankal
4	can, 'serpent' or 'count'	71	buluctucankal
5	ho, 'entry'	80	cankal, 4 × 20
6	uac	81	hutuyokal
7	uuc	82	catuyokal
8	uaxac, 'something standing erect'	90	lahuyokal
9	bolon, *bol*, 'to roll or 'turn	100	ho-kal, 5 × 20
10	lahun, *lah*, 'a stone'	101	huntu uackal
11	buluc, 'drowned'	102	catu uackal
12	lachá, (lahun-ca), 10+2	110	lahu uackal
13	oxlahun, 3+10	115	holhu uackal
14	canlahun, 4+10	120	uackal, 6 × 20
15	holhun, (ho-lahun), 5+10	130	lahu uuckal
16	uaclahun, 6+10, etc.	131	buluc tu uuckal
20	hunkal, *kal*, 'neck,' or a measure, 1 × 20	140	uuckal, 7 × 20
21	huntukal, 1+20	141	huntu uaxackal
22	catukal, 2+20, etc.	160	uaxackal, 8 × 20, etc.
28	uaxactukal, or hunkal catac uaxac, 8+20, or 20+8 *catac*, 'and'	200	lahuncal, 10 × 20
		300	holhukal, 15 × 20
		400	hunbak, 1 × 400
		500	hotubak
30	luhucakal, 2 × 20—10 (?)	600	lahutubak
31	buluctukal, 11+20	806	cabak, 2 × 400
32	lahcatukal, 12+20	900	hotu yoxbak
33	oxlahutukal, 13+20, etc.	1,000	lahuyoxbak or hunpic (modern)
40	cakal, 2 × 20	1,200	oxbak, 3 × 400
41	huntuyoxkal	1,250	oxback catac lahuyoxkal, 3 × 400 + 50
42	catuyoxkal	2,000	capic (modern)
50	lahuyoxkal	8,000	hunpic (ancient)
51	buluctuyoxkal	16,000	ca pic (ancient)
		160,000	calab
		1,000,000	kinchil or huntzotzceli
		64,000,000	hunalau

196; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. ii., cap. xvii., dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. ix., lib. x., cap. ii., xiv.; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 116, 120, 128–9; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 100, 311–12, 495, 499–501; *Remesal, Hist. Chyapa*, p. 293; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. ii., dec. vi., lib. iii.; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 98, 102–3; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 203; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 268; *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 489; *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viajes*, tom. iii., p. 416; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.; *Id.*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 147–8; *Palacio, Carta*, p. 44; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., pp. 339, 346; *Foster's Pre-Hist. Races*, p. 212; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 69, 172, 563.

Digitized by Google

Thus the Mayas seem to have had uncompounded names for the numerals from 1 to 11, 20, 400, and 8,000, and to have formed all numbers by the addition or multiplication of these. The manner in which the combinations were made seems clear up to the number 40. Thus we have 10 and 2, 10 and 3, etc., up to 19; 20 is *hun-kal*, 21 is *hun-tu-kal*, etc., indicating that *tu*, which I do not find in any dictionary, is simply 'and,' or a sign of addition. The composition of *lahu-ca-kal* is clear only in the sense of *ten* from *twice twenty;* 40 is two twenties, 60 is three twenties, and so on regularly by twenties up to 400, for which a new word, *bak*, is introduced; after which the numbers proceed, twice 400, thrice 400, etc., to 8,000, *pic*, corresponding to the Nahua *xiquipilli*. But while the composition is intelligible so far as the multiples of 20 and 400 are concerned, it is far from clear in the case of the intermediate numbers. For instance, 40 is *ca-kal*, and forming 41, 42, etc., as 21 was formed from 20, we should have *hun-tu-ca-kal*, *ca-tu-ca-kal*, etc., instead of the names given, *hun-tu-yox-kal*, etc., or, interpreting this last name as the former were interpreted, we should have 61 instead of 41. The same observation may be made respecting every number not a multiple of 20 up to 400; that is, each number is less by 20 than the composition of its name would seem to indicate. If we gave to *tu* the meaning 'towards,' then *hun-tu-yox-kal* might be interpreted '1 (from 40) towards 60,' or 41; but in such a case the word for 21, *hun-tu-kal*, must be supposed to be a contraction of *hun-tu-ca-kal*, '1 (from 20) towards 40.' Other irregularities will be noticed by the reader in the numbers above 400. I have thought it best to call attention to what appears a strange inconsistency in this system of numeration, but which may present less difficulties to one better acquainted than I with the Maya language.[3]

[3] *Beltran de Santa Rosa Maria, Arte*, pp. 195–208; *Id.*, in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, MS. Troano*, tom. ii., pp. 92–9. 'El modo de contar de los In-

Digitized by Google

Authorities on the Maya calendar of Yucatan, the only one of which any details are known, are Bishop Landa and Don Juan Pio Perez. The latter was a modern writer who devoted much study to the subject, was perfectly familiar with the Maya language, and had in his possession or consulted elsewhere many ancient manucripts. There are also a few scattered remarks on the subject in the works of other writers.[4]

The Maya day was called *kin*, or 'sun'; *malik ocok kin* was the time just preceding sunrise; *hatzcab* was the time from sunrise to noon, which was called *chun-kin*, or 'middle of the day'; *tzelep kin* was the declining sun, or about three o clock P. M.; *oc na kin* was sunset. The night was *akab*, and midnight was *chumuc akab*. Other hours were indicated by the position of the sun in the daytime, and by that of some star—the morning star, the Pleiades, and the Gemini as Landa says—during the night.

The following table shows the names of the twenty days, with the orthography of different writers, and the meaning of the names so far as known:

Kan 'henequen string,' 'yellow,' 'serpent.'
Chicchán *chichan* would be 'small,' a thing that grows or increases slowly.
Cimi (Quimi, Cimij) preterite of *cimil*, 'to die.
Manik possibly 'passing wind.'
Lamat possibly 'abyss of water,' found as *lambat* in Oajaca calendar.
Muluc possibly 'reunion,' also in Chiapas calendar.
Oc 'what may be held in the palm of the hand,' 'foot,' 'leg.'
Chuen 'board,' or name of a tree, perhaps *chouen* of Quiché calendar.
Eb 'stairway,' or 'ladder.'
Ben (Been) perhaps Been; an ancient prince, or 'to spend with economy.'
Ix (Hix, Gix) possibly 'roughness.' The Quiché *itz* is 'sorcerer.'
Men 'builder.'
Cib (Quib) 'wax,' or 'copal.'

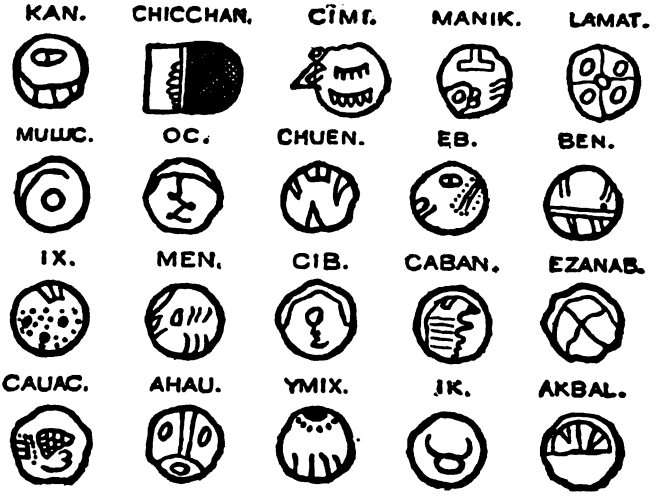
dios es de cinco en cinco, y de quatro cincos hazen veinte.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 206; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[4] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 202–316; *Perez, Cronologia Antigua de Yuc.*, with French translation, in *Id.*, pp. 366–429; English translation of the same in *Stephens' Yucatan*, vol. i., pp. 434–59; original Spanish also in the *Registro Yucateco; Orozco y Berra, Geografia*, pp. 103–8, 163–4; *Veytia, Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 137; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., pp. 65–6; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., pp. 104–14; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 462–7; *Id., MS. Troano*, tom. i., pp. 73–97.

Digitized by Google

Caban
Ezanab (Ecnab, Edznab)
Cauac
Ahau (Ajau) 'king,' beginning of the period of 24 (or 20) years.
Ymix *Imox*, in Quiché calendar is the Mexican Cipactli.
Ik (Yk) 'wind,' or 'breath.'
Akbal In Quiché, 'vase.'

The hieroglyphics by which the names of the days were expressed are shown in the accompanying cut in their proper order of succession—Kan, Chicchan, etc., to Akbal; but it is to be noted that although this order was invariable, yet the month might begin with any one of the four days Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac.



DAYS OF THE MAYA CALENDAR.

The month, made up as I have said of twenty days, was called *u*, or 'moon,' indicating perhaps that time was originally computed by lunar calculations. It was also called *uinal*, a word whose signification is not satisfactorily given. The year contained eighteen months, whose names, with the hieroglyphics by which they were written, are shown in the cut on the opposite page, in their order, Pop, Uo, Zip, etc., to Cumhu.

Digitized by Google

MONTHS OF THE MAYA CALENDAR.

Not only did the months succeed each other always in the same order, but Pop was always the first month of the year, which began on a date corresponding to July 16th of our calendar, a date which varies only forty-eight hours from the time when the sun passes the zenith—an approximation as accurate as could be expected from observations made without instruments.

The following table shows the names of the months, their meaning, and the day on which each began, according to our calendar:

Pop (Poop, Popp) 'mat'	July 16
Uo (Woo, Voo) 'Frog'	Aug. 5
Zip (Cijp) name of a tree, 'defect,' 'swollen'	Aug. 25
Tzoz (Zoc, Zotz) 'bat'	Sept. 14
Tzec (Zeec) possibly 'discourse,' 'skull	Oct. 4
Xul 'end'	Oct. 24
Yaxkin (Dze-Yaxkin, Tze Yaxkin) 'beginning of summer'	Nov. 13

Digitized by Google

Mol (Mool) 'to reunite'	Dec. 3
Chen (Cheen) 'well'	Dec. 23
Yax (Yaax) 'green' or 'blue' or 'first'	Jan. 12
Zac (Zak) 'clear,' 'white'	Feb. 1
Ceh (Qeh, Quej, Queh) 'deer'	Feb. 21
Mac, 'to close,' 'lid,' a measure	Mar. 13
Kankin, 'yellow sun'	Apr. 2
Muan (Moan) 'showery day,' the bird called 'ara'	Apr. 22
Pax (Paax) a musical instrument	May 12
Kayab, 'singing'	June 1
Cumhu (Cumkú) noise of an explosion, as of thunder[5]	June 21

[5] Cogolludo omits the month Tzoz, and inserts a month Vaycab, Vtuz Kin, or Vlobol Kin, between Cumhu and Pop. He also in one place puts Cuchhaab in the place of Kan. *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 185–6. See also *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 466–7; *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.*, p. 22. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, in his attempted interpretation of the Manuscript Traono, gives the following curious etymologies of the names of these months: 'Le vocable *pop*, que Beltran écrit long, *poop*, signifie la natte, "estera ò petate," dit Pio Perez, qui donne encore à *pop* le sens d'un arbrisseau ou d'une plante qu'il ne décrit point, mais qui, fort probablement, doit être de la nature des joncs dont on fait les différentes espèces de nattes connues au Yucatan. En prenant ce vocable avec l'orthographe de Beltran, *poop* se composerait de *po*, primitif inusité, exprimant l'enflure, la vapeur, l'expansion par la chaleur d'une matière dans une enveloppe, et de *op*, briser, rompre pour sortir, crevasser par la force du feu....Beltran ajoute que *uo* désigne en outre le têtard, une sorte pe petit crapaud et un fruit indigène, appelé *pitahaya* aux Antilles....*uo*, au rapport du même auteur énonce l'idée des caractères de l'écriture, en particulier des voyelles.... Cet hiéroglyphe paraît assez difficile à expliquer. Sa section inférieure renferme un caractère qui semble, en raccourci, celui de la lettre *h*, et la section supérieure est identique avec le signe que je crois une variante du *ti*, localité, lieu. Ce qu'on pourrait interpréter par "le possesseur enfermé du lieu," indice du têtard, de l'embryon dans son enveloppe (?). L'ensemble de l'idée géologique, qui a présidé à la composition du calendrier maya, se poursuit dans les noms des mois, ainsi que dans ceux des jours. Après le marécage, déjà crevassé par le chaleur, apparaît le têtard, l'embryon de la grenouille, laissé au fond de la bourbe, symbole de l'embryon du feu volcanique couvant sous la terre glacée et qui ne tardera pas à rompre son enveloppe, ainsi qu'on le verra dans les noms des mois suivants....*Zip*, analysé, donne *Zi ip*, bois à brûler qui se gonfle outre mesure, sens intéressant qui rappelle le grand arbre du monde, gonflé outre mesure par les gaz et les feux volcaniques, avant d'éclater....J'inclinerais à penser que Landa a voulu exprimer par *tzoz*, non la chauve-souris *zoe*, mais *tzotz*, la chevelure, vocable qui dans toutes les langues du groupe mexico-guatémalien indique symboliquement la chevelure de l'eau, la surface ondoyante, remuante de la mer, d'un lac ou d'une rivière: c'est à quoi semblent correspondre les signes de la grace qui se présentent dans l'image du mois *Tzoz*. Il s'agirait donc ici de la chevelure, de la surface des eaux gelées au-dessus de la terre et que la force du feu volcanique commence à rider, à faire grimacer, ainsi que l'énonce le nom du mois suivant....Tzec....Ce que l'auteur du calendrier a voulu exprimer, c'est bien probablement une tête de mort de singe, aux dents grimaçantes, image assez commune dans les fantaisies mythologiques de l'Amérique centrale et qu'on rétrouve sculptée fréquemment dans les belles ruines de Copan....Une intention plus profonde encore se révèle dans ces têtes de singes. Car si les danses et les mouvements de ces animaux symbolisent, dans le sens mystérieux du *Popol Vuh*, le soulèvement momentané des montagnes à la surface de la mer des Caraïbes, leurs têtes, avec l'expression de la mort, ne sauraient faire allusion, probablement, qu'à la

Digitized by Google

The year was called *haab*, and consisted of the eighteen months already named—which would made 360 days—and of five supplementary or intercalary days, to complete the full number of 365. These intercalary days were called *xma kaba kin*, or 'nameless days,' and also *uayab* or *nayeb haab*, *u na haab*, *nayab chab*, *u yail kin*, *u yail haab*, *u tuz kin*, or *u lobol kin*, which may mean 'bed' or 'chamber' of the year, 'mother of the year,' 'bed of creation,' 'travail of the year,' 'lying days,' or 'bad days,' etc. They were added at the end of each year, after the last day of Cumhu, and although they are called nameless, and were perhaps never spoken of by name, yet they were actually reckoned like the rest—that is, if the last day of Cumhu was Akbal, the five intercalary days would be reckoned as Kan, Chicchan, Cimi, Manik, and Lamat, so that the new year, or the month of Pop, would begin with the day Muluc.

Besides this division of time into years, months, and days, there was another division carried along simultaneously with the first, into twenty-eight periods of thirteen days each,[6] which may for convenience be termed weeks, although the natives did not apply any name to the period of thirteen days, and perhaps did not regard it as a definite period at all, but used the number thirteen as a sacred number from some superstitious motives;[7] yet its use produces some curious complications in the calendar, of which it is a most peculiar feature. The name of each day was preceded by a numeral showing its position in the week, and

disparition de ces montagnes sous les eaux, où elles continuèrent à grimacer, dans les récifs et les *Ronfleurs*, comme elles avaient fait grimacer la glace, en se soulevant.' As it would occupy too much space to give the Abbé's explanations of all the months, the above will suffice for specimens. See *MS. Troano*, tom. i., pp. 98–108.

[6] Landa says, however, 'vingt-sept trezaines et neuf jours, sans compter les supplémentaires.' *Relacion*, p. 235.

[7] The number 13 may come from the original reckoning by lunations, 26 days being about the time the moon is seen above the horizon in each revolution, 13 days of increase, and 13 of decrease. *Perez*, in *Landa*, *Relacion*, pp. 366–8. Or it may have been a sacred number before the invention of the calendar, being the number of gods of high rank. *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, *Ib.*

Digitized by Google

these numerals proceeded regularly from one to thirteen and then began again at one. Thus 1 Kan meant 'Kan, the first day of the week'; 12 Cauac, 'Cauac, the twelfth day of the week,' etc. It is probable also that the days of the month were numbered regularly from 1 to 20, as events are spoken of as occurring on the 18th of Zip, etc., but the numeral relating to the week was the most prominent. The table shows the succession of days and weeks for several months.

Day of Week.	1 Pop.	Day of Month.	Day of Week.	2 Uo.	Day of Month.	Day of Week.	3 Zip.	Day of Month.	Day of Week.	4 Tzoz.	Day of Month.
1	Kan.....	1	8	Kan.....	1	2	Kan.....	1	9	Kan.....	1
2	Chicchán..	2	9	Chicchán..	2	3	Chicchán..	2	10	Chicchán..	2
3	Cimi.....	3	10	Cimi.....	3	4	Cimi.....	3	11	Cimi.....	3
4	Manik....	4	11	Manik....	4	5	Manik....	4	12	Manik....	4
5	Lamat....	5	12	Lamat....	5	6	Lamat....	5	13	Lamat....	5
6	Muluc....	6	13	Muluc....	6	7	Muluc....	6	1	Muluc....	6
7	Oc.	7	1	Oc.	7	8	Oc.	7	2	Oc.	7
8	Chuen.. ..	8	2	Chuen.. ..	8	9	Chuen.. ..	8	3	Chuen.. ..	8
9	Eb.....	9	3	Eb.....	9	10	Eb.	9	4	Eb.....	9
10	Ben	10	4	Ben	10	11	Ben.....	10	5	Ben	10
11	Ix..	11	5	Ix..	11	12	Ix..	11	6	Ix..	11
12	Men..	12	6	Men..	12	13	Men..	12	7	Men..	12
13	Cib.	13	7	Cib..	13	1	Cib.....	13	8	Cib..	13
1	Caban	14	8	Caban....	14	2	Caban.. ..	14	9	Caban	14
2	Ezanab. ..	15	9	Ezanab....	15	3	Ezanab. ..	15	10	Ezanab....	15
3	Cauac	16	10	Cauac	16	4	Cauac	16	11	Cauac	16
4	Ahau.....	17	11	Ahau.....	17	5	Ahau.....	17	12	Ahau.	17
5	Ymix.....	18	12	Ymix.	18	6	Ymix... ..	18	13	Ymix.... .	18
6	Ik..	19	13	Ik..	19	7	Ik..	19	1	Ik..	19
7	Akbal	20	1	Akbal	20	8	Akbal	20	2	Akbal	20

Of the twenty days, only four—Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac—could begin either a month or a year. Whatever the name of the first day of the first month, every month in the year began with the same day, accompanied, however, by a different numeral. The numeral of the first day for the first month being 1, that of the second would be 8, and so on for the other months in the following order: 2, 9, 3, 10, 4, 11, 5, 12, 6, 13, 7, 1, 8, 2, 9, 3. To ascertain the numeral for any month 7 must be added to that of the pre-

Digitized by Google

ceding month, and 13 subtracted from the sum if it be more than 13.

By extending the table of days and months over a period of years—an extension which my space does not permit me to make in these pages—the reader will observe that by reason of the intercalary days, and of the fact that 28 weeks of 13 days each make only 364 instead of 365 days, if the first year began with the day 1 Kan, the second would begin with 2 Muluc, the third with 3 Ix, the fourth with 4 Cauac, the fifth with 5 Kan, and so on in regular order; therefore the years were named by the day on which they began, 1 Kan, 2 Muluc, 3 Ix, etc., since the year would begin with any one of these combinations only once in 52 years. Thus the four names of the days Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac served as signs for the years, precisely as the signs *tochtli*, *calli*, *tecpatl*, and *acatl* with their numerals served among the Aztecs. In the circle in which the Mayas are said to have inscribed their calendar, these four signs are located in the east, north, west, and south respectively, and are considered the 'carriers of the years.'

It will be seen that, starting from 1 Kan, although every fifth year began with the day, or sign, Kan, yet the numeral 1 did not occur again in connection with any first day until thirteen years had passed away; so that 1 Kan or Kan alone not only named the year which it began, but also a period of thirteen years, which is spoken of as a 'week of years' or an 'indiction.' The first indiction of thirteen years beginning with 1 Kan, the second began with 1 Muluc, the third with 1 Ix, and the fourth with 1 Cauac.

After the indiction whose sign was 1 Cauac, the next would begin again with 1 Kan; that is, 52 years would have elapsed, and this period of 52 years was called a Katun, corresponding with the Aztec cycle, as explained in a preceding chapter.

Thus we see that the four signs Kan, Muluc, Ix, and Cauac served to name certain days of

Digitized by Google

the month; they also named the years of the indiction, since in connection with certain numerals they were the first days of these years; they further named the indictions of the Katun, of which with the numeral 1 they were also the first days; and finally they named, or may have named, the Katun itself which they began, also in connection with the numeral 1. How the Katuns were actually named we are not informed. The completion of each Katun was regarded by the Mayas as a most critical and important epoch, and was celebrated with most imposing religious ceremonies. Also a monument is said to have been raised, on which a large stone was placed crosswise, also called *katun* as a memorial of the cycle that had passed. It is unfortunate that some of these monuments cannot be discovered and identified among the ruins. Thus far the Maya calendar is, after a certain amount of study, sufficiently intelligible; and is, except in its system of nomenclature, essentially identical with that of the Nahuas. The calendars of the Quichés, Cakchiquels, Chiapanecs, and the natives of Soconusco, are also the same so far as their details are known. The names of months and days in some of these calendars will be given in this chapter.

Another division of time not found in the Nahua calendar was that into the Ahau Katunes. The system according to which this division was made is clear enough if we may accept the statements of Sr Perez; several of which rest on authorities that are unknown to all but himself. According to this writer, the Ahau Katun was a period of 24 years, divided into two parts; the first part of 20 years was enclosed in the native writings by a square, and called *amaytun, lamaiyte,* or *lamaytun;* and the second, of the other four years, was placed as a 'pedestal' to the others, and therefore called *chek oc katun,* or *lath oc katun.* These four years were considered as intercalary and unfortunate, like the five supplementary days of the year, and were sometimes called *a yail haab,* 'years of

Digitized by Google

pain.' This Katun of 24 years was called Ahau from its first day, and the natives began to reckon from 13 Ahau Katun, because it began on the day 13 Ahau, on which day some great event probably took place in their history. The day Ahau at which these periods began was the second day of such years as began with Cauac; and 13 Ahau, the first day of the first period, was the second of the year 12 Cauac; 2 Ahau was the second day of the year 1 Cauac, etc. If we construct a table of the years from 12 Cauac in regular order, we shall find that if the first period was 13 Ahau Katun because it began with 13 Ahau, the second, 24 years later, was 11 Ahau Katun, beginning with 11 Ahau; the third was 9 Ahau Katun, etc. That is, the Ahau Katunes, instead of being numbered 1, 2, 3, etc., in regular order, was preceded by the numerals 13, 11, 9, 7, 5, 3, 1, 12, 10, 8, 6, 4, and 2. 13 of these Ahau Katunes, making 312 years, constituted a great cycle, and we are told that it was by means of the Ahau Katunes and great cycles of 312 years that historical events were generally recorded.

Sr Perez states that the year 1392 of our era was the Maya year 7 Cauac, 'according to all sources of information, confirmed by the testimony of Don Cosme de Burgos, one of the conquerors, and a writer (but whose observations have been lost).' Therefore the 8 Ahau Katun began on the second day of that year; the 6 Ahau Katun, 24 years later, in 1416; the 4 Ahau in 1440; the 2, in 1464; the 13, in 1488; the 11, in 1512; the 9, in 1536; the 7, in 1560; the 5, in 1584; the 3, in 1608, etc. As a test of the accuracy of his system of Ahau Katunes, the author says that he found in a certain manuscript the death of a distinguished individual, Ahpulá, mentioned as having taken place in the sixth year of Ahau Katun, when the first day of the year was 4 Kan, on the day of 9 Ix, the 18th day of the month Zip. Now the 13 Ahau began in the year 12 Cauac, or 1488; the 6th year from 1488 was 1493, or 4 Kan; if the month of

Digitized by Google

Pop began with 4 Kan, then the 3d month, Zip, began with 5 Kan, and the 18th of that month fell on 9 Ix, or September 11th. All this may be readily verified by filling out the table in regular order.

On the other hand, we have Landa's statement that the Ahau Katun was a period of 20 years; he gives, however, the same order of the numerals as Perez—that is, 13, 11, 9, 7, 5, 3, 1, 12, 10, 8, 6, 4, 2. He also states that the year 1541 was the beginning of 11 Ahau; but if 11 Ahau was the second day of 1541, that year must have been 10 Cauac, and 1561, 20 years later, would have been 4 Cauac, the second day of which would have been 5 Ahau; which does not agree at all with the order of numerals. In fact, no other number of years than 24 for each Ahau Katun will produce this order of numerals, which fact is perhaps the strongest argument in favor of Sr Perez' system. Cogolludo also says that the Mayas counted their time by periods of 20 years, called Katunes, each divided into 5 sub-periods of four years each. Sr Perez admits that other writers reckon the Ahau Katun as 20 years, but claims that they have fallen into error through disregarding the *chek oc katun*, or 4 unlucky years of the period. A Maya manuscript furnished and translated by Perez is published by Stephens and in Landa's work, and repeatedly speaks of the Ahau Katun as a period of 20 years. Again, this is the very manuscript in which the death of Ahpulá was announced, and the date of that event is given as 6 years *before the completion of 13 Ahau*, instead of the sixth year of that period as stated in the calculations of Sr Perez; and besides, the date is distinctly given as 1536, instead of 1403, which dates will in no wise agree with the system explained, or with the date of 1392 given as the beginning of 8 Ahau. Moreover, as I have already said, several of the statements on which Perez bases his computations are unsupported by any authority save manuscripts unknown to all but himself. Such are the statements

Digitized by Google

that the Ahau Katun began on the 2d day of a year Cauac; that 13 Ahau was reckoned as the first; and that 8 Ahau began in 1392. These facts, together with various other inaccuracies in the writings of Sr Perez, are sufficient to weaken our faith in his system of the Ahau Katunes; and since the other writers give no explanations, this part of the Maya calendar must remain shrouded in doubt until new sources of information shall be found.[8] The following quotation, made by Sr Perez from a manuscript, contains all that is known respecting what was possibly another method of reckoning time: "There was another number which they called *Ua Katun*, and which served them as a key to find the Katunes, according to the order of its march, it falls on the days of *uayeb haab*, and revolves to the end of certain years: Katunes 13, 9, 5, 1, 10, 6, 2, 11, 7, 3, 12, 8, 4."

We have seen that the Maya year, by means of intercalary days added at the end of the month Cumhu, was made to include 365 days. How the additional six hours necessary to make the length of the year agree with the solar movements were intercalated without disturbing the complicated order already described, is altogether a matter of conjecture. The most plausible theory is perhaps that a day was added at the end of every four years, this day being called by the same name and numeral as the one preceding it, or in other words, no account being made of this day in the

[8] 'Contaban sus eras, y edades, que ponian en sus libros de veinte en veinte años, y por lustros de quatro en quatro.... Llegando estos lustros a cinco, que ajustan veinte años, llamaban *Katùn*, y ponian vna piedra labrada sobre otra labrada, fixada con cal, y arena en las paredes de sus Templos, y casas de los Sacerdotes, como se vè oy en los edificios.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 186. 'Llaman a esta cuenta en su lengua Uazlazon Katun que quiere dezir la *gerra* de los Katunes.' *Landa, Relacion*, p. 313. 'Para cuenta de veintenas de años en calendarios de los indios yucatecos, lo mismo que las indicciones nuestras; pero de mas años que estas, eran trece *ahaues* que contenian 260 años, que era para ellos un siglo.' *Beltran de Santa Rosa María, Arte*, p. 204. Brasseur de Bourbourg is disposed to reject the system of Sr Perez, but he in his turn makes several errors in his notes on the subject. In *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 402–13, 428. The Maya MS. referred to in the text is found with its translation in *Id.*, pp. 420–9, and *Stephens' Yucatan*, vol. ii., pp. 465–9.

Digitized by Google

almanac, although it was perhaps indicated by some sign in the hieroglyphics of these days. The Nicaraguan calendar was practically identical with that of the Aztecs, even in nomenclature, although there were naturally some slight variations in orthography. The following table shows the names of the months in several other Maya calendars, whose system so far as known is the same as that in Yucatan:

	Quiché.[9]	Cakchiquel.[9]	Chiapas and Soconusco.[10]
1	Nabe Tzih '1st word'	I Bota 'rolls of mats'	Tzun
2	U Cab Tzih '2d word'	Qatic 'common seed'	Batzul
3	Rox Tzih '3d word'	Izcal 'sprouts'	Sisac
4	Che 'tree'	Pariche 'firewood'	Muetasac
5	Tecoxepual	Tocaxequal 'seeding time'	Moc
6	Tzibe Pop 'painted mat'	Nabey Tumuzuz '1st flying ants'	Olalti
7	Zak 'white'	Rucab Tumuzuz '2d flying ants'	Ulol
8	Chab 'bow'	Cibixic 'time of smoke'	Oquinajual
9	Huno Bix Gih '1st song of sun'	Uchum 'resowing time'	Veh
10	Nabe Mam '1st old man'	Nabey Mam '1st old man'	Elech
11	U Cab Mam '2d old man'	Ru Cab Mam '2d old man'	Nichqum
12	Nabe Ligin Ga '1st soft hand'	Ligin Ka 'soft hand'	Sbanvinquil
13	U Cab Ligin Ga '2d soft hand'	Nabey Togic '1st harvest'	Xchibalvinquil
14	Nabe Pach '1st generation'	Ru Cab Togic '2d harvest'	Yoxibalvinquil
15	U Cab Pach '2d generation'	Nabey Pach '1st generation'	Xchanibalvinquil
16	Tziquin Gih 'time of birds'	Ru Cab Pach '2d generation'	Poin
17	Tzizi Lagan 'to sew the standard'	Tziquin Gih 'time of birds'	Mux
18	Cakam 'time of red flowers'	Cakam 'time of red flowers'	Yaxquin

[9] The Quiché year, according to Basseta, began on December 24th of our calendar. Following an anonymous MS. history of Guatemala, the Cakchiquel year began on January 31st; and the 1st of Parichè in 1707 was on January 21st. *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 466–7.

[10] 'Algunos de estos nombres estan en lengua zotzil, y los demas se ignora en qué idioma se hallan.' *Pineda*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, tom. iii., p. 408; *Orozco y Berra, Geografia*, pp. 205–6.

Digitized by Google

The names of the days in the same calendars are as follows:

	Quiché and Cakchiquel.[11]	Chiapas (Tzendal?) Soconusco.[12]
1	Imox 'sword-fish'	Imox or Mox
2	Ig spirit or 'breath'	Igh or Ygh
3	Akbal 'chaos'	Votan
4	Qat 'lizard'	Chanan or Ghanan
5	Can 'snake'	Abah or Abagh
6	Camey 'death'	Tox
7	Quieh 'deer'	Moxic
8	Ganel 'rabbit'	Lambat
9	Toh 'shower'	Molo or Mulu
10	Tzy 'dog'	Elab or Elah
11	Batz 'monkey'	Batz
12	Ci or Balam, 'broom,' 'tiger'	Evob or Enob
13	Ah 'cane'	Been
14	Yiz or Itz 'sorcerer'	Hix
15	Tziquin 'bird'	Tziquin
16	Ahmak 'fisher, 'owl'	Chabin or Chahin
17	Noh 'temperature'	Chic or Chiue
18	Tihax 'obsidian'	Chinax
19	Caok 'rain'	Cahogh or Cabogh
20	Hunahpu 'shooter of blowpipe'	Aghual

I shall treat of the Maya hieroglyphics by giving first the testimony of the early writers respecting the existence of a system of writing in the sixteenth century; then an account of the very few manuscripts that have been preserved, together with illustrative plates from both manuscripts and sculptured stone tablets; to be followed by Bishop Landa's alphabet, a mention of Brasseur de Bourbourg's attempted interpretation of the native writings, and a few speculations of other modern writers on the subject. The statements of the early writers, although conclusive, are not numerous, and I will consequently translate them literally.

Landa says that "the sciences which they taught were—to read and write with their books and characters with which they wrote, and with the figures which signified (explained, or took the place of?) writings.

[11] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. iii., pp. 462–3.

[12] *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, ubi sup.; *Boturini, Idea*, p. 118; *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. ii., pp. 356–7; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 104; *Orozco y Berra, Geografia*, p. 105; Veytia, *Hist. Ant. Mej.*, tom. i., p. 137, makes Votan the first month; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 66; *Pineda*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, tom. iii., p. 344.

Digitized by Google

They wrote their books on a large leaf, doubled in folds, and enclosed between two boards which they made very fine (decorated); and they wrote on both sides in columns, according to the folds; the paper they made of the roots of a tree, and gave it a white varnish on which one could write well; these sciences were known by certain men of high rank (only), who were therefore more esteemed, although they did not use the art in public." "These people also used certain characters or letters with which they wrote in their books their antiquities and their sciences; and by means of these and of figures and of certain signs in their figures they understood their things, and made them understood, and taught them. We found among them a great number of books of these letters of theirs, and because they had nothing in which there were not superstitions and falsities of the devil, we burned them all, at which they were exceedingly sorrowful and troubled."[13] According to Cogolludo, "in the time of their infidelity the Indians of Yucatan had books, made of the bark of trees, with a white and durable varnish, ten or twelve yards long, which by folding were reduced to a span. In these they painted with colors the account of their years, wars, floods, hurricanes, famines, and other events." "The son of the only god of whose existence, as I have said, they were aware, and whom they called Ytzamná, was the man, as I believe, who first invented the characters which served the Indians as letters, because they called the latter also Ytzamná."[14] The Itzas, as Villagutierre tells us, had "characters and figures painted on the bark of trees, each leaf, or tablet, being about a span long, as thick as a real de à ocho (a coin), folded both ways like a screen, which they called *analtees*."[15] Mendieta states that the Mexicans had no letters, "al-

[13] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 44, 316.

[14] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 185, 196. The same author quotes Fuensalida to the effect that the Itza priests still kept in his time a record of past events in a book 'like a history which they call Analte.' *Id.*, p. 507.

[15] *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 393–4. 'Analtehes, ò Historias, es vna misma cosa.' *Id.*, p. 352.

Digitized by Google

though in the land of Champoton it is said that such were found, and that they understood each other by means of them, as we do by means of ours."[16] Acosta says that in Yucatan "there were books of leaves, bound or folded after their manner, in which the learned Indians had their division of their time, knowledge of plants and animals and other natural objects, and their antiquities; a thing of great curiosity and diligence."[17] The Maya priests "were occupied in teaching their sciences and in writing books upon them."[18] In Guatemala, according to Benzoni, "the thing of all others at which the Indians have been most surprised has been our reading and writing. . . . Nor could they imagine among themselves in what way white paper painted with black could speak."[19] Peter Martyr gives quite a long description of the native wood-bound books, which he does not refer particularly to Yucatan, although Brasseur, apparently with much reason, believes they were the Maya *analtés* rather than the regular Aztec picture-writings. The description is as follows, in the quaint English of the translator: "They make not their books square leafe by leafe, but extend the matter and substance thereof into many cubites. They reduce them into square peeces, not loose, but with binding, and flexible Bitumen so conioyned, that being compact of wooden table bookes, they may seeme to haue passed the hands of some curious workman that ioyned them together. Which way soeuer the book bee opened, two written sides offer themselues to the view, two pages appeare and as many lye vnder, vnlesse you stretch them in length: for there are many leaues ioyned together vnder one leafe. The Characters are very vnlike ours, written after our manner, lyne after lyne, with characters like small dice, fishookes, snares,

[16] *Mendieta, Hist. Eccles.*, p. 143.
[17] *Acosta, Hist. de las Ynd.*, p. 407; *Clavigero, Storia Ant. del Messico*, tom. ii., p. 187.
[18] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii.
[19] *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, fol. 109-10.

Digitized by Google

files, starres, & other such like formes and shapes. Wherein they immitate almost the Egyptian manner of writing, and betweene the lines they paint the shapes of men, & beasts, especially of their kings & nobles. . . . .They make the former wooden table bookes also with art to content and delight the beholder. Being shut, they seeme to differ nothing from our bookes, in these they set downe in writing the rites, and the customes of their laws, sacrifices, ceremonies, their computations, etc."[20]

Respecting hieroglyphic records in Chiapas and Guatemala, we have the statement of Ordoñez that "Votan wrote a work upon the origin of the Indians," and that he, Ordoñez, had a copy of the book in his possession; a complaint in the Quiché annals known as the Popol Vuh, that the 'national book' containing the ancient records of their people had been lost; and finally, the reported discovery and destruction in Soconusco of archives on stone by Nuñez de la Vega in 1691. All this amounts to little save as indicating the ancient use of hieroglyphics by the followers of Votan, a fact sufficiently proven, as we shall see, by the engraved tablets of Palenque and Copan.[21] The Nicaraguans at the time of the Conquest had records

[20] *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. viii., or Latin edition of Cologne, 1574, p. 354; also quoted in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, MS. Troano*, tom. i., pp. 2–3; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, p. 77. Carli tells us that the inhabitants of Amatitlan in Guatemala were especially expert in making palm-leaf paper for writing. *Cartas*, pt ii., p. 104; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 470. References to modern authors, who, except possibly Medel, have no other sources of information than those I have quoted, are as follows: 'Dans le Yucathan, on m'a montré des espèces de lettres et de caractères dont se servent les habitants....Ils employaient au lieu de papier l'écorce de certaines arbres, dont ils enlevaient des morceaux qui avaient deux aunes de long et un quart d'aune de large. Cette écorce était de l'épaisseur d'une peau de veau et se pliait comme un linge. L'usage de cette écriture n'était pas généralement répandu, et elle n'était connue que des prêtres et de quelques caciques.' *Medel*, in *Nouvelles Annales des Voy.*, 1843, tom. xcvii., pp. 49–50; *Waldeck, Voy. Pitt.*, p. 40; *Squier's Cent. Amer.*, p. 552; *Morelet, Voyage*, tom. i., p. 191; *Fancourt's Hist. Yuc.*, p. 119; *Carrillo*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, 2da época, tom. iii., pp. 269–70; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. 79.

[21] *Ordoñez, Hist. Cielo, etc.*, MS., and *Nuñez de la Vega, Constit. Diocces.*, quoted by *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., pp. 71, 74; *Id., Popol Vuh*, p. 5; *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, p. 208; *Pineda*, in *Soc. Mex. Geog., Boletin*, tom. iii., pp. 345–6.

Digitized by Google

painted in colors upon skin and paper, undoubtedly identical in their figures with those of the Nahuas, to whom the civilized people of Nicaragua were nearly related in blood and language. No specimens of these southern hieroglyphics have, however, been preserved. Oviedo and Herrera slightly describe the paintings, and later writers have followed them.[22]

Of the aboriginal Maya manuscripts three specimens only, so far as I know, have been preserved. These are the *Mexican Manuscript No 2*, of the Imperial Library at Paris; the *Dresden Codex;* and the *Manuscript Troano.* Concerning the first, we only know of its existence and the similarity of its characters to those of the other two and of the sculptured tablets. The document was photographed in 1864 by order of the French government, but I am not aware that the photographs have ever been given to the public The *Dresden Codex* is preserved in the Royal Library of Dresden. A complete copy was published in Lord Kingsborough's collection of Mexican antiquities, and fragments were also reproduced by Humboldt. It was purchased in Vienna by the librarian Götz in 1739, but beyond this nothing whatever is known of its history and origin. It was published by Kingsborough as an Aztec picture-writing, although its characters present little if any resemblance to those of its companion documents in the collection. Its form was also different from all the rest, since it is written on both sides of five leaves of maguey paper. At the time of its publication, however, the existence of any but Aztec hieroglyphics in America was unknown. Mr Stephens, in his antiquarian exploration of Central America, at once noticed the similarity of its figures to those of the sculptured hieroglyphics found there, but he used this similarity to prove the identity of the northern and southern nations, since it

[22] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 36; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Gallatin*, in *Amer. Ethno. Soc., Transact.*, vol. i., p. 8; *Malte-Brun, Précis de la Géog.*, tom. vi., p. 472; *Squier's Nicaragua* (ed. 1856), vol. ii., pp. 347–8.

Digitized by Google

did not occur to him that the Aztec origin of the Dresden document was a mere supposition. Mr Brantz Mayer, fully aware of the differences between this and other reputed Mexican picture-writings, went so far as to pronounce it the only genuine Aztec document that he had seen. There can be no reasonable doubt, however, at this day, that the Maya and Nahua (or Maya and Aztec, since some authors will not agree with my use of the term Nahua) hieroglyphic systems were practically distinct, although it would be hardly wise to decide that they are absolutely without affinities in some of their details. The accompanying cut from Stephens' work shows a small fragment of the Dresden Codex.[23]

FRAGMENT OF THE DRESDEN CODEX.

The *Manuscript Troano* was found about the year 1865 in Madrid by the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg,

[23] *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. iii., No. 2; *Humboldt, Vues*, tom. ii., pp. 268–71, pl. xvi. Mr Prescott, *Mex.*, vol. i., pp. 104–5, says that this document bears but little resemblance to other Aztec MSS., and that it indicates a much higher stage of civilization; but he also fails to detect any stronger likeness to the bas-reliefs of Palenque, of which latter, however, he probably had a very imperfect idea. It cannot be interpreted, for 'even if a Rosetta stone were discovered in Mexico, there is no Indian tongue to supply the key or interpreter.' *Mayer, Mex. as it Was*, pp. 258–9. 'Le Codex de Dresde, et un autre de la Bibliothèque Nationale à Paris, bien qu'offrant quelque rapport avec les Rituels, échappent à toute interprétation. Ils appartiennent, ainsi que les inscriptions de Chiappa et du Yucatan à une écriture plus élaborée, comme incrustée et calculiforme, dont on croit trouver des traces dans toutes les parties très-anciennement policées des deux Amériques.' *Aubin*, in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. i., p. lxxi. See *Stephens' Cent. Amer.*, vol. ii., pp. 342, 453–5; *Id., Yucatan*, vol. ii., pp. 292, 453.

Digitized by Google

and was reproduced in fac-simile by a chromo-lithographic process by the Commission Scientifique du Mexique, under the auspices of the French Government. Its name comes from that of its possessor in Madrid, Sr Tro y Ortolano, and nothing whatever is known of its origin; two or three other old American manuscripts are reported to have been brought to light in Spain since the publication of this. The original is written on a strip of maguey paper about fourteen feet long and nine inches wide, the surface of which is covered with a whitish varnish, on which the figures are painted in black, red, blue, and brown. It is folded fanlike into thirty-five folds, presenting, when shut, much the appearance of a modern large octavo volume. The hieroglyphics cover both sides of the paper, and the writing is consequently divided into seventy pages, each about five by nine inches, having been apparently executed after the paper was folded, so that the folding does not interfere with the written matter. One of the pages as a specimen is shown in the following plate, an exact copy, save in size and color, of the original.

The regular lines of written characters are uniformly in black, while the pictorial portions, or what may perhaps be considered representative signs, are in red and brown, chiefly the former, and the blue appears for the most part as a background in some of the pages. A few of the pages are slightly damaged, and all the imperfections are, as it is claimed, faithfully reproduced in the published copy, which with the editor's comments fills two quarto volumes in the series published by the commission mentioned.[24]

The plates on the following pages from the works of Stephens and Waldeck I present as specimens of the Maya writing, as it is found carved in stone in Yucatan, Honduras, and Chiapas. For particulars respecting the ruins in connection with which they were discovered, I refer the reader to Volume IV. of

[24] *Brasseur de Bourbourg, MS. Troano; Études sur le système graphique et la langue des Mayas*, Paris, 1869–70, 4°, 2 vols, 70 colored plates.

Digitized by Google

PAGE OF MANUSCRIPT TROANO.

Digitized by Google

FIG. 1. ALTAR INSCRIPTION FROM COPAN.

FIG. 2. TABLET FROM CHICHEN.

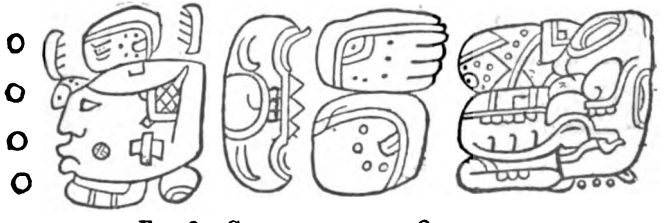


FIG. 3. CHALCHIUITE FROM OCOCINGO.

Digitized by Google

FIG. 4. TABLET FROM PALENQUE.

Digitized by Google

this work. Fig. 1 represents the hieroglyphics sculptured on the top of an altar at Copan, in Honduras, the thirty-six groups cover a space nearly six feet square. Fig. 2 is a tablet set in the interior wall of a building in Chichen, Yucatan. The tablet is placed over the doorways and extends the whole length of the room, forty-three feet; only a part, however, is shown in the cut. Fig. 3 is a full-size representation of the carving on a green stone, or chalchiuite, found at Ococingo, Chiapas. I take it from the English translation of Morelet's Travels. Many of the monoliths of Copan have a line of hieroglyphics on their side. Plates representing specimens of these monuments will be given in Volume IV. Fig. 4 shows a portion of the hieroglyphic inscriptions on the famous 'tablet of the cross' at Palenque.[25]

I have given on a preceding page in this chapter the signs by which the natives of Yucatan expressed the names of their days and months, taken from the work of Bishop Landa. The same author has also preserved a Maya alphabet. On account of Landa's failure to appreciate the importance of the native hieroglyphics, or to comprehend the system, and also very likely on account of his copyist's carelessness—for the original manuscript of Landa's work has not been found—the passage relating to the alphabet is very vague, unsatisfactory, and perhaps fragmentary; but it is of the very highest importance, since the alphabet here given in connection with the calendar signs, already spoken of, furnish apparently the only ground for a hope that the veil of mystery which hangs over the Maya inscriptions may one day be lifted. I therefore give Landa's description as nearly as possible in his own words, copying also the original Spanish in a note.

[25] *Waldeck, Palenqué*, pl. 21; *Stephens' Cent. Amer.*, vol. i., pp. 136–7, 140–2; *Id., Yucatan*, vol. ii., pp. 300–1; *Morelet's Trav.*, p. 98; vol. iv., pp. 91–2, 97–9, 234, and chap. vi., of this work.

Digitized by Google

"Of their letters I give here (see alphabet on the next page) an A, B, C, since their heaviness (number and intricacy?) permits no more; because they use one character for all the aspirations of the letters, and another in the pointing of the parts (punctuation), and thus it goes on to infinity, as may be seen in the following example: *lé* means 'a snare' or to hunt with it; to write it with their characters, we have given them to understand (although we gave, etc.) that they are two letters, they wrote it with three, placing after the aspiration *l* the vowel *e*, which it has before it, and in this they do not err, although they make use, if they wish, of their curious method. Example:

e l e lé

Then at the end they attach the adjoined part. *Ha* which means 'water,' because the *haché* (sound of the letter *h*) has *a*, *h*, before it, they put it at the beginning with *a*, at the end in this manner:

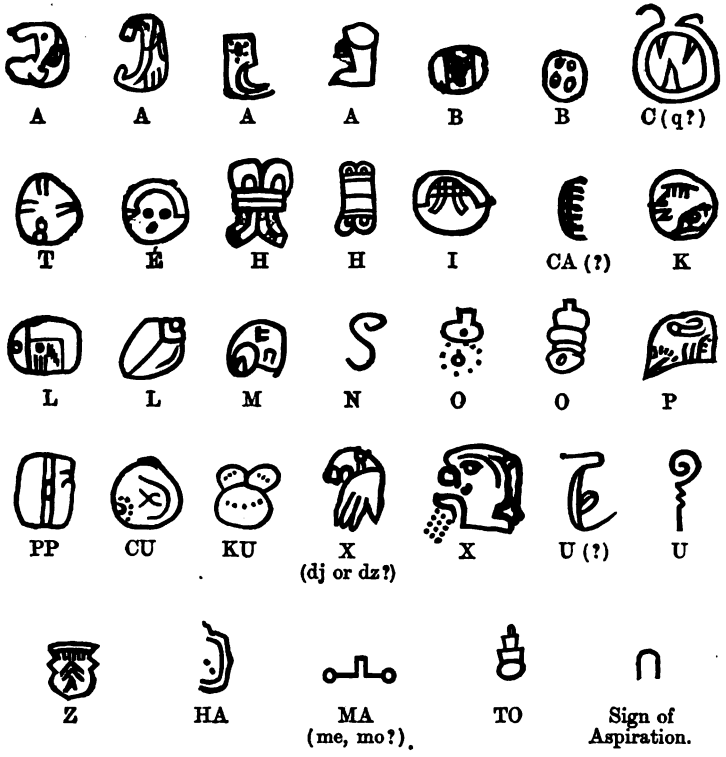
ha

They also write it in parts but in both ways. I would not put (all this) here, nor treat of it, except in order to give a complete account of the things of this people. *Ma in kati* means 'I will not;' they write it in parts after this manner."[26]

ma i n ka ti

[26] The Spanish text is as follows: 'De sus letras porne aqui un *a*, *b*, *c*, que no permite su pesadumbre mas porque usan para todas las aspiraciones de las letras de un caracter, y despues, al puntar de las partes otro, y assi viene a hazer *in infinitum*, como se podra ver en el siguiente exemplo. *Lé*, quiere dezir laço y caçar con el; para escrivirle con sus carateres, haviendoles nosotros hecho entender que son dos letras, lo escrivian ellos con tres, puniendo a la aspiracion de la *l* la vocal *é*, que antes de si trae, y en esto no hierran, aunque usense, si quisieren ellos de su curiosidad. Exemplo: *e l e lé*. Despues al cabo le pegan la parte junta. *Ha* que quiere dezir agua, porque la *haché* tiene *a*, *h*, antes de si la ponen ellos al principio con *a*, y al cabo desta manera: *ha*. Tambien lo escriven a partes pero do la una y otra manera, y no pusiera aqui ni tratara dello sino por dar cuenta entera de las cosas desta gente. *Ma in kati* quiere dezir no quiero, ellos lo escriven a partes desta manera: *ma i n ka ti*.' *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 316–22; also in *Brasseur de Bourbourg, MS. Troano*, tom. i., pp. 37–8.

Digitized by Google



Respecting this alphabet, Landa adds: "This language lacks the letters that are missing here; and has others added from ours for other necessary things; and they already make no use of these characters, especially the young who have learned ours." It will be noticed that there are several varying characters for the same letter, and several syllabic signs.

The characters of Landa's alphabet, and the calendar signs, can be identified more or less accurately and readily with some of those of the hieroglyphic inscriptions in stone, the Manuscript Troano, and the Dresden Codex. The resemblance in many cases is clear, in others very vague and perhaps imaginary, while very many others cannot apparently be identified. Although Landa's key must be regarded as fragment-

Digitized by Google

ary, I believe there is no reason to doubt its authenticity. But one attempt has been made to practically apply this key to the work of deciphering the Maya documents, that of the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg. This writer, after a profound study of the subject, devotes one hundred and thirty-six quarto pages to a consideration of the Maya characters and their variations, and fifty-seven pages to the translation of a part of the Manuscript Troano. The translation must be pronounced a failure, especially after the confession of the author in a subsequent work that he had begun his reading at the wrong end of the document[27]—a trifling error perhaps in the opinion of the enthusiastic Abbé, but a somewhat serious one as it appears to scientific men. His preliminary examinations doubtless contain much valuable information which will lighten the labors and facilitate the investigations of future students; but unfortunately, such is their nature that condensation is impracticable. A long chapter, if not a volume, would be required to do them anything like justice, and they must be omitted here.

Brasseur de Bourbourg devoted his life to the study of American primitive history. In actual knowledge of matters pertaining to his chosen subject, no man ever equalled or approached him. Besides being an indefatigable student, he was an elegant writer. In the last decade of his life he conceived a new and complicated theory respecting the origin of the American people, or rather the origin of Europeans and Asiatics from America, made known to the world in his *Quatre Lettres.* His attempted translation of the Manuscript Troano was made in support of this theory. By reason of the extraordinary nature of the views expressed, and the author's well-known tendency to build magnificent structures on a slight foundation, his later writings were received for the most part by critics, utterly incompetent to understand them, with a sneer, or, what seems to have grieved the writer

[27] *Bibliothèque Mexico-Guatémalienne*, Paris, 1871, p. xxvii.

Digitized by Google

more, in silence. Now that the great *Américaniste* is dead, while it is not likely that his theories will ever be received, his zeal in the cause of antiquarian science and the many valuable works from his pen will be better appreciated. It will be long ere another shall undertake with equal devotion and ability the wellnigh hopeless task.

I close the chapter with a few quotations from modern writers respecting the Maya hieroglyphics and their interpretation. Tylor says "there is even evidence that the Maya nation of Yucatan, the ruins of whose temples and palaces are so well known from the travels of Catherwood and Stephens, not only had a system of phonetic writing, but used it for writing ordinary words and sentences."[28] Wuttke suggests that Landa's alphabet originated after the Conquest, a suggestion, as Schepping observes, excluded by Mendieta's statement, but "otherwise very probable in consideration of the phoneticism developed in Mexico shortly after the Conquest."[29] And finally, Wilson says, "while the recurrence of the same signs, and the reconstruction of groups out of the detached members of others, clearly indicate a written language, and not a mere pictorial suggestion of associated ideas, like the Mexican picture-writing." "In the most complicated tablets of African hieroglyphics, each object is distinct, and its representative significance is rarely difficult to trace. But the majority of the hieroglyphics of Palenque or Copan appear as if constructed on the same polysynthetic principle which gives the peculiar and distinctive character to the languages of the New World. This is still more apparent when we turn to the highly elaborate inscriptions on the colossal figures of Copan. In these all ideas of simple phonetic signs utterly disappear. Like the *bunch-words*, as they have been called, of the Ameri-

[28] *Tylor's Researches*, pp. 100–1.

[29] *Wuttke and Schepping*, in *Spencer's Descriptive Sociology*, no. 2, div. ii., pt 1–B, p. 51. See note 16 of this chapter.

Digitized by Google

can languages, they seem each to be compounded of a number of parts of the primary symbols used in picture-writing, while the pictorial origin of the whole becomes clearly apparent. In comparing these minutely elaborated characters with those on the tables, it is obvious that a system of abbreviation is employed in the latter. An analogous process seems dimly discernible in the abbreviated compound characters of the Palenque inscription. But if the inference be correct, this of itself would serve to indicate that the Central American hieroglyphics are not used as phonetic or pure alphabetic signs; and this idea receives confirmation from the rare recurrence of the same group. . . . The Palenque inscriptions have all the characteristics of a written language in a state of development analogous to the Chinese, with its word-writing; and like it they appear to have been read in columns from top to bottom. The groups of symbols begin with a large hieroglyphic on the left-hand corner; and the first column occupies a double space. It is also noticeable that in the frequent occurrence of human and animal heads among the sculptured characters they invariably look toward the left; an indication, as it appears to me, that they are the graven inscriptions of a lettered people, who were accustomed to write the same characters from left to right on paper or skins. Indeed, the pictorial groups on the Copan statues seem to be the true hieroglyphic characters; while the Palenque inscriptions show the abbreviated hieratic writing. To the sculptor the direction of the characters was a matter of no moment; but if the scribe held his pen, or style, in his right hand, like the modern clerk, he would as naturally draw the left profile as we slope our current hand to the right. Arbitrary signs are also introduced, like those of the phonetic alphabets of Europe. Among these the T repeatedly occurs—a character which, it will be remembered, was also stamped on the Mexican metallic currency."[30]

[30] *Wilson's Pre-Historic Man*, p. 378 et seq.

Digitized by Google

CHAPTER XXV.

BUILDINGS, MEDICINE, BURIAL, PHYSICAL PECULIARITIES, AND CHARACTER OF THE MAYAS.

SCANTY INFORMATION GIVEN BY THE EARLY VOYAGERS—PRIVATE HOUSES OF THE MAYAS—INTERIOR ARRANGEMENT, DECORATION, AND FURNITURE—MAYA CITIES—DESCRIPTION OF UTATLAN—PATINAMIT, THE CAKCHIQUEL CAPITAL—CITIES OF NICARAGUA—MAYA ROADS—TEMPLES AT CHICHEN ITZA AND COZUMEL—TEMPLES OF NICARAGUA AND GUATEMALA—DISEASES OF THE MAYAS—MEDICINES USED—TREATMENT OF THE SICK—PROPITIATORY OFFERINGS AND VOWS—SUPERSTITIONS—DREAMS—OMENS—WITCHCRAFT—SNAKE-CHARMERS—FUNERAL RITES AND CEREMONIES—PHYSICAL PECULIARITIES—CHARACTER.

A FULL résumé of the principles of Maya architecture, gathered from observations of ruins made by modern travellers, will be given in another part of this work.[1] I shall, therefore, without regard to the inevitable scantiness and unsatisfactory nature of such information, confine myself in this chapter to the descriptions furnished by the old writers, who saw the houses and towns while they were occupied by those who built them and the temples before they became ruins, or at least were contemporaries of such observers.

The accounts given of the dwellings of the Mayas are very meagre. The early voyagers on the coast of Yucatan, such as Grijalva and Cordova, saw well-

[1] See vol. iv., pp. 267 et seq.

Digitized by Google

built houses of stone and lime, with sloping roofs thatched with straw or reeds; or, in some instances, with slates of stone;[2] but this is all they tell us, and indeed, they had little opportunity for close examination; the natives of those parts were fierce and warlike, and little disposed to submit to invasion, so that the handful of adventurers had barely time to look hastily about them after affecting a landing before they were driven back wounded to their boats. Here, as elsewhere, too, the temples and larger buildings naturally attracted their sole attention, both because of their strangeness and of the treasures which they were supposed to or did contain. These men were soldiers, gold-hunters; they did not travel leisurely; they had no time to examine the architecture of private dwellings; they risked and lost their lives for other purposes. Bishop Landa, however, has something to say on the subject of Maya dwellings. The roof, he says, was covered with straw, which they had in great abundance, or with palm-leaves, which answered the purpose admirably. A considerable pitch was given to the roof, that the rain might run off easily. The house was divided in its length, that is, from side to side, by a wall, in which several doorways were left as a means of communication with the back room where they slept. The front room where guests were received was carefully whitewashed, or in the houses of nobles painted in various colors or designs; it had no door, but was open all the length of the front

[2] 'A todo lo largo tenian los vecinos de aquel lugar muchas casas, hecho el cimiento de piedra y lodo hasta la mitad de las paredes, y luego cubiertas de paja. Esta gente del dicho lugar, en los edificios y en las casas, parece ser gente de grande ingenio: y si no fuera porque parecia haber allí algunos edificios nuevos, se pudiera presumir que eran edificios hechos por Españoles.' *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 286; see also *Id.*, pp. 281, 287. 'Las casas son de piedra, y ladrillo con la cubierta de paja, o rama. Y aun alguna de lanchas de piedra.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 23. 'The houses were of stone or brick, and lyme, very artificially composed. To the square Courts or first habitations of their houses they ascended by ten or twelue steps. The roofe was of Reeds, or stalkes of Herbs.' *Purchas his Pilgrimes*, vol. v., p. 885; *Bernal Diaz, Hist. Conq.*, fol. 2–3; *Bienvenida*, in *Ternaux-Compans, Voy.*, série i., tom. ii., p. 311; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 507, tom. iii., p. 230; *Montanus, Nieuwe Weereld*, 72; *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. i.

Digitized by Google

of the house, and was sheltered from sun and rain by the eaves, which usually descended very low.[3] There was always a doorway in the rear for the use of all the inmates. The fact of there being no doors made it a point of honor among them not to rob or injure each other's houses. The poor people built the houses of the rich.[4] A new dwelling could not be occupied until it had been formally blessed and purged of the evil spirit.[5]

In Nicaragua, the dwellings were mostly made of canes, and thatched with straw. In the large cities the houses of the nobles were built upon platforms several feet in height, but in the smaller towns the residences of all classes were of the same construction, except that those of the chiefs were larger and more commodious. Some, however, appear to have been built of stone.[6] Of the dwellings in Guatemala, still less is said. Villagutierre mentions a Lacandone village in which were one hundred and three houses with sloping thatched roofs, supported upon stout posts. The front of each house was open, but the back and sides were closed with a strong stockade. The interior was divided into several apartments. Cogolludo says that their houses were covered with plaster, like those of Yucatan.[7]

The house, or rather shed, near the Gulf of Dulce, in which Cortés stayed, had no walls, the roof resting

[3] 'C'est encore aujourd'hui de cette manière que se construisent à la campagne les maisons non seulement des indigènes, mais encore de la plupart des autres habitants du pays, au Yucatan et ailleurs.' *Brasseur de Bourbourg*, in *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 110–11.

[4] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 110.

[5] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 184.

[6] 'Their houses of bricke or stone, are couered with reedes, where there is a scarcitie of stones, but where Quarries are, they are couered with shindle or slate. Many houses haue marble pillars, as they haue with vs.' *Peter Martyr*, dec. iv., lib. iii., dec. vi., lib. v.; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.; *Benzoni, Hist. Mondo Nuovo*, p. 102.

[7] *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 700. 'Las casas eran ciento y tres, de gruessos, y fuertes Maderos, en que se mantenian los Techos, que eran de mucha Paja, reziamente amarrada, y con su corriente, y descubiertos todos los Frontispicios, y tapados los costados, y espaldas, de Estacada, con sus Aposentos, donde las Indias cozinavan, y tenian sus menesteres.' *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 311–12.

Digitized by Google

upon posts.[8] In other parts of Guatemala he saw "large houses with thatched roofs."[9] Gage does not give a glowing account of their dwellings. "Their houses," he writes, "are but poor thatched Cottages, without any upper rooms, but commonly one or two only rooms below, in the one they dress their meat in the middle of it, making a compass for fire, with two or three stones, without any other chimney to convey the smoak away, which spreading it self about the room, filleth the thatch and the rafters so with sut, that all the room seemeth to be a chimney. The next unto it is not free from smoak and blackness, where sometimes are four or five beds, according to the family. The poorer sort have but one room, where they eat, dress their meat, and sleep."[10] Las Casas tells us that when the Guatemalans built a new house they were careful to dedicate an apartment to the worship of the household gods; there they burned incense and offered domestic sacrifices upon an altar erected for the purpose.[11]

Little is said about the interior appointment and decoration of dwellings. Landa mentions that in Yucatan they used bedsteads made of cane,[12] and the same is said of Nicaragua by Oviedo, who adds that they used a small four-legged bench of fine wood for a pillow.[13] In Guatemala, there was in each room a sort of bedstead large enough to accommodate four grown persons, and other small ones for the children.[14] Bras-

[8] *Cortés Cartas*, p. 447.
[9] *Id.*, pp. 268, 426.
[10] *New Survey*, p. 318.
[11] *Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. cxxiv.
[12] *Relacion*, p. 110.
[13] 'Á la parte oriental, á siete ú ocho passos debaxo deste portal, está un echo de tres palmos alto de tierra, fecho de las cañas gruessas que dixe, yençima llano é de diez ó doçe piés de luengo é de çinco ó seys de ancho, é una estera de palma gruessaençima, é sobre aquella otras tres esteras delgadas é muy bien labradas, y encima tendido el caçique desnudo é con una mantilla de algodon blanco é delgada revuelta sobre sí: é por almohada tenia un banquito pequeño de quatro piés, algo cóncavo, quellos llaman *duho*, é de muy linda é lisa madera muy bien labrado, por cabeçera.' *Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 109.
[14] 'Y en cada Aposento vn Tapesco, sobre maderos fuertes, que en cada vno cabian quatro Personas; y otros Tapesquillos aparte, en que ponian las

Digitized by Google

seur de Bourbourg gives a description of gorgeous furniture used in the houses of the wealthy in Yucatan, but unfortunately the learned Abbé has for his only authority on this point the somewhat apocryphal Ordoñez' MS. The stools, he writes, on which they seated themselves cross-legged after the Oriental fashion, were of wood and precious metals, and were often made in the shape of some animal or bird; they were covered with deer-skins, tanned with great care, and embroidered with gold and precious stones. The interior walls were sometimes hung with similar skins, though they were more frequently decorated with paintings on a red or blue ground. Curtains of finest texture and most brilliant colors fell over the doorways, and the stucco floors were covered with mats made of exquisite workmanship. Rich-hued cloths covered the tables. The plate would have done honor to a Persian satrap. Graceful vases of chased gold, alabaster, or agate, worked with exquisite art, delicate painted pottery, excelling that of Etruria, candelabra for the great odorous pine torches, metal braziers diffusing sweet perfumes, a multitude of *petits riens*, such as little bells and grotesquely shaped whistles for summoning attendants—in fact, all the luxuries which are the result of an advanced civilization were, according to Brasseur de Bourbourg, to be found in the houses of the Maya nobility.[15]

Of the interior arrangement of the Yucatec towns we are told nothing, except that the temples, palaces, and houses of the nobility were in the centre, with the dwellings of the common people grouped about them, and that the streets were well kept.[16] Some of them

Criaturas.' *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 312. Gage writes: They have 'four or five beds according to the family.... Few there are that set any locks upon their doors, for they fear no robbing nor stealing, neither have they in their houses much to lose, eathen pots, and pans, and dishes, and cups to drink their Chocolatte, being the chief commodities in their house. There is scarce any house which hath not also in the yard a stew, wherein they bath themselves with hot water.' *New Survey*, p. 318.

[15] *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 68–9.

[16] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. ii., iii.

Digitized by Google

must, however, have been very large and have contained fine buildings. During Córdova's voyage on the coast of Yucatan a city was seen, which, says Peter Martyr, "for the hugenesse thereof they call Cayrus, of Cayrus the Metropolis of Ægipt: where they find turreted houses, stately tēples, wel paued wayes & streets where marts and faires for trade of merchandise were kept."[17] During Grijalva's voyage a city, the same one perhaps, was seen, which Diaz, the chaplain of the expedition, says was as "large as the city of Seville."[18] None of the Yucatec cities appear to have been located with any view to defence, or to have been provided with fortifications of any description.[19] The towns of Guatemala, on the other hand, were very strongly fortified, both artificially and by the site selected. Juarros thus describes the city of Utatlan in Guatemala: "It was surrounded by a deep ravine that formed a natural fosse, leaving only two very narrow roads as entrances to the city, both of which were so well defended by the castle of *Resguardo*, as to render it impregnable. The centre of the city was occupied by the royal palace, which was surrounded by the houses of the nobility; the extremities were inhabited by the plebeians. The streets were very narrow, but the place was so populous as to enable the king to draw from it alone no less than 72,000 combatants to oppose the progress of the Spaniards. It contained many very sumptuous edifices, the most superb of them was a seminary, where between 5 and 6,000 children were educated; they were all maintained and provided for at the charge of the royal treasury; their instruction was superintended by 70 masters and professors. The castle of the Atalaya was a remarkable structure, which, being raised four stories high, was capable of furnishing quarters for a very strong garrison. The castle of

[17] Dec. iv., lib. i.
[18] *Diaz, Itinerario*, in *Icazbalceta, Col. de Doc.*, tom. i., p. 287.
[19] See vol. iv., of this work, pp. 267–8.

Digitized by Google

Resguardo was not inferior to the other; it extended 188 paces in front, 230 in depth, and was 5 stories high. The grand alcazar, or palace of the kings of Quiche, surpassed every other edifice, and in the opinion of Torquemada, it could compete in opulence with that of Montezuma in Mexico, or that of the Incas in Cuzco. The front of this building extended from east to west 376 geometrical paces, and in depth 728; it was constructed of hewn stone of different colors; its form was elegant, and altogether most magnificent; there were 6 principal divisions, the first contained lodgings for a numerous troop of lancers, archers, and other well-disciplined troops, constituting the royal body-guard; the second was destined to the accommodation of the princes, and relations of the king, who dwelt in it, and were served with regal splendour, as long as they remained unmarried; the third was appropriated to the use of the king, and contained distinct suits of apartments, for the mornings, evenings, and nights. In one of the saloons stood the throne, under four canopies of plumage, the ascent to it was by several steps; in this part of the palace were the treasury, the tribunals of the judges, the armory, the gardens, aviaries, and menageries, with all the requisite offices appending to each department. The 4th and 5th divisions were occupied by the queens and royal concubines; they were necessarily of great extent, from the immense number of apartments requisite for the accommodation of so many females, who were all maintained in a style of sumptuous magnificence, gardens for their recreation, baths, and proper places for breeding geese, that were kept for the sole purpose of furnishing feathers, with which hangings, coverings, and other similar ornamental articles were made. Contiguous to this division was the sixth and last; this was the residence of the king's daughters and other females of the blood royal, where they were educated and attended in a manner suitable to their rank."[20]

[20] *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, pp. 87-8; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS.,

Digitized by Google

Patinamit, the Cakchiquel capital, was nearly three leagues in circumference. It was situated upon a plateau surrounded by deep ravines which could be crossed at only one point by a narrow causeway which terminated in two gates of stone, one on the outside and the other on the inside of the thick wall of the city. The streets were broad and straight, and crossed each other at right angles. The town was divided from north to south into two parts by a ditch nine feet deep, with a wall of masonry about three feet high on each side. This ditch served to divide the nobles from the commoners, the former class living in the eastern section, and the latter in the western.[21]

Peter Martyr says of the cities of Nicaragua: "Large and great streetes guarde the frontes of the Kinges courts, according to the disposition and greatnes of their village or towne. If the town consist of many houses, they haue also little ones, in which the trading neighbours distant from the Court may meete together. The chiefe noble mens houses compasse and inclose the kinges streete on euery side: in the middle site whereof one is erected which the Goldsmithes inhabite."[22]

The Mayas constructed excellent and desirable roads all over the face of the country. The most remarkable of these were the great highways used by the pilgrims visiting the sacred island of Cozumel; these roads, four in number, traversed the peninsula in different directions, and finally met at a point upon the coast opposite the island.[23] Diego de Godoi, in a letter to Cortés, states that he and his party came to a place in the mountains of Chiapas, where the smooth and slippery rock sloped down to the edge of a precipice,

cap. lii.; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 493; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 123–4.

[21] *Juarros, Hist. Guat.*, pp. 383–4; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 520.

[22] Dec. vi., lib. vi.; *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 263; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.

[23] *Lizana*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 358; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 193; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., pp. 25, 46–7.

Digitized by Google

and which would have been quite impassable had not the Indians made a road with branches and trunks of trees. On the side of the precipice they erected a strong wooden railing, and then made all level with earth.[24]

Of the Maya temples very little is said. There was one at Chichen Itza which had four great staircases, each being thirty-three feet wide and having ninety-one steps, very difficult of ascent. The steps were of the same height and width as ours. On both sides of each stairway was a low balustrade, two feet wide, made of good stone, like the rest of the building. The edifice was not sharp-cornered, because from the ground upward between the balustrades the cubic blocks were rounded, ascending by degrees and elegantly narrowing the building. There was at the foot of each balustrade a fierce serpent's head very strangely worked. On the top of the edifice there was a platform, on which stood a building forty-three feet by forty-nine feet, and about twenty feet high, having only a single doorway in the centre of each front. The doorways on the east, west, and south opened into a corridor six feet wide, which extended without partition walls round the three corresponding sides of the edifice; the northern doorway gave access to a corridor forty feet long and six and a third feet wide. Through the centre of the rear wall of this corridor a doorway opened into a room twelve feet nine inches by nineteen feet eight inches, and seventeen feet high; its ceiling was formed by two transverse arches supported by immense carved beams of zapote-wood, stretched across

[24] *Godoi*, in *Ternaux-Compans*, *Voy.*, série i., tom. x., pp. 171–2. At the Lake of Masaya in Nicaragua, Boyle noticed a 'cutting in the solid rock, a mile long, and gradually descending to depth of at least three hundred feet! This is claimed as the work of a people which was not acquainted with blasting or with iron tools. Nature had evidently little hand in the matter, though a cleft in the rock may perhaps have helped the excavators. The mouth of this tunnel is about half a mile from the town.' *Ride*, vol. ii., p. 11. Herrera, *Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. vii., mentions the same thing in a very different manner: 'La subida y baxada, tan derecha como vna pared, que como es de peña viua, tiene en ella hechos agujeros, adonde ponen los dedos de las manos, y de los pies.'

Digitized by Google

the room and resting, each at its centre, on two square pillars.[25] The island of Cozumel was especially devoted to religious observances, and was annually visited by great numbers of pilgrims; there were therefore more religious edifices here than elsewhere. Among them is mentioned a square tower, with four windows, and hollow at the top; at the back was a room in which the sacred implements were kept; it

[25] For description of ruins of this building as they now exist, and cuts of staircase, ground plan, and ornamentation, see vol. IV., pp. 226–9. Bishop Landa thus describes it: 'Este edificio tiene quatro escaleras que miran a las quatro partes del mundo: tienen de ancho a xxxiii pies y a noventa y un escalones cada una que es muerte subirlas. Tienen en los escalones la mesma altura y anchura que nosotros damos a los nuestros. Tiene cada escalera dos passamanos baxos a ygual de los escalones, de dos piez de ancho de buena canteria como lo es todo el edificio. No es este edificio esquinado, porque desde la salida del suelo se comiençan labrar desde los passemanos al contrario, como estan pintado unos cubos redondos que van subiendo a trechos y estrechando el edificio por muy galana orden. Avia quando yo lo vi al pie de cada passamano una fiera boca de sierpe de una pieça bien curiosamente labrada. Acabadas de esta manera las escaleras, queda en lo alto una plaçeta llana en la qual esta un edificio edificado de quatro quartos. Los tres se andan a la redonda sin impedimento y tiene cada uno puerta en medio y estan cerrados de boveda. El quarto del norte se anda por si con un corredor de pilares gruessos. Lo de en medio que avia de ser como el patinico que haze el orden de los paños del edificio tiene una puerta que sale al corredor del norte y esta por arriba cerrado de madera y servia de quemar los saumerios. Ay en la entrada desta puerta o del corredor un modo de armas esculpidas en una piedra que no pude bien entender. Tenia este edificio otros muchos, y tiene oy en dia a la redonda de si bien hechos y grandes, y todo en suelo del a ellos encalado que aun ay a partes memoria de los encalados tan fuerte es el argamasa de que alla los hazen. Tenia delante la escalera del norte algo aparte dos teatros de canteria pequeños de a quatro escaleras, y enlosados por arriba en que dizen representavan las farsas y comedias para solaz del pueblo. Va desde et patio en frente destos teatros una hermosa y ancha calçada hasta un poço como dos tiros de piedra. En este poço an tenido, y tenian, entonces costumbre de echar hombres vivos en sacrificio a los dioses en tiempo de seca, y tenian no morian aunque no los veyan mas. Hechavan tambien otros muchas cosas, de piedras de valor y cosas que tenian depciadas ....Es poço que tiene largos vii estados de hondo hasta el agua, hancho mas de cien pies y redondo y de una peña tajada hasta el agua que es maravilla. Parece que tiene al agua muy verde, y creo lo causan las arboledas de que esta cercado y es muy hondo. Tiene en cima del junto a la boca un edificio pequeño donde halle yo idolos hechos a honra de todos los edificios principales de la tierra, casi como el Pantheon de Roma. No se si era esta invencion antigua o de los modernos para toparse con sus idolos quando fuessen con ofrendas a aquel poço. Halle yo leones labrados de bulto y jarros y otras cosas que no se como nadie dira no tuvieron herramiento esta gente. Tambien halle dos hombres de grandes estaturas labrados de piedra, cado uno de una pieça en carnes cubierta su honestidad como se cubrian los indios. Tenian las cabeças por si, y con zarcillos en las orejas como lo usavan los indios, y hecha una espiga por detras en el pescueço que encaxava en un agujero hondo para ello hecho en el mesmo pescueço y encaxado quedava el bulto cumplido.' *Relacion*, pp. 342–6.

Digitized by Google

was surrounded by an enclosure, in the middle of which stood a cross nine feet high, representing the god of rain.[26] Other temples so closely resembled those of Mexico as to need no further description here.[27]

The temples of Nicaragua were built of wood, and thatched; they contained many low, dark rooms, where the idols were kept and the religious rites per-

[26] 'Vieron algunos adoratorios, y templos, y vno en particular, cuya forma era de vna torre quadrada, ancha del pie, y hueca en lo alto con quatro grandes ventanas, con sus corredores, y en lo hueco, que era la Capilla, estauan Idolos, y a las espaldas estaua vna sacristia, adonde se guardauan las cosas del seruicio del templo: y al pie deste estaua vn cercado de piedra, y cal, almenado y enluzido, y en medio vna Cruz de cal, de tres varas en alto, a la qual tenian por el Dios de la lluuia.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. iii., cap. i. 'Junto à vn templo, como torre quadrada, donde tenian vn Idolo muy celebrado, al pie de ella auia vn cercado de piedra, y cal muy bien luzido, y almenado, en medio del qual auia vna Cruz de cal tan alta, como diez palmos,' to which they prayed for rain. *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 200. It is doubtless the same structure of which Gomara writes: 'El templo es como torre quadrada, ancha del pie, y con gradas al derredor, derecha de medio arriba, y en lo alto hueca, y cubierta de paja, con quatro puertas o ventanas con sus antepechos, o corredores. En aquello hueco, que parece capilla, assientan o pintan sus dioses.' *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 23.

[27] The pyramids are of different size: 'Aunque todos de vna forma. Son al modo de los que de la Nueua España refiere el Padre Torquemada en su Monarquia Indiana: leuantado del suelo vn terrapleno fundamento del edificio, y sobre èl vàn ascendiendo gradas en figuras piramidal, aunque no remata en ella, porque en lo superior haze vna placeta, en cuyo suelo estàn separada (aunque distantes poco) dos Capillas pequeñas en que estaban los Idolos (esto es en lo de Vxumual) y alli se hazian los sacrificios, assi de hombres, mugeres, y niños, como de las demàs cosas. Tienen algunos de ellos altura de mas de cien gradas de poco mas de medio pie de ancho cada vno.' *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 193. Landa describes a pyramidal structure which differs from others: 'Ay aqui en Yzamal un edificio entre los otros de tanta altura que espanta, el qual se vera en esta figura y en esta razon della. Tiene XX gradas de a mas de dos buenos palmos de alto y ancho cada un y terna, mas de cien pies de largo. Son estas gradas de muy grandes piedras labradas aunque con el mucho tiempo, y estar al agua, estan ya feas y maltratadas. Tiene despues labrado en torno como señala esta raya, redonda labrado de canteria una muy fuerte pared a la qual como estado y medio en alto sale una ceja de hermosas piedras todo a la redonda y desde ellas se torna despues a seguir la obra hasta ygualar con el altura de la plaça que se haze despues de la primera escalera. Despues de la qual plaça se haze otra buena placeta, y en ella algo pegado a la pared esta hecho un cerro bien alto con su escalera al medio dia, donde caen las escaleras grandes y encima esta una hermosa capilla de canteria bien labrada. Yo subi en lo alto desta capilla y como Yucatan es tierra llana se vee desde ella tierra quanto puede la vista alcançar a maravilla y se vee la mar. Estos edificios de Yzamal eran por todos XI o XII, aunque es este el mayor y estan muy cerca unos de otros. No oy memoria de los fundadores, y parecen aver sido los primeros. Estan VIII leguas de la mar en muy hermoso sitio y buena tierra y comarca de gente.' *Relacion*, pp. 328–30.

Digitized by Google

formed. Before each temple was a pyramidal mound, on the flat top of which the sacrifices were made in the presence of the whole people.[28]

In Guatemala, Cortés saw temples like those of Mexico.[29] The temple of Tohil, at Utatlan, was, according to Brasseur de Bourbourg, a conical edifice, having in front a very steep stairway; at the summit was a platform of considerable size, upon which stood a very high chapel, built of hewn stone, and roofed with precious wood. The walls were covered within and without with a very fine and durable stucco. Upon a throne of gold, enriched with precious stones, was seated the image of the god.[30]

The particular diseases to which the Mayas were most subject are not enumerated, but there is no reason to doubt that they suffered from the same maladies as their neighbors, the Nahuas. They seem to have been greatly afflicted with various forms of syphilis,[31] and in winter, with catarrh and fever.[32] They were much troubled, also, with epidemics, which not unfrequently swept the country with great destruction.[33]

Medicinal practitioners were numerous. Their medicines, which were mostly furnished by the vegetable kingdom, were administered in the usual forms,[34] and

[28] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 37; *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. v.

[29] *Cortés, Cartas*, p. 448.

[30] *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 552. See also *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 402.

[31] 'Y en estas partes é Indias pocos chripstianos, é muy pocos digo, son los que han escapado deste trabajoso mal [buboes] que hayan tenido partiçipaçion carnal con las mugeres naturales desta generaçion de indias; porque á la verdad es propria plaga desta tierra, é tan usada á los indios é indias como en otras partes otras comunes enfermedades.' *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 365.

[32] 'Comiença el inuierno de aquella tierra desde san Francisco, quando entran los Nortes, ayre frio, y que destiempla mucho a los naturales: y por estar hechos al calor, y traer poca ropa, les dan rezios catarros, y calenturas.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. iv.

[33] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 60–2.

[34] 'Ay infinitos generos de cortezas, rayzes, y hojas de arboles, y gomas, para muchas enfermedades, con que los Indios curauan en su gentilidad, con soplos, y otras inuenciones del demonio.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. xiv.; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., p. 234.

Digitized by Google

their treatment of patients involved the customary mummeries. Clysters were much used.[35] For syphilis they used a decoction of a wood called *guayacan*, which grew most plentifully in the province of Nagrando in Nicaragua.[36] For rheumatism, coughs, colds, and other complaints of a kindred nature, they used various herbs, among them tobacco,[37] and a kind of dough made of 'stinking, poisonous worms.'[38] Sores arising from natural causes they washed in a decoction of an herb called *coygaraca*, or poulticed it with the mashed leaves of another named *mozot*.[39] Wounds taken in battle they always treated with external applications.[40] Cacao, after the oil had been extracted, was considered to be a sure preventive against poison.[41]

When a rich man or a noble fell sick, a messenger was despatched with gifts to the doctor, who came at once and stayed by his patient until he either got well or died. If the sickness was not serious, the physician merely applied the usual remedies, but it was thought that a severe illness could only be brought on by some crime committed and unconfessed. In such cases, therefore, the doctor insisted upon the sick man making a clean breast of it, and confessing such sin, even though it had been committed twenty years before. This done, the physician cast lots to see what

[35] 'Curan viejas los enfermos....y echan melezinas con vn cañuto, tomando la decoccion en la boca, y soplando. Los nuestros les hazian mil burlas, desuenteando al tiempo, que querian ellas soplar, o riendo del artificio.' *Gomara, Hist. Ind.*, fol. 264; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.

[36] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 365.

[37] 'Ay en esta terra mucha diuersidad de yeruas medicinales, con que se curan los naturales: y matan los gusanos, y con que restriñen la sangre, como es el Piciete, por otro nombre Tabaco, que quita dolores causados de frio, y tomado en humo es prouechoso para las reumas, asma, y tos; y lo traen en poluo en la boca los Indios, y los negros, para adormecer, y no sentir el trabajo.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. vii., cap. iii.

[38] 'Hazen en el (Atiquizaya) vna massa de gusanos hediondos y ponçoñosos, que es marauillosa medicina para todo genero de frialdades, y otras indisposiciones.' *Id.*, dec. iv., lib. viii., cap. x.

[39] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., pp. 383–5.

[40] 'Curauan los heridos con poluos de yeruas, o carbon que leuauan para esto.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii.

[41] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. i., p. 321

Digitized by Google

sacrifices ought to be made, and whatever he determined upon was always given, even though it amounted to the whole of the patient's fortune.[42] In Yucatan, the practitioner sometimes drew blood from those parts of the patient's body in which the malady lay.[43] Lizana mentions a temple at Izamal to which the sick were carried that they might be healed miraculously.[44] In Guatemala, as elsewhere, propitiatory offerings of birds and animals were made in ordinary cases of sickness, but if the patient was wealthy and dangerously ill, he would sometimes strive to appease the anger of the gods and atone for the sins which he was supposed to have committed by sacrificing male or female slaves, or, in extraordinary cases, when the sick man was a prince or a great noble, he would even vow to sacrifice a son or a daughter in the event of his recovery; and although the scapegoat was generally chosen from among his children by female slaves, yet so fearful of death, so fond of life, were they, that there were not wanting instances when legitimate children, and even only sons, were sacrificed. And it is said, moreover, that they were inexorable as Jephthah in the performance of such vows, for it was held to be a great sin to be false to a bargain made with the gods.[45]

The Mayas, like the Nahuas, were grossly superstitious. They believed implicitly in the fulfilment of dreams, the influence of omens, and the power of witches and wizards. No important matter was undertaken until its success had been foretold and a lucky day determined by the flight of a bird or some similar omen. Whether the non-

[42] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. viii., p. 234; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 191–2; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 184.

[43] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 160.

[44] 'Otro altar y templo sobre otro cuyo levantaron estos indios en su gentilidad á aquel su rey ó falso Dios *Ytzmat-ul*, donde pusieron la figura de la mano, que les servia de memoria, y dizen que allí le llevavan los muertos y enfermos, y que allí resucitavan y sanavan, tocandolos la mano; y este era el que está en la parte del puniente, y assi se llama y nombra Kab-ul que quiere dezir mano obradora. *Lizana*, in *Landa, Relacion*, p. 358.

[45] *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 191-2, 209-10.

Digitized by Google

fulfilment of the prediction was provided against by a *double entendre*, after the manner of the sibyls, we are not told. The cries or appearance of certain birds and animals were thought to presage harm to those who heard or saw them.[46] They as firmly believed and were as well versed in the black art as their European brethren of a hundred years later, and they appear to have had the same enlightened horror of the arts of gramarye, for in Guatemala, at least, they burned witches and wizards without mercy. They had among them, they said, sorcerers who could metamorphose themselves into dogs, pigs, and other animals, and whose glance was death to their victims. Others there were who could by magic cause a rose to bloom at will, and could bring whomsoever they wished under their control by simply giving him the flower to smell. Unfaithful wives, too, would often bewitch their husbands, that their acts of infidelity might not be discovered.[47] All these things are gravely recounted by the old chroniclers, not as matters unworthy of credence, but as deeds done at the instigation of the devil, to the utter damnation of the benighted heathen. Cogolludo, for instance, speaking of the performances of a snake-charmer, says that the magician took up the reptile in his bare hands, as he did so using certain mystic words, which he, Cogolludo, wrote down at the time, but finding afterward that they invoked the devil, he did not see fit to reproduce them in his work. The same writer further relates that upon another occasion a diviner cast lots, according to custom, with a number of grains of corn, to find out which direction a strayed child had taken. The child was eventually found upon the road indicated, and the narrator subsequently endeavored to discover whether the devil had been invoked or not, but the magician was a poor simple fool, and could not tell

[46] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 183–4.

[47] *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, tom. viii., p. 144; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 55; *Gomara, Hist Ind.*, fol. 264; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 184.

Digitized by Google

him.[48] Nor does there seem to have been any great difference between the credulity and superstition of conquerors and conquered in other respects. The Spanish Fathers, if we may judge from their writings, believed in the Aztec deities as firmly as the natives; the only difference seems to have been that the former looked upon them as devils and the latter as gods. When the Spaniards took notes in writings of what they saw, the Costa Ricans thought they were working out some magic spell; when the Costa Ricans cast incense toward the invaders, telling them to leave the country or die,[49] the Spaniards swore that the devil was in it, and crossed themselves as a counter-spell.

The Yucatecs observed a curious custom during an eclipse of the moon. At such times they imagined that the moon was asleep, or that she was stung and wounded by ants. They therefore beat their dogs to make them howl, and made a great racket by striking with sticks upon doors and benches; what they hoped to accomplish by this we are not told.[50]

The Mayas disposed of the bodies of their dead by both burial and cremation. The former, however, appears to have been the most usual way. In Vera Paz, and probably in the whole of Guatemala, the body was placed in the grave in a sitting posture, with the knees drawn up to the face. The greater part of the dead man's property was buried with him, and various kinds of food and drink were placed in the grave that the spirit might want for nothing on its way to shadow-land.[51] Just before death took

[48] *Ib.*

[49] In Campeche the priests 'lleuauan braserillos de barro en que echauan anime, que entre ellos dizen Copal, y sahumauan a los Castellanos, diziendoles que se fuessen de su tierra, porque los matarian.' *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. ii., lib. ii., cap. xvii.

[50] *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 183.

[51] Cogolludo says that a calabash filled with *atole*, some large cakes, and some maize bran, were deposited in the grave. The first, for the soul to drink on its journey; the second, for the dogs which the deceased had eaten during his life, that they might not bite him in the other world; and the last to conciliate the other animals that he had eaten. *Hist. Yuc.*, p. 700.

Digitized by Google

place, the nearest relation, or the most intimate friend of the dying man, placed between his lips a valuable stone, which was supposed to receive the soul as soon as it passed from the body. As soon as he was dead, the same person removed the stone and gently rubbed the face of the deceased with it. This office was held to be a very important one, and the person who performed it preserved the stone with great reverence. When the lord of a province died, messengers were sent to the neighboring provinces to invite the other princes to be present at the funeral. While awaiting their arrival, the body was placed in a sitting posture, in the manner in which it was afterward to be interred,[52] and clothed in a great quantity of rich clothing.[53] On the day of the funeral, the great lords who had come to attend the ceremony brought precious gifts and ornaments, and placed them by the side of or on the person of the corpse. Each provided also a male or female slave, or both, to be sacrificed over the grave of the deceased. The body was then placed in a large stone chest,[54] and borne with great solemnity to its last resting-place, which was generally situated on the top of a hill. The coffin having been lowered into the grave with its ornaments, the doomed slaves were immolated, and also cast in along with the implements which they had used in life, that they might follow their accustomed pursuits in the service of their new master in the other world. Finally, the grave was filled up, a mound raised over it, and a stone altar erected above all, upon which incense was burned and sacrifices were made in memory of the deceased. The common people did not use coffins, but placed the body in a

[52] Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 574, says that the body was embalmed; but Ximenez, from whom his account is evidently taken, is silent on this point.

[53] Ximenez, *Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 210 et seq., affirms that wealthy people, when they began growing old, set about collecting a vast number of clothes and ornaments in which to be buried.

[54] Brasseur de Bourbourg, *Hist. Nat. Civ.*, tom. ii., p. 575, says that the body was deposited in the grave, seated upon a throne.

Digitized by Google

sitting posture and wrapped up in many cloths, in an excavation made in the side of the grave, burying with it many jars, pans, and implements. They raised a mound over the grave of a height in proportion to the rank of the defunct.[55]

Only the poorer classes of the Yucatecs buried their dead. These placed corn in the mouth of the corpse, together with some money as ferriage for the Maya Charon. The body was interred either in the house or close to it. Some idols were thrown into the grave before it was filled up. The house was then forsaken by its inmates, for they greatly feared the dead.[56] The books of a priest were buried with him, as were likewise the charms of a sorcerer.[57] The Itzas buried their dead in the fields, in their every-day clothes. On the graves of the males they left such implements as men used, on those of the females they placed grinding-stones, pans, and other utensils used by the women.[58] In Nicaragua, property was buried with the possessor if he or she had no children; if the contrary was the case, it was divided among the heirs. Nicaraguan parents shrouded their children in cloths, and buried them before the doors of their dwellings.[59] Among the Pipiles, the dead were interred in the house they had lived in, along with all their property. A deceased high-priest was buried, clad in the robes and ornaments appertaining to his office, in a sepulchre or vault in his own palace, and the people mourned and fasted fifteen days.[60]

Cremation or partial cremation seems to have been reserved for the higher classes. In Yucatan, an image of the dead person was made, of wood for a king, of clay

[55] *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, pp. 210–14; *Palacio, Carta*, p. 119; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 699–700.

[56] Unless a great number of people were living in it, when they seem to have gathered courage from each other's company, and to have remained.

[57] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 196; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[58] *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 313.

[59] *Palacio, Carta*, p. 119; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 48.

[60] *Palacio, Carta*, p. 78; *Brasseur de Bourbourg, Hist. Nat. Cis.*, tom. ii., p. 556.

Digitized by Google

for a noble. The back part of the head of this image was hollowed out, and a portion of the body having been burned, the ashes were placed in this hollow, which was covered with the skin of the occiput of the corpse. The image was then placed in the temple among the idols, and was much reverenced, incense being burned before it, almost as though it had been a god. The remainder of the body was buried with great solemnity. When an ancient Cocome king died, his head was cut off and boiled. The flesh was then stripped off, and the skull cut in two, crosswise. On the front part of the skull, which included the lower jaw and teeth, an exact likeness of the dead man was moulded in some plastic substance. This was placed among the statues of the gods, and each day edibles of various kinds were placed before it, that the spirit might want for nothing in the other life, which, by the way, must have been a poor one to need such terrestrial aliment.[61] When a great lord died in Nicaragua, the body was burned along with a great number of feathers and ornaments of different kinds, and the ashes were placed in an urn, which was buried in front of the palace of the deceased. As usual, the spirit must be supplied with food, which was tied to the body before cremation.[62]

According to the information we have on the subject, the mourning customs of the Mayas appear to have been pretty much the same everywhere. For the death of a chief or any of his family, the Pipiles lamented for four days, silently by day and with loud cries by night. At dawn on the fifth day the high-priest publicly forbade the people to make any further demonstration of sorrow, saying that the soul of the

[61] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 196–8; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.

[62] *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., pp. 48–9. In the island of Ometepec, the ancient graves are not surrounded by isolated stones like the calputs of the modern Indians, but are found scattered irregularly over the plain at a depth of three feet. Urns of burnt clay are found in these graves, filled with earth and displaced bones; and vases of the same material, covered with red paintings and hieroglyphics, stone points of arrows, small idols, and gold ornaments. *Sivers, Mittelamerika*, pp. 128–9.

Digitized by Google

departed was now with the gods. The Guatemalan widower dyed his body yellow, for which reason he was called *malcam*. Mothers who lost a sucking child withheld their milk from all other infants for four days, lest the spirit of the dead babe should be offended.[63]

The Mayas, like the Nahuas, were mostly well made, tall, strong, and hardy. Their complexion was tawny. The women were passably good-looking, some of them, it is said, quite pretty, and seem to have been somewhat fairer-skinned than the men. What the features of the Mayas were like can only be conjectured. Their sculpture would indicate that a large hooked nose and a retreating forehead, if not usual, were at least regarded with favor, and we know that head-flattening was almost universal among them. Beards were not worn, and the Yucatec mothers burned the faces of their children with hot cloths to prevent the growth of hair. In Landa's time, some of the natives allowed their beard to grow, but, says the worthy bishop, it came out as rough as hogs' bristles. In Nicaragua, it would seem that they did not even understand what a beard was; witness the following 'pretie policy' of Ægidius Gonsalus: "All the Barbarians of those Nations are beardlesse, and are terribly afraide, and fearefull of bearded men: and therefore of 25. beardlesse youthes by reason of their tender yeres, Ægidius made bearded men with the powlinges of their heades, the haire being orderly composed, to the end, that the number of bearded men might appeare the more, to terrifie thē if they should be assailed by warre, as afterwarde it fell out."[64] Squinting eyes were, as I have said before, thought beautiful in Yucatan.[65]

[63] *Landa, Relacion*, p. 196; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Id.*, lib. viii., cap. x.; *Ximenez, Hist. Ind. Guat.*, p. 214; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 313; *Palacio, Carta*, pp. 76–8.

[64] *Peter Martyr*, dec. vi., lib. v.

[65] *Andagoya*, in *Navarrete, Col. de Viages*, tom. iii., p. 414; *Herrera*,

Digitized by Google

Of all the Maya nations, the Yucatecs bear the best character. The men were generous, polite, honest, truthful, peaceable, brave, ingenious, and particularly hospitable, though, on the other hand, they were great drunkards, and very loose in their morals. The women were modest, very industrious, excellent housewives, and careful mothers, but though generally of a gentle disposition, they were excessively jealous of their marital rights; indeed, Bishop Landa tells us that upon the barest suspicion of infidelity on the part of their husbands they became perfect furies, and would even beat their unfaithful one.[66] The Guatemalans are spoken of as having been exceedingly warlike and valorous, but withal very simple in their tastes and manner of life.[67] Arricivita calls the Lacandones thieves, assassins, cannibals, bloody-minded men, who received the missionaries with great violence.[68] The fact that the Lacandones strove to repel invasion, without intuitively knowing that the invaders were missionaries, may have helped the worthy padre to come to this decision, however. The Nicaraguans were warlike and brave, but at the same time false, cunning, and deceitful. Their resolute hatred of the whites was so great that it is said that for two years they abstained from their wives rather than beget slaves for their conquerors.[69]

Next after the collecting of facts in any one direc-

Hist. Gen., dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 111; *Gomara, Conq. Mex.*, fol. 23; *Dávila, Teatro Ecles.*, tom. i., p. 170; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, p. 700; *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 112–14; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, p. 402; *De Laet, Novus Orbis*, p. 329.

[66] *Landa, Relacion*, pp. 100, 122, 188–90; *Villagutierre, Hist. Conq. Itza*, pp. 312, 516; *Dávila, Teatro Ecles.*, tom. i., p. 203; *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iv., lib. x., cap. iv.; *Cogolludo, Hist. Yuc.*, pp. 180, 187–8; *Gomara, Hist. Ynd.*, fol. 62; *Las Casas*, in *Kingsborough's Mex. Antiq.*, vol. viii., pp. 147–8.

[67] *Gomara, Hist. Ynd.*, fol. 268; *Dávila, Teatro, Ecles.*, tom. i., p. 148; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 33; *Las Casas, Hist. Apologética*, MS., cap. xlvi.

[68] *Crónica Seráfica*, pp. 25–6.

[69] *Herrera, Hist. Gen.*, dec. iii., lib. iv., cap. vii., dec. iv., lib. iii., cap. ii.; *Oviedo, Hist. Gen.*, tom. iv., p. 39.

Digitized by Google

tion comes their comparison with other ascertained facts of the same category, by which means fragments of knowledge coalesce and unfold into science. This fascinating study, however, is no part of my plan. If in the foregoing pages I have succeeded in collecting and classifying materials in such a manner that others may, with comparative ease and certainty, place the multitudinous nations of these Pacific States in all their shades of savagery and progress side by side with the savagisms and civilizations of other ages and nations, my work thus far is accomplished. But what a flood of thought, of speculation and imagery, rushes in upon the mind at the bare mention of such a study! Isolated, without the stimulus of a Mediterranean commerce, hidden in umbrageous darkness, walled in by malarious borders, and surrounded by wild barbaric hordes, whatever its origin, indigenous or foreign, there was found on Mexican and Central American tablelands an unfolding humanity, unique and individual, yet strikingly similar to human unfoldings under like conditions elsewhere. Europeans, regarding the culture of the conquered race first as diabolical and then contemptible, have not to this day derived that benefit from it that they might have done. It is not necessary that American civilization should be as far advanced as European, to make a perfect knowledge of the former as essential in the study of mankind as a knowledge of the latter; nor have I any disposition to advance a claim for the equality of American aboriginal culture with European, or to make of it other than what it is. As in a work of art it is not a succession of sharply defined and decided colors, but a happy blending of light and shade, that makes the picture pleasing, so in the grand and gorgeous perspective of human progress the intermediate stages are as necessary to completeness as the dark spectrum of savagism or the brilliant glow of the most advanced culture.

This, however, I may safely claim: if the preceding

Digitized by Google

pages inform us aright, then were the Nahuas, the Mayas, and the subordinate and lesser civilizations surrounding these, but little lower than the contemporaneous civilizations of Europe and Asia, and not nearly so low as we have hitherto been led to suppose. Whatever their exact status in the world of nations—and that this volume gives *in esse*, and not *in posse*—they are surely entitled to their place, and a clear and comprehensive delineation of their character and condition fills a gap in the history of humanity. As in every individual, so in every people, there is something different from what may be found in any other people; something better and something worse. One civilization teaches another; if the superior teaches most, the inferior nevertheless teaches. It is by the mutual action and reaction of mind upon mind and nation upon nation that the world of intellect is forced to develop. Taking in at one view the vast range of humanity protrayed in this volume and the preceding, with all its infinite variety traced on a background of infinite unity, individuality not more clearly evidenced than a heart and mind and soul relationship to humanity everywhere, the wide differences in intelligence and culture shaded and toned down into a homogeneous whole, we can but arrive at our former conclusion—that civilization is an unexplained phenomenon, whose study allures the thoughtful and yields results pregnant with the welfare of mankind.

END OF THE SECOND VOLUME.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google